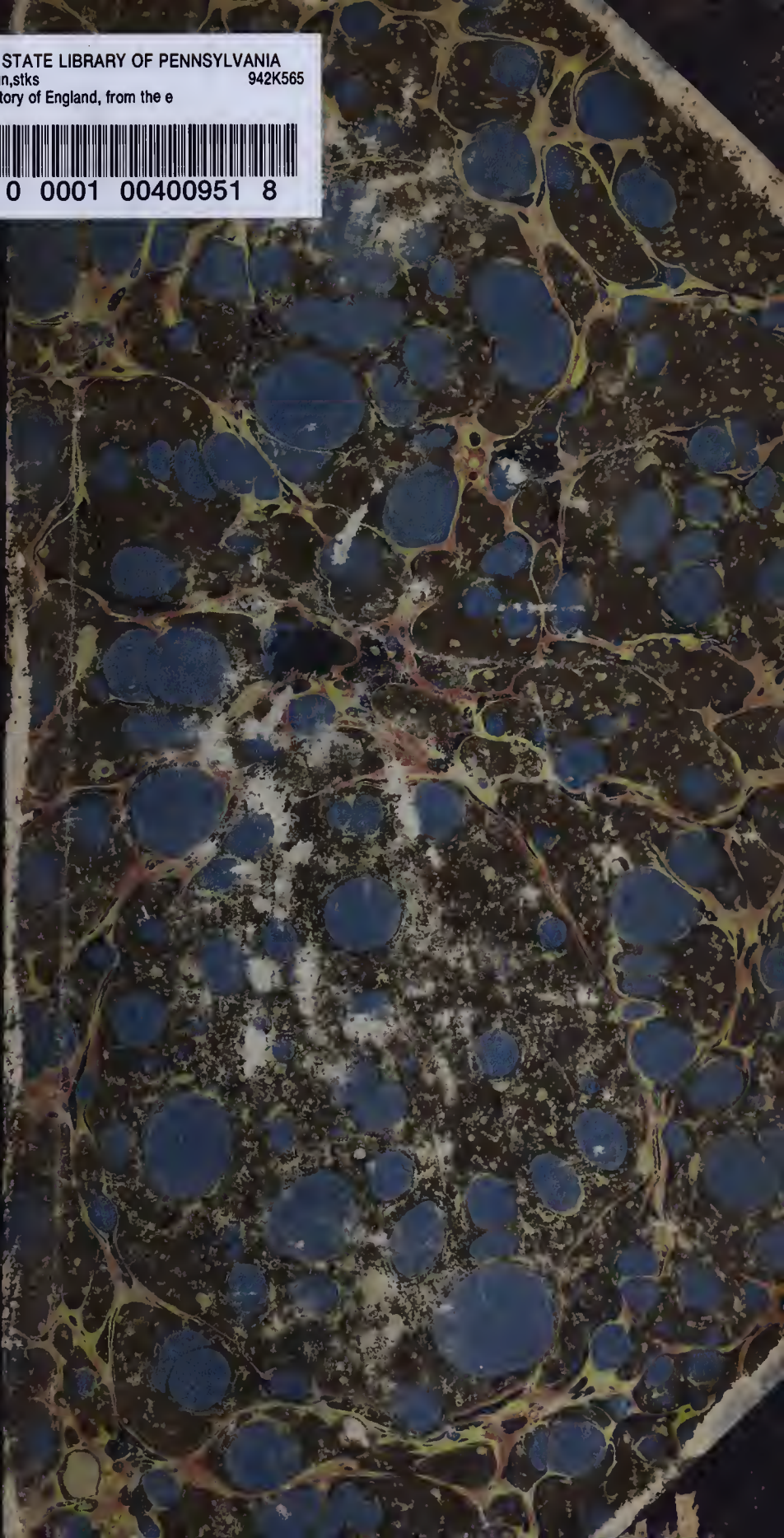


STATE LIBRARY OF PENNSYLVANIA  
main,stk 942K565  
History of England, from the e



0 0001 00400951 8



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2020 with funding from

Open Library. Open Library is made possible by the Institute of Museum and Library Services as administered by the Pennsylvania Department of Education through the Commonwealthwealth Library.



300 Ancient British Nobles. Assassinated by Hengist the Saxon  
 their Pretended Ally & Friend abt. A.D. 475. <sup>21. my Drawing of Primothio</sup> 14.

Cerdick the Saxon (whose sons name was Kentick) became King of  
 the Weft Sax, & from him were descended the Kings of England down  
 to Edward the Confessor in the male Line, & in the  
 Female quite down to King George the Third in 1775. - - - - - 15.

The Brittons have allways suffered from their want of Union - - - - - 15

Account of Gildas the Monk of whom we have to this day Epistles extant 15

Anglo Saxons explained, to mean the Saxons Jutes & Angles - - - - - 16

The Saxon Hierarchy. Considered & Explicited - - - - - 16

Kingdom of England, Egbert the first King of England. Abd. 827. - - - - - 21.

The first Granted by Ethelwulf abt. 852... v. 23.

Remarkable Instance of an Injury done to one Person Envolving the whole  
 Kingdom in Ruin } 26.

The Holy Scriptures translated into Saxon about 940. - - - - - 37.

The Watling Street runs cross England from North Wales to the Sea on the South  
 of Kent - being an Angle as it should seem from Holy Head to Dover - - - - - 38.

Edmund 1<sup>st</sup> gave Cumberland to the Scots they doing Homage to him for the same - - - - - 38.

Notorious Insolence of one, Leolf a Notorious Robber who Stab'd Edmund 1<sup>st</sup> } 38.

Edmund the 1<sup>st</sup> made the first Law in England that Punished Authors of Deeds

£20000 - p. to buy the Danes absence for 2 years - - - A.D. 994 - - - 46.

£30000 - more given them about 1001 Levied by a Land Tax & a half } 46

£50000 was the first Land Tax known in England & was called Danegeld } 46

A.D. 1002 a General Massacre of the Danes attended as great Cruelty } 47.

£30000 - more paid to the Danes & in A.D. 1012 £40000 - given them - 48.

Roeyn the Dane <sup>proclaiming</sup> <sup>not</sup> King of England - 48 - great difficulty to Account } 48

for the Expulsion of the Danes } 48

Description of the Trial of Chastity by the Fire Ordeal - - - - - 59.

Stephen was the only King of the House of Blois - 67 - William the Norman - 67.

Plantagenets who... 67 - also the Houses of Lancaster & York who - - - 67.

Tudors - 67 - Stuarts 68 - Orange - 68 - Brunswick. 68 -

The Etymology of our English word Harlot - 68 -

William the Norman accepted the Crown of England as a gift & not as if } 69.

obtained by Conquest } 69.

Danegeld Tax Revived by William the Norman Levied with Rigour - - - 71

Tower of London Built by William the Bastard of Normandy - - - 73.

The Project of the Holy war or Crusade set on foot by Pope Urban 2<sup>d</sup> 1096. 79

Westminster Hall Built by Wm Rufus - 79. Original of the Goodwin Sands - - 79

Account of the Suppression & Value of the Abbies by Hen. 8. - - - 239.

Popish Doctrines confirmed in the most cruel manner by Hen. 8<sup>d</sup> advised by Cromwell 239.

That it was thought right that the People of England should de-throne their  
 their own Kings appears by their de-throning Hen. 6<sup>th</sup> setting up Edward 4<sup>th</sup> } 193

& afterwards restoring Hen. 6<sup>th</sup> & de-throning Edw. 4<sup>th</sup> - all brought about } 193

by the Art of Warwick surnamed the King Maker - these contrarieties were all } 193

of them confirmed & approved by Different Parliaments (so that Parliaments } 201

were always fools) however only 7 months after Edward 4<sup>th</sup> prevailed again & sent  
 Hen. 6<sup>th</sup> to the Tower once more where in 1475 he was stab'd & was supported  
 by the cruel Duc of Gloucester Edw. 4<sup>th</sup> Brother - & in 1478 Edw. 4<sup>th</sup> caused his  
 own Brother the Duc of Clarence to be slain



*Henry Weymouth*

*A Table of The Sovereigns of England  
with contemporary Potentates immediately connected  
with Their History. According to Sir Harris Nicolson, 1833.*

800	England.	Scotland.	France.	Spain.	Year.	England.	Scotland.	France.	Spain.
800	Egbert	Achaius.	Charlemagne		1094		Duncan II.		Peter I.
814	.....		Louis I.		1096		Edgar		
819		Constance III.			1100	Henry I.			
824		Dougal.			1104				Alphonso I. Nav. & Arag.
831		Alpin.			1107		Alexandr. I.		
834		Kenneth II.			1108			Louis VI.	
836	Ethelwolf.				1109				Urraca, cas.
843		David I. 854.	Chas. Chauv.		1124		David I.		
857	Ethelbald.	Constantin II.		Garcia I.	1126				Alphonso II. ca.
860	Ethelbert.				1133				Garcia V. N.
866	Ethelred I.				1134				Ramiro II. Ar.
872	Alfred G.				1135	Stephen.			
874		Ethels.		Ethels.	1137			Louis VII.	Peter & Ramiro Sancho VII. N.
876		Gregory.		Gregory.	1150				
877			Louis II.		1153		Malcolm IV.		
879			Louis III.		1157	Henry II.			Sancho II. ca.
880			Carloman.		1157				Alphonso III. ca.
884				Fortunio.	1158				Alphonso I. Nav.
888			Chas. Gros.		1162				
892			Hugh.		1165		William I.		
898		Donald VI.			1180			Philip II.	
898			Chas. Simple.		1189	Richard I.			
900	Edw. elder.				1194				Sancho VII. N.
901		Constantin III.			1196				Peter II. Arr.
902				Sancho I.	1199	John			
922			Robert.		1213				Jos. I. Ar.
923			Ralph.		1214		Alex. II.		Hen. I. Cas.
925	Alfred Stan.				1216	Henry III.			Ferd. III. 1217.
926				Garcia I.	1223			Louis VIII.	
936					1226			St Louis IX.	Theobald I. N.
938		Malcolm I.			1234				
941	Edmund.				1245		Alex. III.		
946	Edred.				1252				Alphonso IV. C.
954			Lothaire.		1253				Theobald II.
955	Edwy.				1270		Philip III.		Hen. I. N.
958		Indulphus			1272	Edw. I.			
959	Edgar				1274				Joanna I. N.
969		Dieffus			1276				Peter III. A.
970				Sancho II.	1284				Sancho IV. C.
972		Cullenus.			1285			Philip IV.	Alphonso III. A.
972		Kenneth III.			1286		Margaret Ino. Balio.		
975	Edw. martyr.				1288				
986			Louis V.		1291				Jos. II. Ar.
987			H. Capet.		1295				Ferd. IV. C.
994		Constantin IV.		Garcia III.	1306		Robt. I.		
997		Gratimus.	Robert		1307	Edward II.			Alphonso V. C.
1000				Sancho III.	1312				
1004		Malcolm II.			1314			Louis IX. Nav.	
1016	Edm. Irons.				1316			John I. Ev.	
1017	Canute.				1322			Chas. IV.	
1031			Henry I.		1327	Edward III.			Alphonso IV. Ar.
1033				Ferd. I. cas.	1328			Philip VI.	Joanna II. N.
1034		Duncan			1329		David II.		
1035				Garcia IV. Ramiro II.	1336				Peter II. Ar.
1036	Harold.				1349				Chas. II. N.
1039	Harold Godwinson.				1350			John II.	Peter I. C.
1046		Macbeth.			1364		Chas. V.		
1041	Edm. Confes.				1369				Hen. II. C.
1054				Sancho IV. Navarro.	1371		Robert II.		
1057		Malcolm III.			1377	Richard II.			
1060			Philip I.		1379				John I. Cas.
1063				Sancho I. I. at Leon & Castile.	1380			Chas. VI.	
1066	Harold II.				1386				Chas. III. N.
1066	William I. C.				1387				John I. Ar.
1072				Alphonso I. Castile.	1390		Robert III.		Ben. III. C.
1076				Sancho V. Nav. & Ara.	1395				Martin Ar.
1087	William II.				1399	Henry IV.			
1093		Donald VI.			1406		James I.		John II. C.

\* 978 to 1016 reigned Ethelred II. accidentally omitted in the table above.



[illegible]



THE  
LIBRARY  
OF THE  
MUSEUM OF  
ART AND  
ARCHAEOLOGY  
OF THE  
UNIVERSITY OF  
CHICAGO  
1891





THE  
HISTORY  
OF  
ENGLAND,

From the EARLIEST ACCOUNTS, to the Accession of  
His present MAJESTY, King GEORGE III.

INCLUDING THE  
History of SCOTLAND and IRELAND,

So far as they have any Concern with the

AFFAIRS of ENGLAND.

Collected from the most impartial Writers, and digested  
into the most easy and familiar Method; whereby may be seen the  
Connection one Period or Reign has with another: With proper  
Reflections through the Whole, tending to illustrate the Narration,  
and to fix the aimable Sentiments of Liberty in the Hearts of the  
BRITISH Nation.

---

Embellished with the HEADS and MONUMENTS of the  
several KINGS and QUEENS, curiously engraved on Copper.

---

By the late Rev. Mr. ISAAC KIMBER.

---

THE FIFTH EDITION.

---

L O N D O N:

Printed for J. BUCKLAND, J. and F. RIVINGTON, G. KEITH, HAWES,  
CLARKE, and COLLINS, B. LAW, T. LONGMAN, T. LOWNDES, R.  
BALDWIN, E. JOHNSTON, G. ROBINSON, and WELLER and CHA-  
PEL.

MDCCLXXV.





T H E

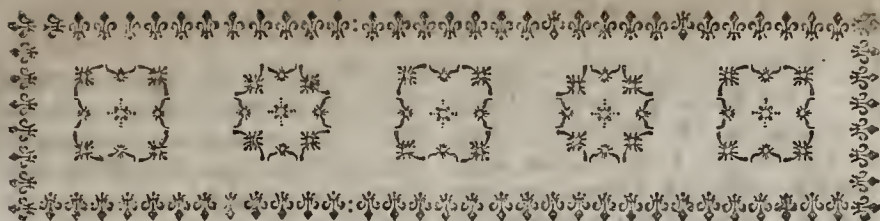
# P R E F A C E.

**T**H E deserved Eulogies that have so often appeared in Praise of the Science of History in general, and of that Branch of it in particular, which relates to our native Country, as they need no Addition, are too well known to be repeated. But it seems necessary that I should say something, by Way of Preface, to apologize for the present Undertaking, as the World has been thronged with Books of the same Design, both voluminous and abbreviated. As to the former Sort, many of them, setting aside some little Attachment to Party, (an Error, which an Historian should by all Means avoid, but, under certain Circumstances, somewhat excusable) may really be said to be excellent: But then they are either too prolix for the Perusal, or too chargeable for the Purchase of the Bulk of the People of England. And were not this a sufficient Objection, I imagine, a more concise and plain Narration of Facts, properly connected, to be more generally useful, in some Measure to all, but more especially to those, whose Sphere in Life renders a critical Knowledge of the most minute Circumstances that have occurred not very necessary, nor indeed possible; whilst the Method observed in Tracts of this Size is more suited both to their Station and Capacity: And even to the more learned and better Judge, a Work of this Nature, if well executed, must be very pleasing; as the Perusal will revive his Reading, and make those Things, he has sought with great Labour and Expence, still more fresh to his Mind; whilst the close Order of the whole is an immediate Help to his Chronology. Of the shorter Histories, I have observed, that too many are calculated to support some favourite System of Politicks;



*Politicks; whereas, if Partiality, in some Things, is drowned in the Compass of a large Volume, in a small Piece it is much too conspicuous to be agreeable. Others, with some few Exceptions, are too tedious or too brief, have injudiciously dwelt long on what should seem trifling, and too slightly passed over Matters of more general Concern, or greater Moment, have loaded the infant Piece with gigantick Declarations, Treaties, Speeches, &c. whilst they have droned through their Work, without any useful or instructive Sentiment or Reflection, and with a Poverty of Stile and Diction that would scarce become a School-Boy: So that they are neither calculated for the Meridian of Youth, who should never be entertained without being improved, nor for the Cognizance of abler Heads. In the Piece I here present the World with, I have made it my principal Endeavour to avoid all Partiality, and justly to represent both the dark and light Side of Affairs, and have ventured to intrude my own Sentiments of Things only in the Reflections which run through the Whole; and this with no Intent to bias any unexperienced Reader, but only to alleviate my Subject, as nothing is less pleasing than bare and dry Narration. The Order and Division of the Work, I believe, will please, and I have endeavoured to set the obscure Monkish Period in as clear a Light as possible. I have brought it down to the Death of the late King George I.\* To conclude, I believe it will be deemed a proper Book for the Perusal of the British Youth, who will thereby discover the true State and Interest of their Country, and imbibe a thorough Veneration for its excellent Constitution; and, as I said before, it may not be thought unworthy the Eyes of the Judicious, and a Place in their Collections, as a useful, if not necessary, Attendant of their more critical and extensive Volumes.*

\* The Reign of the late King George II. is added to this Edition, by another Hand.



# THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

---

## The INTRODUCTION.

THE Island of *Great-Britain* comprehends *England* on the South and *Scotland* on the North, which are parted from each other by the River *Tweed*, *Solway-Frith*, and the *Cheviot Hills*; or rather by the *Tweed*, and a Line drawn from it to the *Solway*. The South Part began to bear the Name of *England* in the Time of the *Saxon* Heptarchy, from the *Angles*, who came over with the *Saxons*; and as my Design in the following Sheets is to give a summary Account of the most remarkable Transactions in this Part of the Island, I shall meddle no farther with the Affairs of *Scotland*, than as they have a necessary Connexion with those of *England*.

But first it is proper to say something of the Island in general, as to its Situation, Extent, antient Names,

and Inhabitants, with their Manners and Customs, as the *Romans* found them; before whose Invasion we have little or nothing certain of the *British* Affairs, though a great many strange Things are related by *Monkish* Authors, which have been generally rejected as Fables by the best Writers.

This Island, undoubtedly the most considerable in the World, accounted by the Antients the largest, and generally thought so still, notwithstanding what has been said of *Madagascar* and *Japan*, is situate between  $49^{\circ} 55'$  and  $58^{\circ} 35'$  of North Latitude, enjoying a healthful Air, and fruitful Soil, abounding with all the Necessaries and most of the Conveniencies of Life. It is bounded on the South by the *English* Channel, which divides it from *France*; on the East by the *German* Sea, lying

ing between it and *Flanders*, *Germany*, and *Denmark*; by the *North* or *Frozen Sea*, on the North; and by *St. George's Channel*, the *Irish Sea*, and *Western Ocean*, on the West. Its greatest Length from North to South is about 550 Miles (of which *England* contains above 300) and its greatest Breadth from East to West about 300 Miles.

The two most antient Names of this famous Island, that we know of, are *Albion* and *Britain*, concerning the Origin of which there are a great Variety of Opinions, and even the best of them no more than uncertain Conjectures. Some say it was called *Albion* from a certain Giant, Son of *Neptune*; but this is a mere Fable. Others derive the Name from the Greek Word *Alphon*, which signifies *White*, because the Coasts appear of that Colour, when seen at a Distance. But the most probable Opinion is, that it came from the Phœnician Word *Alpin*, a high Mountain, or *Alben*, which in the same Language signifies *White*. There is yet a greater Variety of Conjectures concerning the Name of *Britain*, the chief of which are these. Some have thought it was so called from *Brutus*, a Trojan Prince; but as the whole Story of his landing here, and of his Successors, is by the most judicious Writers accounted a gross Fable, this Opinion is deservedly rejected. *Somner* derives it from the British Word *Brydio* or *Rage*, because of the violent Motion of the Sea on the Coasts. *Camden* and some others, from *Brith*, signifying, in the British Tongue, *Wood*, because the Britons used to stain their Bodies with that Plant. But against these it is objected, that this Island receiving the Name *Britain* from Foreigners, the Natives calling themselves not Britons, but *Cumri* or *Cumbri*, it is not likely they should take it from any British Word, but from

some Words in their own Language. The most probable Opinion, therefore, is that of *Bochart*, who thinks that the Phœnicians coming to buy Tin in the Island of *Albion*, gave it the name of *Baratanac*, that is, *the Land of Tin*; which being by the Greeks, who afterwards traded to this Island, softened into *Britannia*, passed from them to the Romans. To this I shall add, an ingenious Conjecture of *Le Clerc*, who thinks that the Phœnicians having passed the *Streights*, met with no Islands in the Ocean comparable with these now called the *British Isles*, which, therefore, by way of eminence, they called *Brittan*, that is, *Outer*, or Islands in the *Outer-Sea*, in Opposition to those in the *Mediterranean*, which they called the *Inner-Sea*: And from *Brittan*, *Britannia* will naturally flow.

There is as great an Uncertainty in relation to the Origin of the first Inhabitants of this Country. It is generally thought to have been first peopled by the *Celtæ*, or *Gauls*, descended from *Gomer*, Son of *Japhet*. This the Name *Cumri*, by which the *Welsh* still call themselves, seems to favour. And, indeed, the Nearness of *Gaul* to *Britain*, and the Affinity there was between both Nations, with respect to Religion, Form of Government, Language, and Customs, make it probable, that *Britain* was first peopled from *Gaul*. Though, to be sure, other Colonies might come over afterwards, from other Places, and at different Times. Be this as it will, the Phœnicians are said to have discovered and traded to this Island before the Trojan War, and the Greeks 160 Years before the Roman Invasion.

We may be more certain with respect to the Manners, Customs, Religion and Government of the antient Britons, since they are mentioned by *Cæsar*, and other Writers.

They



They were generally tall, well-made, of a strong and hardy Constitution, and yellow-haired. The Women were fair and beautiful, and the Men wore their Hair long upon their Head and upper Lip. They went mostly naked, but wore Iron Rings about their Necks and Waists; and on the Southern Coasts they covered themselves with the Skins of Wild Beasts. They used to paint their Bodies with *Wood*, making Incisions in them in the Shape of Flowers, Trees and Animals, and staining them with the Juice of that Herb, which rendered them of a durable Sky-colour. Their Habitations were in the Middle of large Woods, where having felled the Trees and cleared the Ground, they built themselves a sort of slight Huts, which they covered with Skins, Boughs, Turf, or Reed; and here they had also Folds for their Cattle. The Avenues were defended with the Trees they had cut down, thrown overthwart each other, and with slight Ramparts of Earth. And these were all the Towns they had, except on the Coasts, where the Inhabitants were more civilized by Commerce and Intercourse with other Nations, especially the *Gauls*, who had long before been civilized by the *Romans*: Tho' we shall here observe, that their Traffick was but mean, their chief Merchandize being Tin, the rest Trifles of Glass, Ivory, Amber, and such like. Their ordinary Food was Flesh got by Hunting, Fruits and Milk, of which however they had not the Art of making Cheese; and, for the Honour of our Malt Liquors, their usual Drink was made of Barley. They religiously abstained from Hen and Goose, tho' they bred some of these Creatures for their Pleasure; and likewise from Fish, tho' there were Plenty of them in their Seas and Rivers. In Times of Necessity, it is said, they could live upon Barks, and Roots of Trees. Though the

Manners and Customs of the *Britains* were generally the same with the *Gauls*, from whom they came, and with whom they corresponded, yet they had one Custom which seems peculiar to themselves, and that was, for ten or twelve Brothers, Relations or Friends, to live together and have their Wives in common. This Custom continued long among them, even after they were in other Respects much civilized by the *Romans*: Concerning which we have the following Story: That a *British* Lady being upbraided with it at Court by *Julia*, *Severus's* Empress, as an infamous Practice, briskly replied, *We do that publickly with the best of our Men, which you do privately with the worst of yours, Freed-men and Slaves.*

The *Britons* were a brave, bold, and daring People. *Cæsar* highly commends their Valour in War, to which they were inured by the frequent Quarrels among themselves. Their Arms were small Shields, large Swords, and short Spears. They commonly sought in Chariots, with short Scythes fastened to the Ends of the Axle-Trees, which driving furiously into the Midst of their Enemies, they made terrible Havock, at the same Time flinging their Darts. As they were courageous and undaunted, and hardy in enduring Hunger, Cold, or any Fatigues, so they had no small Skill in War, often taking Advantage by Stratagem, Ambush, or sudden Attacks, and fighting in small Parties, so as always to keep a good Reserve behind.

The *Britons* were gross Idolaters, and had many barbarous Customs in their Religion. They worshipped *Dis* and *Samothes*, as the *Gauls* did, and had a great Veneration for *Andate*, the Goddess of Victory, to whom they sacrificed their Captives in War; Human Sacrifices were also practised

by them on other great Emergencies, and they were very nice and exact in observing the Posture of the Body and the Entrails of the Man so offered, in order to foretel future Events. They had an Order of Men called *Druids*, from *Deru*, in the Celtic Language signifying an *Oak*, as *Drus* does in the *Greek*; for these *Druids* held their Assemblies in Groves of *Oak*, and had a most sacred Regard to the *Mistletoe* growing on those Trees. These Men were the Directors in all religious Matters, and had the Management of all Sacrifices, and the People paid them such an implicit Veneration, that their Authority was in a Manner absolute. They were intrusted with the Education of the better Sort, and were Judges in all Civil Affairs. No Malefactor could be put to Death without their Consent, and they excluded all from the Sacrifices who did not comply with their Orders: This made them very formidable, the Persons so *excommunicated* being deemed infamous, and to be avoided by all. In this Point the Christian Clergy have too much copied after these heathen Priests. They had a sort of Primate or sovereign Pontiff, and when one died another was chosen in his Room, but oftentimes not without Broils and Bloodshed. They had once a Year a general Assembly in the Midst of *Gaul*, where were the same Order of Men; and indeed it is chiefly by the Account that is given of the *Gaulish Druids*, that we judge of those of *Britain*. They committed none of their Dogmas or Maxims to Writing, but conveyed them by Tradition, and always taught their Disciples by Heart. One of their chief Doctrines was, *That the Soul is immortal, and that after Death it passes into other Bodies*; which removing the Fear of Death, added very much to their Courage. They also taught, *that every Thing derives its Origin*

*from Heaven*; but most of their other Rules relate to their Superstition, and among the rest, *that Mistletoe must be cut with a golden Bill*. The *Britons* also, as well as the *Gauls*, had a Sort of inferior Priests, called *Bards*, whose Office was to compose Songs and sing them to the Harp, in Praise of their Heroes and great Men: Whence Poets are even now amongst us sometimes called *Bards*. A third Sort of Priests the *Britons* had, called *Eubates*, who chiefly studied Philosophy and the Works of Nature.

The *Britons*, like the *Gauls*, and indeed most Nations in the first Ages of the World, and like the *Americans* at this Day, were divided into a great many petty States, each having its proper Head or Leader. *Cæsar* reckons no less than four of these petty Princes in the small Compass of *Kent*. These Principalities or States, having no Dependence on each other, any farther than they were compelled by Necessity, had frequent Wars among themselves, as was before observed; but in Times of common Danger, one of their Princes was chosen chief Commander by common Consent of all the States, whose Power was limited, as well as the Time of his Administration. Thus *Cassibelanus*, King or Chief of the *Trinobantes*, was chosen to command their Army upon *Julius Cæsar's* Invasion; and *Caractacus*, King of the *Silures*, was made General in the Time of *Claudius*.

As *Britain* was thus divided into many petty Governments, so the Inhabitants were distinguished by various Names, of which we find seventeen in that Part of *Britain* now called *England* and *Wales*: Which are as follow, 1. The *Cantii*, Inhabitants of the present County of *Kent*. 2. The *Regni*, of *Sussex* and *Surrey*. 3. The *Durotriges*, of *Dorsetshire*. 4. The *Danmonii*, of *Devonshire*.







The LANDING of JULIUS CÆSAR.

*L.P. Boit*



shire and Cornwall. 5. The Belgæ, of Somersetshire, Wilshire and Hampshire. 6. The Atrebatii, of Berkshire. 7. The Dobuni, of Gloucestershire and Oxfordshire. 8. The Catticuchlani, of Warwickshire, Buckinghamshire and Bedfordshire. 9. The Trinobantes, of Hertfordshire, Essex and Middlesex. 10. The Icenii, of Suffolk, Norfolk, Cambridgeshire and Huntingdonshire. 11. The Coritani, of Lincolnshire, Leicestershire, Rutland, Derbyshire, Nottinghamshire and Northamptonshire. 12. The Cornavii, of Worcestershire, Staffordshire, Shropshire and Cheshire. 13. The Brigantes, of Yorkshire, Lancashire, Durham, Westmorland and Cumberland. 14. The Ottadini, of Northumberland and four Counties in Scotland. 15. The Silures, of Herefordshire,

Radnorshire, Brecknockshire, Monmouthshire and Glamorganshire. 16. The Ordovices, of Montgomeryshire, Merionethshire, Caernarvonshire, Flintshire and Denbighshire. 17. The Dimetæ, Inhabitants of Caermarthenshire, Pembrokeshire and Cardiganshire. These were the Divisions, and this the State of this Part of Britain, when *Cæsar* invaded it. I now proceed to give some Account of that Invasion, and of the State of Britain under the Romans. And here it is that our History properly begins, no Authors before this Time having given any Account of the British Affairs, and what has been said by some Writers since, of the Transactions in Britain before the Roman Invasion, being mere Fable and Romance.

### Of the ROMANS in Britain.

**JULIUS** *Cæsar* having subdued the Gauls, began now to turn his Thoughts towards Britain, from a Desire of adding to the Glory he had acquired by his many Conquests, and of enlarging the Bounds of the already widely extended Empire of the Romans. His Pretence was, that the Britons had assisted his Enemies in Gaul. However that be, having sent some before him to make Discoveries, the latter End of the Summer, about 54 Years before Christ, he set Sail from *Bulloign* with two Legions, on board fourscore Ships, leaving Orders for the Horse to follow in eighteen more. The next Day he arrived on the Coast, where he saw the Hills and Cliffs that run out into the Sea covered with Britons, who before had Intelligence of his Design from the Merchants, and came prepared to oppose his landing, which they did so effectually at first, by their Darts, that he was obliged

to seek out for a more convenient Place. Accordingly he sailed along the Coast towards *Deal*, and came to an Anchor where the Country was open and level. The Britons watching his Motions, sent their Chariots and Horsemen before, which were followed by all the Foot. *Cæsar's* Ships were too large to come near enough the Shore, and the Romans could not land without leaping into the Water, which they at last did, being animated by an Ensign of one of the Legions, who led the Way with the Colours in his Hand. The Britons, however, stood their Ground, till *Cæsar* by the means of some armed Sloops made them fall back a little. The Romans at length with much Difficulty being got upon dry Ground, pressed the Enemy so vigorously, that they put them to Flight: But they durst not pursue them, because the Horse were not yet arrived, having met with a great Storm, which

54 years before  
Christ.

55 (Ann  
77)

which forced them back again to the Ports of *Gaul*.

The *Britons* now dreading the Valour and Resolution of the *Romans*, sent Ambassadors to *Cæsar* to sue for Peace, which he granted upon their delivering some Hostages and promising to send more. This Peace being concluded four Days after the *Romans* landed, some of the Princes came and submitted themselves to *Cæsar*. But several Disasters befalling the *Romans*, their Ships being shattered in the Storm, the Cavalry not arrived, and being likewise in Want of Provisions, the States that had submitted soon revolted, and stirred up the rest of their Countrymen to endeavour to rid the Land of their Enemies. They accordingly fell upon one of their Legions as they were foraging, killed several, and were surrounding the rest with their Chariots, when *Cæsar* came to their Relief, brought them off, and retired to the Camp. The *Britons* resolved to attack them there; but *Cæsar* foreseeing it, gave them so warm a Reception, that they were soon forced to fly. This so discouraged them, that they immediately sent Ambassadors to treat of Peace, which *Cæsar* agreed to, upon their promising to send after him into *Gaul*, whither he soon after retired to winter, double the Number of Hostages he had demanded before. Thus ended *Cæsar's* first Expedition, in which, notwithstanding his own Account, of which I have given the Substance, he may be said rather to have shewn the Island to the *Romans*, than subdued it.

The *Britons* not sending their Hostages as they had agreed, *Cæsar* resolved to give them another Visit in the Spring; which he did, with five Legions and two thousand Horse, landing at a Place he had marked the Year before, without any Opposition, the *Britons* having retired

farther up in the Country. Having fortified his Camp, he went in quest of the Enemy, and found them about twelve Miles off, posted on the Banks of a River, thought to be the *Stour* in *Kent*, in order to dispute his Passage; but they were soon made to give Way, and retired into a Wood blocked up with large Trees laid across one another, where they were notwithstanding attacked, and put to Flight. The next Day he went in Pursuit of them, and had not marched far before he was informed, that their Forces were much increased under *Cassibelanus*, King of the *Trinobantes*, whom the *Britons* in this Exigency had chosen their Commander in Chief, though before there had been continual Wars between him and the neighbouring States. In the first Skirmish, which happened whilst the *Romans* were on their March, the *Britons* were repulsed; in two others they had manifestly the Advantage of the *Romans*. At last *Cæsar* sending out the Horse to forage, with three Legions to guard them, the *Britons* fell furiously upon the Foragers; but the Resistance made by the Legions gave *Cæsar* Time to advance with the rest of the Army, so that a great Battle ensued, wherein the *Britons* were entirely defeated. Upon this he resolves to penetrate into *Cassibelanus's* Territories, and passes the *Thames* in spite of the Enemy who were posted on the opposite Bank, and had drove sharp Stakes into that Part of the River, supposed by some to be at *Corway Stakes* near *Chertsey* in *Surrey*; though others think the Ford where the *Romans* passed the *Thames* was near *Kingston*. Be this as it will, the *Britons* were attacked with such Resolution, that they were forced to quit their Post; and soon after the *Trinobantes* submitted to *Cæsar*, desiring him to take into his Protection their King *Mandubratius*, who



who had fled into *Gaul* upon *Cassibelanus's* murdering his Father, and depriving him of his Dominions. Several other States followed the Example of the *Trinobantes*; and now *Cæsar* resolved to attack *Cassibelanus's* capital City, supposed to be *Verulam*, near the present *St. Alban's*, which he did with great Success, the Enemy being put to Flight, and great Numbers slain and taken. About the same Time the *Kentishmen*, under their four Princes, attacked the *Roman Camp*, but were repulsed with great Slaughter, and *Gingetorix*, one of their Princes, taken Prisoner. These frequent Defeats, together with the Revolt of his Subjects and other States, forced *Cassibelanus* to sue for Peace, which he obtained upon Condition that the *Britons* should pay the *Romans* an annual Tribute; after which, *Cæsar* having received the Hostages agreed upon, embarked and returned to *Gaul*; the Situation of his Affairs, as is generally believed, notwithstanding his own Account, obliging him to leave a Country as yet far from being conquered.

The Civil Wars in the Empire after *Cæsar's* Death, made it impossible for the *Romans* to think of *Britain*, and so the Tribute was not paid, nor perhaps demanded for twenty Years; and when *Augustus* threatened to compel the Payment of it, he was either diverted by new Troubles in the Empire, or the *Britons* found means to pacify him. In short, after *Julius Cæsar's* second Invasion, which some very improperly call a *Conquest*, the *Britons* preserved their Liberty above ninety Years; their real Subjection to the *Romans* not commencing till the Reign of *Claudius*, about 43 Years after the Birth of *Christ*. This Emperor having sent *Plautius* over before him to begin the Work, which he did with great Success, followed

him soon after, put himself at the Head of his Troops, forced the *Britons* to come to a Battle, and entirely routed them. After this he advanced to *Camelodunum*, now *Malden*, or as others will have it, *Colchester* in *Essex*, where he met with little Resistance, and pushing his Conquests, subdued some of the neighbouring States. As *Claudius* acquired great Fame by these Successes, he was no less remarkable for his Moderation. The conquered *Britons*, sensible of his Generosity in leaving them the Possession of their Goods, erected a Temple to him and paid him divine Honours. After this successful Expedition, he returned to *Rome*, leaving *Plautius* Governor of *Britain*, who carried on the Conquests in Conjunction with *Vespasian*, who fought the *Britons* in thirty Battles, subdued two powerful Nations, and conquered the *Isle of Wight*. *Plautius* being at length recalled, was succeeded by *Ostorius Scapula*, who made *Camelodunum* a Military Colony. About the same Time *London* was made a Trading Colony, and that Part of *Britain* lying between the Sea and the *Thames*, was reduced to the Form of a Province; and called *Britannia Prima*.

After this, *Ostorius* having quelled several Insurrections, engaged the *Britons* under *Caractacus*, King of the *Silures*, a brave and experienced General, whom the Nations in Alliance with the *Silures* had chosen Commander in Chief, and after an obstinate Fight totally routed them. The brave *Caractacus* flying for Protection to the Queen of the *Brigantes*, was by her delivered up to the *Romans*, after having commanded the confederate Army of the *Britons*, with great Bravery and various Success, for the Space of nine Years

*Suetonius Paulinus* being sent over to *Britain* in the Reign of *Nero*,

58. *An. Dom.* 58, conquered the Isle of *Mona*, now called *Anglesea*; but soon after an Affair of much greater Consequence engaged his Attention. *Boadicea*, Widow of *Prasutagus* King of the *Iceni*, having been greatly provoked by some Indignities offered to her and her Family by the *Romans*, animated her Countrymen to a Revolt, which the Violence and Injustice of the Emperor's Officers, and the grievous Impositions that were laid upon them, had already prepared them for. Accordingly the whole Island was possessed with a Spirit of Revolt, which quickly broke out, and *Boadicea*, a Woman of noble Stature and heroick Courage, headed the Revolters, who in the Absence of the General, fell furiously upon the *Romans*, dispersed in their Colonies, and massacred them without Distinction of Age or Sex, so that 80,000 are computed to have perished. *Paulinus* being informed of this sudden Revolution, quits the Isle of *Mona* to march against the revolted *Britons*, who had now an Army of 100,000 Men, and were marching to engage *Paulinus*, who was in great Straits, his Army being but 10,000 strong. However, he made up by Conduct what he wanted in Numbers. He pitched upon a narrow Piece of Ground for the Field of Battle, with a Forest behind that secured him from Ambuscades in the Rear, the *Britons* being encamped on a large Plain before, having brought out their Wives and Children in Waggon to be Witnesses of their Victory, of which they thought themselves sure. But to their great Disappointment and Confusion, the *Romans* attacked them with such Bravery and Firmness, that after a bloody Battle they were entirely defeated and put to Flight; and now in Return the *Roman* Soldiers spare neither Age nor Sex, but sacrifice to their Revenge the

Women and Children, and even the very Horses. In this Battle *Tacitus* assures us 80,000 *Britons* were slain, with the Loss only of 400 *Romans*, and as many wounded. *Boadicea* escaped the Conqueror's Hands, but through Grief and Shame ended her Days by Poison.

The *Britons* were by this Defeat reduced to so miserable a Condition, that the *Romans*, who a little after received a large Reinforcement from *Germany*, would in all Probability have soon completed the Conquest of the Island, if Diffentions had not arose among themselves. This, together with the Confusions that happened in the Empire, gave the *Britons* some Respite, so that very little of Importance was transacted till towards the End of *Vespasian's* Reign. *A. D.* 78, when *Julius Agricola*, a brave and prudent Commander, was sent into *Britain*, who in several Campaigns gained great Advantages over the Enemy, proceeding farther and farther towards the Northern Parts of the Island, conquering as he went, and building Forts and planting Garrisons to secure his Conquests; till in the seventh and last Campaign he engaged the *British* General *Galgacus* near the *Grampian* Mountain, and entirely defeated him, killing 10,000 *Britons* in the Action, with the Loss of no more than about 300 *Romans*. This gave the finishing Stroke to the Liberty of *Britain*; for now all that Part of the Island lying South of the two *Friiths* of *Glota* and *Bodotria*, now called *Dunbritton* and *Edinburgh*, was reduced to a *Roman* Province.

To make some amends for the Loss of their Liberty, if any Thing can be supposed to do that, the *Britons* now began to be much civilized. They laid aside in great Measure their former rude and savage Ways, and imitated the politer Manners of their Conquerors. Arts and Sciences began



began to flourish, and many noble Structures were raised. The *British* Nobles pride themselves in speaking the *Latin* Tongue, and affect to dress after the Manner of the *Romans*; and in short, as *Tacitus* observes, esteem those things as Marks of Politeness, which were only Badges of their Slavery. For under all these fine Trappings they were no better than Slaves; exorbitant Taxes were laid upon them, their Estates were taken from them and given to the Veterans that were continually coming to settle here; and the Flower of their Youth were made Soldiers, and dispersed in the other Provinces of the Empire.

From this Time to the first Year of the Emperor *Adrian*, we have but a slender Account of what passed in *Britain*. The Inhabitants who were subject to the *Romans* seem for the most part to have been quiet under their Servitude, and those of the North to have enjoyed their Liberty in Peace, without giving any Disturbance to their Neighbours. But now (about the year 117) these People, a Mixture, as supposed, of *Picts* (who some think were only the ancient *North Britons*, and called *Picts* from their still painting their Bodies) *Scots* who came originally from *Ireland*, and *Britons* who fled from the *Roman* Invasion, all which seem to be confounded by the *Roman* Historians under the Name of *Caledonians*, made an Irruption into the *Roman* Province, after having demolished some of *Agricola's* Fortresses. This brought *Adrian* into *Britain*, upon the News of whose Arrival the Enemy retired to the North, and *Adrian* thinking it not advisable to pursue them, left the *Caledonians* all the Country between the two *Friths* and the *Tine*, in Hopes by thus enlarging their Bounds, to keep them quiet: But, at the same Time, to secure the Subjects of the Empire

from their Incursions, he caused a Rampart of Earth to be thrown up, covered with Turf, from the Mouth of the *Tine* to *Solway-Frith*, eighty Miles in Length from East to West, quite across the Country.

But after *Adrian's* Departure, these northern People soon renewed their Ravages, and in the Reign of *Antoninus Pius*, A. D. 138, destroyed the Rampart in several Places. Upon this he orders *Lollius Urbicus* to go and quell them, who having forced them to retire, raised another Rampart on the Neck of Land between the two *Friths*, where *Agricola* had formerly built his Fortresses, and so confined them within narrower Bounds. But they remained quiet no longer than till they had an Opportunity to begin their Incursions again, to which they were greatly encouraged by the Want of Discipline in the *Roman* Army, which now, through their enjoying several Years Peace, began to prevail amongst them. *Calphurnius Agricola* suppressed the Insolence of these northern Invaders in the Reign of *Marcus Aurelius*; as *Ulpus Marcellus* did under *Commodus*.

I shall observe here, that the *Romans* permitted the *Britons* to have Kings of their own, being fond of having such for their Subjects; and that about this Time one of them, named *Lucius*, is said to have embraced the Christian Religion, which had before obtained some Footing in this Island. But the Accounts of these Things are mixed with a great deal of Fable.

In the Reign of *Severus*, A. D. 205, the *Caledonians* renewed their Incursions, and made such Progress, that the Emperor resolved to go in Person against them. Accordingly he set out for *Britain* with a numerous Army, and with infinite Toil penetrated to the utmost Bounds of the North, cutting down Woods, draining

A.D. 138.



draining Bogs, or filling them with Bays, and notwithstanding all Difficulties, subdued this fierce and hitherto unconquered People. In this Expedition he lost no less than 50,000 Men; but as he could not keep the Country in Subjection without a great Army always on the Spot, he relinquished his Conquests, and contented himself with dividing the Island into two Parts by a Wall, in the Place where *Adrian* threw up his Rampart. This Wall was of Freestone, and was called by the antient *Britons* *Mur-sever*, i. e. *Severus's Wall*, and by the *English* the *Piæ's Wall*, because it parted the *Piæ's* from the *Britons*. The Remains of it may still be traced for above 68 Miles: There were Castles and Turrets upon it at proper Distances. The legionary Soldiers were employed in building it. A stupendous Work! which shews the surprizing Art, and indefatigable Industry of the *Romans*! *Severus*, after this, ended his Days at *York*.

I have now given an Account of the chief Transactions of the *Romans* in *Britain*, and shall be more brief in what remains, as the Accounts from this Time are indeed but short, and for the most Part confused and perplexed; and to tell barely the Names of all the Emperors that reigned, or all the Governors of *Britain*, whilst it was under the Dominion of the *Romans*, is very little to the Purpose; or to mention any Thing relating to the Emperors, wherein *Britain* was not concerned. The Emperor *Probus* sent over great Numbers of *Vandals* and *Burgundians* into *Britain*, who were of great Use in quelling Insurrections. This was about the Year 276. In the Beginning of *Dioclesian's* Reign, Anno 285, *Carausius*, with a Fleet under his Command, scoured the Seas of the piratical *Franks* and *Saxons*, who infested the

*Belgick*, *Armorican* and *British* Coasts; and afterwards coming into *Britain*, assumed the Title of Emperor there, as several other *Roman* Commander in *Britain* did after him, though they generally proved unfortunate.

The Emperor *Constantius*, about the Year 307, came over into *Britain* to quell some Commotions, and died at *York*, as he was going upon an Expedition against the northern People, now called *Deucaledonians* and *Vesturians*. His Son and Successor *Constantine*, some think, was born in *Britain*: During whose Reign the Island enjoyed a perfect Tranquillity; and as he was the first Christian Emperor, he granted the Liberty of professing that Religion throughout the Empire, which the *Britons* of consequence enjoyed. He divided the Empire into four *Præfectures*, *Britain* being subject to the *Præfect* of *Gaul*, and governed by a *Vicar* or *Deputy* under him. This Emperor also divided *Britain*, so much of it as was under the *Romans*, into three Provinces, viz. *Britannia Prima*, containing all South of the *Thames*, the Capital *London*; *Britannia Secunda*, all West of the *Severn* to the *Irish* Sea, now called *Wales*, the Capital *Isca*, or *Caerleon*; and *Maxima Cæsariensis*, containing all Northward of the *Thames* and Eastward of the *Severn*, the Capital *York*. This last was afterwards subdivided into two Parts, the southern Part retaining the old Name of *Maxima Cæsariensis*, and the northern being called *Flavia Cæsariensis*.

The next Thing remarkable was under *Valentinian I.* An. 364, when the Island being wretchedly harrassed by the joint Attacks of the *Piæ's*, *Scots*, *Attacots* (which some think were the wild and mountainous *Britons*) and *Saxons*, *Theodosius*, Father of the first Emperor of that Name, was sent to command in *Britain*, who dividing his Army into three Bodies,

Bodies, defeated the Enemies dispersed in the Island in several Encounters, and at last drove them out of the Roman Province, and even beyond the two *Fritths*, where he built Fortresses to keep them at a greater Distance; and thus he enlarged the Roman Territories, by a considerable Tract of Land, which he made a fifth Province, calling it *Valentia*, in Honour of *Valentinian*. Having thus happily finished his Work, he returned in Triumph to *London*, repaired and beautified it, and gave it the Name of *Augusta*.

In the next Reign, *Maximus* was sent into *Britain*, who formed a Design of reducing the whole Island under the Roman Jurisdiction; but being disgusted at *Gratian's* associating *Theodosius* the Younger in the Empire, thinking himself more deserving, he assumed the Imperial Purple, and quitted *Britain* in order to oppose *Gratian*, leading almost all the Roman Forces into *Gaul*, with a large Body of such *Britons* as were fit to bear Arms. This exceedingly weakened the Province, and exposed it to every Attack. Though *Maximus* caused *Gratian* to be assassinated, and dethroned *Valentinian II.* who was joint Emperor, yet he was afterwards defeated and put to Death by *Theodosius*, who at last remained sole Master of the Empire, and during his Reign the *Picts* lived peaceably without molesting the *Britons*.

93. But after his Death, *An. 393*, the *Scots* from *Ireland*, and the *Picts* and *Scots* from the North, again invaded the Roman Province, and the Saxon Pirates exceedingly infested the Coasts. The *Picts* and *Scots* having taken the Fortresses built by *Theodosius*, advanced to *Severus's* Wall; and there being not Forces enough left by the Romans to defend a Wall of such a Length, they with little Opposition proceeded farther towards the South, and laid waste the Country.

The *Britons* were now in the utmost Distress, and sent several Messengers to the Emperor *Honorius*, imploring his Assistance. But the Romans were now too much taken up with their own Affairs to think of *Britain*. The Empire was invaded on all Sides by the *Goths*, *Vandals*, *Suevi*, *Cotti*, and *Alani*; and *Alarick* the *Goth* had taken and sacked *Rome* itself. *Honorius* therefore to free himself at once from the Importunities of the *Britons*, discharged them from their Allegiance to the Empire. This was in the Year 410. And though afterwards, in the Reign of *Valentinian III.* the Romans out of Compassion sent them a Legion, which did them considerable Service for the Time, driving back the *Picts* and *Scots* to their own Country; yet it was soon recalled, the Roman Commander plainly telling them that hereafter they were to expect no farther Assistance from the Emperor, and exhorting them to provide for their own Defence. Thus ended the Jurisdiction of the Romans in *Britain*, 464 Years after *Julius Caesar's* first Invasion, 367 after they got Possession under *Claudius*, and about 330 after *Agricola* extended their Conquests under *Vespasian* and his Son *Titus*. The *Britons*, from the Time of their Subjection to the Roman Yoke, are to be considered as a mixt People, many Roman Families and other Foreigners coming over, and incorporating themselves with the Natives.

Christianity had been generally received in *Britain* long before the Romans left it. Many Churches were built. Many suffered Martyrdom, of whom *St. Alban* was the first, in the Persecution under *Dioclesian*. But both Clergy and Laity soon became very corrupt in their Manners, to which *Gildas* and *Bede* ascribe the terrible Calamities that afterwards befel them.

For

According to Hume 503 yrs after J. Caesar's Invasion (A.D. 448.)

For a Conclusion of this Period, I shall observe, that whilst the Romans continued Masters of Britain, they made several publick Ways, the Remains of which are still to be seen, viz. the *Via Vetelingiana*, now

called *Watling-street*; *Via Icenorum*, or *Ikenild-street*; *Erming-street*, and the *Foss-Way*; two of which ran through the Breadth, and two through the Length of that Part of the Island which was subject to the Romans.

### *The Arrival of the SAXONS, and their Settlement in Britain.*

UPON the Romans quitting the Island, the *Picts* and *Scots* began to harraßs the *Britons* with more Fury than ever. They attacked *Severus's* Wall, that had been repaired, broke it down in several Places, and made frequent Inroads upon their Neighbours, who were forced by this Means to abandon Part of their Country, and retire farther southward. At last the poor *Britains* sued for Peace, which they obtained upon very hard Terms; for all the Country North of the *Humber* was to be delivered up to the *Picts* and *Scots*, who accordingly took Possession of it; and some Time after taking Advantage of the Discords and Divisions among the *Britons*, occasioned by the Contentions among their several petty Kings or Leaders, they broke the Treaty, and passing the *Humber*, laid waste the Country in a terrible Manner. In this melancholy Situation the *Britons* once more sent to the Romans humbly to implore their Assistance, but in vain, the Affairs of the Empire not permitting it. In this Extremity the miserable *Britons* resolve to elect a Monarch, as the best Means to unite them and heal their Divisions, that they might the more unanimously turn their whole Force against the common Enemy. But this had not the desired Effect, the petty Kings still contending for the Sovereignty. At last, about the Year 445, *Vortigern*, Count or King of the *Danmonii*, who was the most powerful, as well

as the most ambitious, was chosen; and by his Advice, the *Britons* at length agreed upon an Expedient which in the End proved their Destruction. This was to call in the warlike *Saxons*, a People of Germany, to their Aid against the *Picts* and *Scots*.

Pursuant to this Resolution, Ambassadors were sent over, and *Witigifil*, the Saxon General, having convened an Assembly to hear what they had to say; it was agreed to grant them 9000 Men, and *Hengist* and *Horsa*, the Sons of *Witigifil*, were appointed to command them. However, at first they only shipped off Part of the Number, who arrived, in the Year 449, under the Conduct of the two Brothers above mentioned, at *Ebbesfleet* in the Isle of *Thanet* in *Kent*, and were immediately put in Possession of that Island, which had before been agreed upon. The *Picts* and *Scots* were by this Time advanced as far as *Stamford* in *Lincolnshire*, and the *Saxons*, after having a little refreshed themselves, marched against them with such Success, that they forced them to retire by Degrees into their own Country.

It must be observed, that though the wretched Condition of the *Britons* made them agree to *Vortigern's* Proposal of calling in the *Saxons*, yet his chief View in it was to establish his own Power, and to secure himself from any Designs that might be formed against him, either by those who were dissatisfied with his Govern-



Government, or were ambitious of raising themselves to the same supreme Authority. Hence he used all his Arts to win over the Saxons to his Side, and allowed them such Advantages as at last made his Countrymen suspicious of him, and apprehend that what was designed by them for their Deliverance from their Enemies, the *Picts* and *Scots*, might end in their Ruin by these new Comers, to whom *Vortigern* had already given some Lands in *Lincolnshire*. On the other Hand, *Hengist* began to hope, from the Weakness of the Britons, that he should be able to procure a Settlement in the Island, and to this End endeavoured to make his Advantage of the Fears and Ambition of *Vortigern*, and so wrought upon him, by representing the Danger he was in from the Disaffection of his Subjects, as to persuade him to send over for the rest of the Saxons that were designed for Britain. Accordingly they arrived the next Year in sixteen large Vessels, and with them *Escus* the eldest Son, and *Rowena*, the Niece of *Hengist*.

Upon this *Vortigern* grew more absolute and haughty towards his Subjects, and he and *Hengist* entered into a strict Friendship, as each stood in need of the other to accomplish his particular Views. But they differed in this, that whereas *Vortigern* was a weak Prince, and easily deluded, *Hengist* was sharp-sighted, and made the Monarch's Weakness in every Thing subservient to his Designs. Finding *Vortigern* was of an amorous Disposition, he contrived an Interview between him and his Niece, the beautiful *Rowena*; with whose Charms being smitten, he resolved to marry her, and to that End divorced his former Wife, and complied so far as to give *Hengist* and *Horfa* the entire Sovereignty of *Kent*, with Leave to people it with Saxons.

The Britons murmured in vain against these Proceedings, *Vortigern* and *Hengist* being resolved to stand by each other; and the crafty Saxon, that he might be the better enabled to cope with them, and even at last to act without *Vortigern*, so wrought upon his Fears and Jealousies, that he consented to the bringing over more Saxon Forces, who, in 452, arrived in great Numbers under the Command of *Oda*, Brother to *Hengist*, who brought his Son *Ebusa* along with him, and settled themselves in the North. *Hengist* had now nothing to fear from the Britons, and began to shew less Respect to *Vortigern*, sending for continual Supplies from Germany without asking his Leave. And now having brought Matters to bear, he complained that the Saxon Soldiers were not paid according to the Agreement, demanded their Arrears, and threatened to do himself Justice if they were not speedily paid.

The Britons now, tho' late, were effectually roused out of their Lethargy; and perhaps it had not been too late, if they could have agreed among themselves better than they had done ever since they had been a People: But all their Efforts for freeing themselves from their foreign Enemies, were unhappily defeated, as had all along been the Case, by their own intestine Divisions. Their first Struggle with the Saxons, whom now they plainly saw, under the Pretence of friendly Auxiliaries, to have a Design of establishing themselves in their Country, was under *Vortimer*, eldest Son to *Vortigern*. Their Business was now to endeavour to drive out as Enemies, those whom they had invited over as Friends; and in the first Battle, which was fought in 455, and in which *Horfa* was slain, they are said to have got the better of the Saxons, and in the next to have lost all again. At length

*Ambrosius*,

*Ambrosius*, who was of Roman Extraction, was by a great Party set up as their Leader; but here ensued a Civil War between his Party and *Vortimer's*, in which the *Britons* miserably harrassed one another, whilst the *Saxons* made their Advantage of these Divisions, and grew stronger and stronger, having at the same Time struck up a Peace with the *Picts*, the more effectually to annoy the *Britons*. However, after a twenty Years War, at the End of which *Vortimer* died, both Sides were inclined to Peace, which was concluded in 475, on Condition each Party should keep what they had got. For it must be noted, that the *Britons* by this Time became expert in War, and by long Exercise had learnt of their Enemies the *Saxons*, the military Art, which the *Romans* had endeavoured to make them forget: And so they became at last a Match for the *Saxons*, and would certainly have got the better of them, if their Civil Broils, and the *Saxons* being continually reinforced from *Germany*, had not prevented it.

The Peace continued not long. *Hengist* could not relish being disappointed in his Design of making himself Master of *Britain*, and therefore, finding himself not able as yet to accomplish it by Force of Arms, had recourse to Treachery. He caused 300 *British* Nobles to be assassinated and murdered, whom he had invited to an Entertainment, whilst Friendship seemed to subsist between the two Nations. This made the *Britons* hate the *Saxons* more than ever, and a War soon ensued, in which the *Britons* first under *Ambrosius*, and then under the famous *Arthur*, (of whom so many romantick Stories are told, that some have questioned whether ever there was any such Person) obtained many signal Victories over the *Saxons*; but the Misfortune was, that

the *Britons* were wasted and diminished by this long War, and the *Saxons* were continually recruited by the coming over of vast Numbers of their Nation, and of *Jutes* and *Angles*, who with the *Saxons* made as it were one People in *Germany*, as they did afterwards in *Britain*; and were all together commonly called *Saxons*, and *Anglo-Saxons*. By this Means, the *Britons* were at length, after the Death of the above-mentioned Princes, who both fell in Battle, entirely subdued; to which they not a little contributed by their own Dissentions, occasioned by the ambitious Struggles for Pre eminence among their Leaders. The Particulars of this War I shall omit, which are very confusedly related by Historians; and shall only take Notice of some principal Events, and how the *Saxons* were from Time to Time reinforced from *Germany*, till they obtained a compleat Settlement in this Island.

In the Year 477, *Ella*, a *Saxon* General, at the Invitation of *Hengist*, arrived in *Britain*, with his Sons *Baldulphus*, *Colgrin* and *Issa*. He landed his Troops at *Whitering* in *Suffex*, and after some Opposition from the *Britons*, settled them by Degrees along the southern Coast; and so they were called *Sud*, or *South-Saxons*, and their Country *Suffex*. Those that *Hengist* had established in the *East*, were called *East-Saxons*, and their Country *Effex*; and the Country between these two was termed *Middlesex*. *Kent* retained its antient Name, which was perhaps the only one the *Saxons* did not alter.

*Vortigern* being pursued by *Ambrosius*, as an enemy to his Country, fled to a Castle in *Wales*, where being besieged, the Castle took Fire, and was burnt to the Ground, and the unhappy *Vortigern* perished in the Flames, about the Year 485.



18. In the Year 488, the famous *Hengist* died, aged about sixty-nine Years, thirty-nine of which he had passed in *Britain*, and the last thirty-three as King of *Kent*. Soon after, *Ella* took on himself the Title of King of *Sussex*, or of the *South-Saxons*.

5. In the Year 495, *Cerdick*, another *Saxon* General, arrived in *Britain*, with his Son *Kenrick*, and having firmly settled himself, after many bloody Battles for the Space of above twenty Years, assumed the Title of King of *Wessex*, or of the *West-Saxons*, which Kingdom at last became the Head of all the rest. From him were descended the Kings of *England*, in the Male Line, down to *Edward the Confessor*, and in the Female, down to his present Majesty. *George the 3<sup>d</sup>*.

1. In 501, a new Reinforcement of *Saxons* came over from *Germany* under the Conduct of *Porta*. And not long after, the *Saxons* considering, that whilst their Troops were divided, they run the Risk of losing in one Place what they gained in another, resolved to unite all their Forces, the better to withstand the Progress of *Arthur*; which accordingly they did, and made *Cerdick* General of the whole Army.

4. In 514, a new Supply of *Saxon* Troops arrived under *Stuff* and *Withgar*, Nephews to *Cerdick*. And in 527, *Erchenwin* assumed the Title of King of *Essex*, or of the *East-Saxons*.

7. About this Time, great Numbers of *Angles*, under the Conduct of *Uffa*, and eleven other Chiefs, landed somewhere on the eastern Coast of *Britain*, where continually gaining Ground, and sending for fresh Colonies from *Germany*, they at length founded the Kingdom of the *East-Angles*.

10. In the Year 530, *Cerdick* attacked and conquered the *Isle of Wight*, cruelly destroying almost all the In-

habitants. And not long after, he sent into *Germany* to invite over all who had a mind to come and settle in his Kingdom: Accordingly 800 Vessels arrived in his Ports, on board of which were vast Numbers of *Saxons* and *Jutes* with their Families, who seated themselves in his Territories, in the Room of the *Britons* whom he had expelled.

In 534, *Cerdick* died, sixteen Years after his Coronation, and thirty-nine after his Arrival in *Britain*.

After *Arthur's* Death, the dismayed *Britons* had neither Courage nor Power to defend themselves, upon which great Numbers of People resolved to go over and settle in *Britain*. *Ida*, and *Angle*, accordingly arrived, with a great many of his Countrymen, who landed in *Yorkshire* among the *Northumbrian Saxons*, and were received by them as Friends: And *Ida* finding they were willing to obey him, got himself acknowledged by them as well as by those he brought over with him, King of *Northumberland*, so called because it lay North of the *Humber*. He died in the Year 559, after a Reign of twelve Years, and after his Death the Kingdom of *Northumberland* was divided into two Parts, *Bernicia* to the North, and *Deira* to the South.

*Keaulin*, the third King of the *West-Saxons*, being an ambitious Prince, formed Designs of enlarging his Dominions, and in order to effect it, turned his Arms against his Countrymen, and began the first Civil War among the *Saxons*; which the *Britons* might have improved very much to their Advantage, could they have been united, and had their Chiefs had more Regard to the publick, than their own private Interest.

About this Time lived *Gildas*, a Monk of *Banger*, who wrote a Treatise,

534

559

*Gildas the Monk*

tise, entitled, *De Excidio Britanniae*, Of the Destruction of Britain; wherein he boldly censures the *British* Princes in his Time, viz. those who after the Death of *Arthur* divided the Country into several petty States.

In the Year 571, *Uffa* took the Title of King of the *East-Angles*.

*Keaulin* having brought the Kings of *Kent*, *Essex*, and *Suffex* to submit to him, turned his Arms against the *Britons*, and in a seven Years War extremely weakened them.

The poor *Britons* were now at the last Gasps, and their utter Destruction seemed to be at hand. In this Extremity they applied to the *Scots* for their Assistance, who accordingly joined them, and in the first Battle beat *Keaulin's* Army; but in the second were entirely defeated in their Turn, the *Scots* being obliged to retire into their own Country, and the distressed *Britons* left to shift for themselves.

To compleat their Ruin, in the Year 584 *Crida* arrived with a larger Fleet than any that had before come from *Germany*, bringing over a vast Number of *Angles*. He advanced towards the Middle of the Island, driving the *Britons* before him

wherever he came; and out of his Conquests founded the Kingdom of the *Middle Angles*, or *Mercians*, larger than any of the others.

The *Britons* now took to their last Refuge, which was to retreat into *Cambria*, where they remain to this Day, which the *Saxons* called *Wal-lish-Land*, that is, *Gaulish-Land*, as supposing the *Britons* to be of *Gaulish* Extraction, as very probably they were; and which the *English* now call *Wales*, a Country defended by Nature, and which was afterwards divided into several petty Kingdoms. But this small Part of the Island not being sufficient for such Numbers of Families, a great many fled beyond the Seas, and others became Slaves to the *Saxons* for a miserable Subsistence.

Thus the *Saxons*, *Jutes*, and *Angles*, or as they are all together called *Anglo Saxons*, obtained a compleat Settlement in the Island, after a War of about 130 Years, and with one Consent gave the Name of *England*, that is, the *Land of the Angles*, to the seven Kingdoms they had established, of which I shall next give some Account.

### Of the Saxon HEPTARCHY.

**B**EFORE I proceed, I shall observe, that the Island of *Britain*, divided into several Kingdoms, was now possessed by four different Nations, these were, 1. The *Britons* or *Wells*, under whom are comprised, all those Foreigners, whether *Romans* or others, settled in the Island since the Reign of *Claudius*, and afterwards incorporated with the Natives so as to make one People with them. After the Establishment of the *Anglo-Saxons*, these *Britons* were confined to *Cambria* or *Wales*, and the wes-

tern Part of *Danmonium*, i. e. *Corn-wall*; and henceforward, with regard to the History of *England*, are only to be considered as a neighbouring Nation. 2. The *Picts*, who inhabited the East Part of what is now called *Scotland*. 3. The *Scots*, who inhabited the Western Part. 4. The *Saxons*, *Angles*, and *Jutes*, all comprehended under the Name of the *English*, who now had all the Southern Part of *Britain*, from the Channel to *Severus's* Wall, and a little beyond, towards the East. This was divided



divided into seven Kingdoms, thence called the *Heptarchy*, of which the *Saxons* and *Jutes* had those of *Kent*, *Essex*, *Sussex*, and *Wessex*; the *Angles*, those of *Mercia* and *East-Anglia*; and the *Saxons* and *Angles* together, that of *Northumberland*.

These seven Kingdoms, though so many distinct, independent Sovereignities, yet were in some Respects united into one Body or State; the Bond of which Union was their General in Chief, or Monarch, as he is called, chosen by the unanimous Consent of all the seven Kingdoms. They had also their *Wittenagemot*, or *Assembly of Wise Men*, for regulating the Affairs of the *Heptarchy* in general; and besides this, each Kingdom had its *Convention*, for managing its own particular Concerns. So that the *Heptarchical* Government was somewhat like that of the *United Provinces*; and the Chief, or Monarch, seems to have resembled a *Dutch Stadtholder*.

No History, perhaps, is more confused, uncertain and defective, than that of the *Heptarchy*. The Accounts are to be had only from Monkish Writers, whose Business was purely to give a History of Monasteries founded in this Period, of the Affairs of the Church, and how terribly both Church and Monasteries suffered from Pagan Ravagers. 'Tis on this Account that they relate the Wars of these Times, which they do without any Order or Method, and describe them more like the savage Encounters of wild Beasts than of Men; and they mention other Affairs, only occasionally, for the Sake of their favourite Point the Monasteries, so that no Perspicuity or Regularity is to be expected, either in the Civil or Military Transactions of these Times. Instead, therefore, of raking into this Heap of Rubbish, I shall content myself with giving the Extent, Boundaries,

Duration, &c. of these seven Kingdoms, and relating a few principal Occurrences. And by this Means I shall have more Room, in the narrow Compass I have prescribed to myself, for Things of greater Certainty and Importance.

The Kingdom of *Kent*, <sup>v. p. 23. 24.</sup> containing no more than that County, was the first that was founded, being about 60 Miles long and 30 broad. It had the Sea to the South and East, the *Thames* to the North, and the Kingdom of *Sussex* to the West. It began in 455, under *Hengist*, and ended under *Baldred*, the 17th King, in whose Reign being conquered by *Egbert*, it became a Province to the Kingdom of *Wessex*, about the Year 825. The Kingdom of *Kent* made but little Figure in the *Heptarchy*, except in the Reign of *Hengist* the first King, and *Ethelbert*, who was the fifth, a very powerful Prince, and remarkable for being the first King of the *Anglo-Saxons* who embraced Christianity; towards which his Marriage with *Britha*, Daughter of the King of *Paris*, who was a Christian, contributed not a little; and Pope *Gregory I.* laying hold of this Opportunity, sent over forty *Benedictine* Monks, with *Austin* at their Head, who by their Preaching first converted the King and several of his principal Subjects, and afterwards Numbers of other *Saxons*. This was in the Year 598. But it must be noted, that Christianity was then greatly corrupted. It was planted here among our *Saxon* Ancestors by these Missionaries, with all those superstitious Corruptions with which it had been mixed, and particularly a vast Veneration for Monasteries and the monastick Life. In about sixty Years after the Arrival of *Austin*, all *England* was converted, the Kingdom of *Mercia* being the last that embraced the new Religion, but not by the Preaching

The Seven Kingdoms

1. Kent.  
began  
455

ended 825

not S. Austin  
the Father

598

658

of *Austin*. And thus the Saxons, of gross Idolaters, became not very pure Christians. This *Austin* was the first Archbishop of *Canterbury*; and though he has run away with all the Honour of converting the *English* Nation, yet the Progress he made was not so considerable as has been imagined; the *Scotch* Monks of *St. Columba* having as great a Share in the Work as he and his Companions.

*Suffex*  
gan 491  
The Kingdom of *Suffex*, or the *South-Saxons*, began under *Ella* in 491. About the Year 590, *Keaulin*, King of *Wessæx*, got Possession of it. After this they made several Attempts to regain their Liberty, and were sometimes successful, but as often reduced by the *West-Saxon* Kings; till at last, about the Year 760, this Kingdom was so entirely subdued, that it was ever after considered as a Province of *Wessæx*. It contained only the two Counties of *Suffex* and *Surrey*, being not above 50 Miles long and 40 broad. It was bounded on the North by the *Thames*, on the South by the Sea, on the East by the Kingdom of *Kent*, and on the West by *Wessæx*. *Adelvalch* was the first King of this little Kingdom who embraced the Christian Religion.

*Wessæx*  
519  
800  
827  
The third Kingdom in order of Time was that of *Wessæx*, or the *West-Saxons*, which began under *Cerdick*, in 519, and ended only as a separate Kingdom under *Egbert*, who began his Reign in the Year 800, and about twenty-seven Years after compleated the Dissolution of the *Heptarchy*, by reducing all the other Kingdoms to his Obedience, and becoming Master of the Whole. It was, as appears from hence, one of the most powerful of the seven Kingdoms, containing the Counties of *Devon*, *Dorset*, *Somerſet*, *Wilts*, *Berks*, and *Southampton*; the *Ile of Wight* being also dependent on it. It was situate South of the *Thames*, in Breadth about seventy Miles, and

in Length 150, from *Suffex* to *Cornwall*. As *Northumberland* and *Mercia* were the two other Kingdoms that exceeded the rest in Grandeur and Power, there were long and frequent Contests between these three Kingdoms which should be Head over all the rest, till at last *Wessæx* prevailed, as has been already mentioned. *Cinigifil*, who was the sixth King, was the first Christian King of this Kingdom, who embraced that Religion in 635. *Ina* was not only one of the most famous Kings of *Wessæx*, but of the whole *Heptarchy*. He made a Body of Laws, entitled, *West-Saxon Leaga*, which served as a rough Draught to *Alfred the Great*. About 727 he laid a Tax of a Penny on every Family in *Wessæx* and *Suffex*, to be sent yearly to *Rome*, under the Name of *Rome-Scot*; as some Time after, *Offa*, King of *Mercia*, laid the same on *Mercia* and *East-Anglia*, calling it *Peter Pence* because it was to be paid on the Holiday of *St. Peter ad vincula*, Aug. 1. This Tax was only for the Support of a College at *Rome*, founded by *Ina* for the Education of *English* Youth; tho' in Process of Time the Popes claimed it as a Tribute due to *St. Peter* and his Successors. *Ina* at last quitted his Crown and turned Monk, which was deemed a Mark of extraordinary Piety in those Days, and was practised by many Kings and great Men. In the Reign of *Brithrick*, *Egbert's* immediate Predecessor, the *Danes* made their first Descent on the Kingdom of *Wessæx*, about the Year 790; of whom we shall hear more hereafter.

The Kingdom of *Essæx*, or of the *East-Saxons*, was bounded on the North by *East-Anglia*, on the East by the *German Ocean*, on the South by the *Thames*, and on the West by *Mercia*. Its greatest Length was 65 Miles, and its greatest Breadth 38, containing the Counties of *Essæx* and *Middlesex*,



*Middlesex*, and Part of *Hertfordshire*. It began under *Erchenwin*, in 527, and was at last conquered by *Egbert*, the *West-Saxon*, soon after he had conquered *Kent*. *Sabert*, the third King, was the first Christian King of *Essex*.

The Kingdom of *Northumberland*, or of the *Northumbrians*, contained the Counties of *Lancaster*, *Cumberland*, *Westmoreland*, *Northumberland*, *York*, and *Durham*; its greatest Length 160 Miles, and greatest Breadth 60. It was bounded on the South by the *Humber*, on the West by the *Irish* Sea, on the North by the Country of the *Picts* and *Scots*, and on the East by the *German* Ocean. It began under *Ida* in 547, and was the last Kingdom that submitted to *Egbert*, who put an End to the *Heptarchy*, about the Year 827. *Northumberland* being divided into two Kingdoms after the Death of *Ida*, viz. *Bernicia* and *Deira*, there were frequent Quarrels between them. *Edwin*, a powerful Prince, was the first Christian King of *Northumberland*. *Adelfrid* his Predecessor, in 613, massacred 1200 Monks of *Bangor*, and destroyed that famous Monastery, having obtained a signal Victory over the *Welsh* near *Chester*. After this, *Penda* King of *Mercia*, and *Cadwallow* King of *Wales*, joining together against the *Northumbrians*, exceedingly distressed and harrassed them. *Oswald* was a Prince of great Character, and reunited the two Kingdoms of *Northumberland*; he was afterwards slain in Battle, and his Body inhumanly treated by *Penda*, at *Osweestre* in *Shropshire*. *Bede*, a *Saxon* Monk and Priest, having wrote an Ecclesiastical History of *England* from the Coming in of the *Saxons* to the Year 731, dedicated it to *Ceolulph* King of *Northumberland*, at whose Request he wrote it.


The sixth Kingdom was that of *East-Anglia*, founded by *Uffa* in 571. It contained the two Coun-


ties of *Norfolk* and *Suffolk*, and Part of *Cambridgeshire*; bounded on the North by the *Humber*, and the *German* Ocean, on the East by the same Ocean, on the South by the Kingdom of *Essex*, and on the West by *Mercia*; its greatest Length 80 Miles, and greatest Breadth 55. *Redowald*, a most famous Prince, was the first Christian King, but Christianity was afterwards more firmly re-established in *East-Anglia* by *Sigebert*, about the Year 640. *Offa* King of *Mercia* put King *Ethelbert* to Death, in order to seize his Kingdom, in 792; after which, *East-Anglia* and *Mercia* made but one Kingdom, and at last both together became subject to *Egbert*.

The Kingdom of *Mercia* was the seventh and last that was founded, and was so called from the *Saxon* Word *Merk*, a *Bound*, because it served as a Boundary to all the other Kingdoms. It was the largest of the *Heptarchy*, being 160 Miles long, and about 100 broad; containing the Counties of *Lincoln*, *Nottingham*, *Derby*, *Rutland*, *Leicester*, *Huntingdon*, *Stafford*, *Warwick*, *Northampton*, *Oxford*, *Buckingham*, *Bedford*, Part of *Hertfordshire*, and Part of *Gloucestershire*, *Worcestershire*, *Salop*, and *Cheshire*. It was bounded on the North by the *Humber*, which parted it from *Northumberland*, on the West by the *Severn*, beyond which were the *Britons* or *Welsh*; on the South by the *Thames* which divided it from the Kingdoms of *Kent*, *Suffex*, and *Wessex*; on the East by the Kingdoms of *Essex* and *East-Anglia*. It was founded by *Grida* in 585, and continued till *Egbert* got Possession of it, and consequently of *East-Anglia*. *Penda*, the fourth King of *Mercia*, was of a most restless Temper, and gave great Disturbance to several Kings of *Northumberland*, as also to the Kings of *Wessex* and *East-Anglia*. He lived and died a Pagan, but his

7. *Mercia*

Founded

 Son *Peda*, whom he made King of *Leicester*, embraced Christianity, and brought some Missionaries into *Mercia*, who preached with good Success. *Offa* was famous on several Accounts. He was not only Monarch or Chief of the *Heptarchy*, as some one of the seven Kings always was, but obtained several Victories over the neighbouring *Saxon* Kings; as he who was Monarch generally was ambitious of increasing his Power, and enlarging his Dominions, and even of bringing all the other Kingdoms under Subjection to himself. He also beat the *Welsh*, and not only forced them to abandon their Conquests in *Mercia*, but Part of their own Country beyond the *Severn*, which *Offa* peopled with *English*; and to prevent them from regaining it, he threw up a Rampart, defended by a large Ditch, in Length 24 Miles, from the Mouth of the *Dee*, to the Place where the *Wye* falls into the *Severn*, which was called *Offa's Dyke*. But this Glory was sullied by the treacherous Murder of *Ethelbert*, King of *East-Angles*. To atone for which he got *Alban the British* Martyr canonized a Saint, built a Church and Monastery at *Verulam*, which now began to be called *St. Alban's*, and was very liberal to the Priests and Monks, according to the Custom of atoning for the most flagitious Crimes in those Days.

 Thus have I given as clear and distinct an Account of these seven *Saxon* Kingdoms as was consistent with my designed Brevity, till they were all reduced to one Monarchy by *Egbert*, King of the *West-Saxons*, who is from this Time to be considered as King of all *England*. The *Mercians*, *East-Angles*, and *Northumbrians*, preserved indeed a Shadow of Liberty, and were allowed to have their own Kings, but tributary to *Egbert*. I have shewn how the Pagan Saxons, after having extirpated Christianity with the *Britons*, were

themselves converted to it; but the worst of it was, they were taught with it, Obedience to the Pope, and an unbounded Veneration for Monasteries, of which vast Numbers were founded during this Period. And in favour of these Superstitions a great many Miracles were pretended to be wrought, of which *Bede's* History is full, he being very credulous in such Matters. The *Heptarchy*, if we reckon from the founding of *Mercia*, the last of the seven Kingdoms, lasted 243 Years; from the Arrival of *Hengist*, 378. The Causes of its Dissolution were, the great Inequality amongst the seven Kingdoms; the Ambition of the Monarchs, who, as their Election was commonly procured by Force, were always desirous of carrying their Prerogatives, whatever they were, beyond their just Bounds, and of extending their Dominions, which occasioned almost continual Wars between the several Kingdoms; the intestine Divisions amongst themselves, especially in the large Kingdoms of *Mercia* and *Northumberland*, whose antient Race of Kings, as well as that of the other Kingdoms, except *Wessex*, being extinct, the Grandes aspiring to the Sovereignty exceedingly weakened the respective States; and lastly, the superior Genius of *Egbert*, his vast Abilities, and great Skill in Politics, which he acquired, or very much improved, during his twelve Years Abode in *France* at the Court of *Charles the Great*, whither he was forced to fly to avoid the treacherous Designs of *Brithrick*, who was jealous of his growing Parts, and shining Qualities. These joined to his natural Courage and Bravery, enabled him to execute his grand Design of uniting the seven Kingdoms into one Body under himself as their Head. Of this great Man and his Successors, as Kings of *England*, I am now to speak.

EGBERT,





## EGBERT, *the first King of England.* 800 to 836.

**E**GBERT, King of *Wessex*, became Monarch of *England*, by the Conquest of the other Kingdoms, in the Year 827 or 828, as has been already mentioned. Before he began the Reduction of the *Heptarchy*, he subdued the *Britons* in *Cornwall*, and also those of *Venedotia*, which was one of the three Kingdoms *Wales* was then divided into. After he was crowned King of all *England*, he reigned in Peace for some Time, enjoying the Fruits of his Victories. But in the Year 833, the piratical *Danes*, who had before made two Descents on *England*, viz. in 789, at *Portland*, and in 832, in the Isle of *Shepye* in *Kent*, which they laid waste, again arrived at *Charmouth* in *Dorsetshire*, with 35 Vessels, and meeting with no Opposition, furiously ravaged the Country. *Egbert*, upon the News of this unexpected Attack, marched against them with what Forces he could hastily draw together; but they standing their Ground,

instead of repairing to their Ships, as *Egbert* thought they would have done, after a long and bloody Battle, became victorious, and entirely routed the *English* Army, two *Saxon* Earls, *Dudda* and *Osmond*, being slain, and *Egbert* himself narrowly escaped with his Life by the favour of a dark Night. But the *Danes* having no Design at this Time to make Conquests, after plundering the Country, which was what alone they came for, repaired to their Ships and returned home.

Two Years after, viz. in 835, 835 another Body of *Danish* Pirates landed in *Cornwall*, and joining the *Cornish* *Britons*, who were very desirous of throwing off the *English* Yoke, they began their March to give King *Egbert* Battle; but were greatly surprized, when they heard that he was marching towards them with the same Intent. His former Disaster had made him more cautious, and so he kept his Army together, in order to march against them

them upon the first Notice of their Arrival. Accordingly coming up with them, he engaged them near *Hengist-dun*, now *Hengston-Hill*, in *Cornwall*, and obtained a compleat + Victory, which entirely made amends for his former Defeat.

We meet with but one remarkable Circumstance more in *Egbert's* Reign, which is his ordering, by a publick Edict, that so much of *Britain* as was possessed by the *Anglo-Saxons*, and of which he was now the Sovereign, should for the future be called *England*. But as there are sufficient Proofs, that this Name had been before used, and very probably by the Consent of the seven Kings, soon after the Establishment of the *Heptarchy*; no more is to be understood, but that *Egbert*, after he became Master of the Whole, by his Edict revived or confirmed the same. And indeed it is by no means natural to suppose, that this Name should be introduced by *Egbert*, who was a *Saxon*, and the Provinces of whose Kingdom were

peopled by *Saxons* and *Jutes*; but it is not at all strange, that the *Anglo-Saxons* should call the whole of their Conquests *England*, immediately after the founding of the seven Kingdoms, since the *Angles* possessed a larger and more considerable Part than both the *Saxons* and *Jutes*.

*Egbert* reigned in all 37 Years, 20 Years as King of *Wessex* only, 7 Years as Monarch or Chief of the seven Kingdoms, and 10 Years as real Monarch or King of all *England*. He died in the Year 838; or according to some in 836, or 837; and was buried at *Winchester*. His Character I have already mentioned. He was certainly a wise, politick and valiant Prince, and had all the Qualifications of a great and consummate General. He left behind him but one Son, *Ethelwulph*; though doubtless he had had another, since this was designed for Holy Orders. Some tell us he had also a Daughter, named *Edgith*, commonly called *St. Edith*, who founded the Abbey of *Pollesworth* in *Warwickshire*.

### ETHELWULPH. 836—857.

898 **E**thelwulph, *Egbert's* only surviving Son, succeeded his Father in the Year 838. He was a mild, and good-natured Prince, exceedingly addicted to the Religion of those Times, a Lover of Ease and Peace, and more inclined to a Cloyster, than a Court or a Camp. But the *Danes* would not let him rest long, and enjoy his beloved Indolence. He was but just seated on the Throne, when a Fleet of those Pagan Ravagers appeared off of *Southampton*, and landing, committed great Devastations. *Ethelwulph*, not inclined to go himself against them, sent *Wulford* his General, who forced them to return to their Ships. But before his Army

came back, he was informed that more *Danes* were landed at *Portland*. He sent Earl *Ethelheim* to command the Army against them, who was shamefully defeated and put to flight; and *Herbert*, who succeeded him as General, was not only beaten, but killed in the Battle. Upon this Success, the *Danes* overran several Counties, and *Canterbury*, *Rocheſter* and *London* were cruelly harrassed by them. At last, being satisfied with their Booty, they returned to their Ships.

In the Year 840, another Body 84 of *Danes* landed on the Coast of *Wessex*. And now *Ethelwulph*, notwithstanding his Aversion to War, marched



marched against them in Person; but had the Misfortune to be beaten, by which means the Enemy went off safe with their Plunder?

340 About this Time the Nation of the *Picts*, so formidable heretofore to the Southern *Britons*, were entirely extirpated by their Neighbours the *Scots*, after a long War between them; so that henceforth nothing remained but the Memory of that wretched People, once so famous in *Britain*.

*Ethelwulph*, wearied with the repeated Incurfions of the *Danes*, and having a great Affection for his natural Son *Athelstan*, delivered up to him *Kent*, *Essex*, and *Suffex*, with the Title of King of *Kent*, contenting himself with the Kingdom of *Wessex*, and the Sovereignty of all *England*.

The Factions that reigned in the tributary Kingdom of *Northumberland* gave the *Danes* great Advantage in those Parts, where they made several Descents, and carried off much Booty. And whilst they were thus employed there, the Southern Provinces had some Respite.

51 But in the Year 851 they landed on the Coast of *Wessex*, and after committing horrible Cruelties, they were met, as they were returning with their Spoils, by Earl *Ceorle*, then *Ethelwulph's* General, and totally routed. And a little after King *Athelstan* equipped a Fleet, engaged the *Danes* near *Sandwich*, and took nine of their Ships.

Notwithstanding these Discouragements, the Spring following they came up the *Thames*, with 300 Ships, and landed near *London*. After plundering the Country and pillaging the Towns, particularly *London*, they marched into *Mercia*, and defeated the Army which the tributary King *Bertulph* had brought against them: But having repassed the *Thames* in order to attack *Ethelwulph* and *Athel-*

*stan*, who were encamped near *Okely* in *Surrey*, a bloody Battle was there fought, in which the *English* gained the Day, and made such a terrible Slaughter of the *Danes*, that but few escaped. After this Battle we hear no more of *Athelstan*, so that probably he did not long survive this signal Victory, which was not a little owing to his Valour.

*Ethelwulph* now reigned alone again, tho' he had several legitimate Sons, capable of assisting him in the Government. The Victory of *Okely* having delivered him from the Fears of the *Danes*, he now had Opportunity to indulge his natural Bent to Devotion, which was very much heightened by *Sawithin*, Bishop of *Winchester*, who had always a great Ascendant over him, especially in Time of Peace; and by his Advice he is said to have granted to the Church the Tythes of all his Dominions. His Zeal for Religion also put him upon sending his youngest Son *Alfred*, for whom he had a great Affection, to *Rome*, for the Pope's Blessing, who is said also to have given him the *Royal Unction*, though probably it was only the *Chrism* used at the Ceremony of Confirmation.

*Ethelwulph* not satisfied with these Expressions of Devotion, about two Years after, viz. in 855, paid a Visit to the Pope in Person, to receive his Benediction. And here he caused the College of *Ina* and *Offa* to be rebuilt in a more magnificent Manner, and extended the Tax of *Peter-Pence* all over his Dominions, till then levied only in *Wessex* and *Mercia*. Having stayed a Year at *Rome*, he returned home thro' *France*, where he married *Judith*, Daughter of *Charles the Bald*, not above twelve Years of Age; which disagreeable and unseasonable Match forwarded the Conspiracy, which was forming against him.

Tythes.

855

For whilst *Ethelwulph* was at *Rome*, *Alstan*, Bishop of *Sherborn*, who was *Swithin's* Rival in influencing the King, but in a contrary Way, and who, whilst the Island was troubled with the *Danes*, had often the Advantage by prevailing with him, notwithstanding his sluggish Temper, to act with some Vigour against them; but now in this Time of Peace was outdone by *Swithin*, who took Advantage of *Ethelwulph's* natural Bias to a religious and contemplative Life; *Alstan*, I say, being provoked at this Loss of his Credit with the King, drew *Ethelbald* his eldest Son, who was naturally of an ill Temper, into a Conspiracy to dethrone his Father and seize upon his Kingdom. *Ethelbald* easily gave into this Design, being already disgusted at his Father's not making him King of *Kent*, upon *Athelstan's* Death; and now the News of his Marriage spurred him on still more, and he gave out that his Father had forfeited the Crown by giving his Wife the Title and Dignity of *Queen*; for upon *Britrick's* being poisoned by his Queen, the *West-Saxons* made a Law that no King's Wife for the future should be dignified with that State and Title, on Pain of his Sub-

jects being, *ipso facto*, absolved from their Allegiance. However, *Ethelwulph*, upon the News of this Conspiracy, landed in *England* before Measures were taken to hinder him; and as the Parties were strong on both Sides, all Things tended to a Civil War, had not the Prudence of some of the chief Men on both Parties, and the Mildness and good Nature of *Ethelwulph* prevented it. As it was, the Balance turned on *Ethelbald's* Side, and *Ethelwulph* was obliged to give up to him the Kingdom of *Wessex*, and to rest contented with that of *Kent* for himself.

*Ethelwulph* lived but about two Years after this. He died in 857, after a Reign of 20 Years, and was buried at *Winchester* near his Father *Egbert*. A little before his Death, he disposed of his Dominions by Will, to *Ethelbert* his second Son, after him to *Ethelred* his third Son, and then to *Alfred* his youngest; who all in their Turns succeeded to the Crown. As to *Ethelbald*, his eldest Son, he was already in Possession of the Kingdom of *Wessex* as above related. *Ethelwulph* had also one Daughter, who was married to *Buthred*, the tributary King of *Mercia*.

### E T H E L B A L D. 857-860.

**E**THELBALD had reigned two Years as King of *Wessex* during his Father's Life, and continued to possess that Throne after his Decease; so that *Ethelbert*, at first, had only for his Share, *Kent*, *Essex*, and *Sussex*, all together under the Name of the Kingdom of *Kent*, which was his Father's, after the above-mentioned Partition of his Dominions. *Ethelbald* reigned but about two Years and a half after his Father's Death, during which Time no remarkable

Event happened, nor indeed throughout his whole Reign; nor was there any Action of his worthy recording. Historians all agree in giving him a very bad Character, as a licentious, debauched and luxurious Prince; and the *English* Historians particularly charge him with the Crime of Incest, in marrying *Judith* of *France*, his Father's Widow. *Matthew* of *Westminster*, indeed, says, that he was brought to a Sense of his Fault, by *Swithin* Bishop of *Winchester*, and



and underwent a severe Penance for it; which very probably, if true, consisted in some Donations to the Monasteries, according to the Custom of those Times. But of *Ethelbald's* Repentance, *Affer*, a considerable Writer, who lived in these Days, and is therefore much more to be depended upon, says not a

Word. *Ethelbald* had the good Fortune not to be molested by the *Danes* during his Reign, if that may be called so, which gave him the greater Liberty to follow his vicious Courses. He died in 860, 860 and was first buried at *Sherborn* in *Dorsetshire*, and afterwards removed to *Salisbury*.

## E T H E L B E R T. 860—866.

**E**THELBERT, already in Possession of the Kingdom of *Kent*, upon his Brother's Death, succeeded to the whole Monarchy, according to *Ethelwulf's* Will. He was a Prince of a good Character, but his Reign was short, and made very troublesome by the *Danish* Incursions; and what was worse, as they had been quiet for a great while, and were almost forgotten, *Ethelbert* had made no Preparations against them, and was not in a Condition to repel their Attacks. They renewed their Invasions immediately upon *Ethelbert's* Coronation, and penetrating as far as *Winchester*, reduced it to Ashes. They would have done much more Mischief, if the Earls *Osfrik* and *Ethelwulf*, with some Troops they had drawn together, had not beat them back to their Ships.

After this, another Band of these

Ravagers landed in the *Isle of Thanet*, where they wintered, in order to begin their Incursions in the Spring. *Ethelbert* offered them a Sum of Money to depart quietly, which though they accepted, they perfidiously rushed into *Kent*, laying all waste with Fire and Sword. *Ethelbert* upon this, finding nothing else would do, immediately set about levying an Army to intercept them upon their Return to their Ships, which they being informed of, embarked so suddenly with their Plunder, that there was no preventing them.

*Ethelbert*, after a Reign of about six Years, died in 866, and was buried at *Sherborn*. 866. Tho' he left two Sons, *Adhelm* and *Ethelward*, they did not succeed him; his Brother *Ethelred* mounting the Throne by — Virtue of his Father's Will.

## E T H E L R E D. 866—872.

**I**N this Prince's Reign the *Danes* became more terrible in *England* than ever they had been before. Instead of coming and going, and contenting themselves with their Plunder, in getting which indeed they made dismal Havock, and committed the most horrid Cruelties, they now began to aim at settling them-

selves in the Island, and becoming Masters of it. What chiefly gave Rise to this was the following Circumstance.

The *Northumbrians* dropping much of their old Heats and Animosities, threw off the *Wessex* Yoke, and unanimously placed *Osbert* on their Throne. This Union might in Time have

have raised *Northumberland* to its antient Splendor, if *Osbert* had not shewn himself unworthy of the Dignity that was conferred on him. For being smitten with the Beauty of Earl *Bruern-Bocard's* Lady, he infamously took an Opportunity to force her to his Will, when he could not by any soft Methods induce her to comply. Earl *Bruern*, who was Guardian of the Coasts against the Incurſions of the *Danes*, was so enraged at this Indignity, that he resolved to stick at nothing to be revenged. Accordingly he soon brought the *Bernicians* to revolt, and to elect another King named *Ella*. And thus *Northumberland* was again divided between two Kings and two Factions, the old Animosities were revived, and a Civil War ensued. Earl *Bruern* having but half gratified his Revenge, whilst *Osbert* remained on the Throne of *Deira*, fatally resolved to apply for Assistance to the *Danes*. Accordingly he went over to *Denmark*, and represented to King *Ivar* (or *Hingvar*) how easily he might make himself Master of *Northumberland*, whilst the Kingdom was weakened by its intestine Divisions. *Ivar*, whose Father had been taken Prisoner in *England* and treacherously murdered, readily came into the Design, as well to gratify his Revenge as his Ambition. The Spring following he entered the *Humber*, with a numerous Fleet, being conducted by *Bruern*, and attended by his Brother *Hubba*. He marched directly to *York*, where *Osbert* was with his Army, who sallying out upon the *Danes*, attacked them so vigorously, that they had much ado to stand the Shock. But recovering themselves, they pressed the *Northumbrians* in their Turn, forced them to retire in Disorder into the Town, and *Osbert* was slain in the Retreat: An Example, what publick Mischiefs may be occasioned by even the private

Vices of Kings, and how an Injury done to one Subject may involve a whole Kingdom in Ruin!

*Ella* had agreed to join Forces with *Osbert* for their common Defence. But *Osbert* was too hasty, and attacked the *Danes* before *Ella* could come up. Yet, notwithstanding the late Defeat, he advanced in hopes of repairing the Loss, and *Ivar* marched out to meet him: The Battle was as bloody as the former, and as fatal to the *English*; for *Ella* was slain, and his Army entirely routed. The Field of Battle was called *Ellescroft*, i. e. *Ella's* Overthrow.

*Ivar* now took Possession of all *Northumberland*, having no one to oppose him. And his Ambition being heightened by his Success, he marched into *Mercia*, plundering and ravaging as he went without any Mercy. But *Buthred*, King of *Mercia*, had Time to prepare himself, and had called *Ethelred* his Brother-in-Law to his Assistance. *Ivar* was advanced as far as *Nottingham*, in hopes of coming upon *Buthred* unawares; but when he was informed that *Ethelred* had joined him, he stopped short, finding his Forces inferior to those of the *English*. The two Armies faced one another for some Time, expecting to engage, but at last parted without coming to Blows, *Buthred* having bought his Peace of the *Danes*, with a Sum of Money, and the Fate of a Battle, which in all Probability would have been decisive, being equally apprehended by both Sides.

*Ivar* being thus disappointed in his Design upon *Mercia*, leaving *Hubba* his Brother in *Northumberland*, embarked with the Flower of his Troops, and made a Descent upon *East-Anglia*, where *Edmund* was then King, who being more used to Devotion than Arms, was easily overcome, and forced to save himself



himself by Flight. He designed to hide himself in a Church, but was discover'd and brought to *Ivar*, who offered to leave him in Possession of *East-Anglia*, if he would own him for his Sovereign; which *Edmund* refusing, the Conqueror ordered him to be tied to a Tree, and shot at with Arrows, and then to be beheaded. His Head being afterwards found, was buried with his Body at a Town in *Suffolk*, from him called *St. Edmund's-Bury*; and a great many Miracles in these dark Times were said to be wrought at his Tomb.

Thus the *Danes* became Masters of *Northumberland* and *East-Anglia*, and resolved to push their Conquests farther, hoping in the End to subdue all *England*. With this View *Ivar* now turned his Arms against *Wessex*, and resolved to attack *Ethelred*. He landed his Troops in that Country, and advanced as far as *Reading*; and *Ethelred* foreseeing his Design, marched that Way with his Army. A War hereupon ensued, and *Ethelred* within the Space of one Year fought nine pitched Battles with the *Danes*, in some of which he was victorious, in others not, but in all gave signal Proofs of his Courage and Conduct; but unhappily in the last, which was fought near *Wittingham*, he received a mortal Wound, of which he died in 872, and in the sixth Year of his Reign. He lies buried at *Winburn* in *Dorsetshire*, with this Inscription on his Tomb: *In hoc loco quiescit corpus S. Ethelredi Regis West Saxonum, Martyris, qui Anno Domini 872, 23<sup>o</sup> Aprilis per manus Danorum Paganorum occubuit.*

Thus fell *Ethelred*, tho' according to some, who call the Truth of this Inscription in Question, he died in

the Plague. Be that as it will, he had the Misfortune at his Death to leave the *Danes* in the Heart of his Kingdom, and likely to become Masters of the Whole, which gave sufficient Trouble to the brave *Alfred*, his Brother and Successor. As *Ethelred* was remarkable for his Valour, he is said to be more so from his Piety and Devotion. *Asser* tells us, that at the Battle of *Ashtown* in *Berkshire*, in which he was at last victorious, being at Prayers, he would not stir till the Service was over, tho' the Fight was begun, and the *Danes* had some Advantage. All give him the Character of a good Prince; and though he was not in a Condition to assist the *Northumbrians* against the *Danes*, he afterwards made a brave Stand against them.

He left several Children, one of whom was *Alfred*, Great-Grand-Father of *Ethelwerd* the Historian; but none of them came to the Crown, by reason of *Ethelwulf's* Will, which fixed the Succession on his Brother *Alfred*.

During *Ethelred's* Reign, the *Danes*, who made cruel Havock wherever they came, destroyed several famous Monasteries, as those of *Croyland*, *Ely*, *Peterborough*, or *Medeshamsted*, and *Coldingham*; of which last we have the following Story: That the Abbess, upon the Approach of the *Danes*, prevailed on the Nuns to cut off their Noses and upper Lips; which expedient secured their Honour, as it was designed, but cost them their Lives; for the Soldiers, contrary to their Expectation, beholding such monstrous Visages, set Fire to the Monastery, and burnt them in it.



T. Kitchin sc.

## ALFRED the Great. 872—900.

**A**LFRED, the youngest Son of *Ethelwulf*, succeeded his Brother *Ethelred* in the Year 872. He was born at *Wanating*, now *Wantage* in *Berkshire*, which was then a Royal Manour. The former Part of his Reign was full of Troubles from his continual Wars with the *Danes*, and in the latter Part of it he enjoyed the utmost Peace and Tranquillity. In both he discovered himself to be a Prince of a most excellent Character. His Justice and Equity, and Love to his Subjects, were as conspicuous as his Bravery and Conduct in War. He was patient and unshaken in Adversity, calm and moderate in Prosperity, and in both War and Peace shewed that he had the Happiness and Welfare of his People always at Heart. So that, in whatever Light we consider him, he truly merited the Surname of *Great*.

We have already seen what Progress the *Danes* made in their Conquests after their grand Invasion under *Ivar* and *Hubba*, how they had

subdued *Northumberland* and *East-Anglia*, and were in the Heart of *Wessex* when *Ethelred* died; so that *Alfred* came to the Crown in very troublesome Times. He had scarce been a Month on the Throne, when he was obliged to take the Field against these formidable Invaders, who were advanced as far as *Wilton*. Here he engaged them, and though Victory seemed at first to incline to his Side, yet he was forced in the End to leave the *Danes* Masters of the Field. However, he made such Haste to put his Army into a Condition to attack them a second Time, that they thought fit to sue for Peace, and offered to quit his Dominions, provided he would molest them in no other Part of *England*, which in the present Exigency he readily consented to.

The *Danes* accordingly marching out of *Wessex*, turned their Arms against *Mercia*. *Buthred* bought them off twice more with a Sum of Money, but they, notwithstanding, returned



turned again, and forced him at last to quit his Dominions, (upon which he retired to *Rome*, where he ended his Days,) they became Masters of that spacious Kingdom, as they had before possessed themselves of *Northumberland* and *East-Anglia*. And tho' they looked upon *Wessex* with a greedy Eye, which contained now the other four Kingdoms, yet as they knew *Alfred* would dispute every Inch of Ground with them, they were fain to wait for a more favourable Opportunity, and so entered into an Alliance with him, and fell to manuring the Lands they had possessed themselves of, and which they had so terribly laid waste. Thus the *English* and *Danes* shared *England* between them, and Peace seemed to be established.

But this Calm did not last long. For in 875, a fresh Body of *Danes* arrived in *East-Anglia* under their General *Halfden*: And these not looking upon themselves as bound by the Treaty between *Alfred* and the other *Danes* who were settled here, soon after invaded *Wessex*, and took by Surprize the strong Castle of *Warham* in *Dorsetshire*, and would have penetrated farther into *Wessex*, had not *Alfred* entered into a particular Treaty with *Halfden*, by which he solemnly swore never to enter his Kingdom again. No doubt it cost *Alfred* dear to bring him to this, but not expecting any new Invasion, he was not perhaps very well prepared against it. However, *Halfden* with his *Danes* broke this Oath almost as soon as they took it (which was a common Thing with these People) and advancing to *Exeter*, laid Siege to it. Upon this *Alfred* convened a General Assembly, and in a pathetick Speech exhorted them to vigorous Methods against their Enemies, as there was no other Way of dealing with them. The Result was, that an Army was levy'd, with which

*Alfred* engaged the *Danes* seven Times in one Campaign: But as Fortune was not always equally favourable to him, he entered into a new Treaty with them, which they kept better than the former.

And now, viz. in 876, *Rollo*, the famous *Danish* or *Norman* General, with a considerable Body of Forces, made an Attempt upon *England*; but finding *Alfred* in a Condition to receive him, he sailed for the Coast of *France* to seek his Fortune there, where he conquered that Part of the Country, since called *Normandy*.

The wise *Alfred*, to prevent these frequent Invasions, resolved to fit out a Fleet, in order to engage the *Danes* before they came to Land; which soon had a very good Effect: For the *English* gave chase to six *Danish* Ships, took one of the largest, and threw the Soldiers and Mariners over-board. And some Time after, the King's Fleet attacked a Fleet of 120 *Danish* Transports, that were making to Shore to land their Men, and sunk the greatest Part of them. The following Year another *Danish* Fleet met with so violent a Storm, that almost all their Ships were destroyed, and those that escaped perishing by the Storm fell into the Hands of the *English*.

But now comes the grand Crisis of the *Danish* Affairs in *England* in King *Alfred*'s Time. What with the *Danes* already settled here, and the Numbers of new Comers, there was not Room for them all in the three antient Kingdoms of the *Hep-tarchy*, they were already possessed of. Those who were constantly coming over being uneasy for want of a Settlement, and those who were already settled fearing their Countrymen thro' Envy might endeavour to dispossess them, they all agreed to invade *Wessex*, in order to make themselves Masters of that Kingdom.

dom. This Design was carried on with such Secrecy and Expedition, that there was on a sudden a more formidable Army of *Danes* than ever was known before, marching towards *Wessex*, before *Alfred* could put himself in a Posture of Defence. They marched directly to *Chippenham*, in *Wiltshire*, then one of the strongest and best Cities in *Wessex*, and in a few Days made themselves Masters of it. This so dismayed the *West-Saxons*, that they fled several Ways, and *Alfred* was left alone with a few of his Domesticks; which he dismissing, in order the better to shift for himself, was forced to betake himself to a Neatherd's Cottage in the *Isle of Athelney* in *Somersetshire*, where he lay concealed near six Months from both Friends and Enemies, till Providence gave a sudden and surprising Turn to his Affairs.

*Hubba*, who commanded the *Danish* Forces in the Absence of his Brother *Ivar*, who was returned to *Denmark*, had entered *Devonshire* with his Army. To avoid the first Shock of their Fury, the Earl of *Devon*, with a small Number of brave Fellows, shut himself up in *Kinwith-Castle*, which *Hubba* soon besieged. Here the Earl representing to his Men, that they must either very soon fall into the merciless Hands of the *Danes*, or boldly make themselves a Passage through the Enemy's Army with their Swords, the brave  
 + *English*, without standing to deliberate, rushed out Sword in Hand upon the *Danes*, and by their sudden and furious Attack put them in the greatest Disorder imaginable, and pursuing their Advantage before the Enemy could recover from their Surprise, totally dispersed them with a terrible Slaughter, *Hubba* himself being slain, and his famous Standard, called *Reafan*, or the *Raven*, in which the *Danes* superstitiously put great Confidence, being taken.

*Alfred* hearing of this Victory in the Place where he lay concealed, immediately sent Word to his Friends, and desired them to come and consult what was proper to be done. It was immediately agreed to draw together small Bodies of Troops in several Parts of the Kingdom, who should be ready to join one another upon the least Warning. And *Alfred* himself, in order to gain an exact Knowledge of the Enemy's Posture, disguised himself, and taking a Harp in his Hand, as if he had got his Living that Way, entered the *Danish* Camp, stayed there some Days, and informed himself of every Thing he wanted to know. This done, he returned to his Friends at *Athelney*; and fixed upon *Selwood-Forest* in *Somersetshire* for the general Rendezvous. This Affair was managed with such Secrecy and Expedition, that the King soon appeared unexpectedly near the *Danes*, at the Head of a numerous Army, and falling upon them in the midst of their great Surprise and Consternation, entirely routed them, and cut almost their whole Army in Pieces. The few that escaped betook themselves to a Castle, but were soon forced to surrender, upon Condition either to turn Christians, or to quit the Island, never more to return; and to give him Hostages for the Performance of Articles. Those that refused to be baptized were shipped off, and the others had Lands in *East-Anglia* assigned them. Among the rest, *Guthurm*, who since the Death of *Hubba* commanded the *Danish* Army, and several of his chief Officers were baptized; *Alfred* himself, as we are told, standing Godfather to *Guthurm*, naming him *Ethelstan*, and investing him with the Title of *King of East-Anglia*.

Thus the brave *Alfred*, from the  
 lowest Depth of Adversity, was on a sudden, by a wonderful Change of Fortune,



Fortune, advanced to the highest Pitch of Glory and Power. He not only regained his Kingdom of *Wessex*, but the Sovereignty of all *England*, the *Danes* who were settled in *Northumberland*, *Mercia* and *East-Anglia*, submitting and swearing Allegiance to him. And even the *Welsh*, that is, those of *South-Wales*, who had been terribly harrassed by the *Danes*, and still feared the same Fate, put themselves under his Protection, and became his Tributaries.

However, this calm State of Affairs did not yet remain without some considerable Interruptions. For several other Bands of *Danes* made Incursions, and harrassed several Parts of the Country after this; and the *Danes* who were settled here, notwithstanding their Oath of Allegiance, sometimes joined them. I shall not enter upon the Particulars, which are but confusedly related. Let it suffice to say, that *Alfred* by his Courage and wise Management, in guarding the Coasts with his Fleet, forcing *London* out of the Hands of the *Danes*, and fortifying the rest of the Kingdom with Castles and walled Towns, at last got rid of his Enemies, or kept them quiet, effectually discouraged any new ones from landing, and passed the rest of his Days in Peace. To conclude his military Character, I shall only observe, that from the Beginning of his Reign, to the Time that Peace was established, he is said to have fought fifty-six Battles with the *Danes*. I shall now consider him in his civil and moral Capacity, as a wise, pious, just and good King; which will appear from his whole Conduct and excellent Regulations in Time of Peace.

As the Laws were very much neglected, and almost forgot, during the Wars, his first Care was to revive them: For which Purpose he made a Collection of the best he could

find from those of *Ina* and *Offa*, as also those of *Ethelbert*, the first Christian King of *Kent*, who was the first that reduced the *Saxon* Laws into Writing; to which he added many of his own, agreeable to the Circumstances of the Times. These Laws were milder than those of later Ages, but then *Alfred* took Care that they should be strictly executed; and if they were sometimes relaxed with regard to private Persons, he was always severe against corrupt Magistrates; 'tis said that in one Year he caused four-and-forty Judges to be executed for perverting Justice. And to prevent all Injustice for the future as far as possible, he ordered that twelve Men should determine in all criminal Cases, and that the Judges should pass Sentence according to their Verdict. So that 'tis to him we owe the first Institution of *Juries*, a glorious Privilege, which we have the Happiness of enjoying to this Day!

a Jury of  
12 men  
Instituted.

The better to preserve Order and Regularity, to discover and punish Criminals, and protect the Innocent, he divided all *England* into *Shires* or *Counties*, the *Counties* into *Hundreds*, and the *Hundreds* into *Tythings*; and every Inhabitant of the Kingdom was obliged to belong to some *Tything*, otherwise to be deemed a Vagabond and an Out-law, and to be treated accordingly. The Effect of this wise Regulation was, that as every Householder was made responsible for his Family, the *Tything* was answerable for the Householder, the *Hundred* for the several *Tythings*, and the *Counties* for the *Hundreds*. By these Means such Quiet, Security and good Order were introduced, as *England* had never known before.

Counties,  
Hundreds,  
Tythings.  
first  
Instituted.

I shall but just mention some other Things which *Alfred* did for the Good of his Subjects. He revived the *Saxon Wittenagemot* or Assembly of Wise Men, which met generally  
once

once a Year, and was the Original of our Parliaments. He regulated the Militia, the better to prevent any future Incurfions of the *Danes*; for which End alfo he kept a numerous Fleet always in Readinefs to put to Sea. He introduced Trade and Commerce, and caufed many Trading Ships to be built, which he let out to the chief Merchants. He mightily encouraged and promoted Arts and Sciences, invited over learned Men from foreign Countries, and gave them Penfions to inſtruct and cultivate his Subjects, was himſelf a great Student, and made a conſiderable Progreſs in Learning: He tranſlated ſeveral Books, among the reſt, *Beethius de Conſolatione*, with which Book he was ſo delighted, that he always carried it in his Boſom. As a further Inſtance of his great Regard for the Arts and Sciences, he is ſaid to have founded the Univerſity of *Oxford*, ſince ſo famous throughout all *Europe*: Though whether the three or four *Schools* or *Colleges* which *Alfred* founded were the firſt Original of that Univerſity, remains a Matter of ſome Doubt. *Joannes Scotus*, well known in the Republick of Letters was one of his firſt Profeſſors. He had a great Regard for the City of *London*, took a Pride in beautifying and adorning it, and greatly augmented its Privileges.

He was a charitable and pious, as well as a learned Prince, and ſo well husbanded his Time, as ſcarce to let a Moment paſs unimproved. He appropriated a conſiderable Part of his Revenue to charitable Uſes. He divided his Time into three Parts, allotting eight Hours every Day to Acts of Devotion, (which is ſaid to be purſuant to a Vow he had made in the *Iſle of Athelingey*) eight Hours to Affairs of State, and the other eight to his Studies, Sleep and other neceſſary Refreshments. As there were then no Clocks nor Hour-

Glaſſes in *England*, he meaſured his Time by Wax-Candles, marked with circular Lines to diſtinguiſh the Hours; and to preſerve them from the Wind (as Glaſs was then a great Rarity here) 'tis ſaid he ordered ſome fine white Horn to be ſcraped till it became transparent, and put into wooden Frames, and incloſed the Candles therein. And ſo *Lanthorns* were the Invention of a King!

I ſhall Sum up *Alfred's* Character in the Words of a great Man, to this Effect: "O *Alfred*, the Wonder and Aſtoniſhment of all Ages! If we reflect on the devout Part of him, he ſeems to have lived always in a *Cloſter*: If on his Conduſt and Exploits in War, one would think he had ſpent his Days in the *Camp*: If on his Studies and Writings, one would conclude the *Univerſity* had engroſſed him: And laſtly, if we conſider his Skill and Prudence in the Adminiſtration of Government, he ſeems to have made *Law* and *Politicks* his whole Study." In ſhort, if we view him every Way, he was truly an extraordinary Perſon, and a glorious Pattern for all Princes.

He died in the Year 900, the 52d<sup>th</sup> of his Age, and 29th of his Reign, and was buried at *Wincheſter*. His eldeſt Son *Edmund*, whom he deſigned for his Succeſſor, died before him: *Edward* ſucceeded him; and *Ethelward* was bred a Scholar at *Oxford*, and was a very learned Man. He had alſo ſeveral Daughters. *Elſteda* the eldeſt, who was married to *Ethelred*, Earl of *Mercia*, became famous in her Brother's Reign: *Alſwitha* was married to *Baldwin*, Earl of *Flanders*; and *Ethelgiſtha* was Abbeſs of *Shaſtbury* Nunnery, founded by her Father, who alſo built two Monaſteries, one at *Athelingey* or *Athelney*, and another at *Wincheſter*.

EDWARD



EDWARD *the Elder.* 900—925.

THE greatest Part of this King's Reign was a Scene of Troubles and Commotions, but he had the good Fortune to extricate himself out of them all, and established himself on the Throne as firmly and as gloriously as his Father had done before him. The *Danes*, who had been quiet all the latter Part of *Alfred's* Reign, began, soon after his Death, to meditate a Revolt from his Son, and to entertain Thoughts of freeing themselves from the *English* Yoke. And what tended to forward their Designs, was King *Edward's* Cousin *Ethelward's* setting up for the Crown. He was Son to *Alfred's* eldest Brother *Ethelbert*, and being now come of Age was for disputing the Justice of *Ethelwulf's* Will, or however pretended, that after the Death of the four Brothers, there was no Reason the Succession should continue in the Family of the youngest. But meeting with no Encouragement from the *English*, who remembering the Happiness they enjoyed under *Alfred*, were firmly attached to his Son, he applied himself to the *Danes*. He began with seizing upon *Winburn* in *Dorsetshire*, and there endeavoured to fortify himself, swearing he would either conquer or die; but King *Edward* came upon him so suddenly, that with much Difficulty he stole out of the Town by Night, and fled to the *Danes*, who were then up in Arms. Upon his coming among them, they immediately proclaimed him King of *England*, pretending, as they were possessed of half the Kingdom, they had as much Right to make a King as the *West-Saxons*.

These Proceedings alarmed King *Edward*, and made him resolve to use all his Efforts to put an End to

the War, before the *Danes* should have Opportunity of sending over for more of their Countrymen. He marched directly towards *Northumberland* at the Head of his Army, which daily increased; and the *Danes* surprized at his Expedition, and not able to resist him, were forced to abandon their new-made King *Ethelward*, and banish him out of their Country. King *Edward* did not chastise them any further at present, but contented himself with repairing some Fortresses in *Mercia*, in order to keep them within narrower Bounds.

*Elfreda*, King *Edward's* Sister, and her Husband *Ethelred*, Earl of *Mercia*, were of great Service to him at this Time, by keeping the *Mercian Danes* in Awe, and hindering the *Welsh* from coming to their Assistance. 'Tis said of *Elfreda*, that having had a very painful Labour with her first Child, a Daughter, who survived her, she made a Resolution, and kept it, never to be in the like Case again. And from that Time she devoted herself wholly to Arms, and gave signal Proofs of her Valour in all her Brother's Wars.

*Ethelward* upon his being forced to leave the Country went over to *France*, and in a short Time returned with a powerful Body of *Normans*, landed them in *Essex*, and soon made himself Master of that Province. This encouraged the *Danes* of *Northumberland* and *East-Anglia* to take up Arms again in his Favour, who invading *Mercia*, made terrible Havock in that Part of it which was inhabited by the *English*. King *Edward* not suspecting these new Troubles, had dispersed his Troops; but as soon as he had got them together, he marched them against the *Danes*, and made them pay dear for what

905 they had done. He obtained so many Victories in this War, that the *Danes* at last despaired of ever being able to shake off the *English* Yoke. *Ethelward* was slain in Battle in the Year 905, in which Battle (which was very obstinate and bloody on both Sides) King *Edward* lost many of his Nobles, and the *Danes* their King *Eolrick*; and though they continued the War two Years after, yet they were constrained at last to sue for Peace, which they obtained on Condition they would own *Edward* as their Sovereign, and the *Normans* should return to *France*.

910. However, three Years after, viz. in 910, the War broke out again, and *Edward* soon beat the *Danes* in two Engagements, took from them several Towns in *Mercia*, and at last quite expelled them out of that Kingdom. About this Time *Ethelred* Earl of *Mercia* died, and the valiant *Elfreda* his Wife having fortified the chief Places in *Mercia*, to prevent the *Danes* ever settling there again, carried her Arms into *Wales*, and compelled the Inhabitants to become her Tributaries. She lived not long after this; but died at *Tamworth* in the Year 918.

The War which broke out afresh between the *English* and *Danes* in 910, lasted with some Intervals of Respite twelve Years, in which Time a great Number of Battles were fought, and the *Danes* continually lost Ground, till *Edward* obliged them to lay down their Arms, and acknowledge him once more as their

Sovereign. After the Peace was concluded with the *Danes*, A. D. 922, *Edward* marched against the *Welsh*, who after *Elfreda*'s Death endeavoured to free themselves from the Tribute she had imposed on them. He obtained a signal Victory, and compelled the *Welsh* King *Rees ap Madoe* to sue for Peace, promising to pay the Tribute for the future. The *Cumberland Britons* likewise submitted to *Edward*; and, as some say, the King of *Scotland* did Homage to him for his Kingdom.

Thus the valiant and victorious King *Edward*, having subdued all his Enemies, and raised himself to the Summit of Power and Reputation, was reigning gloriously in Peace, when Death put a Period to his Days in the 25th Year of his Reign, Anno 925. So that he enjoyed the Fruits of his Victories but for a short Time. He died at *Farrington* in *Berkshire*, and was interred at *Winchester* near his great Predecessor and Father, the famous King *Alfred*.

He had by his Concubine *Egwina*, and two Wives, six Sons and nine Daughters. Three of his Sons were successively Kings of *England*; and of his Daughters, some were married to powerful Princes, and others became Nuns.

The University of *Cambridge*, according to some, was founded by King *Edward*, A. D. 915. But there are various Opinions about the Origin of this famous University, some making it much older, and others of a much later Date.

## A T H E L S T A N. 925-941.

**A**thelstan was the Son of King *Edward* by his Concubine *Egwina*; but the legitimate Children being under Age, he was advanced to the Throne with the Consent of

the Clergy and Nobility, being then in his 30th Year. His good Qualities, solid Parts, and princely Education, made amends for the Defect of his Birth. His Grandfather *Alfred*



*fred* had a great Affection for him, and conferred on him the Honour of Knighthood, by girding him with a Sword, as the Custom then was. The Care of his Education was committed by his Father to *Ethelred* and *Elfred*, of whom I have already made mention; and by being present at all their Councils, and accompanying them in all their military Expeditions, he had acquired great Skill both in War and Politics; and so was a Prince exceedingly fit to govern; as afterwards appeared through the whole Course of his Reign.

However, some of the Nobles, disliking *Athelstan*'s Election, entered into a Plot to dethrone him, and make *Edwin*, *Edward*'s eldest legitimate Son, King in his Room: But the Plot was discovered, and *Alfred*, the chief of the Conspirators, apprehended. He denied his having any Hand in it, and persisting in asserting his Innocence, offered to purge himself by Oath before the Pope. *Athelstan* sent him to *Rome*, and there as soon as he had taken the Oath, it is said, that he fell into a fainting Fit, which held him three Days, and then he died. *Athelstan* confiscated his Estate, and gave it to *Malsbury* Monastery.

On this Plot hangs a Story, related by *Malsbury*, though he disbelieves it, and owns it is founded only on some old Ballads. It is this: That Prince *Edwin* being accused by the King's Cup-bearer of having been concerned in the Conspiracy, *Athelstan* thinking it not advisable to put him to Death publicly, ordered him to be put on board a Vessel without Sails or Rudder, and exposed to the Mercy of the Waves. *Edwin* protested his Innocence, and finding the King his Brother inexorable, leaped over-board and was drowned. *Athelstan* soon repented of what he had done, and to atone

for his Crime, founded the Abbey of *Middleton* in *Dorsetshire*, now called *Melton-Abbey*, where he ordered Prayers to be said Night and Day for himself, and for his Brother's Soul. The false Accuser did not go long unpunished. For one Day waiting at the King's Table, one of his Feet happening to slip, he would have fallen, if he had not recovered himself with the other. Upon which he merrily said, *See how one Brother helps another*: Which the King overhearing, and taking it as a Reproach or Banter on him for his Treatment of his Brother, ordered him immediately to be executed. *Ironically without trial*

The Danes had been quiet for some Time; but the Death of King *Edward*, and the Conspiracy of *Alfred*, encouraged them again to take Measures for a Revolt. *Athelstan* being informed of this, marched with his Army immediately towards *Northumberland*, and the Danes being surprized at his sudden Arrival on their Frontiers, returned to their Allegiance. He not only pardoned their King *Sithrick*, but gave him his Sister *Edithe* in Marriage, on Condition he would receive Baptism. And so having settled Matters in the North, he returned to *Wessex*; but *Sithrick* dying soon after, and leaving behind him two Sons, *Anlaff* and *Godfrid*, *Athelstan* marched again into *Northumberland*, and with such Expedition, that those two Princes, as well as *Reginald*, another *Danish* King, had scarce Time to escape. By their hasty Flight, he had an Opportunity of making himself Master of all *Northumberland*, except the Castle of *York*.

*Anlaff* fled first into *Ireland*, and soon after went over to *Scotland*, and prevailed on *Constantine* King of *Scotland*, to join his Forces with his, in order to drive *Athelstan* out of *Northumberland*. In the mean Time, whilst they were concerting Measures,

Measures, and *Anlaff* was gone back to Ireland to get ready the Troops he had engaged to furnish, *Athelstan* was returned to *Wessex*, suspecting nothing of the Matter; and soon after found himself involved in a War with *Howel* King of *Wales*, which was contrived by *Constantine*, to keep *Athelstan* employed, whilst he and *Anlaff* should invade *Northumberland*. But he was disappointed in his Aim; for *Athelstan* giving *Howel* Battle, entirely defeated him; and then marching into *Scotland* to chastise *Constantine* for assisting the *Welsh*, he took some of their Towns; but *Constantine*, to gain Time till *Anlaff* with the *Irish* should join him, sued for Peace, which *Athelstan* granted, being desirous, if possible, to make him his Friend, and having restored to him all the Places he had taken, returned to *Wessex*.

Nevertheless *Constantine* proceeded in his Designs against *Athelstan*, and *Anlaff* made all the Haste he could to join him, having persuaded the *Irish*, *Welsh*, and *Northumbrian Danes* to enter into the Confederacy. They carried on Matters so secretly, that *Anlaff* entered the *Humber* with a very considerable Fleet, and invaded *Northumberland*, before *Athelstan* knew any thing of the Design. But he was even with them, for as soon as ever he was informed of this Invasion, he used such Expedition, that he came upon the Confederates before they were aware. It was not long before the two Armies engaged at *Brunanburgh*, and after a bloody Battle *Athelstan* came off victorious. The *Scotch* King, six *Irish* and *Welsh* Kings, and twelve Earls and General Officers were slain. This Victory was chiefly owing to *Turketul*, *Athelstan's* Cousin, afterwards Abbot of *Croyland*.

A little before this famous Battle was fought, *Anlaff* disguised himself like a Harper, as King *Alfred* had

done before him, and went into the *English* Camp to observe the Posture of the Enemy. A Soldier, however, happened to know him, but let him depart undiscovered; and as soon as he judged him safe, acquainted *Athelstan* with the Affair, and advised him to remove his Tent, believing the *Danish* Prince had a Design against that Quarter. The Reason why he did not discover the Secret sooner, he told the King, was, because *he had formerly given his Military Oath to Anlaff, and therefore could not resolve to betray him.* *Athelstan* admitted of his Excuse, and took his Advice about the Removal of his Tent; which it was well he did: For the very next Night, *Anlaff*, with a Body of chosen Men, attacked the *English* Camp, and rushed to the very Place where he had observed the King's Tent: And a Bishop, who had accidentally pitched his there, was slain.

After the Battle of *Brunanburgh*, King *Athelstan* extended his Conquests into *Scotland*; and chastised the *Welsh* for joining in the League against him, by augmenting their Tribute to 20 Pounds Weight of Gold, 300 of Silver, and 25,000 Head of Cattle, and confining them beyond the *Wye*. He kept a stricter Hand over the *Northumbrian Danes*, and having settled the Affairs in the *North*, marched against the *Cornish Britons*, took *Exeter*, repaired and fortified it, and pent those *Britons* up beyond the *Tamar*.

As *Athelstan* was a good Friend to the Monasteries, the Monks relate a great many Miracles in his Favour, as they never fail to do concerning their Benefactors. They tell us, that at the Word of St. *John of Beverly*, he struck his Sword three Yards deep into a solid Rock, with as much Ease as if it had been so much Butter. They say also, that having lost his Sword at the Battle



of *Brunanburgh*, another fell from Heaven, and sheathed itself in his Scabbard. But enough of these Tales. 'Tis certain however, that *Athelstan*, if we strip his History of all the Embellishments of Miracles, was a great and wise Prince, that he was dreaded by his Neighbours, beloved by his Subjects, and respected by the greatest Princes in *Europe*, from whom he received many considerable Presents: And the noble Matches he made for his Sisters were a further Proof of his great Reputation in the World. Though he was chiefly engaged in military Affairs, yet he was not negligent of civil Concerns. He made Justice to flourish throughout his Dominions, and added many excellent Laws to those of King *Alfred*. He caused the Scriptures to be translated into the *Saxon* Tongue, and took particular Care to

have it well done, employing the most learned Men in the Kingdom for that Purpose.

He died without Issue in 941, being the 16th Year of his Reign, three Years after the Victory at *Brunanburgh*, and was buried at *Malmsbury*. 941

The romantick Story of *Guy* Earl of *Warwick* relates to this Reign. The Story is this: That when *Colebrand*, a huge *Danish* Giant, had defied all the *English*, and *Athelstan* was at a great Loss for a Champion to fight him, this *Guy* returned in the Nick of Time from the *Holy Land*, in the Habit of a Pilgrim; and being known to none but the King, accepted the Challenge, and fought and killed *Colebrand*, near *Winchester*; upon which the *Danes* yielded, and *Guy* retired to a Hermit's Cell, where he ended his Days.

E D M U N D I. 941—946.

**E**DMUND was now the eldest of *Edward the Elder*'s legitimate Sons, and was about 18 Years old when he came to the Crown. He too was a Prince of a good Character, was beloved of his Subjects, and studied their Happiness; and in this Respect, as well as in his military Actions and Successes, his Reign, in Proportion to the Length of it, was much like his Brother *Athelstan*'s.

No sooner had *Edmund* begun his Reign, but the restless *Danes* prepared for a Revolt; and *Anlaf*, who had fled to *Ireland* after his late Defeat, endeavoured to regain the Kingdom of *Northumberland*. Accordingly being furnished with Troops by *Olaus* King of *Norway*, he once more entered *Northumberland*, and coming before *York*, the Gates were opened to him; which Example was

followed by most of the other Towns. After he had thus recovered *Northumberland*, he marched into *Mercia*, and by the Assistance of his Countrymen got Possession of several Places which *Edward* had taken from them.

King *Edmund*, though so young, not intimidated at the Enemy's Progress, drew his Forces together, and marched resolutely towards the *North*. And *Anlaf* hearing that *Edmund* was advancing to give him Battle, drew towards him with the same Design. The two Armies engaged near *Chester*, but with doubtful Success, and were repairing to renew the Fight by the next Morning; but the Archbishops of *Canterbury* and *York*, who were in the two Armies, laboured so hard for a Peace, that a Treaty was concluded by Break of Day, by which *Edmund* delivered up to the

*Danes* all the Country North of *Watling-street*, which divided *England* almost into two equal Parts, running from *North-Wales* to the Sea on the South of *Kent*. King *Edmund* did not at all like this Treaty, but was forced to comply by his Nobles that were in the Army: However, an Affair soon happened which ended much more to his Satisfaction.

*Anlaf* had laid heavy Taxes on his People, in order to pay off the Debt he had contracted with the King of *Norway* for the Forces he had lent him. This made his Subjects so uneasy, that the *Deirans* soon revolted and set up *Reginald*, *Anlaf*'s Cousin, for their King. *Edmund* taking Advantage of the Quarrel between the two Kings, marched at the Head of his Army towards the North. He contented himself at this Time with making Peace between them, and obliging both *Anlaf* and *Reginald* to swear Allegiance to him, and be baptised.

*Edmund* was hardly returned to *Wessex*, when the two ungrateful Kings with one Consent took up Arms in order to shake off the *English* Yoke, and in this Cause were likewise embarked the *Mercian Danes* and the King of *Cumberland*. As soon as *Edmund* had Intelligence of these Proceedings, he marched into *Mercia*, and took *Leicester*, *Stafford*, *Darby*, *Nottingham*, and some other Towns from the *Danes*, before the *Northumbrians* could join them; and then advancing with the utmost Expedition into *Northumberland*, put the *Danes* there in so terrible a Consternation, that the two Kings, who had not yet drawn their Forces together, made the best of their Way, and fled out of the Island. The *Danes* upon this threw down their Arms, and swore Allegiance to *Edmund*. This done, he marched into *Cumberland*, and having soon subdued

that little Kingdom, he gave it to the King of *Scotland*, to fix him the more firmly to his Interest. He reserved indeed the Sovereignty of it to himself, and obliged the *Scotch* King to do him Homage for it, and to appear at the *English* Court, if summoned, on all solemn Festivals.

King *Edmund* having thus subdued his Enemies, and made himself famous for his Valour and great Successes, both at home and abroad, would doubtless have rendered his People happy in Peace, if he had not been suddenly taken off by a violent Death, just as he was beginning to enjoy the Fruits of his Victories. As he was celebrating the Festival of the Conversion of the *Saxons* at *Pucklekirk* in *Gloucestershire*, one *Leolf* a notorious Robber, who had been banished for his Crimes, impudently came and seated himself in the Hall where the King was at Dinner. *Edmund* provoked at his Insolence, ordered him to be seized; but observing he was drawing his Dagger to defend himself, the King started up in a great Rage, and taking hold of him by the Hair, dragged him out of the Hall: And whilst he was wholly engaged in venting his Passion, the infamous *Leolf* stabbed him to the Heart with his Dagger, so that he fell dead on the Spot, in the 8th Year of his Reign. *A. D.* 948, leaving behind him two Sons, *Edwy*, and *Edgar*, by *Elgiva* his Wife. He was buried at *Glastenbury*, where *Dunstan* was then Abbot.

Some of this King's Laws are still in being, which shew how much he regarded the Good of his Subjects. Among the rest he ordered, that in Gangs of Robbers, the oldest of them should be hanged: Which was the first Law in *England* that punished Robbery with Death, the Punishment before being only pecuniary.

*EDRED.*



## E D R E D. 946—955.

THE *Danes*, ever uneasy under the *English* Yoke, tho' quell'd in several preceding Reigns, yet commonly upon the Accession of a new King, endeavoured, by raising fresh Troubles, to assert their Independency, thinking to make great Advantage of a Minority or a disputed Title, or hoping the new Monarch might not prove equal to his Predecessors in Courage and Conduct. Thus at the Beginning of *Edred's* Reign, they thought they had another Opportunity of trying their Strength, as the King was young, and they hoped unexperienced, and might be confounded by any sudden Attack, which he little expected. This therefore they resolved upon, and the better to effect their Designs, they gained over to their Side *Malcolm* King of *Scotland*. But the *Danes* were again greatly disappointed, for *Edred* being informed of their Designs, was got into the Heart of *Northumberland*, before the Enemy was prepared to resist him. They had therefore no other Way left, but to sue for Peace on any Terms. *Edred* having fined or punished some of the chief Authors of the Revolt, marched towards *Scotland* in order to chastise *Malcolm*. But he hearing what had passed in *Northumberland*, struck up a Peace with *Edred*, and paid him the stipulated Homage.

But the *Danes* could not yet be quiet; for soon after *Edred* was returned to *Wessex*, they revolted again, and called home *Anlaf*, who made such a Progress, that it was almost impossible to have resisted him, if he had not treated his Subjects in so tyrannical a Manner, that it occasioned a strong Party to be formed against him: So that he was once

more obliged to retire to *Ireland*, and one *Eric* was made King in his Room. But many of the *Northumbrians* still adhering to *Anlaf*, their Country was divided into two Factions, who aimed at each other's Destruction. This gave *Edred* such an Advantage, as ended in the entire Reduction of *Northumberland*. For he marched at the Head of his Army with all Expedition into the North, whilst all Things were in Confusion, made a terrible Slaughter among the Rebels, and laid waste the Country for several Miles: *Eric*, upon his Approach, fled into *Scotland*, and the *Northumbrians* had nothing to do but to cast themselves upon *Edred's* Mercy, which they did with such solemn Oaths and Pro-  
testations of future Fidelity, that he being of a generous Disposition, was moved with Compassion towards them, and replaced *Eric* on the Throne, only imposing a Tribute on him, and making him swear Allegiance to him. But the treacherous and perfidious *Danes*, notwithstanding this Act of Clemency in the King, laid an Ambush for him in the Way, as he was returning in a careless Manner towards *Wessex*, and fell suddenly on his Rear, which put them in so great a Disorder, that if it had not been for the Courage, Resolution and good Conduct of the King, his Army had been all cut in Pieces. Exasperated to the last Degree at their Treachery, he marched back to *Northumberland*, resolving to punish them without Mercy. His Return threw them into such a Panick, that in the most humble and abject Manner they implored his Pardon, on what Terms he should be pleased to impose; and being conscious that he had Reason

to question their Sincerity, to convince him of it, renounced their Allegiance to *Eric*, and put *Amac*, *Anlaff's* Son, to Death, as the chief Author of their late perfidious Behaviour. By these Means *Edred* was pacified: Nevertheless he garrisoned all their Towns with *English* Soldiers, divested *Northumberland* of its Royalty; and reduced it to a Province, making *Earl Osulf*, an *Englishman*, the first Governor.

*Edred* now absolute Lord of all *England*, governed his Kingdom in perfect Tranquillity, and turned his Thoughts wholly to Religion, wherein he was implicitly directed by *Dunstan*, Abbot of *Glastenbury*, who had in every Thing the Ascendant over him. He made him his Treasurer, by his Advice he rebuilt *Glastenbury* Church and Monastery, gave all manner of Indulgence to the Monks, admitting them into the Church Livings, and sometimes humbled himself so low as even to receive Discipline by scourging at *Dunstan's* Hands. The Monks in their Turn were not ungrateful to *Dunstan* for

his good Offices; they equalled if not preferred him to the Saints of the first Rank, and even to the Apostles; proclaimed every where that Miracles were wrought in his Favour, and that he was often honoured with divine Revelations: And if *Edred* had lived much longer, *Dunstan* and the Monks would in all Probability have carried all before them. Besides *Glastenbury*, this King also rebuilt *Croyland* and *Abington* Monasteries, which last was founded by *Ina*.

*Edred* died in the tenth Year of his Reign, and was buried at *Winchester*; though some say he reigned but seven Years, and died in 955\*. He was the youngest Son of *Edward the Elder*, and left two Sons, who did not succeed him; but *Edwy*, Son to *Edmund*, his elder Brother, was after him placed on the Throne.

In one of *Edred's* Charters, if they are genuine, he styles himself *Monarch of Albion*, and in another *King of Great-Britain*; as *Edgar* did after him. But this Title was disused by their Successors, till the Reign of *James I*.

E D W Y. 955—959.

**T**HIS Prince was but 14 Years old when he came to the Crown, and was so remarkably handsome that he obtained the Surname of *Pancalus*, or *The Fair*. His Character is very differently represented. The Monks make him a very vicious and wicked Prince; but little Credit is to be given to what they write: For as all were *Saints*, who were Friends to them, who built and endowed Monasteries, or bestowed large Donations upon them; so all were *Devils* in their Account, who were their Enemies; or opposed any of their exorbitant Incroach-

ments. This was the Case of poor *Edwy*, and therefore the Monks thought they could not blacken him too much. They say, that on the very Day of his Coronation, he withdrew from his Nobles to the Apartment of his Mistress, who was Wife to one of his Courtiers, and that *Dunstan* alone had the Courage to go and reprimand him, and with much Difficulty brought him away. And some, to put the Matter in a yet worse Light, say that he kept the Mother, as well as the Daughter, whose Name was *Elgiwa*, and that he was between them on the

Bed,



Bed, when *Dunstan* went to fetch him. But we need only give one Instance of the Spirit of the Monks, to shew how little they are to be believed. They say, that *Edwy's* Soul, after his Death, was dragged to Hell by a Legion of Devils, one of whom was sent to *Dunstan* to acquaint him with the good News; who instead of rejoicing at it, prayed so earnestly for his Soul, that God snatched it from the Devils, and translated it to Paradise. Whatever there may be in the Story of *Edwy's* Amours, 'tis plain, he might have had Mistresses without all this Noise, if he had been a Friend to the Monks; for his Brother *Edgar* was much more guilty this Way, and yet they were not at all displeased with him. However it be, *Edwy* found to his Cost, what it was to have such Enemies as the Monks, as will appear by what follows.

He was no sooner on the Throne, than he commanded *Dunstan* to give an Account of the Money the late King had intrusted him with. *Dunstan* refused to obey, alledging the Money had been expended for *pious Uses*. The King's Council were not for pushing this Affair any farther, for fear of the People, who had a high Notion of *Dunstan's* Sanctity, and an extravagant Veneration for the Monks and their *Religious Houses*, so that they branded every one who spoke against them as *impious* and *profane*. However, to mortify the Abbot, the Monks were turned out of the *Benefices* they had invaded, and the *Secular Priests* restored. Upon this a hideous Clamour was raised, as if Religion was never in so great Danger, and the Monks vented the most bitter Invectives imaginable. Those of *Malmesbury* made the greatest Outcry of all, and were therefore turned out of their Monastery, which was given to the *Secular Priests*. *William* of *Malmesbury*, who

was of this House, says, that *after it had been in the Possession of Monks for 270 Years, it was made a Stable of Clerks*. *Dunstan*, who was supposed to be the chief Author of these Clamours, was banished, or, as some say, voluntarily retired to a Monastery in *Flanders*.

And now the Monks with all their Might cried down the Government of the young King, and represented him as the most impious of Men. This soon occasioned an Insurrection in *Mercia*, and *Edgar* the King's Brother headed the Revolters, and having secured that Part of the Country, he marched into *Northumberland* and *East-Anglia*, where the *Danes*, always glad of any Disturbance among the *English*, readily joined him. *Edwy* was unprepared to quell this Rebellion, not imagining it was in the Power of the Monks to do so much Mischief, and knowing that neither the People nor his Brother had any just Cause of Complaint. And so the Event was, that he could only keep *Wessex*, which preserved its Fidelity to him, and was forced to deliver up all the rest, of which *Edgar* was at length chosen the Head, with the Title of *King of Mercia*. *Edwy* did not long survive this Partition: For being vexed at his being deprived of so great a Part of his Dominions, and that the Monks had thus got the better of him, he fell into a deep Melancholy, which put an End to his Life, after he had reigned a little above four Years. He was buried at *Winchester*. Notwithstanding the Calumnies and malicious Misrepresentations of the Monks, there are other Historians who give him a good Character, saying, the Nation flourished under his Government, and seeming to lament his living no longer, particularly *Huntingdon*, who was no Party in the Quarrel.

E D G A R. 959-975.

959  
 +  
 +  
 EDGAR, the other Son of *Edmund*, was King of one Part of *England*, as has been already mentioned, before his Brother *Edwy* died, and after his Death he succeeded to the Whole. This was in 959, when he was no more than 16 Years old. His Reign was one continual Calm, without any Wars or Commotions, whence he had the Surname of *Peaceable*. This uninterrupted Peace was chiefly owing to his vast Preparations both by Sea and Land, so that none dared to attack him. He always kept a large standing Army in the *North* to awe the *Danes*, and had a prodigious Fleet at Sea, distributed in all the Ports, and cruising continually round the Island. By these Means he kept all quiet at home, and prevented any Invasion from abroad; and without striking a Stroke, obliged the Kings of *Wales*, *Ireland*, and the *Isle of Man*, to acknowledge him for their Sovereign. And 'tis even said that keeping his Court at *Chester*, and having a Mind to visit the Monastery of *St. John Baptist*, he was rowed down the River *Dee* by eight Kings, his Vassals, he himself sitting at the Helm. There was another Circumstance also which tended to keep Things quiet during all *Edgar's* Reign; and that was his being the great Patron and Protector of the Monks: For as the common People were generally very superstitiously devoted to their Interest, the Party that sided with the Monks was by far the strongest, and 'twas too much in their Power to preserve Peace, or create Disturbances and raise Rebelions, just as they had a Mind.

*Edgar's* Character is variously represented by Historians. The Monkish Writers are extravagant in setting

forth his Praises, and no wonder, considering how much he did for their Order. He recalled *Dunstan* from Banishment, made him Bishop of *Worcester*, and afterwards Archbishop of *Canterbury*; and gave himself up entirely to his Direction. By his Advice he made *Oswald* Bishop of *Worcester*, after *Dunstan's* Translation to *Canterbury*, and *Ethelwold* Bishop of *Winchester*: These were Monks, and fast Friends to *Dunstan*; and these three Prelates, by holding together, entirely governed the Church during *Edgar's* Reign. The Consequence of this was, that the Secular Priests were expelled the Monasteries, and the Regulars put in their Room: These latter were also again put in Possession of the Ecclesiastical Benefices, and the Seculars ejected. The Secular Clergy were indeed very corrupt in their Morals, but the chief Offence was their marrying. Besides these Favours, which *Edgar* with a high Hand conferred on the Monks, he is said to have founded forty Monasteries, and to have repaired and beautified many more; and was so very liberal in his Donations, that 'twas scarce possible for him to do more for the Monks than he did. No wonder then, if he was honoured with the Title of *Saint* after his Death.

Others make *Edgar* a very wicked Man, and represent him as one of the vilest of Princes. But the most candid and impartial Writers say, there was a great Mixture of good and bad Qualities in him, and that if we consider him only in his political Capacity, he was truly a great King. Some of his Actions which merit Praise I shall here set down. He contrived a good Expedient to clear the Country of Wolves, which were



were then very numerous, and made terrible Havock among the Flocks and Herds. Instead of the Tribute of Gold, Silver, and Cattle paid him by the *Welsh*, he ordered them, in 961, to bring him every Year 300 Wolves Heads; and published throughout *England* a general Pardon to all Criminals, on Condition they brought him by such a Time a certain Number of Wolves Tongues, in Proportion to their several Crimes. In Consequence of this, the Wolves were so hunted and destroyed, that by three Years End there was not one left in the Country. He moreover took Care to free the Nation from a Sort of Creatures worse than Wolves, I mean corrupt and unjust Judges and Magistrates. To this End he every Year took a Progress through some Part of his Dominions, to hear the Complaints of his Subjects against these pernicious Vermin; and made a Law that every Judge convicted of having given an unjust Sentence, should be fined, if he did it ignorantly; but if knowingly, should be dismissed from his Office for ever.

If we consider some Actions of another Kind, such as a bloody Execution, done by his Order in the *Isle of Thanet*, upon a very slight Occasion, and his criminal Amours, we may judge that the Monks, who have been so lavish in his Praises, would have given him no better Quarter than they did his Brother *Edwy*, if he had not been so fast a Friend to them. His first Mistress was a Nun, whom he took by Force out of a Convent, by whom he had a Daughter. His second Mistress, whom some call his Wife, was *Elfrida the Fair*, by whom he had Prince *Edward*, who succeeded him. His third Mistress was put upon him instead of another whom he desired: For accidentally lodging in a Lord's House near *Andover*, he fell so pas-

sionately in Love with his Daughter at first Sight, that he ordered her to be brought to his Bed without troubling himself to gain her Consent. The Mother, hereupon artfully prevailed upon one of her Waiting-Women to go to the King's Bed instead of her Daughter. In the Morning when the Cheat was discovered, he was at first very much provoked; but reflecting more seriously on the Dishonour he designed his Host, and liking the Girl, he forgave the Trick, and kept her as his Mistress till he married.

I shall conclude with the Story of *Edgar's* Marriage. Hearing that *Ordgar* Earl of *Devonshire* had a Daughter named *Elfrida*, esteemed the greatest Beauty in *England*, he was resolved to make her his Wife, if she answered the Description, and sent Earl *Ethelwold* his Favourite to bring him an Account. He went to the Earl of *Devon's*, and upon seeing the young Lady, fell so desperately in Love with her, that quite neglecting his Master, he demanded and obtained her for himself, and was privately married to her. At his Return to Court, he misrepresented her to the King, telling him there was nothing extraordinary in her, and that the common Report of her Beauty was false. This had such Weight with the King, that he quite laid aside his Design of marrying her. *Ethelwold* perceiving the King quite cool on the Matter, one Day represented to him, that though *Elfrida* was not fit for a King, yet she was so great a Fortune, that it would be the Making of any Subject to marry her, and so got the King's Leave to make her his Wife; upon which he returned and solemnized his Marriage publicly. *Edgar* however at length suspected some Treachery, which Suspicion was confirmed by her Husband's keeping her at his Country Seat, and never bringing

bringing her to Court: And *Ethelwold* did not want Enemies, who told the King the whole Truth. Upon this he resolved to see her himself, and going into those Parts where *Ethelwold* kept her, upon some Pretence or other, when he was near the Place, he told him he had a Mind to see his Wife. *Ethelwold* was quite confounded at this, but could not prevent it. As soon as the King saw her, he found how he had been imposed upon; he was quite enamoured with her Beauty, and resolved to be revenged on the per-

dious Earl. Soon after *Ethelwold* was found murdered in a Wood, and some say the King took him there under Pretence of Hunting, and killed him with his own Hands. However that be, no Inquiry was made after the Murderers, and *Edgar* shortly after was married to *Elfrida*, by whom he left one Son, *Ethelred*, who succeeded his Brother *Edward*.

*Edgar* reigned about 16 Years after *Edwy's* Death. He died in 975, the 32d Year of his Age; and was buried at *Glastenbury*.

---

EDWARD the Younger, or the Martyr. 975-<sup>978</sup>~~1016~~

THE Security which *Edgar* enjoyed by Means of his governing by the Monks, lasted no longer than his Reign. Many of the Nobles and great Men were all along uneasy at the King's unbounded Partiality in their Favour, and the Eyes of many more began to be opened, and to behold with Impatience the Power of the Monks, and the great Wealth that was heaped upon them: And they thought they had now an Opportunity, upon *Edgar's* Decease, to check their Incroachments, and reduce them to their primitive State. *Elfier*, Duke of *Mercia*, struck the first Stroke, by turning the Monks out of all the Benefices in his Province, and restoring the Secular Priests; and some other Lords followed his Example in other Places. But the Duke of *East-Anglia*, and several other great Men, were firmly attached to *Dunstan* and his Party. The Nobles were even upon the Point of coming to Blows in their Contents about the Monks, and the Breach still grew wider when they came to debate about the Succession to the Crown. The Monks and their Party were for *Edward*, *Ed-*

*gar's* eldest Son, now about 14 Years old; and the opposite Party, pretending *Edward's* Mother was never lawfully married to *Edgar*, were for *Ethelred*, who was about eight Years of Age, and whose Mother *Elfrida* was living. The true Reason was, that he was under her Government, and they knew she was no Friend to the Monks.

In the mean Time, *Dunstan* fearing to be out-voted, taking Advantage of the Favour of the People, who had an high Opinion of his Sanctity, rises on a sudden, and leads Prince *Edward* by the Hand towards the Church, followed by the other Bishops and a great Crowd; and being come there, anoints him King. The Nobles murmured at this, but seeing he had the People to back him, were forced to acquiesce.

*Dunstan* immediately assumed the Regency, and laboured all he could to keep the Monks in the Benefices; but met with great Opposition, and perhaps all his Endeavours would have failed, if by Means of pretended Miracles he had not made the People believe that Heaven appeared in his Favour. He convened several



several Councils on this Affair, and in all of them the Monks were in Danger of losing their Cause; but a Miracle set all to rights again. In one of these Councils a Crucifix uttered aloud these Words, *It shan't be so, it shan't be so: You have judged well hitherto, and it would be wrong to change.* But the People being told, that all this was Artifice, and that a Man was placed behind the Wall, who through a Trunk spoke these Words; another Council was convened at *Calne* in *Wiltshire*, where again it was like to go against the Monks: But whilst they were warmly debating on both Sides, the Floor of the Room where they sat broke down, and killed some, and bruised others. *Dunstan* alone remained safe in his Chair, which was placed on the only Beam that did not give Way. After this Accident the Monks were left unmolested in their Benefices: Though some will have it to be a vile Contrivance, because the King, they say, was prevented by *Dunstan* from being there, who used to be present at all such Assemblies.

King *Edward*, after he had reigned little more than three Years, came to a tragical End, in 979, after the following Manner. As he was one Day returning from Hunting, and came near *Corfe-Castle*, in the *Isle of Purbeck* in *Dorsetshire*, where his Step-Mother *Elfrida* and her Son *Ethelred* resided, he rode off from his Company to give her a Visit. *Elfrida* being informed the King was at the Gate, ran to receive him, and pressed him to alight. As he only

designed to pay his Respects to her as he passed by, he desired only a Glass of Wine to drink her Health; which being brought to him as he sat on his Horse, the innocent King no sooner lifted the Glass to his Mouth, but a Villain, at the private Instigation of the cruel Queen, stabbed him in the Back with a Dagger. Some say he fell from his Horse, and was instantly dispatched by the same Russian: Others, that finding himself wounded, he set Spurs to his Horse, and rode till he was out of Sight; but fainting through Loss of Blood, he fell at last, and his Foot hanging in the Stirrup, he was dragged a great Way thro' Fields and Woods, till his Horse stopped at a poor blind Woman's Door. His dead Body was afterwards found, and carried to *Warham*, and from thence removed to *Shaftesbury* Monastery, where many Miracles were said to be wrought at his Tomb, as was commonly the Case with those who were in the good Graces of the Monks; on which Account alone it must be that King *Edward* was honoured with the Title not only of *Saint* but *Martyr*.

*Elfrida*, to atone for her Crime, built a Nunnery at *Ambresbury* in *Wiltshire*, and another at *Whorwell* near *Andover*; in which last she shut herself up to do Penance as long as she lived, and is often said to have covered herself all over with little Crosses, to keep off the Devil, whom she had Reason enough to be afraid of.

## ETHELRED II. 978-1016.

THIS Prince being now the only one that was left of the Royal Family, *Dunstan* could not refuse to crown him, how much so-

ever he was against it; though at the same Time, if we may believe some Writers, he foretold the Calamities the Nation would be exposed to during

during his Reign. He was now about 12 Years old, and the People flattered themselves they should be very happy under his Government: But they soon found themselves disappointed; for perhaps no Reign was ever fuller of Troubles from the Beginning to the End of it, than that of *Ethelred's*, who shewed himself throughout to be an exceeding weak, impolitick, cowardly, and extremely avaricious Prince. If he had been of another Temper, the Miseries of *England* might probably have been prevented, or at least would not have got to so terrible a Head, as it will appear they did.

The Kingdom had been disturbed by no Invasion from the *Danes* for 50 or 60 Years, and those who were settled here had for a long Time lived quiet and peaceable, as if they had made but one People with the *English*. But soon after *Ethelred's* Accession, the foreign *Danes* renewed their Attacks, and the others shewed themselves but too ready to join them.

981 In 981, the piratical *Danes* arrived at *Southampton* with seven Ships, plundered that Town, and the Country round, and then proceeded to ravage *Cornwall* in the same Manner. The same Year another Band arrived at *Portland*, and committed the like Devastations. Several other Descents they made in different Parts of the Kingdom, with now and then a little Intermission, for ten Years together, and nothing was to be seen but Plunderings, Conflagrations, Murders, and all the Misery imaginable.

During this Time the Credit and Interest of the Monks went down apace. The People began to wonder, that they who could do so many Miracles (as they pretended) on their own private Account, could not by their Merits and Prayers prevent the Calamities of the Nation. *Ethelred* shewed them no Manner of Respect.

The three Bishops, their Patrons; formerly mentioned, were taken off by Death; the chief of whom was *Dunstan*, of whom so much has been said, who died in 990. His Credit had been vastly sunk, and 'twas thought his Regret at not having the same Deference paid him as formerly, tended to shorten his Days: These and other Circumstances concurring, particularly the People's Minds being taken up with the continual Invasions of the *Danes*, put an entire End to the Quarrel between the Monks and the Secular Priests.

After about two Years Respite, in 991, the *Danes* renewed their Invasions, a great Body of Troops landing at *Gisfrich* (now *Ipswich*) in *Suffolk*, under two Danish Generals; *Jufin* and *Guthmund*; who having defeated *Brithnot*, Duke of *East-Anglia*, who marched against them, penetrated farther into the Country, and made terrible Havock. *Ethelred* being not in a Condition to oppose them, bought them off with 10,000*l.* In 993, another Fleet of *Danes* sailed up the *Humber*, who landing on the North-Side, committed terrible Ravages upon the *English* in those Parts. *Ethelred* sent an Army against them, and impolitickly gave the Command of it to three Earls of Danish Extraction, who upon Sight of the Enemy, whether thro' Treachery, or otherwise, shamefully turned their Backs, and fled.

The next Year, *Sweyn* King of *Denmark*, and *Olaus* or *Olaf* King of *Norway*, invaded *England*. They came up the *Thames*, and after an unsuccessful Attempt upon *London*, plundered *Kent*, *Hampshire*, and *Sussex*. *Ethelred*, who had neither Conduct nor Courage, obliged himself to pay them 16,000*l.* on Condition they left the Kingdom. Upon this the two Kings returned home. *Olaus*, before his Departure, was baptized, and

10000  
16000  
£ 26000 *St. p. to buy*  
*the Danes' absence*



and took an Oath never to molest *England* more, which he faithfully observed. But *Sweyn* returned about three Years after, entered the *Severn*, and landing, committed greater Devastations than he had done before. He would have proceeded farther, if he had not been luckily called off to assist *Richard II.* Duke of *Normandy* against the King of *France*. But this was but a short Reprieve for *England*: For in the Year 1001, the *Danes* returned again, ravaged *Cornwall*, and took *Exeter*, got Possession of the *Isle of Wight*, *Hampshire*, and *Dorsetshire*, and made continual Incursions into the neighbouring Counties. The *English* Forces were constantly defeated, and the King was so terrified, that he durst not be present at any of the Battles. In fine, seeing no other Way to get rid of his Enemies, he agreed to pay them 30,000*l.* which was levied by Way of Tax, and called *Danegeld*, and was the first Land-Tax in *England*. Upon this the *Danes* ceased their Ravages, and most of them returned home; but as a great many of them, liking the Country, staid behind, and *England* was well stocked with them before, they began now to take upon themselves and domineer over the *English*, who were perpetually in dread of new Invasions. They lived in Ease and Pleasure, whilst the poor *English* were forced to labour and toil to satisfy their Demands. Hence they gave them the Name of *Lord-Danes*, and to this Day, in some Parts of *England*, a rich, idle, imperious Man is called in Derision a *Lurdane*.

*Ethelred* having married *Emma*, Sister to the Duke of *Normandy*, and depending upon his Assistance whenever he should have Occasion, resolved now upon an Expedient, which in the End compleated the Ruin of *England*. This was a general Massacre of the *Danes*. He privately

sent Orders to all Parts of the Kingdom for this Purpose, which were executed with such Fury, that in one Day, viz. Nov. 13, 1002, all the *Danes* were slain with most horrid Cruelty and Barbarity: Tho' some think, that by all the *Danes*, are meant only those lately settled in *England*, and dispersed in *Wessex* and *Mercia*. The Cruelties exercised in this Massacre are too shocking to be related. Among many others, we are told, that the *Danish* Women were put in Holes in the Ground as deep as their Waists, and then had their Breasts torn off by Mastiff Dogs. King *Sweyn's* Sister, who was a Christian, and married to a noble *Dane* who had been settled some Time in *England*, fell among the rest. *Ethelred* was so cruel as to have her beheaded, after he had ordered her Children to be killed before her Face. She was a Lady of excellent Qualities, and had been an Instrument in making Peace between the *English* and *Danes*. The barbarous Treatment of this Princess was severely revenged by her Brother, as we shall soon see.

For *Sweyn* was no sooner informed of this bloody Tragedy, and the cruel Murder of his Sister, but he solemnly swore he would never rest till he had revenged so monstrous an Outrage. He now therefore comes not for the Sake of Plunder, as before, but to destroy the whole Country with Fire and Sword. Having equipped a Fleet of 300 Sail, he landed in *Cornwall* with a powerful Army, marched to *Exeter*, and having put the Inhabitants to the Sword, reduced it to Ashes. *Ethelred*, who was betrayed on all Hands, imprudently gave the Command of his Army to the Duke of *Mercia*, whom he had formerly banished, and whose Son's Eyes he had ordered to be put out; and he in Revenge betrayed it to the *Danes* as soon as he came in Sight

Sight of them. The following Spring *Sweyn* landed in *East-Anglia*, and took and burnt *Norwich* and *Thetford*. Soon after he engaged *Ulfketel*, Duke of *East-Anglia*, the faithfullest and bravest of all *Ethelred's* Subjects, and entirely defeated him, though with great Loss on his own Side.

1005. In 1005 there was a Famine in *England*, which tho' a terrible Calamity proved of some Advantage to the *English*; for it occasioned *Sweyn* to return to *Denmark* for Want of necessary Subsistence. But as soon as it was over, another *Danish* Fleet arrived at *Sandwich*, and *Ethelred* bought them off with another 30,000*l*. Shortly after, the King married his Daughter to *Edrick Streon*, whom he had lately made Duke of *Mercia*, who on all Occasions shewed himself a Traytor sold to the

1008. *Danes*. In 1008 *Ethelred* fitted out a noble Fleet, to secure the Kingdom from the *Danish* Invasions: But it all came to nothing through a private Quarrel of the Admiral, and Dissensions among the Officers. The next Spring two *Danish* Fleets arrived in *England*, one under *Turkil*, another under *Heming* and *Anlaff*. Whilst they were ravaging *Kent*, *Ethelred* drew an Army together to oppose them; but through the Treachery of *Edrick* suffered them to pass by him with their Plunder unmolested. Shortly after they became Masters of *East-Anglia*, almost all *Wessex*, and several Counties in other Parts. In 1012 they plundered and burnt *Canterbury*, slew *Alphage* the Archbishop, and put the Monks of *St. Augustin* and the Burghers under a Decimation, killing nine Parts in ten. At last it was agreed on by the King and his Nobles to bribe them with 40,000*l*. to go off with their Booty. But the next Year *Sweyn* returned, entered the *Humber* with a formidable Fleet, and made himself Master of all the

Counties North of *Watling-Street*. *Ethelred* had shut himself up in *London*, and *Sweyn* leaving his Son *Canute* to take Care of the conquered Counties, was advancing to lay Siege to it; which *Ethelred* being informed of, left the Kingdom, and retired into *Normandy* with his whole Family: Upon which the *Londoners* submitted.

The whole Kingdom being now subdued, *Sweyn* was proclaimed King of *England* without any Opposition. The first Thing he did was to lay a most heavy Tax on the Nation for paying the *Danish* Troops. He reigned not quite a Year, but died suddenly in 1014. His Reign being so very short, and perhaps his being never crowned, are the Reasons why most Historians have not ranked him among the Kings of *England*.

Upon *Sweyn's* Death, the *Danes* proclaimed his Son *Canute* King of *England*; but the *English* recalled *Ethelred*, received him with great Demonstrations of Joy, and renewed their Oath of Allegiance to him. He made them very fair Promises to govern better than heretofore; but it soon appeared he was not at all changed. The *English* flocked to him from all Parts, so that he soon found himself at the Head of a numerous Army; but he made no better Use of it than he had done before. As for *Canute*, he on a sudden embarked his Troops, and sailed for *Denmark*, to assert his Right to that Crown, which his younger Brother *Harold* had usurped: But before he departed, he ordered the Hands and Feet of the Hostages, which his Father had received, to be cut off, and left them in that mangled Condition on the Shore.

In the mean Time *Ethelred* governed as bad as ever, and his People lost all Hopes of him. And to compleat their Misfortunes, *Canute* having settled Affairs in *Denmark*, returned in about a Year, and landed with



with a numerous Army at *Sandwich*. *Edmund*, the King's eldest Son, a Prince of noble Qualities, and his Brother-in-Law *Edrick*, commanded the Army against him; but *Edmund* soon found he was abused by that Traitor, who in a little Time openly declared for *Canute*, and carried off with him a considerable Body of Troops and 40 Ships. *Canute* upon this soon made himself Master of all *Mercia*, and resolved to attack *Ethelred* in *Wessex*; and as *Edrick* had fully instilled into the *Mercians* in the *English* Army, that it was a Sin to fight against a Prince who was in Possession of their Country, all that *Edmund* could bring them to was to fight under *Ethelred* in Person, but not under any other General. *Edmund* laboured with all his Might to persuade his Father to head the Army, but all in vain, upon which the *Mercians* quitted it. After which *Canute* became Master of several Counties in *Wessex*; and *Edmund* perceiving he was not in a Condition to stop his Progress, marched into the North to join *Uthred*, Earl of *Northumberland*. *Canute* followed him

with all Expedition, and upon his coming up *Uthred* submitted to him, but did not long survive his Perfidy; for *Canute* thinking him not to be trusted, who changed Sides only by Compulsion, caused him to be put to Death, and promoted *Edrick* a *Danish* Lord in his Room.

*Ethelred* died in 1016, in the 50th 1016. Year of his Age, after a most inglorious and miserable Reign of 37 Years, and was buried in *St. Paul's* Church at *London*. Historians give him the Surname of *The Unready*. Some think he was not so bad in himself as he seems to be, but that his Misconduct was owing to his being imposed upon by the Traitors about him, particularly *Edrick*. 'Tis + certain he made some good Laws, which are still extant; and that when he found a certain Judge, whom he had a great Affection for, guilty of + Injustice, he turned him out of his Office. He had two Sons, besides *Edmund*, and three Daughters, by his first Wife *Elgira*; and by *Emma* of *Normandy*, *Alfred* and *Edward*, afterwards King *Edward the Confessor*, and a Daughter named *Goda*.

### EDMUND Ironside. 1016-1017.

NO Prince ever came to the Crown in more distracted and troublesome Times than *Edmund*, and if we consider his noble Qualities and generous Disposition, none seems to have been more worthy of a better Fate. Upon his Father's Death, the City of *London* and all the Lords that were there proclaimed him King of *England*, whilst the *Danes* and all the Places in their Possession declared for *Canute*; but as the *English* that were among them submitted to him only thro' Compulsion, a great many of them came over to *Edmund*, and so the two contending Parties became

more on a Level. *Canute's* first Attempt was upon *London*, as being *Edmund's* chief Support, which he besieged three Times, but without Success. Before the last of these Sieges a great Battle was fought, in which both Kings eminently displayed their Courage and Conduct, and the two Armies parted at last with equal Loss on both Sides; tho' the *English* were in Danger of being worsted by a Stratagem of the false *Edrick*, who was now on the Side of the *Danes*. He cut off the Head of a Soldier, who resembled *Edmund*, held it up on the Top of his Lance

in Sight of the *English*, and cried out, *Fly, fly, you Scoundrels, behold the Head of your King in whom you trust.* This would infallibly have occasioned their Defeat, if *Edmund* had not shewn himself with his Helmet off, and so revived the Courage of his Soldiers, which by *Edrick's* Artifice began to droop. The Battle lasted till Night, and *Edmund* prepared to renew it the next Morning, but *Canute* marched off in the Night, and went and besieged *London* a third Time, as has been mentioned. According to *Milton*, the Battle continued two whole Days. It was fought at *Scorshan*, which *Cambden* takes to be *Skerston* in *Wiltshire*; but others suppose it to be the Place where four Stones part the Counties of *Oxford*, *Gloucester*, *Warcester*, and *Warwick*, and are called *Shirestones*.

There is great Confusion in the *English* History with regard to the Particulars of the War between *Edmund* and *Canute*. Thus much is certain, that five pitched Battles were fought with various Success, one of which had undoubtedly been fatal to the *Danes*, had it not been for the treacherous Advice of *Edrick*, who, by the most solemn Oaths and Protestations of Fidelity for the future, had reconciled himself to the generous *Edmund*, on purpose to betray him. He persuaded *Edmund* not to pursue the *Danes*, who were retreating in Disorder, lest they should rally again, and snatch the Victory out of his Hands. In the last Battle at *Affandun*, now *Ashdown* in *Essex*, this base Traitor deserted his Post, and again went over to the *Danes*, with the Forces he commanded; which put the *English* into such a Consternation, that they threw down their Arms and fled.

*Canute* now thought his Work was done, and that the *English* would never be able to make Head against

him more. But as *Edmund* had the Hearts of his Subjects, particularly the *Londoners*, and he was not of a Temper to let his Courage sink, he soon drew together a more powerful Army than before, and marched towards *Gloucester* in quest of the Enemy; which *Canute* being informed of, advanced towards him, in order to give him Battle. The two Kings stood in View of each other for some Time at the Head of their respective Forces, both dreading the Event of that important Day. At last *Edmund*, who, besides his courageous Soul, was of great bodily Strength, and thence called *Ironside*, proposed to *Canute*, that in order to prevent the Effusion of so much Blood as was going to be spilt, they two should decide the Quarrel by single Combat. Some say the Duel was actually fought in Sight of both Armies, and lasted a good while without either's having the Advantage of the other, till the two Kings embraced one another, and agreed upon the Spot to divide the Kingdom between them. But according to others, *Canute* refused the Challenge, alledging, that though he was not inferior to his Adversary in Courage, yet being weak in Body, and small of Stature, he would not engage on so unequal Terms; and proposed to refer Matters to the chief Officers of the two Armies. The Circumstances of this Fact are, after all, very uncertain. However, the Result was, that Plenipotentiaries were appointed on both Sides, who met in the *Isle of Alney*, in the *Severn*, near *Gloucester*, and quickly concluded a Peace by the Partition of the Kingdom; *Edmund* to have *Wessex*, i. e. all South of the *Thames*, with *London*, and Part of the ancient Kingdom of *Essex*; and *Canute* to have *Mercia*, *Northumberland*, and *East-Anglia*.

The valiant, prudent, and generous King *Edmund* enjoyed not his Share



Share long. For the Villain *Edrick*, Duke of *Mercia*, his Brother-in-Law, fearing the Union of the two Kings might prove destructive to him, being conscious what a false Traitor he had been, hired two Ruffians, who were of the King's Household, to murder him, who, 'tis said, stabbed him with a sharp Piece of Iron, as he was easing Nature. Some indeed say he was dispatched by Poison, and others that he was killed by an Arrow shot from an Image made for that Purpose, which discharged itself on the King's touching it; and the *Saxon Annals* say only, that he died suddenly. So that the Manner of his being taken off is somewhat uncertain, tho' it is generally agreed, that it was by *Edrick's* Means, and some say he employed his own Son for that execrable Purpose. Thus fell this brave Prince, when he had not reigned quite a Year, but in that short Time gave

frequent Proofs of his excellent and noble Qualities. He left two Sons, *Edmund* and *Edward*, by his Wife *Algotha*, and a natural Son, named *Edwy*. He was buried at *Glastenbury*, and with him the *Saxon* Monarchy in *England* in a Manner ended, having lasted 190 Years from *Egbert's* Establishment, 432 from the Founding of the *Heptarchy*, and 568 from the Arrival of *Hengist*.

The wicked *Edrick* hastened to tell *Canute* the Service he had done him. But that Prince had the greatest Abhorrence of so barbarous an Action, tho' he dissembled it for the present, and promised to advance *Edrick* above all the Peers of the Realm. He was as good as his Word, tho' not in the Manner the vile Wretch understood it: For not long after, he ordered him to be beheaded, his Body to be thrown into the *Thames*, and his Head to be fixed on the highest Gate in *London*.





T. Kitchen sc

## CANUTE the Great. 1017-1036.

**C**ANUTE, or *Cnute*, who was already in Possession of half *England*, upon *Edmund's* Death, through Policy, and the Fears of the *English*, who dreaded the Renewal of the War, easily became Master of the Whole, not properly by Force of Arms, but by extorting the Consent of the Nobles, who plainly saw, that if they refused, the War would be kindled afresh. *Edmund* left two Sons, but they were very young, and his two Brothers were in *Normandy*, who had no Thoughts of obtaining the Crown of *Wessex*; and besides, *Canute's* Pretence was, that in the Treaty of *Alney*, the Agreement was, that the Survivor of the two Kings should succeed the other. However that was, the Assembly-General he had convened in *Wessex*, knowing he was in a Condition to assert his Claim, at last yielded; and so *Canute* was acknowledged and proclaimed King of all *England*, in 1017, and all the Lords, both *English* and

*Danes*, swore Allegiance to him. After his Coronation, he divided *England* into four Parts or Governments, *Mercia*, *Northumberland*, *East-Anglia*, and *Wessex*. Over the three former he appointed Dukes or Earls, and the last he governed by himself.

As he knew upon what Motive the *English* received him for their Sovereign, the Beginning of his Reign was employed in fixing himself more securely on the Throne. His first Project for this Purpose was very laudable, which was to gain the Affections of his new Subjects. To this End, that Justice might be the more impartially administered, he declared, that for the future no Distinction should be made between the *English* and *Danes*; And then by an Edict he ordered, that every County should be governed by the same Laws, as in the Time of the *Saxon* Kings; excepting however the Northern Counties, whose Inhabitants were almost all *Danes*, and had particular Laws of their own. At

1017.

the



the same Time he denounced the severest Punishments against Malefactors, of what Nation soever, without Respect of Persons. The Effect of these wise Regulations was, that the People thought themselves happy under so just and equitable a Prince.

His other Project was not quite so laudable, which was to get rid of those who gave him most Uneasiness, especially the Sons and Brothers of the late King. *Edmund's* two Sons he sent into *Denmark*, under the Pretence of travelling, committing them to one of his Domesticks; though his real Design was to get them the more easily dispatched. The Person who had the Charge of them, being moved with Compassion, instead of carrying them to *Denmark*, conveyed them to the King of *Sweden*, who, tho' he received them very civilly, yet fearing to break with *Canute*, sent them to the King of *Hungary*, who took care of their Education, and at length gave one of his Daughters in Marriage to *Edmund* the eldest, who died soon after, and to *Edward* he gave his Sister-in-Law *Agatha*, Daughter of the Emperor *Henry II.* by whom he had five Children, *Edgar Atheling*, *Margaret* and *Christian*, and two that died in *Hungary*. King *Edmund* had a Brother who was yet in *England*, named *Edwy*; and him *Canute* banished, but soon after recalling him, under Pretence of being reconciled, he got him dispatched out of the Way. He would have been glad to have got rid of *Alfred* and *Edward*, who were in *Normandy* with their Mother *Emma*, but was at a Loss how to get them out of the Hands of Duke *Richard* their Uncle.† However, to bring that Prince over to his Interest, he demanded in Marriage his Sister *Emma*, King *Ethelred's* Widow, and offered him at the same Time one

of his own Sisters; which Proposals were accepted, and *Emma* became once more Queen of *England*. But if she was pleased, her two Sons were not less disgusted at this Marriage. *Edward* in particular never forgave her for becoming the Wife of her first Husband's mortal Enemy: And her consenting by the Marriage Articles, that the Succession should be settled on the Heirs of her Body by *Canute*, highly incensed them both. After this *Canute* either banished or put to Death some great Lords he was jealous of, among the rest *Edrick Streon*, in dispatching whom he however did an Act of Justice, which was very agreeable to the *English*.

*England* was now in profound Tranquillity, and *Canute* being secure in the Affections of his Subjects, in 1019, went over to *Denmark* to quell the *Vandals* who were at War with the *Danes*, which having happily effected he returned to *England*. This Success was chiefly owing to *Goodwin*, whom *Canute* for that Reason created Earl of *Kent*, and who became at length one of the greatest Lords in *England*.

In 1025, *Canute* undertook another Expedition against the *Swedes*, who had invaded *Denmark*; which proved not very successful: But two Years after, he made himself ample Amends by getting an entire Possession of *Norway*, of which he was crowned King.

Being now Master of three Kingdoms, and his Ambition pretty well satisfied, he from this Time addicted himself wholly to Acts of Devotion, abandoning all Thoughts of warlike Affairs. By Acts of Devotion are here meant, according to the Custom of those Times, the founding, enriching and endowing of Monasteries and Churches, which was the Way for Kings and great Men to atone for Murder, Usurpation,

† It is to be supposed that Queen Emma was Sister to King Richard & that William the Bastard was his Natural Son.

tion, and all Manner of Crimes. He particularly built a stately Church over the Grave of St. *Edmund* the *East-Englian* King, who was killed by the *Danes*, and very much enlarged the Town, called *St. Edmundsbury* from this Saint. He also enlarged the Building and increased the Revenues of the Monastery there, which became one of the finest and richest in the Kingdom. He likewise founded the noted Abbey of *St. Bennet's* in *Holme* in *Norfolk*, and gave several other Testimonies of this Kind of Devotion.

1031 In 1031 he took a Journey to *Rome*, where he made large Presents to the Churches, and confirmed all his Predecessors had done both for the Church of *Rome* and the *English* College. He obtained also several Privileges for the *English* Churches, and certain Privileges and Immunities for *English* Pilgrims and Travelers, as they passed thro' *Italy*, *Germany* and *France*: Which done, he returned to *England*, having first given a large Account of these Matters in a Letter from *Rome* to the *Assembly-General* of the Nation, in which he expresses much Pety, and a firm Resolution to govern by the most exact Rules of Justice, desiring his Nobles to assist him in this good Design. And indeed this must be said of him, that however unjustifiably he made his Way to the Throne, after he was firmly settled on it, he gave daily Marks of Justice, Equity and Moderation, the Effect of which was the universal

Love of his Subjects, and a high Esteem amongst Foreigners.

But the best Expression of his Piety, as well as good Sense, is still behind, if we regard the former Part of the Story, which is this: That as he was walking by the Sea-side at *Southampton*, and his Flatterers were extolling him to the Skies, and even comparing him with God himself, he, to convince them of their Folly and Impiety, caused a Chair to be brought him, and seating himself where the Tide was about to flow, he turned himself to the Sea, and said, *O Sea, thou art under my Jurisdiction, and the Land where I sit is mine: I command thee to come no farther, nor to presume to wet thy Sovereign's Feet.* But the Tide coming on as usual, he from thence took Occasion to let his base Flatterers know, that none but the King of Heaven, whom the Sea and Land obey, deserved the Titles they impiously bestowed on him. After which, it is said, he would never wear his Crown, but caused it to be put upon the Head of a Crucifix at *Winchester*.

*Canute* died in the 19th Year of his Reign, *A. D.* 1036, and was buried in the old Monastery in *Winchester*. He left three Sons, to whom, as some say, he bequeathed his three Kingdoms by Will; but that is disputed. However *Sweyn* had *Norway*; *Harold* *England*; and *Hardicanute*, *Denmark*. *Guilda* his Daughter was married to the Emperor *Henry IV.*

### HAROLD, surnamed HAREFOOT. 1036-1039

UPON *Canute's* Death, there was a great Dispute about the Succession. The *English* were for *Hardicanute*, who was born in *England*, of Queen *Emma*, and alledged

the Marriage Articles above mentioned in his Favour; but the *Danes* were for *Harold*, though a Foreigner and illegitimate, resolving, as 'tis said, to stand by *Canute's* Will. *Harold*



old had this Advantage above *Hardicanute*, that he was in *England*, and was of Age to govern; whereas the other was in *Denmark*, and but 15 or 16 Years old. Nevertheless *Harold* might have missed of the Crown, if he had not presently seized upon the Treasure his Father had laid up at *Winchester*. This enabled him to gain over several of his Opposers, and at a General Assembly of the whole Nation, held in *Mercia*, viz. at *Oxford*, having got a Majority of Voices, he was proclaimed King of *England*.

In the mean Time the *West-Saxons* returning home dissatisfied with this Choice, *Hardicanute* was, by the Management of Earl *Goodwin*, proclaimed King of *Wessex*, without any farther interfering with what had been done in *Mercia*. By *Wessex* now we are to understand all the Country South of the *Thames*, and by *Mercia* all North of it; and as in the former there were more *English* than *Danes*, so in the latter there were more *Danes* than *English*; and *Wessex* was by far the more populous of the two, though the other was of much larger Extent: This Equilibrium of the two Parties was what preserved the Nation in Peace, in the Midst of this Dissension.

In *Hardicanute's* Absence, *Goodwin* managed all in *Wessex*, independent of the Queen-Mother, whom the *English* had no Affection for. And *Harold* seeing he could not obtain his End by Force of Arms, endeavoured by underhand Means to bring over *Goodwin* to his Side. To effect this he is said to have promised the Earl to marry his Daughter. However that be, *Goodwin* on a sudden became his Friend, and under Pretence that *Hardicanute* neglected to come into *England*, got *Harold* to be acknowledged King of *Wessex* with all the Este imaginable; and now he was in reality King of all *England*.

Queen *Emma* was sufficiently mortified at these Proceedings, and now quite despairing of ever being able to recover the Crown for her Son *Hardicanute*, she formed a Design of setting one of her Sons by *Ethelred* on the Throne. To this End, after having dissembled in such a Manner as to make it be believed, as she thought, that she was quite easy, and would no more concern herself in publick Affairs, she got Leave of *Harold* to send for her two Sons, *Alfred* and *Edward*, out of *Normandy*, pretending only that her motherly Affection made her desirous to see them, after having been separated from them for so long a Time; but in reality her Design was, that as she knew they were greatly beloved by the *English*, they might, by being on the Spot, form a Party for themselves. The two Princes soon arrived, under Pretence only of paying a Visit to their Mother. But the sagacious Earl *Goodwin* easily smelt out the real Design, and acquainted *Harold* with it, who was sufficiently alarmed; but *Goodwin* represented to him how easy it was to crush this Conspiracy whilst it was as yet but in Embryo, and advised the managing of Matters so as to get the young Princes into their Hands, and then to make them away. *Harold* approved of this Project, and in his Turn having dissembled his Suspicion of the Queen's Designs for some Time, he laid hold of an Opportunity, which naturally presented itself, to invite the two Princes to come and pass some Days at Court. *Emma* was greatly disturbed at this, fearing the worst; but as she could not handsomely decline the King's Invitation, she took a middle Course, and sent only *Alfred*, keeping *Edward* with her under some plausible Pretence. *Goodwin* went himself to meet the Prince, as if to do him Honour; and *Alfred*, and his Sute

Train of *Normans* were highly pleased with the Respect that was paid him, but on a sudden were under the greatest Consternation, when they were stopped at *Guilford* Castle, and made to enter there under Pretence of refreshing themselves. *Alfred* was presently conducted to *Ely*, where his Eyes were put out, and he was shut up in the Monastery, but died in a short Time, either of Grief, or by some outward Violence: However, *Goodwin* was afterwards charged with his Murder. Prince *Edward* upon this made all the Haste he could back to *Normandy*, and *Emma* being ordered to leave the Kingdom, retired to *Bruges* in *Flanders*. After all, there is some Uncertainty in the above Story, which *Malmfbury* says was built on a common Report, and 'tis certain that it is told more Ways than one; particularly, that instead of *Emma's* sending for her Sons, *Harold* forged a Letter as from her, inviting the Princes over to recover their Right, and that *Alfred* only

came, and was served as above related: And some place his Death after *Harold's*.

*Hardicanute* began now at last to bestir himself, and to resolve to recover the Kingdom of *Wessex* by Force of Arms; but *Harold's* Death happening at the same Time, brought about with Ease what otherwise he would have found a difficult Matter to accomplish. He died without Issue, in 1039, in the fourth Year of his Reign, when there was one of the hardest Winters that was ever known in *England*. He was buried at *Winchester*, some say *Westminster*; and was called *Harefoot*, either from his Swiftnefs in running, or because he chose always to walk on Foot. He did nothing memorable, save that he laid a Tax of eight Marks on every Port, towards fitting out 16 Ships; and made a Law, that if any *Welshman*, coming into *England* without Leave, was taken on this Side *Offa's Ditch*, he should have his Right Hand cut off.

### HARDICANUTE. 1039-1041.

**T**HIS Prince's true Name was *Canute*, and he gained the Epithet of *Hardy*, which by Custom became Part of his Name, not from his Courage, but his strong Constitution. He was at *Bruges* with his Mother, when *Harold* died, consulting about Measures to recover the Crown of *Wessex*: And upon the News of his Death, he came over to *England* with 40 *Danish* Ships, was received with great Joy by the *Danes* as well as *English*, and unanimously acknowledged by them all King of *England*.

The very Beginning of his Reign was sullied by an unnatural Piece of Cruelty. Immediately after he was crowned, he caused the Body of the

late King his Brother to be dug up and flung into the *Thames*, which being found by some Fishermen, they gave it to the *Danes*, who deposited it in their Burial-Place at *London*, at this Day called *St. Clements Danes*.

Soon after, he laid a heavy Tax on the Nation, for paying his Fleet, which he sent back to *Denmark*. This occasioned great Murmuring and Discontent among the People. At *Worcester* the Tax was opposed with the utmost Violence, and two of the Persons employed to collect it were killed. This so incensed the King, that he sent the Dukes of *Wessex* and *Mercia*, and the Earl of *Northumberland*, with their Forces, against *Worcester*, who after plundering



ing the City for four Days, burnt it to the Ground.

And now Prince *Edward*, the King's Brother by the Mother's Side, arrived from *Normandy*, and appeared at the *English* Court; where meeting with a kind Reception, he immediately demanded Justice against *Goodwin* for the Murder of his Brother *Alfred*. *Hardicanute* being glad of an Opportunity of punishing that Lord, more perhaps for what he had done for *Harold*, than for what he had done against *Alfred*, *Goodwin* was summoned to appear and answer to the Charge: But he, who well knew the King's avaricious Disposition, took care to extricate himself from the Danger he was in, by an exceeding rich Present of a most magnificent Galley, before his Trial came on; by which Means he was acquitted, upon his swearing that he had no Hand in *Alfred's* Death.

As *Hardicanute* was infamous for his Cruelty, he was no less so for his

Gluttony and Drunkenness, to which some ascribe his Death; for he died suddenly, as he was revelling and carousing at the Wedding of a *Danish* Lord at *Lambeth*. Some think he was poisoned; but however that be, he died unlamented by all, and the *English*, we are told, kept the Day of his Death, *June 8*, as a Holiday for some Centuries after, by the Name of *Hog's Tide*, or *Hoc-tide*. He died in 1041, and the third Year of his Reign. With him expired the Monarchy of the *Danes* in *England*, after it had lasted about 26 Years, but after they had harassed the Kingdom at Times for 240 Years. In these Times we are told, that a *Dane* would often stab an *Englishman* as he was drinking, so that at length no one would drink in the Presence of a *Dane*, without having somebody to be his Pledge or Security; whence, it is said, our Custom of *pledging* one another arose.

1041

### EDWARD the Confessor. 1041—1066.

THE late King dying without Issue, *Edward*, Son of *Ethelred* and *Emma*, who had spent the greatest Part of his Life in *Normandy*, was the only Prince now in *England*, who had any Claim to the Crown. And yet it was no easy Matter to settle the Succession; for *Edward*, Son of *Edmund Ironside*, was still alive in *Hungary*, who was one Degree nearer the Throne than his Uncle *Edward*, *Edmund's* younger Brother: And *Sweyn*, Son of *Canute the Great*, was yet living in *Norway*. So that there was some Danger of the old Animosities reviving upon this Occasion between the *English* and *Danes*, the latter of whom, one might reasonably suppose, would be desirous of having the Succession

continued in their Princes, after the successive Reigns of four *Danish* Kings. Add to this, that *Edward* having lived so long in *Normandy*, was little known here, and that he was a Prince of small Parts, and not very capable of asserting his Right. However, one lucky Thought did his Business at once. Tho' he had before prosecuted Earl *Goodwin*, who was also Duke of *Wessex*, for the Murder of his Brother, yet considering the great Power and extensive Genius of this Lord, in both which he was far superior to all the rest of the Nobility, he resolved, upon the Advice of his Friends, to solicit his Protection and Support, and accordingly obtained it: But first *Goodwin*, who never neglected his own Interest,

Interest, brought *Edward* to Articles, and made him swear to marry his Daughter *Editba*, notwithstanding his Aversion against taking to Wife a Woman, whose Father he looked upon as his Brother's Murderer.

Matters being thus settled between them, and the *Danes* having no Prince of their Nation in *England*, *Goodwin*, at this favourable Conjuncture, convened a *General Assembly*, and got *Edward* acknowledged and proclaimed King of *England*. This seems to be the clearest and most natural Account of this Affair, though some say that *Edward* was in *Normandy* when *Hardicanute* died, and was invited over; and it must be owned there is great Perplexity and Obscurity in this Part of the *English* History. What follows is as difficult, and indeed more so, all Circumstances considered. We are told, that in this *Assembly*, *Goodwin* harangued so against the *Danes*, (by which it should seem that none, or very few of them were there, or that their Spirits were very much sunk) that it was not only agreed, that no *Dane* should ever for the future sit upon the *English* Throne, but that they likewise unanimously resolved to expel all the *Danes* out of the Kingdom, and accordingly effected it. And some here introduce another Massacre, such as that in *Ethelred's* Reign: Whether this be true or not, the Difficulties are very great on both Sides; for as on the one hand it is hard to suppose, how the *Danes*, who but just before were so powerful in *England*, should all on a sudden be so borne down; so, on the other, 'tis as unaccountable, that after this Period the *Danes* should be no more heard of, than if no such People had ever been in the Island. This then is justly thought to be one of the most knotty Points in the *English* History.

King *Edward* was a Man of a weak Constitution, and a weaker

Understanding. He was of an easy, indolent Disposition, of an unsteady and irresolute Temper, minded Trifles more than Matters of Importance, and had no Ability for publick Affairs. This Weakness of the King gave the Nobles, particularly *Goodwin*, an Opportunity of rising to an exorbitant Degree of Power, little inferior to his own. *Goodwin* became even formidable to *Edward*, by the vast Number of Friends he had attached to his Interest, and would have soared still higher, if he had not met with a Counterbalance in *Sirward* Earl of *Northumberland*, and *Leofrick* Duke of *Mercia*, who was more a King in his Province than *Edward* himself. These two powerful Lords uniting together were a Check to *Goodwin's* Ambition, and a Support to the Royal Authority. Tho' *Edward* was obliged to carry it fair to *Goodwin*, yet he had an invincible Hatred towards him and his whole Family in his Heart; which was the Reason of his deferring his Marriage with his Daughter *Editba* as long as possible; however, after a Delay of two Years, as he really stood in Fear of her Father, he espoused her according to his Promise, but never consummated the Marriage. She was a Lady of a great Soul and of strict Virtue, and bore this Treatment with the utmost Equanimity; and as she found it was to no purpose to endeavour to gain the King's Affections, she diverted her Mind with Reading and Acts of Devotion. She was one of the most beautiful, chaste, humble and modest Ladies of her Time, and had nothing of her Father in her: So that it became a Saying,

*Sicut Spina Rosam, genuit Goodwinus Editbam.*

Though *Edward* has the Titles of *Saint* and *Confessor*, yet he was not so



so much a Christian, but he took the first Opportunity of shewing his Revenge against his Mother, as he harboured Hatred in his Breast to his chaste and virtuous Queen, purely on her Father's Account. He went hastily and unexpectedly to *Winchester*, where his Mother's Treasures lay, seized on them all, and stript her of every Thing, leaving her only a small Pension for her Life. 'Tis farther said, tho' that wants proper Authority, that he had her accused of Incontinency, with *Alwin*, bishop of *Winchester*, and made her undergo the Trial of *Fire-Ordeal*, which was to walk bare-footed and blindfold over nine red-hot Plough-shares, laid at unequal Distances; and if the Person accused came off unhurt, she was judged to be innocent, if otherwise, guilty: 'Tis pretended Queen *Emma* went thro' this Purgation unhurt. Be this as it will, she lived ten Years after, confined like a Prisoner at *Winchester*, where she died in 1052.

In the mean Time *Sweyn* King of *Norway*, Son of *Canute the Great*, was preparing to invade *England*, in order to make good his Claim to the Crown. *Edward* made some Preparations to oppose him; but a War unexpectedly happening between *Denmark* and *Norway*, prevented *Sweyn's* intended Expedition, and delivered *England* from its Fears.

A little after, viz. in 1046, twenty-five sail of piratical *Danes* arrived at *Sandwich*, and revived the Terrors of the *English*: But *Goodwin*, *Siward* and *Leofric* took such Measures, that they made off with all the Haste they could.

Several Circumstances concurring, the King and *Goodwin* came at last to an open Rupture. First, *Swane*, one of his Sons, having debauched an Abbess, was forced to fly, and went over to *Denmark*, where, ex-

pecting his Pardon in vain for a great while, he fitted out some Ships, and committed great Ravages and Cruelties upon the *English* Coasts. This gave *Goodwin's* Enemies a great Handle against him and his Family; but the King, still in fear of him, was induced at last to give *Swane* his Pardon. However, his being thus obliged to conceal his Hatred against this potent Lord, did but increase it the more. And then the *Normans*, who were very numerous at Court, and in high Favour with the King, were great Enemies to *Goodwin*, because he would often make loud Remonstrances, and not without Cause, of the King's Partiality to them. The Archbishop of *Canterbury*, in particular, who was a *Norman*, never ceased irritating the King against him. But an Affair now happened, which brought Matters to a Crisis. *Eustace*, Earl of *Bohain*, having paid a Visit to King *Edward*, was returning to *France*, and at *Dover* one of his People picked a Quarrel with a Townsman and killed him. This occasioned a great Insurrection of the Inhabitants; in which twenty of the Earl's Retinue lost their Lives. Upon this the King ordered *Goodwin* to go with some Troops and chastise the Rioters; but he absolutely refused, saying justly, that it was not the Custom of *England* to punish Men unheard. *Edward* now came to a fixed Resolution to punish the Earl for this Disobedience, and was taking Measures as privately as possible for that Purpose: But *Goodwin* having Intelligence of it, raised Forces in order to defend himself, an Incursion made by the *Welsh* into *Herefordshire* furnishing him with a Pretence. However, by the Advice of a General Assembly convened at *Gloucester*, who were afraid of the Effects of *Goodwin's* standing upon his Defence, a Peace was patched up for

for the present. But it did not last long : For the King not brooking this Affront, us'd all his Efforts by Promises and Presents to gain over some of his principal Friends ; and when Matters were ripe, *Goodwin* and his Sons, were summoned to appear before the *General Assembly*, which they refusing, upon Notice that it was designed to apprehend them, were banished the Realm ; and the Combination was so strong against them, that they were forced to comply.

But *Goodwin* resolv'd upon endeavouring to restore himself to his former State by Force of Arms. He had retired to *Flanders*, and having obtained some Ships and Forces from *Earl Baldwin*, whilst his Son *Harold* did the same in *Ireland*, they at length joined, entered the *Thames*, and advanced towards *London*. *Edward*, in the Heat of his Passion, was for going, with the few Ships he had ready, to try the Fortune of an Engagement ; but his Council oppos'd it, who were for using calmer Methods to induce *Goodwin* to return to his Obedience. In the mean Time, he being informed how they stood affected, to render the Matter more easy for the King, made the first Advances towards an Accommodation. The King at first absolutely refused to hearken to any Terms ; but at last was prevail'd on by his principal Lords to receive him again into Favour, outwardly at least ; after which *Goodwin* soon became as powerful and formidable as ever.

A little after this feigned Reconciliation, *William the Bastard*, Duke of *Normandy*, arriv'd in *England* to pay a Visit to King *Edward*, who received him with great Marks of Gratitude for the Favours he had received from him and the Duke his Father. And now it was, if ever, that King *Edward* nominated him

his Successor in his Will, or promised to do so. That he ever did, is very much questioned : However, this was *William's* Pretence for invading *England* after *Edward's* Death.

In 1051, *Edward* did a Thing which was very agreeable to his Subjects : He abolish'd for ever the Tax call'd *Danegeld*, which amounted to 40,000 *l.* a Year, and had been paid for 38 Years.

In 1053, *Earl Goodwin*, so formidable to the King, and the whole Kingdom, died. Some relate a remarkable Circumstance concerning his Death : That the King, as he sat at Table with him, dropt some Words about his Brother *Alfred* ; upon which the Earl taking a Bit of Bread, wish'd it might be the last Morſel he might ever swallow, if he had any Hand in the Death of that Prince ; and going to swallow it hereupon, it stuck in his Throat, and choak'd him. But the best Historians say nothing of this, only that *Goodwin* died suddenly, as he sat at Table with the King. Probably the Story was invented afterwards in the *Norman* Times to blacken his Memory, as he was a great Enemy to all Foreigners, especially the *Normans*. His Son *Harold* succeeded him in all his high Posts, who had all his Father's Abilities, without his Pride and Haughtiness, and became at last so popular, at the same Time that he equalled his Father in Power, that he began to entertain Thoughts of succeeding to the Crown, and took his Measures accordingly.

'Twas happy for *Edward*, that he had no War since the Beginning of his Reign ; but now, in 1054, *Macbeth*, King of *Scotland*, seizing upon *Cumberland*, in Prejudice of *Malcolm*, of the Royal Family of that little Kingdom, King *Edward* took the latter's Part. This War was but a very short one : For *Siward*,



Edward, Earl of Northumberland, by one decisive Battle, drove Macbeth out of Cumberland, and left Malcolm in Possession of it. Soon after which, the valiant Siward died, and Toston, Harold's Brother, was made Earl of Northumberland in his Room. Some will have it, that Siward destroyed Macbeth, and made Mulcolm King of Scotland as well as Cumberland.

About the same Time, the Welsh, under their King Griffin, and Algar a banished English Nobleman, made an Inroad into England, and took and plundered Hereford; but Earl Harold marching against them with an Army he had himself raised, put them to the Rout, and drove them back into their own Country: Which successful Expedition added very much to the Respect the People before had for him; and they began now to talk openly, that no Man was so worthy to succeed to the Crown as Harold, since King Edward had no Heirs.

The King being sensible that Harold aimed at the Crown, in order to defeat his Hopes, sent for his Nephew Edward, Son of Edmund Ironside, out of Hungary. He accordingly came over to England with his Son Edgar Atheling and his two Daughters, in the Year 1057, but died soon after his Arrival. About the same Time also died Leofrick, Duke of Mercia, the Story of whose Wife Godiva's riding through Coventry naked is well known.

Prince Edward's Death put new Life into Harold; for as to Edgar his Son, as he was very young, there seemed no great Difficulty in setting him aside. Soon after this we hear of Harold at the Court of Normandy. Some say he went over on purpose to get out of Duke William's Hands his Brother and Nephew, whom King Edward had received of Goodwin his Father as Hostages upon his Reconciliation, and had

sent over to be kept in Normandy; and others say he was accidentally driven upon that Coast by a Storm. When he was there, 'tis said he took an Oath to Duke William to assist him in obtaining the Crown of England after Edward's Death. However, when he was got away, he looked upon himself as not bound by an Oath which was extorted from him. As to the King, he was quite unresolved about the Succession, promoting neither the Interest of his Nephew Edgar, nor of Duke William, and so that he could but pass his Days in Peace, seemed not to trouble himself about what should happen after his Death.

The Welsh renewing their Incursions in 1063, were again repulsed by Harold, and his Brother Toston, who obliged him to dethrone Griffin, and become Tributary to England. They afterwards restored him and renewed the War, but Harold marching to their Frontiers, struck such a Terror into them, that to pacify him, they sent him their King Griffin's Head.

The Northumbrians being grievously oppressed by Toston their Earl, rose up in Arms and expelled him their Country. Harold was sent to chastise them, and restore his Brother. But the People made such Remonstrances to him of Toston's ill Government, that he interceded for them with the King, obtained their Pardon, and procured them another Governor, whom they desired. This entirely gained him the Affections of the Northern People, and indeed of the whole Kingdom, for his Equity and Justice. But Toston bore him an implacable Hatred ever after; of whom this cruel Instance of Revenge is recorded, that going to his Brother's Country House with his Attendants, he cut some of his Domesticks in Pieces, barrell'd them up, and sent them to him for a Present;

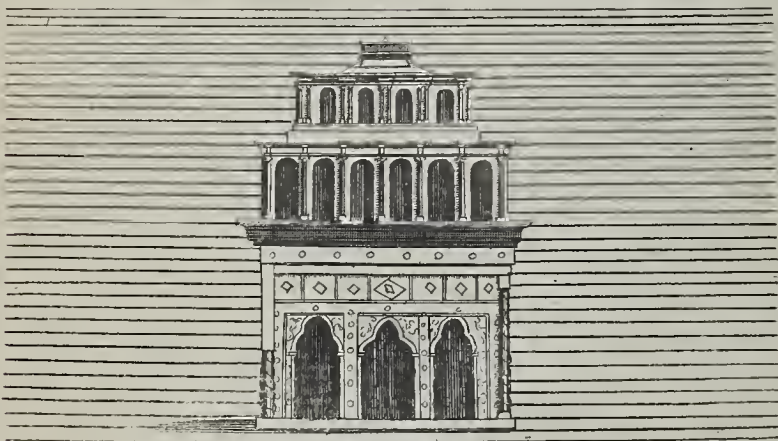
1063

sent ; after which he made the best of his Way into *Flanders*.

Whilst *Harold* was using all the Address he was Master of to procure his Succession to the Crown, King *Edward* gave himself no Trouble about it, but was wholly engaged in building the Church and Monastery at *Westminster*. He just lived to see them finished, and the Ceremony of their Dedication performed in a most solemn Manner, and dying in the 24th Year of his Reign, *A. D.* 1065, was buried in the Sepulchre he had provided for himself in *Westminster-Abbey*, which he built. He was the last King of *Egbert's* Race, though not the last *Saxon* King, since *Harold* was of that Nation, though not of the Blood Royal. He was a Prince of but weak natural Parts, easy and good-natured, mild and

peaceable, very liberal to the Monks; and remarkable neither for his Virtues nor his Vices. He was canonized by Pope *Alexander III.* about 200 Years after his Death, by the Name of *Edward the Confessor*, though we don't find he suffered any Thing on Account of Religion.

He was the first King who touched for what is now called the *King's Evil*, and many Cures are said to have been wrought by him : But that is no Wonder, since several other Miracles are ascribed to him ; and one would think they should all be hereditary, if that of curing the *King's Evil* be so. What is more material, he reduced the *West-Saxon*, *Mercian* and *Danish* Laws into one Body, which from that Time became common to all *England*, and were called the Laws of King *Edward*.





## HAROLD II. 1066-

ACCORDING to the antient Usage of the Kingdom, *Edgar Atheling* was the only Person on whom the Crown should have devolved, he being the only remaining Prince of the Family of the antient Kings. But *Harold*, Earl *Goodwin's* Son, had managed his Matters so well, that upon *Edward's* Death he easily stepped into the Throne. The Manner of his doing this is variously related. Some Writers say, he was unanimously and freely elected by the *General Assembly*, and was crowned the next Day by the Archbishop of *York*. Others affirm that he compelled them to elect him, after having extorted his Nomination from the late King, as he lay a dying: And others again will have it, that he did not concern himself about the Consent of the *Great Council*, but usurped the Crown without any Manner of Ceremony. However this be, after he was crowned, all acknowledged him for their Sovereign, and obeyed him as such. And whatever may be said of his aspiring to the supreme Authority, it must be owned, he had all the Qualifications requisite to the forming of a great Prince; and if he gained the Affections of the People, when he was a private Man, with a View to the Crown, he no less studied to preserve their Affections after he was King. He did many popular Things, lessened the Taxes, and caused Justice to be impartially administered.

But though all Things were quiet and easy among his own Subjects, more Storms than one were gathering against him from abroad. The Duke of *Normandy* had long entertained Thoughts of succeeding to the Crown of *England* upon *Edward's* Death, moved thereto either by the

verbal Promise or Will of that Prince, but much more by his own Ambition, and was now actually meditating to put his Design in Execution, enraged that *Harold* had, contrary to his Oath, set himself up for King. But before Matters came to be decided by Arms between the Duke and *Harold*, his Brother *Toston*, from the implacable Enmity he bore him, was seeking to disturb his Government, in order to dethrone him. The Earl of *Flanders* having furnished him with some Ships and Troops, he greatly infested the *English* Coasts, and having plundered the *Isle of Wight*, proceeded to *Sandwich*. But being told that the King was marching against him, he failed for the *North*, entered the *Humber*, and made a Descent upon *Yorkshire*. *Harold* ordered *Morcar* Earl of *Northumberland* to oppose him, chusing himself to stay at *London* to prevent any Thing being contrived against him in favour of *Edgar*, by those who had a great Affection for the antient Royal Family. To keep them easy, and obviate their Discontents, he shewed great Respect to the Prince, created him Earl of *Oxford*, and took Care of his Education, as if he would have it thought that he intended to resign the Crown to him when he should be of fit Age to govern. In the mean Time *Morcar*, with the Earl of *Chester*, coming upon *Toston* unawares, forced him to fly with his little Army, and return to his Ships. He steered towards *Scotland*, to solicit Aid there; but finding it to no Purpose, he put to Sea again to make another Attempt upon *England* with the Forces he had; when by a Storm he was driven on the Coast of *Norway*, and there met with what he desired.

For

For *Harfager* King of *Norway* having made some Progress in his Designs upon *Scotland*, was preparing to carry on his Conquests; when *Toston* persuaded him to turn his Arms against *England*, representing the State of Affairs there in such a Light, as to make him believe it would be an easy Matter for him to make himself Master of that Kingdom. Accordingly he with *Toston* entered the *Tyne* with 500 Ships. *Harold* had raised a great Army to oppose the Duke of *Normandy*, who had been making great Preparations for his intended Invasion; but having waited all the Summer for his Coming, and imagining the Duke had deferred his Expedition till next Spring, he, to save Expences to his Subjects, had just begun to disband it for the Winter: When being surprized by this unexpected Invasion of *Harfager* and *Toston*, he hastily drew it together again in order to march against them. The Enemy, in the mean Time, having plundered the Country on both Sides the *Tyne*, embarked again, entered the *Humber*, landed, and ravaged the Country, and besieged and took *York*. *Harold* having marched with all Expedition, was now come up with them at *Stamford Bridge*, on the *Derwent*. They were posted on the other Side of the River, and were Masters of the Bridge; so that *Harold* could not come at them to give them Battle, without first gaining the Bridge. The *English* attacked it with great Resolution, and it was bravely defended by the *Norwegians*: But they could not withstand the Efforts of the *English*, though encouraged by the Valour of one Man, who alone defended the Bridge for no small Time against the whole *English* Army; but at last being slain, after he had, as 'tis said, killed 40 Men with his own Hands, *Harold* became Master of the Bridge, and led his Army

over. And now a memorable Battle was fought, which was very bloody and very obstinate, lasting from Seven in the Morning till Three in the Afternoon, between two very numerous Armies, no less than 60,000 on each Side, till at last the *Norwegians* were totally routed, and *Harold* obtained a compleat Victory, *Harfager* and *Toston* being both slain. A great and rich Booty fell into the Hands of the *English*, and amongst the rest, a considerable Quantity of Gold. But here King *Harold* was very impolitick: For whether it was to ease the People of an Expence which would soon become necessary in the War against the Duke of *Normandy*, or for whatever Reason it was, he kept the Spoils to himself, without sharing them amongst his Soldiers, which raised such Discontents in the Army, as proved afterwards very detrimental to his Affairs.

*William* Duke of *Normandy* had soon after King *Edward's* Death sent Ambassadors to *Harold*, requiring him to deliver up the Crown to him, and in Case of Refusal, to charge him with Breach of Oath, and to declare War against him. *Harold* returned for Answer, that the Duke had no Right to the Crown, that the Oath was extorted from him, and so was null and void, and that he would defend his own Right against all Opposers. Upon this the Duke prepared to invade *England*, and as he found it difficult to raise Money for this Expedition by a publick Tax, he did it by a voluntary Subscription amongst his Subjects, to which some great Men leading the Way, the rest very readily followed their Example: But all being not sufficient, he obtained Assistance from several neighbouring States. And being conscious of the Weakness of his Title, he got the Pope to approve of his Design, and



to excommunicate all that should oppose him, upon promise, no doubt, of doing great Things for the Church. In Token of his Approbation, the Pontiff sent him a consecrated Banner, with a golden *Agnus Dei*, and one of St. *Peter's* Hairs. *Harold* was not behind-hand in his Preparations to give the Duke a warm Reception, but equipped a large Fleet, and raised a numerous Army, which, after waiting in vain a good while for the Duke, he had given Orders for disbanding, just before he heard of *Harfager* and *Toston's* Invasion. And now, but nine Days after his famous Victory at *Stanford Bridge*, the Duke of *Normandy*, who had been long waiting for a fair Wind, landed on the 29th of *September*, 1066, at *Pevensey*, now *Pemsey*, in *Sussex*, and having built a Fort near the Place to favour his Retreat in case of Necessity, (tho' some say he sent his Ships back to *Normandy*, and others that he burnt them, to let his Men see they must either conquer or die,) he marched along the Shore, as far as *Hastings*, where he built a second and stronger Fort, and waited for the Coming of the Enemy.

*Harold* was yet in the *North*, rectifying the Disorders occasioned by the *Norwegians*, and not expecting the *Normans* 'till Spring. But as soon as he was informed of their Arrival, he marched with the utmost Expedition back to *London*, where the Nobility came in to him, promising their Assistance; but he found his Army much diminished by the Losses at *Stanford Bridge*, and by Multitudes deserting thro' Discontent. However, having drawn all his Forces together, he marched and encamped about seven Miles from the *Norman* Army, resolving to give them Battle. Duke *William* perceiving this, advanced a little forward to a commodious Piece of Ground, that he might draw up his

Army to the best Advantage. The *English* spent the Night in singing and carousing, as if sure of the Victory, and the *Normans* in preparing for the Fight, and praying to God for Success.

The important Day was now come, the 14th of *October*, being *Harold's* Birth-Day, but more memorable to *England* for one of the greatest Events that ever befel it. The Battle began with great Fury and equal Bravery on both Sides. The *English* were at first very much annoyed by the *Norman* Long-Bows, a Way of fighting they had not been used to, which put them in some Disorder; but recovering themselves, they so warmly engaged the *Normans*, that they were forced to give back a little, who renewing the Attack, met with as vigorous a Resistance as before, the *English* having much the Advantage of them with their Bills, which were their antient Weapons; nor was it in the Power of the *Normans* to break their Ranks, which remained impenetrable, till the Duke thought of a Stratagem, which was, for his Men to retreat as they were fighting, as if they were about to fly. This emboldened the *English* to press upon the retiring Enemy, and in their Eagerness they broke their Ranks; and then the *Normans* standing their Ground, and by a Discipline they had been used to, closing their Ranks again, fell on the disordered *English*, and made a terrible Slaughter of them. *Harold* did all he could to rally his Forces, and so far succeeded, as to draw up on a rising Ground a good Body of Foot, which being joined by the flying Troops became very considerable. The Duke ordered this Body to be attacked with fresh Fury, but the *English* received them with the utmost Bravery, killed great Numbers of the *Normans*, and preserved their Ranks. The Battle had

F

lasted

lasted from Seven in the Morning, and now Night drew on, whilst Victory as yet seemed to remain in Suspence. But the Duke had a Mind to make one Push more before it was dark, to drive the *English* from their Station. In this fatal Attack, *Harold* was slain by an Arrow shot into his Brains; at which the *English* being quite dismayed, betook themselves to Flight, and the *Normans* pursuing them as long as it was Daylight, made a terrible Slaughter, killing all they could overtake. *Garth* and *Lewin* the King's Brothers were slain, and the *Normans* obtained a compleat Victory. This important Battle was fought near *Heathfield* in *Suffex*, in the Place where the Town of *Battle* now stands, which took its name from it. The Duke lost 6000 of his Men, but the *English* an incredible Number. *William* immediately ordered his whole Army to fall on their Knees, and thank God for so great a Victory, and in the Morning caused his own Dead to be buried, and gave the *English* peasants leave to do the same for their Countrymen. The Bodies of the King and his two Brothers being found, he sent them to their Mother, who buried them in *Waltham-Abbey*, which *Harold* had founded.

Thus fell the brave *Harold*, fighting valiantly not only in his own, but his Country's Cause, after a short and turbulent Reign of nine Months and nine Days: And with

him totally ended the Empire of the *Anglo-Saxons* in *England*, which began in the Person of *Hengist* above 600 Years before. It is very remarkable that *William*, in Effect, became Master of *England* by this one fortunate Blow, whereas all the former Invaders, *Romans*, *Saxons*, and *Danes*, conquered it, as it were, by Inches. The *English* are said at this Time to have been very much sunk in Luxury, Idleness and Vice, which had infected all Orders of Men amongst them, as the Consequence of a long Peace of 50 Years, which had made them also neglectful of Arms, to which some in great Measure ascribe this wonderful Revolution brought about by the *Normans*. But 'tis manifest the *English* fought with as much Valour as the *Normans*, tho' Fortune at last turned against them. The feigned Retreat of their Enemies and *Harold's* Death, seemed to be the chief Causes of their losing the Day: Though after all we must conclude, that the Hand of Providence was eminently concerned in this grand Affair.

*Harold* had three Sons by his first Wife, *Edmund*, *Goodwin* and *Mag-nus*, who retired into *Ireland* after their Father's Death; and by his second Wife, a Son named *Wolf*, who was but a Child when the Battle of *Hastings* was fought, and was afterwards knighted by *William Rufus*. He had also two Daughters, one of which was married to *Waldemar*, King of *Russia*.



1066 - 1087.



WILLIAM I. <sup>v.p. 68</sup> surnamed the Bastard, <sup>or</sup> the Conqueror. <sup>1068</sup>  
*Natural son to Richard Duke of Normandy who gave his sister Emma*

**W**E are now come to one of the most considerable Periods in all the English History, viz. the Norman Conquest; as that Revolution introduced a new Face of Things in the Nation, a most remarkable Alteration in its Laws, Language, Manners and Customs; as *England*, after this surprising Conjunction, began to make a more considerable Figure in *Europe* than ever it had done before; and as from hence it received a new Race of Kings, which either by the Male or Female Line has continued down to this very Day. These Monarchs indeed were of several Houses or Families, according to the Princes or Persons who espoused the Princesses of *England*, and from such Marriage gave Kings and Queens to this Nation: or according to the different Branches into which the Royal Family was divided. Thus the Normans began with *William the Conqueror*, the Head of the whole Race, and ended with *Henry I.* in

whom the Male Line failed. *Stephen* was the only one of the House of *Blois*, from the Marriage of *Adela*, the Conqueror's fourth Daughter, with *Stephen* Earl of *Blois*. The *Plantagenets*, or House of *Anjou*, began with *Henry II.* from the Marriage of *Matilda* or *Maud*, Daughter to *Henry I.* with *Geoffrey Plantagenet*, Earl of *Anjou*, and continued undivided to *Richard II.* inclusive. These were afterwards divided into the Houses of *Lancaster* and *York*; the former beginning with *Henry IV.* Son of *John of Gaunt* Duke of *Lancaster*, fourth Son of *Edward III.* and ending with *Henry VI.* The latter began with *Edward IV.* Son of *Richard* Duke of *York*, who on the Father's Side was Grandson to *Edmund de Langley* fifth Son of *Edward III.* and by his Mother descended from *Lionel*, third Son of the said King; and ended in *Richard III.* The Family of the *Tudors* began with *Henry VII.* from the Marriage of *Margaret*, Great

*Plantagenet*  
*Lancaster*  
*York*  
*Tudor*

1066 Grand-daughter of *John of Gaunt*, with *Edmund Tudor*, Earl of *Richmond*; and ended with *Queen Elizabeth*. The House of *Stuarts* began with *James I.* Son of *Henry Stuart* Lord *Darnley*, and *Mary* Queen of *Scots*, whose Grandmother was *Margaret*, Daughter to *Henry VII.* and ended with *Queen Anne*. *William III.* was the only one of the House of *Orange*, whose Mother was *Mary*, Daughter to *Charles I.* The House of *Brunswick* now reigning began with his late Majesty King *George I.* whose Grandmother was the Princess *Elizabeth*, Daughter to King *James I.* Having made this Digression, for the better Distinction of the following History, I now return to my present Subject, that of *William the Conqueror*.

*William* was the Seventh Duke of *Normandy*, from *Rollo* the first Duke, of whom Mention has been made in the Reign of King *Alfred*. His Father, Duke *Robert*, Brother to Duke *Richard III.* was never married, but being charmed with the graceful Mien of a young Woman, named *Arlotta*, (whence 'tis said came the Word *Harlot*) a Skinner's Daughter, as he saw her dancing with other Country Girls, he took her for his Mistress, and by her had this *William*. Duke *Robert*, about seven Years after, taking it in his Head to go on Pilgrimage to *Jerusalem*, before his Departure, caused the States of *Normandy* to acknowledge his young Son for his Successor; and dying in his Journey, *William* accordingly succeeded him in 1035, being then about nine Years of Age. He met with a great deal of Trouble during his Minority, from several Pretenders to the Dukedom, as well as from the King of *France*, who wanted to get it into his own Hands; but by his Vigour and Conduct, and the Wisdom of those in the Administration, he got the bet-

ter of all his Enemies, and established himself firmly in the Possession of the sovereign Authority. And now, in all Probability, he might have passed the rest of his Days in Peace, if his Ambition had not put him upon making new Acquisitions. His having an Eye to the Crown of *England*, it is very likely, was what brought him over hither to make a Visit to King *Edward* his Cousin, who had no Children, and who then, tis generally thought, promised him to make a Will in his Favour. However, from this Time he began to look upon himself as having a Claim, such a one as it was, to be *Edward's* Successor, and seemed resolved, if all other Methods failed, to accomplish his Design by Force of Arms. How he did this we have already seen, and his Success in the memorable Battle of *Hastings*, by which he in a Manner did his Business at once.

The first Thing he did after the Battle of *Hastings*, was to lay Siege to *Dover*, in order to secure his Retreat in Case of Necessity, and to have a Place from whence he might easily send for Supplies from *Normandy*. The Consternation it was in made it soon surrender: Which having ordered to be more strongly fortified, and spent some Days there to forward the Work, he marched with his victorious Army for *London*. In this March it was, that, as some tell us, he was met by the *Kentish* Men, with each a green Bough in his Hand, so that they seemed like a moving Wood, which at first somewhat surprized him; but he soon found the Meaning of it, and that they were only come to offer their Submission, and to demand the Preservation of their antient Rights; which, 'tis said, he granted. But this Story is looked upon by the most judicious Writers to be a downright Forgery.



In the mean Time the City of *London* was in the utmost Confusion, some being for one Thing, and some for another, nor could they by any Means agree in their Opinions. Among other Projects, some were for placing *Edgar Atheling* on the Throne, and the Earls *Edwin* and *Morcar*, who had retired to *London* after the Battle of *Hastings*, were at the Head of this Party. But all they could do was to prevail on the Citizens to shut up their Gates against *William*, till they could fix on some Resolution. The Duke by this Time was come to *Southwark*, and there he encamped, and lay some Days expecting the voluntary Submission of *London*; but on the contrary, *Edwin* and *Morcar* took this Opportunity to spirit up the Citizens to make a Sally upon the *Normans*; which they did, but it was easily repulsed. This made the Duke sensible it was necessary to take more vigorous Methods; and as a Siege, which might have lasted a great while, would have been very inconvenient in his present Circumstances, he resolved to lay hold on the Consternation the City was then in, to subdue them by Terror rather than by Force. To this End he posted himself at *Wallingford*, and sent out Detachments to plunder the Counties near *London*, to frighten the Citizens, and to cut them off from Provisions; and at the same Time burnt *Southwark* to the Ground. The two Earls above-mentioned still laboured hard for *Edgar*, and the Majority of the People were on their Side; but their Measures were broken by the Clergy then in *London*, and the two Archbishops at their Head, who were for submitting to the Duke, and had formed a strong Party among the Citizens for that Purpose: So that *Edwin* and *Morcar*, finding they could not prevail, retired into the *North*; and immediately

after, the two Archbishops, with the Bishop of *Winchester*, and *Edgar* himself, went over to the Duke, who was then at *Berkhamstead*; and their Example was soon followed by a great many Persons of Distinction. But the *Londoners* being still unresolved, the Duke drew nearer the City, as if with a Design to besiege it: Upon which the Magistrates, despairing of being able to defend it in the Midst of the present Confusion, went out and met him, and presented him with the Keys of the Gates. And then, after holding a Consultation with the Prelates and Nobles who had before submitted, they waited on him in a Body, and made him an Offer of the Crown. He pretended at first to hesitate, as if he had forgot what he came about, and desired Time to consult with his Friends; whose Advice, as might easily be foreseen, being agreeable to his Wishes, he told the *English* Lords and Magistrates of *London*, that he was ready to yield to their Request: And so he accepted the Crown as their Gift; and this is certain, that tho' he has the Title of *Conqueror* given him, he never openly pretended to hold the Crown by Right of Conquest.

Though this was but a forced Election, and without the Consent of the rest of the Nation, yet *William* was crowned at *London* on *Christmas-Day*, having first caused a Fort to be built, which he garrisoned with *Normans*, because he still suspected the Citizens. The Ceremony was performed by *Aldred*, Archbishop of *York*, because *Stigand*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, lay under a Suspension from *Rome*, and *William* had not yet a mind to displease the Pope. The Archbishop addressing himself to the *English*, asked them, whether they would have the Duke of *Normandy* for their King? And the Bishop of *Constance* put the same

+ Question to the *Normans*, by which it was plain that it was *William's* Design to settle them here. They both having consented with loud Acclamations, the Archbishop placed the Duke on the Throne, and administered to him the Oath, usually taken by the *Saxon Kings*; which in Substance was, *To protect the Church and its Ministers, to govern the Nation with Equity, to enact just Laws, and cause them to be duly observed, and to forbid all Rapines and unjust Judgments.* What was most surprizing, and saved *William* a World of Trouble, which in all Appearance he had still to go thro', was, that as soon as ever it was known that he had been crowned at London, he was immediately without any Opposition acknowledged for King throughout the whole Nation. So wonderfully did every Thing concur to bring about this great Revolution!

King *William*, a few Days after his Coronation, retired from *London* to *Berking*, where Multitudes came and submitted to him, and among the rest *Edwin* and *Morcar*. He received them in a most favourable Manner, assured them of his Protection, and in their Presence gave Prince *Edgar* large Possessions, who was so beloved by the *English*, that he was generally called *England's Darling*. Soon after, he laid the Foundation of a Church and Monastery in the Place where *Harold* was slain, and ordered that the Monastery, when finished, should be called *Battle-Abbey*. In the Beginning of his Government he used great Moderation towards the *English*, and expressed a tender Regard for them; and the three first Months of his Reign passed to their great Satisfaction. But this short Time of Tranquility and mutual Confidence was followed by Jealousy, Mistrust and Severity on the King's Side,

and frequent Revolts and Commotions on the People's; in which, whether the King was most to blame or the People, cannot easily be determined, by reason of the Partiality of Writers on each Side, according as they stood affected. This however is certain, that the *English* were ill treated by this King, that he shewed great Partiality to the *Normans*, and ruled the Natives with a despotic Sway, exercising many Acts of Severity upon them, and treating them to all Intents and Purposes as a conquered People. 'Tis certain also, that there were many Revolts, and Attempts to shake off the *Norman Yoke*; but that they all proved ineffectual, and served only for a Handle to yet greater Acts of Severity, as will appear from a brief Recital of Facts.

The Beginning of the Year 1067, King *William*, without any other visible Reason than to display his new Grandeur among his old Subjects, went over to *Normandy*, taking with him such *English* Lords as he most suspected, to prevent any Thing being done to his Prejudice in his Absence; for which Reason also he placed strong Garrisons of *Normans* in all the Castles. His Brother *Odo*, Bishop of *Bayeux*, and *William Fitz-Osborn*, were intrusted with the Government of the Kingdom; and these sticking at no Methods to enrich themselves, exceedingly oppressed the *English*, and proceeded in such a Manner, that one would almost think they had Orders for what they did, that the People might be stirred up to revolt, and so there might be some plausible Pretence to treat them with the more Severity, by taking away their Estates, and other Methods, by which the King might have it in his Power the better to reward his *Normans*. Be this as it will, the *Kentishmen* at this Time attempted to recover their Liberty,



berly, and called to their Assistance *Euface* Earl of *Boloign*, who failing in his Project of surprizing *Dover* Castle, retired to his Ships, and left the *Kentishmen* to the Mercy of the Regents. *Edric Forester*, an *English* Lord, also took up Arms in *Herefordshire*, and cruelly treated all the *Normans* that fell into his Hands. This hastened the King's Return to *England*, who, instead of punishing the Regents, approved of their Conduct, to the no small Discontent and Mortification of the *English*.

The King was naturally covetous, and greedy to hoard up Money: His great Armament had run him vastly in Debt; and he now thought it high Time to reward those who had assisted him in his Expedition, according to their Expectations. For these Reasons he, in 1068, revived the Tax, formerly called *Danegeld*, which was levied upon the poor *English* with all imaginable Rigour. And now Insurrections and Revolts followed in Abundance. The Inhabitants of *Exeter* refusing to take the Oath to the King, and to admit a *Norman* Garrison, *William* was preparing to besiege it in Form, and the Citizens had no other Course to take but to implore his Mercy. At the earnest Intreaties of the Clergy he pardoned them, how much soever in his own Mind he was against it: And to keep them in Order for the future, he caused a Castle to be built in the City, and garrisoned it with *Normans*.

The late Tax not being sufficient for the Purposes before mentioned, the King had Recourse to other Expedients, which greatly increased the Discontents of the *English*. He sent Commissioners into all Parts, to inquire who had sided with *Harold*, and to confiscate their Estates.

*Edwin* and *Morcar*, provoked at this Treatment of the *English*, revolted, and having raised an Army,

were re-inforced by *Blethwin* King of *Wales* with a good Number of Troops. But the King marching with all Expedition against them, with a great Superiority of Forces, broke all their Measures; upon which the two Earls submitted, and were pardoned. But this Act of seeming Clemency to the Leaders in the Rebellion lost all its Effect, by his severely punishing others who were less guilty: Nay, he caused several who had no Hand in the Revolt to be shut up in Prison; which spread a Terror through the Nation, as did also his building Castles in divers Places, which, it was easy to perceive, were designed to over-awe the *English*. There were indeed, as may well be supposed, great Animosities between them and the *Normans*, the latter behaving towards the *English* much as the *Danes* formerly did, and being countenanced in their Insults by the King, whilst the Complaints of the *English* were not at all regarded. The Consequence was, that many Murders were committed on both Sides, and an Edict was published purely in favour of the *Normans*.

*Morcar* and several other Lords, mistrusting the Sincerity of the King's Behaviour towards them, retired into *Scotland*, and prevailed upon Prince *Edgar* to go along with them, with his Mother and Sisters. The King of *Scotland* received them with all due Respect, and married *Margaret*, *Edgar's* eldest Sister, from whom descended *Matilda*, Grandmother of King *Henry II.* in whom the Royal Families of the *Saxons* and *Normans* were united.

Though King *William* was pleased at these Lords leaving the Kingdom, where they had so great an Influence, yet perceiving hereby how the *English* stood affected, he proceeded to greater Acts of Severity, resolving, by humbling them, to secure himself

1068

from their Resentment. With this View, it is said, he forbade them to have any Lights in their Houses after Eight o'Clock at Night, ordering a Bell to be rung at that Hour, which was called the *Curfew*, from *Couvre-feu*, i. e. *Cover-fire*, at the Sound of which they were obliged, under severe Penalties, to put out their Fires and Candles. It must be owned indeed, that this Affair of the *Curfew* is not supported by any competent Authority. But this is certain, that after the *Northumbrian* Malcontents had called in the *Danes*, whose General, *Osborn*, the King of *Denmark's* Brother, King *William* bribed by large Presents to go off, he shewed no Mercy towards the *English*; but after having, for a Terror to the rest, ravaged the whole Country between *York* and *Durham*, so as not to leave a House standing, he removed all the *English* from their Posts, took away their Estates, seized upon all the Fiefs of the Crown, and gave them to the *Normans*, from whom are descended many of the great Families at this Day in *England*. After this memorable Period we hear no more of *Ealdormans* or *Thanes*, *Saxon* Terms, but of *Counts* or *Earls*, *Viscounts*, *Barons*, *Vassallors*, &c. from the *Norman* or *French* Tongue; and from this Time it may be said, that *England* became *Norman*.

The Clergy expected great Things from this King, and therefore were the most forward to submit to him after the Battle of *Hastings*; but they were disappointed: For *William* now put the Church-Lands upon the same Footing with the rest, obliging them to furnish a certain Number of Men for his Wars, tho' by the Charters of the *Saxon* Kings they were exempted from all military Service. He quartered his Troops upon the Monasteries, and obliged the Monks to supply them with Ne-

cessaries. He, moreover, seized upon the Money and Plate in the *Religious Houses*, under Pretence that the Rebels had concealed their valuable Effects there; and deposed several Bishops and Abbots that he did not like, putting *Normans* or other Foreigners in their Room.

In 1071, a great Number of Malcontents betook themselves to the *Isle of Ely*, strongly fortified it, and chose *Hereward*, one of the bravest Soldiers in the Kingdom, for their Leader. The King was very much alarmed at this Proceeding, and marching in all Haste, blocked the Rebels up in the *Isle*. They were so well fortified, that he could not come at them, and had so good a Store of Provisions, that a long Time would be required to starve them out. And so having continued the Siege, or Blockade, for a great while to no Purpose, he bethought himself of an Expedient, which did his Business effectually; which was to seize on the Manours belonging to the Monastery, which were without the Limits of the *Isle*. Upon this the Abbots and Monks, in order to recover their Possessions, delivered up the *Isle*, and all that were in it, into the Hands of the King. *Hereward* alone escaped: As to the rest, some had their eyes put out, or their Hands cut off, and others were thrown into divers Prisons; among the rest, *Egelric* Bishop of *Durham*, who had been so bold as to excommunicate the King, was starved to Death in Prison.

The King of *Scotland* had taken the Opportunity of the Troubles in *England*, to invade the Northern Counties, which he ravaged in a cruel Manner. But as soon as the Affair of *Ely* was over, King *William* marched against him. The *Scotch* King hereupon retired into *Scotland*, but *William* followed him thither,



thither. He not being willing to hazard a Battle in his own Country, offered to accommodate Matters by a Treaty; which *William* agreed to, and obliged the *Scotch* King to do him Homage, which most probably was only for *Cumberland*, though some *English* Writers say it was for all *Scotland*.

In 1073, *Philip* King of *France*, being jealous of the Greatness of King *William*, on a sudden invaded *Normandy* without any Declaration of War. Upon which *William* went over with a great Army, with which he retook *Mans* and the whole Province of *Maine*; and *Philip* soon growing weary of the War, concluded a Peace with King *William*.

Prince *Edgar*, about this Time, came to the King out of *Scotland*, implored his Pardon, and submitted. The King received him very graciously, and gave him an Allowance of a Pound of Silver a Day. From this Time he continued in Obedience, and gave the King no farther Disturbance.

Whilst *William* was in *Normandy*, Pope *Gregory VII.* sent his Nuncio to summon him to do him Homage for his Kingdom, pretending it to be a Fief of the Holy Sec. But *William* told the Nuncio, that he held his Crown of none but God and his Sword; and published an Edict forbidding all his Subjects to own any Pope but whom he first allowed of, and to receive any Orders from *Rome* without his Licence.

During the King's Absence, some disgusted *Norman* Lords formed a Conspiracy to depose him, and prevent his Return, and drew Earl *Waltheof*, the only *English* Lord the King retained in his Favour, into the Plot. But he soon repenting, went over, and discovered it to the King, before it came to any Head, imploring at the same Time his Pardon, which the King readily grant-

*\* was not William a lying Bastard when he knew he owed his Crown to the Londoners & let him King? v.p. 69.*

ed. Notwithstanding which, soon after his Return, the Earl was apprehended, beheaded, and buried under the Scaffold, and many of the innocent *English*, who were not at all concerned in the Conspiracy, were severely punished, as well as the guilty *Normans*.

King *William* now enjoyed some Tranquillity, but in the Year 1077 more Work was cut out for him abroad. For his eldest Son *Robert*, instigated by the King of *France*, rebelled against him in *Normandy*, and endeavoured to make himself Master of that Duchy. *William* went over, and his Son persisted in his Opposition, and in the Heat of an Engagement wounded him in the Arm without knowing him, and dismounted him. But when he knew it was his Father, he alighted, set him upon his own Horse, and submitted intirely to his Mercy. *William* brought him with him into *England*, and in the Year 1080 sent him against the *Scots*, who had renewed their Incurfions. But this War also ended in a Treaty between the two Nations, and there was nothing remarkable in this Expedition but *Robert's* founding the Town of *Newcastle upon Tyne*. About which Time also King *William* built the famous Tower of *London*, to be a Check upon the Citizens, whom he all along suspected.

Soon after the Peace with *Scotland*, *William* turned his Arms against the *Welsh*, who had made some Incurfions into his Dominions: Upon which the *Welsh* Princes submitted, and became his Tributaries.

Let us now see, in few Words, how *William* managed his domestic Affairs in Time of Peace. He did all he could to introduce the *Norman* Language into *England*, caused the *Saxon* Laws to be translated into *Norman*, and published his own Laws

in

*Tower of London*

1073

1077

1080

in that Tongue, and commanded it to be taught in all Schools. The Effect was, that in common Use, a third Language was by Degrees introduced, which was neither *English* nor *Norman*, but a Mixture of both. He erected new Courts of Justice, before unknown to the *English*, and very incommodious to them, and ordered all Law Proceedings there to be in the *Norman* Tongue. He had an immense Revenue; and that he might know what every Man was to pay him out of his Estate and Effects, he ordered a general Survey to be made, not only of his own Lands, but of all the Lands in *England*, as also what every Man was worth in Money, Stock of Cattle, &c. All which was set down in a Book, called *Doom's-Day Book*, which to this Day is preserved in the *Exchequer*. As he was very fond of Hunting, he dispeopled the Country in *Hampshire* for above 30 Miles in Compts, demolishing both Churches and Houses, to make a Forest for his Diversion, which was called *New-Forest*. In short, all his Actions favoured of a most arbitrary and absolute ~~*Bastard & Tyrant*~~.

*William* having enjoyed a Tranquillity of several Years, every one thought he would have ended his Days in Peace. But all on a sudden he makes vast Preparations, goes over to *Normandy*, and enters upon a fierce War against *France*. A Truce soon ensued, which was broke by an unlucky Jest of King *Philip*. *William* being grown very fat and unweildy, was passing through a Course of Physick, when one coming to *Philip* from *Roan*, he asked him, *Whether the King of England was delivered yet of his great Belly?* *William* being told of this, was so enraged, that he sent him Word, that as soon as he was up, he would offer in the Church of *Notre Dame* at *Paris*, 10,000 Lances by way of Wax-Lights. Accordingly he renewed the War

with the utmost Fury, but it occasioned his Death. For having made great Ravages, and besieged and took *Mantes*, he ordered it to be burnt to the Ground: When standing too near the Fire, the Weather being also very hot, and in his Return to *Roan* having bruised the Rim of his Beily against his Saddle, he fell into a Fever, which carried him off on the 9th of *September*, 1087, in the 61st Year of his Age, after having reigned in *Normandy* 52 Years, and 21 in *England*. He was buried in the *Abbey-Church* at *Caen*, which he himself had founded. 'Tis very remarkable, that when this great Prince was going to be interred, a *Norman* Gentleman forbade the Burial, because the Ground on which the Church stood was his, which the Deceased had never paid him for: And, according to the Laws of *Normandy*, they were obliged to make him Satisfaction before the Corpse could be buried.

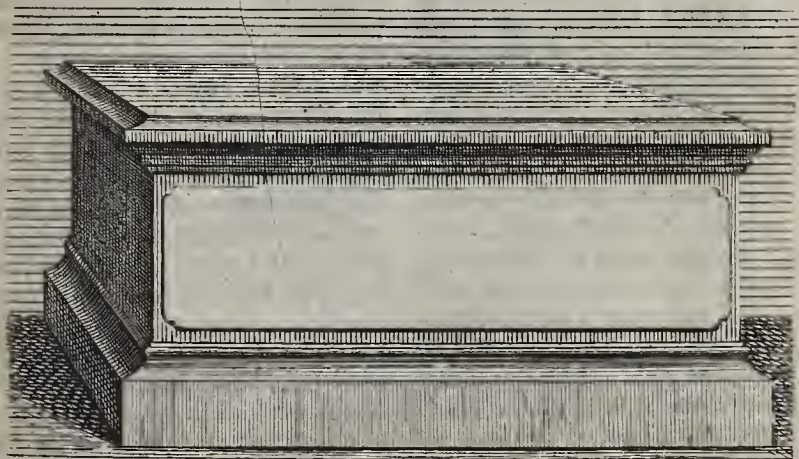
As this Prince's Character has been variously drawn, I shall leave the Reader to judge of it from his Actions, which I have represented with all the Impartiality I could, from which it seems he had a great Mixture of good and bad Qualities. As to his Person, he was tall and well proportioned in his younger Years; and so strong, that 'tis said none but himself could bend his Bow. His Courage and Policy are not to be questioned, and 'tis certain, he was indefatigable in executing whatever he designed. When he lay on his Death-Bed, he seemed to reflect seriously on his past Actions, and to view them in a different Light from what he had done in the Time of his Health and Vigour. He ordered great Sums of Money to be given to the Poor, and to the Churches, particularly for rebuilding those he had burnt at *Mantes*. He released all the Prisoners, among



among the rest *Morcar* and *Ulnoth*, which last was King *Harold's* Brother, and had been detained in *Normandy* a great many Years, being one of the Hostages given by *Godwin* to King *Edward*. Then ordering his chief Officers to stand about his Bed, he made a long Harangue to them, weak as he was, wherein he talked much of the Reputation he had acquired by his military Atchievements. Yet he could not help owning he had unjustly usurped the Crown of *England*, and was guilty of all the Blood spilt on that Occasion. And though he said he durst not bequeath a Crown, which of Right was none of his, but left it to the Disposal of God; yet he recommended *William*, his second surviving Son, for his Successor, and did all in his Power to secure the Crown to him.

He had three other Sons besides *William* by his Wife *Matilda*, Daughter to the Earl of *Flanders*. To

*Robert* the eldest he gave the Duchy of *Normandy*. *Richard* was killed by a Stag in *New-Forest*. To his youngest Son *Henry* he bequeathed an Annuity of 5000 Marks. And when the young Prince complained, as not being pleased with his Portion, 'tis said his Father told him, by a prophetick Spirit, that the Dominions of his two Brothers should be one Day united in him: Which indeed came to pass; though it is not at all likely that God should reveal his Will in any extraordinary Manner to a Prince of *William's* Character. He had also six Daughters by the same *Matilda*; *Cecily*, Abbess of *Caen*; *Constance*, married to the Duke of *Bretaign*; *Adeliza*, promised to *Harold* when he was in *Normandy*, died young; *Adela*, married to the Earl of *Blois*; *Gundred*, to *William Warren*, Earl of *Surrey*; and *Agatha*, espoused to *Alphonso*, King of *Galicia*.



S. Pichon sc.



T. Kitchin sc.

## WILLIAM II. surnamed Rufus. 1087 - 1100.

**W**ILLIAM, during his Father's last Illness in Normandy was concerting Measures in England to secure his Succession to the Crown. Though it was the Conqueror's Desire that he should succeed him, yet there was great Danger of a Party being formed against him in favour of his elder Brother Robert. But as Robert was out of the Kingdom, William with the more Ease accomplished his Designs; and by the Management of Lanfranc, Archbishop of Canterbury, who had great Interest among the People, both English and Normans, and had gained over the leading Lords of both Nations, and by the Favour of Eudo, the High Treasurer, he ascended the Throne, and was crowned eighteen Days after his Father's Death, Sept. 27, 1087.

He was surnamed *Rufus* from his being red-haired, and was now thirty Years old. He was remarkable for no good Quality but his Courage, which however for the most Part was more like the Fierceness of a

wild Beast than the Bravery of a Hero. He was very ill-natured, and a perfect Brute in his Behaviour, was wholly indifferent as to Religion, and had no Regard for Honour or Honesty. He was greedy of Money, but it was to squander it away upon idle Expences. In fine, he had all his Father's Vices without his Virtues, and Historians agree in representing him as bad a Prince as ever sat on the English Throne. These Historians were indeed Monks and Ecclesiasticks, who might be prejudiced against him for his seizing the Revenues of the Church. However, as scarce any Action of his Life deserves Commendation, their Representations seem to be but too well founded. His Interest indeed obliged him to put on the Mask for some Time at the Beginning of his Reign, and his affecting to be guided by the Counsels of Lanfranc made the English expect a Change for the better.

In 1088, a formidable Conspiracy was set up against him by his Uncle

Odo;



*Odo*, Bishop of *Bayeux*, who hated *Lanfranc*, and could not endure to see him in so great Favour. The Design was to depose *William*, and set *Robert* on the Throne. Several Norman Lords and Bishops joining in the Plot, and many of the *English* also being prevailed on to favour it, when they thought Matters were ripe, they invited *Robert* to come over, who promised soon to be with them. The Conspirators then fortified themselves in several Places, and *William* seemed to be in a most dangerous Situation. But *Robert's* Indolence and dilatory Temper, who did not come over with his Forces as was expected, gave him time to extricate himself out of this Danger. He first gained over the *English* by *Lanfranc's* Interest: Then he fitted out a Fleet, and marched against *Odo* and the other Rebels with an Army of *Englishmen*, took *Pevensey*, *Rocheſter* and *Durham*, and the other Places where they had shut themselves up, broke all their Measures, and entirely dispelled the threatening Storm.

Tho' *William* was indebted to the *English* for having by their Means crushed this Conspiracy, and tho' he had made them many fair Promises, yet it was no sooner over but he began to oppress them even worse than his Father had done. Of this *Lanfranc* respectfully admonished him, putting him in Mind of his Promises. *William* was displeased at this, and angrily asked him with an Oath, *Whether a King could keep all his Promises?* From this Time the good Archbishop was quite out of Favour, and died quickly after. And now *William* threw off all Restraint, and spared no Methods for raising Money to satisfy his vain Expences. To this End he seized upon the vacant Benefices, and after he had stripped them of every Thing he could turn into Money, he sold them

to the highest Bidder. He seized upon the Temporalities of the See of *Canterbury*, and kept them in his Hands four Years; and did the same by all the other Bishopricks that became void in his Reign.

Soon after, *William*, to be revenged on his Brother *Robert* for the late Conspiracy, and perhaps from a Desire of enjoying all his Father's Dominions, invaded *Normandy*, and made himself Master of several Places. *Robert* implored Aid of the King of *France*, who came to his Assistance; but *William* having found Means to bribe him, he retired without doing any Thing, and *William* proceeded to take more Places, and bribed some of the Burghers of *Roan* to undertake the delivering it into his Hands. But Prince *Henry* joining his Brother *Robert*, saved it; for entering the City on a sudden, he seized the Chief of the Conspirators, and threw him headlong from a Tower. Which bold Stroke not only preserved the Capital, but in effect all *Normandy*. For *William* soon after, in 1091, was obliged to strike up a Peace with Duke *Robert*, on this Condition, among others, That upon either of the Brothers dying without Heirs, the Survivor should succeed to all his Dominions.

Whilst *William* was in *Normandy*, *Malcolm*, King of *Scotland*, made an Incurſion into *Northumberland*, and *William*, at his Return, resolved to revenge this Insult. He artfully induced his Brother *Robert* to come over and accompany him in this Expedition, fearing he should in his Absence seize on those Castles in *Normandy*, that he held by the late Treaty. His Army suffered greatly by several Disasters in *Scotland*; but *Malcolm* fearing the ill Consequences of a War in his own Country, sent *William* Proposals for an Accommodation, which were readily accepted, and the *Scotch* King obliged him-

himself to pay the same Homage to the King of *England* he had formerly done. But *Robert* perceiving he was only amused by his Brother, to draw him into this Expedition, returned home greatly disgusted.

About this Time *Robert Fitz-Hammon*, Gentleman of the King's Bedchamber, conquered *Glamorganshire*, and slew *Rees* the *Welsh* King. He bestowed upon twelve Knights, who assisted him in the Expedition, twelve Manours, which were enjoyed by them and their Posterity.

The King continued his arbitrary Proceedings, and oppressed his Subjects, *Normans* as well as *English*, more and more every Day, which made them all wish for his Death, as the only Remedy to the Evils they groaned under. And now they thought their Wishes were going to be accomplished: For in 1093, a dangerous Distemper seized him at *Gloucester*, so that he himself thought his End approaching; and the Fear of Death made him resolve, if he ever recovered, to reform all that had been amiss in his Government. The Bishops laying hold of the good Disposition he was now in, exhorted him to fill up the vacant Sees, which he complied with, and particularly made *Anselm* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, between whom and the King there were afterwards great Contests, *Anselm* being a warm Assertor of the Rights of the Church, and King *William* being not over-scrupulous in such Matters; who being recovered of his Illness, presently forgot all his good Resolutions, returned to his old Courses, retracted, as far as was in his Power, the good Orders he had given in his Sickness, and even increased the Abuses of Government, instead of correcting them.

The *Scots* again renewing their Incursions and Ravages, *Robert de Mowbray*, Governor of the *Northern* Parts, fell upon them unexpectedly, de-

feated them, and slew *Malcolm* and *Edward* his eldest Son.

In 1094, we again find King *William* at War with his Brother *Robert*, in *Normandy*, who, as *William* had not performed his Part of the late Treaty, seemed resolved to take from him the Places he held there. Being assisted by the King of *France*, he gained several Advantages over *William*, who at last had Recourse to his old Artifice, and bribed the *French* King to draw off his Forces; in order to raise Money for which Purpose he sent Orders into *England* for levying 20,000 Men, and to impress such as were of some Substance, and did not care to leave their Families. When they were just going to embark, they were discharged upon paying ten Shillings a Man, which they readily did, and by this Artifice *William* raised 10,000*l*. *Robert* now in all Likelihood would have lost all his Dominions, if the King had not been obliged to return on a sudden to repress the *Welsh*, who were ravaging *Shropshire* and *Cheshire*. At his Approach they retired among the Mountains and inaccessible Places, and *William* pursuing them too far, lost more of his Men than he destroyed of the Enemy's; and all he could do was to rebuild the Castle of *Montgomery*, which had been demolished.

A little after he suppressed a dangerous Conspiracy of *Robert de Mowbray*, who being disgusted at the King's not rewarding him for the Service he had done, as he thought he deserved, was concerting Measures with other discontented Lords to depose him; but the King coming suddenly upon them, *Mowbray* was taken and clapped up in Prison; and of the rest of the Conspirators some were stripped of their Estates, some had their Eyes put out; and none escaped some Kind of Punishment or other.



In 1096 the Project of the *Holy War* was set on foot by Pope *Urban II.* in which so many Princes of *Christendom* engaged. The Design of it was to recover the *Holy Land* out of the Hands of the *Saracens*. The Badge of those who went to it was a Red Cross wrought in their Garments, whence they were termed *Croises*, and the Expedition the *Crusade*. *Robert Duke of Normandy* was one of the Princes who engaged in it, and to defray the Expences of his Undertaking, he mortgaged his Duchy to his Brother the King of *England*, for a Sum of Money, which *William* raised on his Subjects by the most oppressive Methods imaginable.

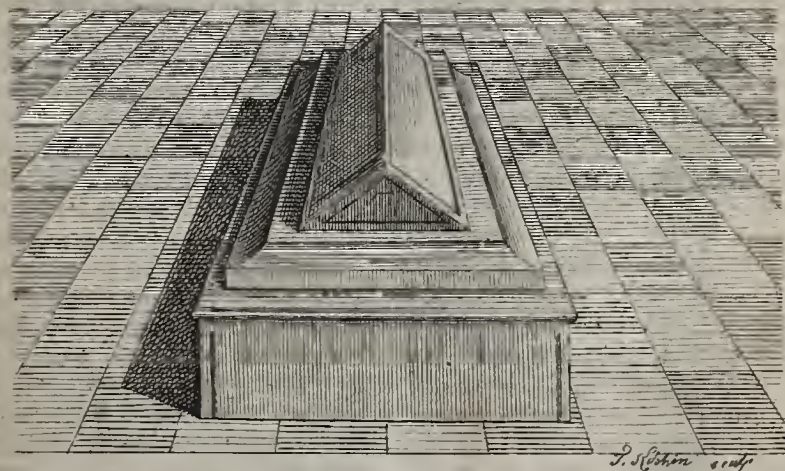
In 1098 *William* rebuilt *London Bridge*, raised a new Wall round the *Tower*, and erected the famous *Hall* at *Westminster*, which though so large, he found fault with it, and said 'twas scarce big enough for a King's Bedchamber. The raising Money for these Works was a great Oppression on the Subjects.

The next Year *William* went over and relieved *Mans*. As he was go-

ing to embark, the Wind being contrary, the Master of the Ship represented the Danger of then putting to Sea. But *William* asked him, *If he ever heard of a King's being drowned?* and compelled him to proceed.

But tho' he was not to be drowned, he was not however to die a natural Death. For being hunting one Day in *New-Forest*, he was accidentally, or otherwise, shot with an Arrow into the Heart, by *Walter Tyrrel*, a French Knight, as he was, seemingly at least, shooting at a Deer; and dropt down dead immediately. This was on *Aug. 2, 1100*, in the 44th Year of his Age, after a Reign of near 13 Years. He was buried at *Winchester*, (where his Tomb, somewhat raised from the Ground, remains to this Day) and the Nation rejoiced at being delivered from such a headstrong and furious King.

In his Reign a great Inundation of the Sea overflowed the Coast of *Kent*, and covered the Lands formerly belonging to *Earl Goodwin*. These are now called the *Goodwin-Sands*, so dangerous to Ships.





T. Kitchin, sc.

## HENRY I. surnamed Beau-Clerc. 1100-1135.

**I**F the *English* had not been reduced to so low an Ebb as they were in the two last Reigns, they might have had a good Opportunity to throw off the *Norman Yoke*, upon the Death of *William Rufus*. But as they were so depressed, the only Course they had to take was to agree to whatever the *Normans* did, who were Masters of the Kingdom. And these, in all likelihood, would have been much puzzled about the Succession, if *Robert*, the eldest of the *Conqueror's* Sons, had not been at a great Distance from home, being gone to the Holy War. He was indeed on his Return, but they did not know where he was. And what gave *Henry*, the youngest and only other surviving Son, the Advantage, was not only his having been born in *England* after his Father was King, but his being upon the Spot, and having concerted, even in the late King's Life Time, the most proper Measures to get the Crown placed on his Head. He promised both the *Nor-*

*mans* and *English* to abolish all severe Laws made since the *Conquest*, and to redress all the Grievances that both Nations complained of. These Promises raising in the People the most agreeable Expectations, were the chief Means of his mounting the Throne, notwithstanding there was a strong Party of the Lords against him. For posting to *Winchester*, immediately after *William's* Death, he would have seized the Crown and Scepter with the Royal Treasure there deposited, but was opposed by *William de Bretevil*, one of *Robert's* Party, with several other Lords there assembled, who alledged they were obliged by Oath to acknowledge *Robert* for King, in Case *William* died without Heirs, according to the Treaty between the two Brothers. There was quickly a great Concurrence of People from all Parts, and *Henry* well knowing how they stood affected, drew his Sword, and swore no Man should take Possession of the Crown but whom the People approved.



approved. The Lords hereupon retired to a private Room to consult what was proper to be done, whilst the People with loud Acclamations made the Name of *Henry* resound in their Ears. So fearing a Civil War, if they went contrary to the Inclinations of the People, they resolved, that *Henry* should succeed to the Crown. Upon this tumultuary Election, *Henry* hastened to *London*, and the next Day, Aug. 5, 1100, was crowned by *Maurice*, Bishop of that See, who administered to him the usual Oath.

To secure himself on the Throne, he wisely began his Reign with reforming Abuses, redressing Grievances, and doing many popular Things, according to his late Promise. The Courtiers, during the late Reign, had behaved with great Insolence, oppressed the People without Mercy wherever they came, and attempted the Chastity of Women without any Fear of Punishment. *Henry* immediately set about curing these Disorders of the Court. He published a severe Edict against all who should be guilty of the like Crimes for the future, and particularly against Adulterers, ordered that those who oppressed or plundered the People should be punished with Loss of Eyes, or Hands, or Feet, and expelled those from his Court, who had already made themselves infamous for such Practices. Besides all this, he granted a *Charter* of Liberties, confining the Royal Authority within its antient Bounds, renouncing the unjust Prerogatives the two late Kings had usurped, restoring the Church to her former Rights, and confirming the Laws of King *Edward*, viz. such as were in force under the *Saxon* Kings. These Things were not only agreeable to the *English*, but also to the *Normans*, who hitherto had held their Estates at the Will of the King. He more-

over remitted all Arrears of Debts due to the Crown, appointed a Standard for Weights and Measures throughout the Kingdom, and ordered that Coiners should be punished with Loss of Limbs.

In 1101 he gave the People a further Satisfaction, by recalling *Anselm* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, who had retired to *Rome*, and afterwards to a Monastery at *Lyons*, on account of his Quarrel with the late King. And to gain the Affections of the *English* still more, he married *Matilda* or *Maud*, Daughter to *Malcolm* King of *Scotland*, by *Margaret* Sister to *Edgar Atheling*, by which Means the Royal Family of the *Saxons* was united with that of the *Normans*.

But all these prudent Steps did not entirely secure him from Danger. Duke *Robert*, who in his Return from the *Holy Land* had staid some Time in *Apulia*, where he married, and by that Delay had given his Brother an Opportunity of ascending the Throne, being now returned into *Normandy*, was exasperated at his Disappointment, and resolved on attempting to do himself Justice by wresting the Crown from *Henry*. A great Party in the Kingdom were still for *Robert* in their Hearts, as being the eldest Brother, and thinking he had Injustice done him: Besides, he was known to be a mild and good-natured Prince; and as for *Henry's* fair Beginning, they only thought it a Piece of Policy to serve his present Purpose, and that he would not stick to reverse it all, as soon as it should be in his Power. These Considerations fixed great Numbers in *Robert's* Interest, and made the rest waver between the two Parties. *Robert* trusting to this Disposition of the *English* more than to his own Forces, landed at *Portsmouth*, where he was received without Opposition. But *Henry* managed Matters so well by Means of

G

*Anselm*,

*Anselm*, who was in great Credit with the People, that *Robert's* Measures were quite disconcerted; and when he found that the Body of the Nation had declared for *Henry*, and that the Army had renewed their Oath of Allegiance to him, he was willing to accept the King's Proposals of Peace: And so the Lords of both Parties meeting to consult of the Affair, it was agreed, That as *Henry* was already crowned, and was born in *England* after his Father was on the Throne, he shall continue to be King: That if one of the two Brothers died without Issue, the other should succeed to his Dominions: That the King should deliver up to *Robert* the Castles in *Normandy*, that were garrisoned with *English*; and should pay him 3000 Marks a Year. After this Accommodation, *Robert* staid some Months at his Brother's Court, living in perfect Friendship with him.

But *Henry* could not easily forgive those Lords who had appeared most active for *Robert*, whom he watched all Opportunities of crushing; particularly *Robert Belesme*, Earl of *Shrewsbury*, who not only continued to talk disrespectfully of the King, but shewed his Disposition to act against him, by fortifying his Castles in *Shropshire*. Hereupon the King proclaimed him a Traitor, and marching against him, took *Shrewsbury* and all his other Castles, and forced him to retire into *Normandy*, where his restless Temper raised new Troubles.

1109 In 1103, a Contest began between the King and Archbishop *Anselm* about the Right of Investiture of Bishops and Abbots, which lasted some Years, and gave the King a great deal of Trouble. It had been the Custom of the Kings of *England* to grant Investitures by the Delivery of the Pastoral Staff and Ring. *Henry* insisted on this, as a Preroga-

tive derived from his Ancestors; but a Council at *Rome* having decreed, that no Bishops should receive Investiture from Laymen, *Anselm* would have excommunicated such Bishops as had been invested by the King, and several resigned their Bishopricks, for Fear of this Censure of the Church. He also refused to consecrate such Bishops as were nominated by the King, unless he would relinquish the Right of Investiture. There was also a Dispute about the Oath of Allegiance, or doing Homage to the King, which *Anselm* would neither comply with himself, nor suffer the other Bishops to do it. The Contest ran high, the King insisting peremptorily on his Prerogative, and *Anselm*, backed by the Court of *Rome*, being as obstinately bent to have his Point carried. At length he went to *Rome* to lay the Matter before the Pope, and *Henry* deprived him of his Temporalities during his Stay out of the Kingdom, and sent Agents to *Rome* to plead his Cause against him. The Pope was at first inflexible, and even threatened to excommunicate the King; but his Affairs being at last involved, and both Parties being in such a Situation, that they did not care to break with one another, the Matter was compromised, by *Henry's* renouncing the Right of Investitures, and the Pope's allowing the Bishops and Abbots to do Homage to the King for their Temporalities. This *Anselm* was also a great Stickler for the Celibacy of the Clergy, and in a Synod excommunicated all the married Priests, who were then very numerous in *England*.

About this Time *Robert* the King's Brother came over to *England* to press the Payment of his Pension, which the King had neglected, contrary to the late Treaty. But *Henry* caressed him in such a Manner, and so imposed on his easy Temper, as to prevail



prevail with him at last to desist from his Demands. He had suffered greatly already by such unseasonable Generosity, and now his Wants daily increasing, he soon repented of what he had done, complained that his Brother had abused his good Nature, and added some Menaces on the Occasion. The King was well enough pleased with this, as it gave him a Sort of Handle to break with him, which he was forward enough to do, from a Desire of adding *Normandy* to his Crown. He only waited for a favourable Opportunity, which soon offered.

*Robert de Belesme*, to be revenged on the King, fell upon such of his Subjects as had Lands in *Normandy*, and his Insolence increasing by Duke *Robert's* Indolence in not opposing him at first, and being supported by some other discontented great Men, he became so audacious as to aim at making himself Master of the whole Dukedom. *Robert* at length marched against him, but was worsted, and in the End was forced to clap up a Peace with him upon very dishonourable Terms. Notwithstanding which, *Belesme* and his Confederates continued their Ravages, and were become quite insupportable to the People. Hereupon some of the chief Men in *Normandy* applied to the King of *England* for Relief. *Henry* was glad of this Occasion of intermeddling in the Affairs of *Normandy*; and though he pretended at first his Design was only against *Belesme* and his Adherents, yet it soon appeared his View was to get the Duchy into his own Hands. He levied an Army, and passed over into *Normandy*, and had great Success in his first Campaign, when he seized upon *Caen* and some other Cities, and bribed the Nobles, and Governors of the strong Holds, with the Money he carried from *England*; and in his second, *Robert* perceiving his Design, and having sued for

Peace in vain, joined with *Belesme* and the rest against him, who led all their Forces to his Assistance. The King of *France* also sent him some Troops, and several *Norman* Lords came over to his Side, when they saw that *Henry* was acting more for his own Sake than theirs. By these Means *Robert* was enabled to give his Brother Battle, which he did under the Walls of *Tinchebray*, which was besieged by *Henry*. The Battle lasted not long, in which *Robert* was beaten, and that unfortunate Duke, *Edgar Atheling*, the Earl of *Mortaigne*, 400 Knights, and 1000 Soldiers, were taken Prisoners. Prince *Edgar* was set at Liberty, and passed the Remainder of his Days in *England*, where he lived to an extreme old Age. The Earl of *Mortaigne* was imprisoned in the Tower of *London*, and Duke *Robert* in *Cardiff Castle* in *Wales*, where he remained to his Death, which happened about 26 Years after. Some say, that having attempted to make his Escape, *Henry* ordered him to be deprived of Sight by holding a burning-hot Brass Basin before his Eyes: But this is to be doubted, as most of the best Historians say nothing about it. This Battle of *Tinchebray*, which was fought in the Year 1107, put the *English* in Possession of all *Normandy*, as the Battle of *Hastings*, about 40 Years before, had made the *Normans* Masters of *England*.

The King having thus got all *Normandy* into his Hands, returned in Triumph to *England*, where he presently became more haughty, and less popular than he had been before: He treated the Nobles with unsufferable Arrogance, gave himself but little Trouble about his Charter, which indeed had not been very well observed from the Beginning, and permitted any Abuses, if they did but turn to his Profit, tho' he promised better Things when he

was preparing to invade *Normandy*, which appeared now to be only with a View to cajole the *English*, and induce them to favour his ambitious Schemes.

But tho' he had thus got Possession of *Normandy*, he was not to keep it without Opposition, which for several Years, with some Intervals of Quiet, gave him a great deal of Disturbance. *Lewis le Gros*, King of *France*, was the chief Cause of this, who, jealous of *Henry's* overgrown Power, sought Means to reduce it. In order to this he invested *William Crito*, Duke *Robert's* Son, with the Duchy of *Normandy*, and entered it with a great Army to procure him the Possession of it. But *Henry* advancing with great Expedition, and having joined Forces with the Duke of *Bretaign* and the Earl of *Blois*, so disconcerted *Lewis's* Measures, that he thought fit to send the King of *England* Proposals of Peace, which were agreed to on Condition *Gisors* should be delivered up, which he had taken. The King was no sooner returned, but *Lewis* invaded *Normandy* again, and *Henry* went over and gave him Battle. Here he was in great Danger of being killed by a *French* Knight, but he at last tumbled him from his Horse and took him Prisoner, which inspired the Troops with such Courage, that after a sharp Fight the *French* were defeated, and the Standard of *France* taken, and sent in Triumph to *Roan*. After this the War was carried on smartly for some Time, and gave the two Kings Employment enough. *Lewis* endeavoured at length to embroil his Enemy the more by the Means of Pope *Calixtus II.* who was then in *France*. To this End he got him to convene a Council at *Rhemes*, to which the *English* Bishops were also summoned; and *Henry* not mistrusting the Design, permitted them to go, only ordering them to salute the Pope in

his Name, to regard his Apostolical Precepts, but to take care not to bring back any new Inventions of the Court of *Rome*. The Council being met, the *French* Bishops, who were most numerous, made great Complaints against *Henry*, and even proposed to excommunicate him for unjustly detaining the Person and Dominions of his Brother. But the Pope fearing to break with *Henry*, shifted off the Affair, by taking upon himself to exhort him to do his Brother Justice. Some Time after, he had a long Conference with *Henry* at *Gisors*, and informed him of the Council's Desire of restoring *Robert*; but the King, to some plausible Arguments, adding more weighty Presents to the Pope and Cardinals, *Calixtus* at his Return abandoned the Interests of *Robert*, and used his Endeavours to make Peace between the two Kings, which was concluded in 1120. But neither so did the Troubles of *Normandy* end, as we shall see by and by. In the mean Time let us return to some Affairs of a domestick Nature.

In 1109, the King's Daughter *Matilda*, or *Maud*, was married to the Emperor *Henry V.* which furnished him with a Pretence for laying a Tax of three Shillings on every Hide of Land, in order to pay her Marriage Portion, which raised an immense Sum.

About this Time died *Anselm*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, an haughty and bigotted Prelate, but a Man of Learning for those Times. The King seized on the Revenues of the Archbishoprick, and kept them five Years in his Hands. The next Year was remarkable for the Restoration of Learning at *Cambridge*, where it had for a long Time been quite neglected.

In 1112, great Numbers of *Flemings*, being compelled to leave their Country by the Inundation of the Sea,



2 Sea, came into *England*. The King settled them at first in the waste Parts of *Yorkshire*, or, as others say, in *Northumberland*; but at length removed them to the Country conquered from the *Welsh*, about *Ros* and *Pembroke*, where their Posterity remain to this Day; and the *Flemings-Way*, a Work of theirs, is seen in *Pembrokeshire*, extended far through the Country.

About this Time the *Welsh* committing great Devastations on the Frontiers, *Henry* marched against them with a Design even to root them out; but they retiring to their Mountains, rendered his cruel Project impracticable, and so he at last consented to a Peace. Some Years after they made great Ravages in *Cheshire*, which occasioned another Invasion of *Wales*; but that also soon ended in a Peace: However, *Henry* obliged them to give him Hostages, and 1000 Head of Cattle to make him Amends for the Charges of the War.

In 1115, *Henry* got the States of *Normandy* to swear Fealty to Prince *William* his Son, then 12 Years old; and the Year following he did the same in *England*, to secure the Crown to his Family.

In 1118, Queen *Matilda* died, greatly lamented by all the *English*, as well for her amiable Qualities, as her Descent from their ancient Kings.

A Year or two after the King suffered another sad Calamity in the untimely Death of Prince *William* his Son, who soon after the Peace with *France*, already mentioned, returning from *Normandy* with a numerous Retinue of young Noblemen to grace his Passage, was unfortunately cast away, by the Ship striking upon a Rock, and drowned, together with his whole Company, amounting to above 150, besides the Mariners, except a very few who

saved themselves by swimming; most say, only a Butcher. Among those who perished were, besides the Prince, *Richard* his natural Brother, *Matilda* his natural Sister Countess of *Perch*, *Lucia* the King's Niece, and the Earl of *Chester*. This melancholy Accident is said to have had such an Effect upon the King, that he was never afterwards seen to laugh. However, his great Desire of having another Son, induced him to marry *Adelicia*, Daughter to *Geoffrey* Earl of *Lovain*; but he had not what he expected, for she never proved with Child.

About the Year 1124, the King was obliged to pass over again to *Normandy*, to put a Stop to the Proceedings of *Robert Mellent*, Lord of *Pont-Audemer*, who being secretly instigated by the King of *France*, and greatly beloved by the *Normans*, was upon the Point of getting the whole Country to revolt in favour of *William Crito*. But this Lord, and the Earl of *Montfort* his Associate, being drawn into an Ambush, were both taken Prisoners, by which Means *Henry* effectually prevented the intended Revolt.

In 1125, Cardinal *John de Creme*, the Pope's Legate, came over to *England*, to put the finishing Stroke to the Celibacy of the Clergy. A Synod being convened at *London*, he got some severe Canons passed against such Ecclesiasticks as persisted in keeping their Wives. Here *Huntington*, who was a Priest and the Son of a Priest, tells the following Story, which he says was too notorious to be denied, viz. That the Legate having sharply inveighed against the Priests marrying, saying, it was a horrid Sin for a Priest to rise from the Side of a Harlot (so he esteemed the Wife of a Priest) and then to make the Body of Christ, was yet the next Night (having said Mass that very Day) taken in Bed with a

*Whore.* The Design of the Court of Rome in thus obstinately contending for the Single Life of the Clergy, was to make them independent of the Civil Power, and to incorporate them into a Society a-part, to be governed by its own Laws, which could not so well be done, whilst the Clergy were allowed to marry and have Children. King *Henry*, by his seeming Zeal on this Article, politickly got from the Pope a Power to put it in Execution; which done, he gave the Priests Leave to keep their Wives, upon paying him so much Money for a Dispensation.

The King having no Child by his second Wife, after having been married to her about six Years, in 1127 assembled a Great Council, and got them to acknowledge his Daughter *Maud*, who was returned to *England* upon the Emperor's Death, presumptive Heir to the Crown. *Stephen*, Earl of *Bulloign*, who was afterwards King, was the first who took the Oath of Allegiance to her, in case *Henry* died without Male Issue. Soon after he married her to *Geoffrey Plantagenet* Earl of *Anjou*; but the Nation did not like the Match: And indeed *Henry's* sole Design in it, was to secure the Earl of *Anjou* in his Interest, in case the King of *France* should give him any further Trouble in *Normandy*.

*Henry's* Apprehensions were not without Reason: For the very next Year the *French* King having invested *William Crito* with the Earldom of *Flanders*, endeavoured to put him in Possession of *Normandy*. But *Henry* got the *Flemings* to revolt against their new Earl, and at the same Time entered *France* with a powerful Army. This War lasted not long: For the unfortunate *William* being slain at the Siege of *Alost*, *Lewis* clapt up a Peace with *Henry*, and never disturbed him afterwards.

In 1130, *Henry* went over to *Normandy*, and at his Return the next Year brought over with him his Daughter *Maud*, and having called a General Assembly, caused the Oath of Fealty to her to be renewed; as he did also in the Year 1133, upon the Birth of Prince *Henry* her Son, who was then included in it. But these repeated Oaths were all broke as soon as the King was dead.

Towards the End of the Summer, *Henry* went over to *Normandy* for the last Time. There was an Eclipse of the Sun the Day he went on board, and two Days after a great Earthquake. Duke *Robert* his elder Brother died the same Year in *Cardiffe* Castle, a Prince of great Courage and Humanity, but of an easy, careless, and profuse Temper. He twice missed the Opportunity of obtaining the Crown of *England*, which perhaps he was more worthy of than his Brothers, as he had a better Claim to it. He had the Surname of *Courte-hose*, either from his wearing very short Breeches, or because his Legs were too short in Proportion to the rest of his Body. He was buried in the Choir of *Gloucester* Cathedral.

The King his Brother did not long survive him; for he died in *Normandy* on the first of *December*, 1135, in the 68th Year of his Age, and the 36th of his Reign. 'Tis said his Death was occasioned by his eating Lampreys to Excess, which he very much admired. His Body was embalmed after the rude Manner of those Times, by cutting great Gashes in his Flesh with Knives, and powdering it well with Salt; which done, it was wrapped up in a tanned Ox-hide, and so brought over, and buried in the Abbey of *Reading*, which he had founded. He built also several other Abbeys, with the Priory of *Dunstable*, and founded the



the Sees of *Ely* and *Carlisle*. He also erected a magnificent Palace at *Woodstock*, to which he annexed a spacious Park, encompassing it with a Stone Wall; which is said to be the first Park in *England*: Though afterwards they grew so numerous, that more were computed here than in all Christendom besides.

King *Henry* was a Prince of great Courage, and of great Skill both in military and civil Affairs. His Severity in punishing Malefactors, which he looked upon as necessary to curb the Licentiousness that was introduced in his Brother's Reign, especially among the Courtiers, was very agreeable and beneficial to the People, and is one Thing for which he ought highly to be commended. That during his frequent Voyages to *Normandy* there should be no Insurrection in *England*, where Malcontents were not wanting, is an Argument that his Government was managed with great Skill and Prudence. He was a Person of a fine Aspect, and a very affable and agree-

able Deportment; exceeding temperate in eating and drinking, except in the Instance above-mentioned; a Lover of Learning, and had made a great Progress in it himself, whence he acquired the Surname of *Beau-clerk*; by which was meant a good Scholar, because in those Times none but Clerks, or the Clergy, troubled themselves about Books, and Princes least of all. He always retained a Love for the Sciences, and built a Palace at *Oxford*, where he often retired for the Pleasure of conversing with the Learned. But all these good Qualities were sullied with many Vices, particularly those of Cruelty, Avarice, and an inordinate Love of Women: And his barbarous Usage of his Brother in stripping him of his Dominions, and detaining him so long in Prison, can by no Pretence whatsoever be justified. He left behind him one legitimate Daughter, viz. the Empress *Maud*, and twelve natural Children, of whom *Robert* Earl of *Gloucester* was the most famous.



*G. Nichol sc.*



T. Kitchen sc.

## STEPHEN. 1135 - 1154

1135.

**T**HE Male Line of the Normans expired in *Henry* the First. And though he took all the Precautions he could to secure the Succession to his Daughter, yet *Stephen*, Earl of *Bulloign*, Son to the Earl of *Blois* by *Adela* the Conqueror's fourth Daughter, found Means to supplant her, notwithstanding his late Oath, and to get the Crown placed upon his own Head. As he lived with the King his Uncle in *England*; his good Qualities gained him his Affection to a high Degree, so that he took Pleasure in heaping Favours on him, never imagining that he would attempt to set himself up in Prejudice of his Daughter. However, after Prince *William's* Death, *Stephen*, by the Assistance of his Brother *Henry* Bishop of *Winchester*, began to take Measures to secure the Crown to himself, but so secretly, that the King his Uncle suspected nothing of the Design. Being in *Normandy* with King *Henry*, in his

last Illness, he wrote over to his Brother the Bishop, vigorously to pursue the Scheme they had laid, and as soon as the King was dead, he came over himself, to forward his Project by his Presence. The Bishop of *Winchester* had already gained over the Archbishop of *Canterbury* and the Bishop of *Salisbury*; and these three Prelates had Influence enough over all the rest of the Clergy to bring them to declare for *Stephen*. This did the Business, and so much the easier as *Maud* was out of the Kingdom; and such of the Barons as were not of *Stephen's* Party, seeing the Bent of the Clergy, durst not oppose the Design. And so *Stephen* was declared King, and crowned 24 Days after *Henry's* Death, being one-and-thirty Years old: And the Bishops and Nobles did not stick to break the Oath they had thrice taken to *Maud*.

In order to gain this important Point, *Stephen* had been obliged to promise great Things to the Clergy and



and People, and that he would grant them more Privileges than ever they enjoyed under the *Norman Kings*. And as he was not without his Fears from *Maud* and *Geoffrey* her Husband, to secure the Affections of his Subjects, he, soon after his Coronation, convened a General Assembly at *Oxford*, in which he signed a *Charter*, acknowledging his being elected King by the Clergy and People; confirming all the Liberties, Privileges and Immunities of the Church, and consenting that all Ecclesiastical Causes and Persons should be tried by the Clergy; promising not to meddle in any Manner with the Temporalities of vacant Bishopricks, or Estates belonging to Ecclesiasticks; abolishing all the Game Laws enacted since the *Conquest*, and all the Forest Laws; and reviving the antient *Saxon Laws*. He moreover abolished *Dane-gelt*, which had been taken away by *Edward the Confessor*, but restored by the *Norman Kings*. However *Stephen* observed the other Articles of this *Charter*, 'tis certain he broke one of them but a few Months after; for the Archbishop of *Canterbury* dying, he seized on the Revenues of the See, and kept them in his Hands above two Years.

The King, to humour the Barons, and thinking thereby to be the better secured from any Attempts of the Empress *Maud*, or any foreign Invaders, permitted them to fortify their Castles, and to build others upon their Estates; so that in a little Time there were above a thousand fortified Castles in the Kingdom. But this was reckoned an Oversight, since it put it in their Power to revolt whenever they pleased, as some of them not long after did.

*Stephen* began his Reign in Peace, but the fair Scene was soon changed, and we see nothing but Incurfions, Revolts, and Insurrections, and a

most furious and bloody Civil War, which over-spread all Parts of the Nation, and continued almost thro' his whole Reign.

In 1137, the *Welsh* made an Irruption on the Frontiers, and carried off a considerable Booty; and in a Battle near *Cardigan*, the King's Troops were beaten, and above 3000 slain on the Spot. At the same Time *David* King of *Scotland* invaded the Northern Counties of *England*, took *Carlisle* and *Newcastle*, and advanced as far as *Durham*. *Stephen* marched against him with a very numerous Army; but this War soon ended in a Treaty of Peace. It broke out again indeed more than once, the *Scotch* King taking Advantage of the Confusions in *England* to renew his Incurfions; but being defeated in a great Battle by *Thurstan* Archbishop of *York*, and King *Stephen*, after having reduced his rebellious Barons, marching into the North to chastise that Monarch for his late Insult, *David* not caring to run the Hazard of another Battle, sued for Peace; and as *Stephen's* being so far from the Heart of his Kingdom might be attended with Inconveniencies, he thought fit to agree to it; by which *Henry*, Son of the *Scotch* King, was put in Possession of the County of *Northumberland*, and Earldom of *Huntingdon*, for which he did Homage to the King of *England*; and *David* obliged himself by Oath never to meddle any more in the Quarrel between *Stephen* and *Maud*.

A little before, the King went over to *Normandy*, against his elder Brother *Theobald* Earl of *Blois*, who had taken Possession of that Duchy. *Stephen* entering into an offensive Alliance with *France*, forced him to retire; and to please *Lewis*, delivered up *Normandy* to his eldest Son *Eustace*, who did Homage for it to the *French* King.

*Robert,*

*Robert*, Earl of *Gloucester*, natural Brother to the Empress, was at the Head of the discontented Barons who revolted, because the King had not rewarded them as they thought they deserved for placing him on the Throne. They had indeed some Pretence, from his great Favours to Foreigners: But where great Numbers think they have an equal Claim to Favour, as it is impossible to reward them all, or however to reward them equally, ambitious Men, thinking themselves slighted, will take every Opportunity, from a Principle of Revenge, to raise Troubles in the State. The Earl thinking Matters ripe, went over to acquaint the Empress, and wrote an abusive Letter to *Stephen*, upbraiding him for the Breach of his Oath to *Maud*, and for drawing him in to the same Crime. To this he added a Manifesto, wherein he treated the King as an Usurper, and declared War against him. *Stephen*, without returning him any Answer, confiscated his Estate. The Empress's Party gaining Ground exceedingly, the Earl of *Gloucester* came over and got Possession of *Bristol*, and the Revolt of the Barons was like to have been general, so that *Maud* was invited over, whom they promised to own as their Sovereign. But *Stephen* supported himself with such undaunted Courage and Resolution, that he crushed this dangerous Insurrection for the present, and the Earl of *Gloucester* had no other Way to take but to go and press the Empress to come over, in order to put new Life into her Party.

These Things were but the Prelude to greater Troubles, of which the Clergy were the chief Fomenters. The Bishops knowing how much the King was obliged to them for his Crown, extended their Power to such a Degree, amassed such im-

mense Wealth, and became so excessively proud and haughty, that the King grew jealous of them, resolved, however impolitically, considering his Situation, to humble them, and took vigorous Methods for that Purpose, seizing the Castles and Treasure of several who had rendered themselves most obnoxious. This brought almost the whole Clergy upon his Back, and even his Brother, the Bishop of *Winchester*, turned against him, under Pretence of standing up for the Rights of the Church. By this Means a Storm was raised, which with some Intermission continued for several Years. For the Clergy's Faction became so strong, that most of the Lay Lords came over to them, and the People generally everywhere deserted the King, and declared for the Empress: So that none stuck to him but only a few of the Barons, his foreign Favourites, and Army of *Flemings*, *Bretaigns*, &c. which served him faithfully, though they were but ill paid.

At this favourable Juncture the Empress *Maud*, with her Brother the Earl of *Gloucester*, came over in the Year 1139, from which Time a cruel Civil War ensued, the Particulars of which would be tedious, as indeed 'tis almost impossible to describe such a Scene of Confusion and Distraction, in which was nothing but burning, plundering, slaughtering, and the utmost Devastation. King *Stephen* in the midst of all behaved with the greatest Resolution, Intrepidity, Firmness and Constancy of Mind, by which Means he at last weathered the raging Storm, but not without being first brought as low as 'tis possible to conceive a Sovereign Prince to be. For after several other Sieges, in 1140, the Earl of *Gloucester* came so suddenly upon him, as he was besieging *Lincoln*, that a Battle could not be avoided.



voided. Both Sides fought with equal Bravery for some Time, but at last the Royal Army was totally routed and put to Flight. The King was left almost alone, and on Foot in the Field of Battle, and defended himself with amazing Valour even to the last Extremity. His Battle-ax was broke by the Force of his Blows, and afterwards his Sword, scarce any Thing but the Hilt remaining in his Hand; when he was knocked down on his Knees with a Stone, and a Knight ran in, seized him by the Helmet, and presented his Sword to his Throat, threatening to kill him, if he would not surrender; which he still refused to do to any but the Earl of *Gloucester*, who conducting him to the Empress, she ordered him to be confined in *Bristol* Castle, where after he had been some Time, he was even laid in Irons.

Never did any one bid fairer for the Crown than the Empress *Maud* did at this Time. All *England* deserted the imprisoned King, except *London* and the County of *Kent*, where he had still some Friends by Means of the Queen his Spouse, *Eustace* his Son, and *William d'Ypres* his Favourite. The Earl of *Anjou* at the same Time got *Normandy* to acknowledge *Maud* for their Sovereign. Thus *Stephen's* Affairs seemed every where desperate; and the more so, as the Empress, by promising the Bishop of *Winchester*, then Legate, the Disposal of all Church Preferments, had gained him over to her Party, who a little before had turned against her, and espoused the Interest of the King his Brother. But now this treacherous Prelate having called a Council at *Winchester*, by his private Intrigues with the Clergy, got them to chuse *Maud* for their Queen, and proceeded so far as to excommunicate all who adhered to the King. The *Londoners*

at last giving Way to the Times, thought it expedient to declare for the Empress, and Preparations were even making for her Coronation. But her haughty, imperious and disobliging Temper, with which she treated Persons of all Ranks, soon undid all again.

The Citizens of *London*, and the Barons of the King's Party who had retired thither, had petitioned the Council for his Liberty, as did also *Stephen's* Queen, but to no Purpose. And after the *Londoners* had received the Empress, the Queen came to her, humbly suing for the same Favour, promising he should renounce the Crown, depart the Kingdom, and spend the rest of his Life in a Monastery. But *Maud* rejected all these Offers with the utmost Haughtiness, and forbad the Queen ever to come into her Presence again. She refused the *Londoners* the only Thing they petitioned for, and which her Father had promised, viz. to revive the Laws of King *Edward*; which impolitick Conduct drew upon her the Ill-will of the Citizens. She even disobliged the Bishop of *Winchester*, by haughtily denying his Request to confirm to his Nephew *Eustace* the Titles of Earl of *Mortagne* and *Bolougne*. The Consequence was, that he became her utter Enemy, and as he had set her up, resolved now to use his utmost Efforts to pull her down. He first by his Emissaries got the *Londoners* to declare against her, and even brought them into a Plot to seize her Person, which she narrowly escaped, and leaving the City in a great Fright, put herself at the Head of her Troops, attended by the Earl of *Gloucester*, and marched to *Winchester*, in order to seize the Legate, but in vain. He slipped out at a Gate on the other Side of the Town, and went and drew his Friends together. The *Kentish* Men having joined the *Londoners*,

*Londoners*, *Stephen's* Queen, Prince *Eustace*, and *William d'Ypres* headed them, and marched with all Expedition to *Winchester*, where the Empress had scarce Time to get into the Castle. Here she was besieged, but found Means to march out with her Troops, which were closely pursued by the King's, whilst the rest of the Army was advancing to surround them. In the Pursuit, the Earl of *Gloucester*, intent on saving the Empress, was himself taken Prisoner, and conducted to *Rochester*. This procured King *Stephen* his Liberty; for *Maud*, who had a great Affection for the Earl her Brother, and could not well do without him, was obliged to exchange him for the King. Soon after, the Legate called a Council at *Westminster*, where he excommunicated all *Maud's* Adherents, as before he had those of the King his Brother.

Thus *Stephen* regained his Liberty in 1141. But the War between him and *Maud* continued for several Years after, during which the King's Affairs visibly gained Ground, and the Empress's continually declined, till at last, the brave Earl of *Gloucester* being dead, she despairing of standing her Ground much longer, about the Year 1147, retired to *Normandy*, and left *Stephen* once more Master of the whole Kingdom. He then endeavoured to secure the Crown after his Death to his Son *Eustace*, and even to get him crowned before-hand, but did not succeed in the Attempt.

After the Departure of *Maud*, King *Stephen* was contriving how to repair the Mischiefs the Kingdom had suffered by so long a War. But he soon found his Tranquillity was not yet firmly established. For now he is threatened with a new Rival, Prince *Henry*, the eldest Son of *Maud*, who was sixteen Years old,

and of an active and enterprising Genius. Having prepared Matters, he landed in *England* with a considerable Body of Forces, in 1152, and was immediately joined by several Barons, who put into his Hands 30 fortified Castles. And now a second Civil War, as furious as the first, was like to break out, and the two Armies were just upon the Point of engaging; when by the good Offices of some of the Nobility on each Side, in a Conference between the King and *Henry* on the opposite Banks of the *Thames* near *Wallingford*, a Truce was agreed upon, which being several Times renewed, at last ended in a Treaty of Peace (which was facilitated by Prince *Eustace's* Death) by which *Stephen* was to enjoy the Crown during Life, and after his Death, *Henry* was to succeed him as his lawful Heir. Soon after *Stephen* performed the Ceremony of adopting the young Prince.

Thus Peace was restored, to the universal Joy of the Nation, and *Stephen* again applied himself to repair the Miseries the War had occasioned: But Death put a Stop to his generous Designs, which took him out of the World 11 Months after the Treaty with *Henry*, viz. on the 25th of *October*, 1154, in the fiftieth Year of his Age, and nineteenth of his Reign. He was buried in the Abbey of *Faversham*, which he had founded, by Queen *Maud* his Wife, only Daughter and Heir to the Earl of *Boulogne*, and *Eustace* his Son, who both died the Year before.

Though the Steps he took towards mounting the Throne, especially the Breach of his Oath, cannot easily be justified, yet it must be owned that he was a Prince of undoubted Valour and Bravery, of great Clemency and Generosity, that his good Qualities



Qualities out-weighed his bad ones, and that he was worthy to live in better Times. He left but one legitimate Son, named *William*; and one Daughter, called *Maria*; a natural Son of the same Name with the legitimate one; and another named *Gervase*, who was Abbot of *Westminster*.

In this Reign the Canon Law was introduced into *England*, and the Clergy rose to an exorbitant Height of Power. *Stephen* endeavoured more

than once to humble them, and perhaps had done it, were it not for the constant Broils and Troubles they involved him in.

*William* of *Malsbury* flourished in this Reign, who wrote an Account *de Gestis Regum Anglorum*, from the coming in of the Saxons to the eighth Year of King *Stephen*. And the famous *Saxon-Annals*, which begin from the Birth of our Saviour, and end with the Death of this King.





J. Kitchin sc.

## HENRY II. 1154 — 1189.

1154.

**U**PON Stephen's Death, Henry succeeded to the Crown without the least Opposition. He was then in *Normandy*, of which he was Duke, the Empress *Maud* his Mother having delivered up that Duchy to him. He arrived in *England* about six Weeks after the late King expired, and was crowned at *Westminster* on the 19th of *December*, 1154, being then in the 23d Year of his Age. He was the first of the Race of the *Plantagenets*, and had been for some Time Earl of *Anjou*, *Touraine* and *Maine*, by the Death of his Father *Geoffrey Plantagenet*, Earl of *Anjou*, &c. though he had some Dispute with his younger Brother *Geoffrey* about these Domains, on account of his Father's Will, whereby he was to deliver them up to *Geoffrey* as soon as he should be possessed of *Normandy*. Accordingly, when Henry was become Duke of *Normandy* and King of *England*, his Brother *Geoffrey*, soon after Henry's Arrival in his Kingdom, took Possession of *Anjou*;

but Henry, who thought his Father's Will injurious to him, though he had sworn to fulfil it, went over and soon drove his Brother out of the Country. It is to be observed, that Henry took the Oath to execute the above-mentioned Will, though he did not like it, because his Father made his Nobles swear that they would not let his Body be buried, till he had done it. Besides *Normandy*, *Anjou*, *Touraine* and *Maine*, King Henry was also possessed of *Poitou*, *Guienne*, and *Saintonge*, by virtue of his Marriage with *Eleanor*, Heiress of the House of *Poitiers*, after *Lewis the Young*, King of *France*, had divorced her. So that Henry, for Extent of Dominion, was one of the most powerful Princes of his Time. And what made him the more acceptable to the *English*, was, that in him the *Saxon* Line was restored, he being descended by the Mother's Side from the *Saxon* Kings.

His first Concern, after his Accession, was to demolish the great Numbers



Numbers of Castles, that had been fortified by the Bishops and Barons in *Stephen's* Reign; to prevent such as might be disposed to Sedition from raising new Troubles. He also sent away the foreign Troops, that had been employed by *Stephen*, and so eased the Nation of a considerable Burthen. In what follows, 'tis plain he acted more from Self-interestedness and Revenge, than for the Good of the People. He revoked all the Grants made by *Stephen*, and resumed all the Lands that had been alienated from the Crown: And moreover deprived the Barons, created by his Predecessor, of their honourable Titles, on pretence they were conferred by an Usurper. However, he shewed his Wisdom and good Policy, in chusing a Council out of the most eminent of the Clergy and Nobility; after which he held a general Assembly, or Parliament, at *Wallingford*, where the Barons swore Fealty to *William* and *Henry* his Sons, the former of whom died a few Days after. In this Assembly he also consented that King *Edward's* Laws should be restored, and confirmed the *Charter* of his Grandfather, *Henry I.*

In 1156, *Henry* went over to do Homage to the King of *France* for the Provinces he held there. He was the most powerful Vassal of that Crown; but the Dominions that he and his Successors were possessed of in *France*, proved the Source of numberless Evils to *England*. Another, and indeed the chief Motive to his crossing the Sea at this Time, was to recover *Anjou* from his Brother *Geoffrey*, as has been mentioned above. That Prince had been but in a poor Condition, after being thus stripped by his Brother, had not the Earldom of *Nantes* been voluntarily offered him by the Inhabitants, after having for some Disgust expelled their former Governor.

Upon King *Henry's* Return, *Malcolm* King of *Scotland* yielded up to him *Carlisle*, *Newcastle*, and *Bamborough-Castle*, contenting himself with the Earldom of *Huntington*. And not long after, in 1157, *Henry* marched into *Wales* with a great Army, to revenge himself on that People for having renewed their Ravages on the Frontiers. But they according to Custom, retired to their Mountains, where the King could not come at them; and so after having pent them up there for some Time, and laid waste the rest of their Country, he granted them a Peace, by one of the Articles reserving to himself the Liberty of cutting large Roads through their Woods, that he might the more easily enter their Country, whenever there should be Occasion.

In 1158, Prince *Richard* was born, and a few Days after King *Henry* was crowned a second Time in the Suburbs of *Lincoln*. The next Year the King had another Son born, who was named *Geoffrey*; and the same Year he was crowned again, together with his Queen, at *Worcester*.

The Dominions *Henry* possessed, however large, were not enough to satisfy his Ambition; and now he had an Opportunity of making new Acquisitions, which he did not fail to lay hold of. For his Brother *Geoffrey* dying about this Time, he laid Claim to *Nantes*, pretending it belonged to him, as Heir to his Brother; and backed his Pretensions with so considerable a Force (having first made sure of the *French* King) that the Duke of *Bretaign*, to whom the Earldom of *Nantes* formerly belonged, and who had seized upon it at *Geoffrey's* Death, was constrained to yield it up to him. In the Interview he had with the *French* King on this Occasion, he concluded a Marriage between his eldest Son  
*Henry*,

*Henry*, then about five Years old, and *Margaret* the *French King's* Daughter, who was not above so many Months. And to make as much of this Expedition as possible, he made a Treaty with *Conan*, Duke of *Bretaign*, for marrying the Duke's Daughter *Constance* to *Geoffrey*, *Henry's* third Son, then but a few Months old; which Marriage being celebrated about five Years after, *Geoffrey* became Duke of *Bretaign* upon his Father-in-Law's Death.

Not satisfied with this, he revived his Queen's Title to *Thoulouse*, and after he had taken *Cahors*, laid Siege to that City. But here the King of *France* opposing his Project, it came to nothing. *Henry* in Revenge ravaged the Territories of the *French King*, and so distressed him, that that Monarch sent him Proposals for a Truce, which was agreed upon for a Year, during which Time a Treaty of Peace was concluded, and in it no Mention made of *Thoulouse*. *William* Earl of *Blois*, King *Stephen's* Son, attended the King in the Expedition to *Thoulouse*, and died in his Return from it. The War soon after broke out again between the two Monarchs, upon *Henry's* precipitating the Marriage between Prince *Henry* and the Daughter of *Lewis*, when the former was but seven, and the latter but three Years old, quickly after she was brought over to *England* to be educated. *Henry* did this in order to take Possession of *Gisors* for his Son, which the Princess was to have for her Dower. But this War was soon ended by the Mediation of Pope *Alexander III.* to whom both Kings paid a most servile Submission, each alighting, and taking hold of the Reins of his Bridle, to conduct him to his Lodgings.

The Affairs above related detained *Henry* in *France* four Years, and he returned to *England* in 1163. He

now seemed to be in a very happy Situation, Peace being established in his Dominions abroad, and every Thing being in profound Tranquillity at Home. But his Repose was soon disturbed by an Affair of another Nature, which gave him a vast deal of Vexation for several Years, and at last ended to his Dishonour. This was the famous Contest between him and *Thomas Becket*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*. The Occasion of it was this: The King observing that the Power of the Clergy was got to such an exorbitant Height as to be very detrimental to the State, and prejudicial to the Royal Authority, that their Pride and Ambition were insufferable, and that they pretended to an entire Exemption from the Civil Power, had formed a Resolution to redress this Grievance, and to reduce them within some tolerable Bounds. The Abuses which were the Consequence of this independent Power of the Clergy were very enormous. When a Clergyman was accused of a Crime, he was tried in the *Ecclesiastical Court*, from whence there was no Appeal. Here the utmost Favour and Partiality was shewn; and when the Matter was so plain that they could not but condemn the Party, the most heinous Crimes were punished only with *Degradation*, and others with a short *Suspension* or slight *Confinement*. This exposed the poor Laity to numberless Outrages, whilst the Clergy were not at all, or but slightly punished, and the People were sure of suffering the utmost Rigour of the Law, if they attempted to repel the Insults of the Priests. It was made appear before the King, that since his Accession, above a hundred Murders had been committed by *Ecclesiasticks*, of whom not one had been punished so much as with *Degradation*, which was enjoined by the Canons in such Cases.



It was with Reason therefore that the King resolved to reform these Abuses, and he thought *Becket*, who had been his *High-Chancellor*, and shewed himself always ready to comply with his Orders, and on whom he had bestowed many Favours, would have been serviceable to him in this good Design; and made him Archbishop of *Canterbury* for that very Purpose. But he was very much mistaken in his Man, as will appear by the Sequel. When the King first mentioned his Design to the Archbishop, he vehemently opposed it; but resolving to do that in spite of his Efforts to the contrary, which he thought he should be able to do by his Assistance, he convened the chief Lords of the Kingdom, both *Spiritual* and *Temporal*, and proposed to them a Regulation, consisting of five Articles: 1. That no one should appeal to *Rome* without the King's Consent. 2. That no Archbishop or Bishop should go to *Rome*, though even summoned by the Pope, without the King's Leave first had and obtained. 3. That no immediate Vassal of the Crown, or King's Officer, should be excommunicated, or subjected, without the King's Knowledge. 4. That all Clergymen charged with Capital Crimes, should be tried in the King's Courts. 5. That such *Ecclesiastical* Affairs, as all the Nation should be concerned in, as the Repairing of Churches, Tithes, &c. should be decided in the *Civil* Courts. The *Temporal* Lords agreed to these Articles without any Hesitation: But the Bishops and Abbots refused to do it, without the Addition of this Clause, *Saving the Rights of the Clergy and Church*, which was doing nothing at all, till the King threatened them, and then they complied; and even *Becket*, after standing out a great while, consented to the Articles without the

*saving Clause*. Soon after, the King got these Articles confirmed by an *Assembly-General*, or *Parliament*, which he convened at *Clarendon*, and here also the Prelates, through Fear, complied, and the Archbishop was with great Difficulty prevailed on by his Brethren to give his Consent to the Articles.

When these Articles were sent to Pope *Alexander III.* for his Sanction, he presently condemned them as prejudicial to the Church. Upon which *Becket* openly declared that he repented of having promised to subscribe them, and the Pope absolved him, and promised to stand by him. And now this proud and arrogant Prelate became more insolent than ever, crossed the King in all his Designs, and treated him in a very indecent and unbecoming Manner; who in Return loaded him with Prosecutions, and did all he could to humble him, but to no Purpose; he refused to plead in the King's Courts, and even to wait on the King, when he sent for him. For these and other Misdemeanors, all his moveable Goods were confiscated, and he was at last accused of Perjury and Treason, and the Court declared that he ought to be imprisoned, and punished according to Law. He was summoned to appear and hear his Sentence; but he refused to come, saying that the Peers had no Authority to judge him, and that he appealed to the Pope. Thus growing still more and more obstinate, and perceiving at the same Time his Danger, he privately made off in the Night, and went over to *Flanders*. The King of *France*, glad of any Opportunity of embroiling *Henry's* Affairs, promised *Becket* his Protection, and even importuned the Pope to espouse his Cause, which he was of himself enough inclined to do. From this Time we have many Instances of the intolerable Insolence of *Becket*,

of the Pride and Haughtiness and Policy of the Pope, who dreading an entire Rupture, endeavoured to spin out Time, and amuse the King by various Artifices; whilst the King acted vigorously against the Pope and *Becket*, forbidding Appeals to *Rome*, or to receive any Mandates from thence, and suspending the Payment of *Peter-Pence* till further Order. In short, both Sides remained as yet inflexible, and neither shewed any Inclination to yield to the other. And thus Matters stood in 1169.

To go a little back: In 1165 the King's Daughter *Maud* was married to *Henry* Duke of *Saxony*, from which Marriage descended his present Majesty King *GEORGE*.

In 1166, some *Hereticks*, (as all are called who differ from the Church of *Rome*) about 30 in Number, arrived in *England* from *Germany*. They were called *Publicans*, but why, is not known. And it is as uncertain what were their distinguishing Tenets, as we have an Account of them only from their Persecutors, or why they came over to *England*; but it was at a wrong Time for them, as indeed there was generally no worse, than when Princes were at Variance with the Pope. They were summoned before a Council at *Oxford*, and being asked who they were, they answered that they were *Christians* and Followers of the Doctrine of the Apostles. The Council condemned them, and delivered them over to the *Secular* Power: And the King, willing to keep as fair with the Pope as he could, treated them very severely indeed. He caused them to be branded in the Cheek with a hot Iron, and forbade all his Subjects, under strict Penalties, to give them any Relief; and so they all miserably perished with Hunger, without any one's hearing them make the least Complaint.

The same Year Prince *John* was born; and a little after, the Empress

*Maud*, the King's Mother, of whom so much has been said in the last Reign, died in the 67th Year of her Age, and was buried at *Roan* in *Normandy*.

King *Henry*, after having been in *France* near four Years, returned to *England* in 1170, where his Absence having occasioned much Neglect and many Abuses in the Administration of Justice, he sent Commissioners into each County, to inquire into the Misdemeanors of the Sheriffs and other Officers, and to punish those who should be found guilty.

The same Year, with the Consent of the Clergy and People, he caused his eldest Son *Henry* to be crowned by the Archbishop of *York*, and the Spiritual and Temporal Lords, and Magistrates of the Cities and Counties, did Homage to the young King. At the Coronation Feast the old King would carry up the first Dish, and told his Son; that never was any Monarch more honourably served: Upon which young *Henry*, who was of a very haughty Temper, said softly to the Archbishop of *York*, *It is no such great Honour for the Son of a King to be served by the Son of an Earl*.

Shortly after the King fell so violently ill at *Domfront*, in the Province of *Main*, that believing he was near his End, he made his Will, giving to his eldest Son *Henry*, *England*, *Normandy*, *Main* and *Anjou*; and to Prince *Richard*, *Guienne* and *Poitou*. He thought *Bretaign* was sufficient for *Geoffrey*; and as for his youngest Son *John*, he only recommended him to be provided for by his eldest Brother; on which Account he got the Nick-Name of *Lack-Land*.

The King's dangerous Illness having also raised some Scruples in his Mind, in relation to spiritual Affairs, he resolved, if he recovered, to make up Matters with *Becket*. Besides, he was desirous, if he should live,



live, to pass the rest of his Days in Quiet, which the Pope threatened more and more to disturb, by thundering out against him the Censures of the Church. Accordingly, as soon as he recovered, he ordered Matters so, that he was thoroughly reconciled to *Becket*, and swore to restore him to his former State. Protesting he heartily forgave all that was passed.

This Reconciliation was sincere enough on the King's Side, but not so on *Becket's*. For he no sooner arrived in *England*, but he suspended the Archbishop of *York*, and excommunicated some other Bishops, who had taken Part with the King against him, and proceeded to the same Acts of Severity against other great Men. The Bishops thus put under the Church's Censure, repaired to the King in *Normandy*, and made heavy Complaints against *Becket's* insolent and revengeful Spirit. The King was so provoked at these fresh Efforts of this turbulent and haughty Prelate to disturb his Tranquillity, that he spoke aloud to the following Purpose: *It is my great Unhappiness, that among all my Servants, there's not one who dares to revenge the Affronts I am continually receiving from a wretched Priest.* From this Time four of the King's Domesticks, whom some Writers call Barons, and others Knights, entered into a Plot against *Becket's* Life. Accordingly coming to *Canterbury*, they took an Opportunity to follow him into the Cathedral, and advanced after him up to the Altar, where they fell upon him, and split his Skull with their Swords, so that his Blood and Brains flew all over the Altar. The tragical End of this Archbishop, which happened in the Year 1171, with the Circumstances attending it, gained him more Friends after his Death, than ever he had whilst alive. Numberless

Miracles were said to be wrought at his Tomb, many of them ridiculous enough, and some very strange ones even before he was buried. But the credulous People in that dark Age believed them as fast as they were told, and others did not dare to contradict them. The Court of *Rome* taking Advantage of this Credulity of the People, canonized *Becket* by the Name of *St. Thomas of Canterbury*, and he was honoured by Kings and Princes and all Ranks of People from all Parts of Christendom, in numberless Pilgrimages to his Tomb. Though Men differ in their Opinions about this *new Saint*, some esteeming him an eminent Martyr, whilst others would scarce allow him the Character of an honest Man. And about 50 Years after his Death, it was the Subject of a publick Dispute at the University of *Paris*, whether *Becket* was in Heaven or Hell. However, it is certain he was a mighty Champion for the *Pope* and *Clergy*; and that was Merit enough to make him a *Saint*.

The Trouble which *Becket* gave King *Henry* did not end with his Death. For now the King of *France* and his other Enemies charged him with having a Hand in the Murder, and did all they could to stir up the Pope to revenge it, who being willing to lay hold on this Opportunity to humble *Henry*, threatened to excommunicate him, and put the Kingdom under an Interdict, if he did not give sufficient Marks of his Repentance. *Henry* by his Resolution, Policy and Presents to the Pope and Cardinals, averted this terrible Stroke. And whilst the Matter was in Suspence at *Rome*, he resumed a Project he had formed some Years before, which was the Conquest of *Ireland*. He had obtained a Bull from Pope *Adrian IV.* *Alexander's* Predecessor, for this Purpose, wherein the Pope encourages him in the

Design, provided he would pay him and his Successors *one Penny* a Year for every House in *Ireland*, and inviolably maintain the Rights of the Church, which shews upon what Motives such Expeditions were encouraged by the Court of *Rome*. However, *Henry*, whose Ambition seemed to be the chief Motive to this Undertaking, had now a fair Opportunity to put it in Execution. For *Dermouth* King of *Leinster*, being at Variance with the other petty Kings of *Ireland*, and in Danger of being overpowered by them, applied himself to King *Henry* for his Assistance, who glad of this Opportunity of interposing in the Affairs of *Ireland*, readily complied with this Request; but as the War he had then with *France* would not suffer him to lend *Dermouth* immediate Succours, he advised him to apply to some *English* Barons for what Aid they could afford him. He thereupon got *Robert Fitz-Stephen*, and *Richard Strong-Bow* Earl of *Pembroke*, to enter into an Alliance with him upon certain Conditions. *Fitz-Stephen* first accompanied *Dermouth* into *Ireland* with 400 Men, and the Earl of *Pembroke* followed with 1200; and with this Handful of Men at first had such Success, that many of the Country coming in to them, they extended their Conquests with great Rapidity, and spread the Terror of their Arms all over *Ireland*. So that *Henry* growing jealous of them, and fearing they would make themselves Masters of the whole Country, which he designed for himself, forbade any more Provisions or Ammunition to be sent them, and even recalled all the *English* who were already there; but the two Captains sending Deputies to assure him that all their Conquests should be at his Command, he was satisfied. Soon after which, *viz.* in 1172, he went over himself with a formidable Army, and landed

at *Waterford*. Upon which the *Irish* voluntarily submitted, and *Henry* became Master of *Ireland* without striking a Blow; all the petty Kings coming to *Waterford*, and striving which should first swear Fealty to him. Then going to *Dublin*, and leaving *Hugh Lacy* there to govern the Island in his Name, with the Title of *Grand Justiciary of Ireland*, he set out for *England*.

From *England* he soon went over to *Normandy* to meet the Pope's Legates, who were there to examine into *Becket's* Murder; where, after having cleared himself by Oath, and declared his Sorrow for the imprudent Words he had dropped, which occasioned that Prelate's Assassination, he was absolved, upon promising to perform all that was required of him in favour of the Pope and Church, and to do Penance at *Becket's* Tomb; which he did upon his Return into *England* the next Year. For landing at *Southampton*, he proceeded directly to *Canterbury*, and as soon as he came in Sight of the Town, he alighted, pulled off his Boots, and walked bare-footed three Miles till he came to the Tomb, where he submitted himself to be shamefully scourged by the Prior and Monks of *St. Augustine*. Thus ended this troublesome Affair, no less to the Pope's Advantage than to the Dishonour of this great Prince, notwithstanding his Resolution at first; which shews how formidable the Spiritual Power was in those dark and superstitious Times.

The King was scarce got rid of the Trouble on *Becket's* Account, but he fell into another. A Conspiracy was formed against him in his Absence by his Queen *Eleanor*, and his Sons *Henry*, *Richard*, and *Geoffrey*, into which were drawn several of the Barons, and which was countenanced and encouraged by the King of *France* and several other foreign Princes. Queen *Eleanor* was moved



moved to this by her extreme Jealousy, which had put her upon dispatching out of the Way *Rosamond Clifford*, commonly called *Fair Rosamond*, Daughter to Lord *Clifford*, the King's chief Mistress, whom he in vain thought he had secured from all Attempts, by keeping her in a *Labyrinth* he had built for that Purpose at *Woodstock*. Young *Henry* was grown weary of the Title of King without the Authority. *Richard* and *Geoffrey* were dissatisfied with their Father's retaining the Sovereignty of the Countries assigned for their Portions. *Henry* privately withdrew from Court, and went over to the King of *France*; which when the Queen was advertised of, she sent thither also *Richard* and *Geoffrey*: For which the old King ordered her to be closely confined. Soon after he was attacked almost in all Places at once. *Richard* caused the greatest Part of *Guienne* to revolt. *Geoffrey* raised an Insurrection in *Bretaign*. The King of *France*, assisted by the Earls of *Flanders*, *Bulloign* and *Blois*, attacked *Normandy*. *William* King of *Scotland* invaded the Northern Parts of *England*. The Earl of *Leicester* having levied an Army in *France*, landed at *Southampton*, hoping to stir up all the *English* against the King. And in the mean Time the young King *Henry*, who continued at *Paris*, acted as if he had been sole King of *England*, receiving the Homage of the *Vassals*, making Grants and Donations of the Crown Lands, and exercising other Acts of Sovereignty.

Never did Prince stand more in need of Courage and Resolution, and never was it better exerted than by *Henry* on this Occasion. Though the Conspiracy was deeply laid, and though it broke out all on a sudden, almost before he knew any Thing of the Matter; yet he managed his Affairs with such Vigour, Prudence and Magnanimity, that he got the

better of all his Enemies, and procured to himself once more the peaceable Possession of all his Dominions. In a few Months, either by himself or others, he became Master of the principal Places in *Guienne*, *Saintonge*, *Anjou*, *Poitou* and *Bretaign*. The King of *France*, surprized by *Henry*, was forced to raise the Siege of *Roan*, and retreat in the utmost Confusion. In *England*, *Humphrey Bohun* defeated the Earl of *Leicester* and took him Prisoner. The King of *Scotland* had the same Fate, and was not set at Liberty, upon the Conclusion of the Peace between all Parties, but on Condition of doing Homage to both the *Henries* for his Kingdom of *Scotland* in general, and the County of *Galloway* in particular. These great Successes made the King of *France* desire Peace, and a Treaty was soon concluded, wherein he promised to surrender to *Henry* all the Castles he had taken in the Beginning of the War, and *Henry* granted a general Pardon to all that had revolted against him, without Exception; and his Sons promised to be obedient for the future.

Peace being thus restored in 1174, *Henry* applied himself to the Affairs of Government, enacted new Laws, and revived others that had been neglected; and soon after, about the Year 1176, he divided *England* into six Parts, called *Circuits*, appointing Itinerant Judges to go at certain Times of the Year, and hold the *Affizes*, or administer Justice to the People; which is practised at this Day. He also demolished such fortified Castles as still remained in private Hands.

About the same Time *London-Bridge* began to be built of Stone, by *Peter Coleman*, a Priest. The King, the Pope's Legate, and the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, contributed towards the Work. It was be-

nished in about 33 Years, during which Time the Course of the *Thames* was turned another Way, by a Trench cut for that Purpose from *Battersea* to *Rotherhithe*.

The late Peace was rather constrained than sincere on the Part of *Henry's* Sons. They were still dissatisfied, and their Ambition and Lust of Power disposed them to take the first Opportunity of giving new Disturbance to the King their Father, who, as he had been all his Life a Slave to his Lust, was now fallen in Love with *Alice*, Daughter of *Lewis* of *France*, who at the Conclusion of the late Peace was put into *Henry's* Hands to be educated in *England*, as being designed in Marriage for his Son *Richard*: But he betrayed his Trust, and detained the young Princess from his Son, which gave *Richard* a new Handle against his Father, though as to his Marriage with her, he was very indifferent about it. The young King *Henry* and Prince *Geoffrey* were also discontented upon the same Score as before. Their Designs, which had been suppressed for some Years, began to break out into Action in 1182, when young *Henry* repaired to *Guienne* to stir up the *Gascigns* to a Revolt. But he was seized with a slow Fever, which put an End to his Life in 1183, and Historians tell us he shewed great Signs of Grief for what he had done and projected against the King his Father. His Brother *Geoffrey* did not long survive him. He died at *Paris*, whither he went to assist at a *Tournament*, in 1186, leaving *Constance* of *Bretaign* his Wife big with Child, who was soon after delivered of a Son, named *Arthur*.

The Death of the young King put a Stop for some Time to the Troubles that were beginning to distract the Royal Family. But Prince *Richard*, who was now Heir Appa-

rent to the Crown, being naturally of a violent and restless Temper, began about two Years after to raise new Disturbances in the King's foreign Dominions. He got the Provinces to revolt, and acknowledge him for their Sovereign, and did Homage for them to *Philip* King of *France*, who had succeeded his Father *Lewis*. These and some other Proceedings occasioned a War between the two Monarchs, in which King *Henry*, who was now deserted by his *French* Subjects, was so unsuccessful, that he was constrained at last in 1189, to make Peace with *Philip* upon very dishonourable Terms. To this Mortification was added another: He discovered, that his beloved Son *John* had, during the War, held Intelligence with *Philip*, and was concerned in his Brother's Conspiracies to dethrone him. This made him curse the Day of his Birth, and to utter Imprecations against his Sons, which he would never revoke.

This famous Monarch, after all his Grandeur and Prosperity, being reduced to so low a State, did not long survive this violent Shock in his Fortune. For soon after he fell sick at *Chinon*, and died on the 6th of *July*, 1189, in the 57th Year of his Age, and 35th of his Reign. He was interred in the Choir of the Nunnery at *Fontevrard*, which he had founded. A stately Tomb was afterwards erected for him and *Eleanor* his Queen, and for King *Richard* and his Queen, their Effigies in Brass being placed together in one Monument.

He had five Sons by *Eleanor* of *Guienne* his Queen, of whom only *Richard* and *John* survived him. The Marriage of his eldest Daughter *Maud* has been already mentioned. His Daughter *Eleanor* was married to *Alphonso* King of *Castile*, and *Joannah* to *William* II. King of *Sicily*.



*Sicily.* He had two natural Sons by *Fair Rosamond*, and another by a Daughter of *Sir Ralph Blewit*.

There was a great Mixture of Vices and Virtues in King *Henry*. He was certainly a Prince of an exalted Genius, valiant, generous, politic and learned : But at the same Time it must be owned, that he was exceeding haughty, that his Ambition was insatiable, and his Lust boundless, and where Love or Empire were concerned, he stuck at nothing to accomplish his Desires. But this great Prince, who used to say in his Prosperity, that *the whole World was but sufficient for one great Man*, lived long enough to see him-

self humbled. However, this must be said in his Praise, that *England* had never been in so flourishing a Condition as in his Reign, and that the Misfortunes he met with fell rather on himself than the Kingdom, which by his Accession became one of the most powerful States in *Europe*.

Of the *English* Historians, *Simeon of Durham*, and *Henry Archdeacon of Huntingdon*, flourished about this Time.

*Saladin*, Sultan of *Babylon*, took *Jerusalem* from the Christians towards the End of this King's Reign, after they had been in Possession of it near an Hundred Years.



*J. Kitchin sc.*



T. Ritchin Sc.

1189 — 1199

## RICHARD I. surnam'd Coeur-de-Lion.

**R**ICHARD staid above a Month in *France* after his Father's Death, so well was he assured of the Disposition of the People of *England*, and that nothing would be attempted there to his Prejudice; though in his Father's Life-time he had, or pretended to have, some Fears and Jealousies on Account of his Brother Prince *John*. The first Thing he did was to have an Interview with *Philip*, when he thanked him for his late Protection, and did Homage to him for his *French* Provinces. On the 20th of *July*, he received the Ducal Crown of *Normandy* at *Roan*, and was girt with the Ducal Sword according to the Custom of Investiture. The first Order he sent to *England*, where he was obeyed as if he had been already crowned, was to set his Mother Queen *Eleanor* at Liberty, who had been sixteen Years in Confinement. He also intrusted her with the Administration during his Absence, and impowered her to release what Pri-

soners she pleased; who was too sensibly affected with her long Confinement, not to exercise with Pleasure this Power given her by her Son; who having settled his Affairs in *France*, came to *London*, and was crowned by *Baldwin*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, on *Sept. 3*, 1189. The Ceremony was disturbed by the Massacre of some *Jews*, who pressing to see the Solemnity, the People fell furiously on them, and killed several of them. But the King having caused a strict Inquiry to be made, some of the Ring-leaders in this barbarous Action were deservedly put to Death. It must be observed, that ever since the Taking of *Jerusalem* by the *Saracens*, the People breathed nothing but Revenge against the Enemies of *Christ*; and this made them take this Opportunity of falling upon the poor *Jews*, though they had no Hand in that Revolution in *Palestine*. Their not being *Christians* was enough: And the cruel Example of the *Londoners*



*donors* was followed by several other great Towns, especially at *York*, where 500 *Jews*, besides the Women and Children, having fled into the Castle to avoid the Fury of the Rabble, the High-Sheriff required them to deliver it up; and upon their Refusal, the People drew up in a Body and attacked the Castle. The *Jews* offered a great Sum of Money to go off with their Lives, but the People would give them no Quarter. And so rather than fall into the Hands of the *uncircumcised Christians*, every Master of a Family cut his Wife's and Children's Throats first, then dispatched his Servants, and ended with the Slaughter of himself.

A new *Crusade* for the Recovery of *Jerusalem* from the *Infidels* had been resolved on between *Philip* of *France* and King *Henry*, in which *Richard* was to bear a Part; but their private Quarrels had put a Stop to the Undertaking. And now *Philip* and *Richard* being in perfect Amity, they resumed the Design according to both their Vows. The *Christians* in general, especially in *France* and *England*, were extremely zealous for this religious Expedition, and shewed their Ardour, either by inlisting themselves or advancing Money. King *Richard*'s Thoughts were wholly taken up with this Affair from his very Accession, whether for the Sake of Glory or Religion, let the Reader judge.

As he designed to make as great a Figure as possible in this Expedition, it was necessary he should carry with him a numerous Army; to maintain which he stuck at no Methods to raise Money. Besides the late King's Treasure, amounting to above 100,000 Marks, which he wholly applied this Way, he sold almost all the Crown Lands, of which the Bishops and Abbots were the chief Purchasers. For 10,000

Marks he delivered up *Berwick* and *Roxborough* to the King of *Scotland*, and discharged him and his Successors from the Homage his Father had imposed. When Complaints were made to him for these Measures, he said, *he would sell London itself, could he find a Chapman able to purchase it.* He got a Power from the Pope to dispense with those who repented of their Vow, as having too hastily engaged in the *Crusade*; and as there were many of this Sort, he raised great Sums by this Means. He moreover extorted Money from the richest of his Subjects, by borrowing of those against whom he could have no Handle, and laying such as had any Ways made themselves obnoxious under a Necessity of saving themselves harmless by making him Presents. Whilst he was by these and other Methods heaping up Money, the Clergy did all they could to procure him Soldiers, and the Army soon became very numerous.

Having made these extraordinary Preparations for his Voyage, he gave the Regency during his Absence to *Longchamps* his High-Chancellor, who was also Bishop of *Ely* and the Pope's Legate, joining with him the Bishop of *Durham*. As to his Brother Prince *John*, he would not let him have any Share in the Government, for fear of giving him an Opportunity to act against him: But then, to make him easy, he invested him with the Earldoms of *Cornwall*, *Dorset*, *Somerset*, *Nottingham*, *Derby*, and *Lancaster*, and gave him in Marriage *Aviza*, Heiress of the House of *Gloucester*, his second Cousin.

All Things being settled, King *Richard* passed over into *France* about the Beginning of the Year 1190, and the two Armies of *France* and *England*, making together above 100,000 Men, joined at *Vezelai*, towards

wards the End of *June*, according to Agreement. The two Monarchs marched together as far as *Lyons*, where parting, *Philip* proceeded for *Genoa*, and *Richard* for *Marseilles* to meet his Fleet; both being to join again at *Messina* in *Sicily*, the general Rendezvous of the *Croises*. *Philip* soon arrived there, but *Richard*, whose Fleet had been separated by a Storm, and were some Time before they joined again, not till towards the End of *September*.

Here a Quarrel soon arose between King *Richard* and *Tancred* King of *Sicily*, who having detained the Queen-Dowager, *Richard's* Sister, in Prison, set her at Liberty upon his Arrival, and sent her to him. But *Richard* not satisfied with this, demanded the Dower assigned her by *William II.* her Husband. *Tancred* being very backward to comply with this Demand, *Richard* seized on a Castle and Monastery near *Messina*, and *Tancred* in Return ordered Matters so, that the Inhabitants of *Messina*, taking the Advantage of some Disorder there, expelled the *English* out of their City. *Richard*, enraged at this, attacked the City with such Fury, that he became Master of it in the first Assault. Upon this *Tancred* thought fit to satisfy all *Richard's* Demands, and a Treaty was concluded between them. But as nothing but Force had brought *Tancred* to comply, he now endeavoured to sow Dissention between *Richard* and *Philip*. The latter had already looked with a jealous Eye on *Richard's* visible Superiority, and was of himself but too much disposed to fall out with him. And now both Sides being exasperated, *Philip* peremptorily demanded of *Richard* to consummate his Marriage with the Princess *Alice* his Sister; and *Richard* as peremptorily refused it, saying, he could not marry a Princess, by whom the King his

Father had had a Son, offering to prove it by Witnesses: And though this Point, being of so tender a Nature, was dropt; yet this and some other Disputes had so exasperated their Minds, that they were never more Friends. However, this did not hinder them from pursuing their Voyage.

*Philip* set sail first about the End of *March*, 1191, *Richard* staying for the Arrival of *Eleanor* his Mother, who was bringing along with her *Berenguella* of *Navarre*, whom he had espoused. They soon arrived, and *Eleanor* returning home, leaving *Berenguella* with the Queen-Dowager of *Sicily*, King *Richard* put to Sea with a gallant Fleet, about a Fortnight after *Philip's* Departure, taking the two Princesses along with him. This Fleet met with a violent Storm between *Cyprus* and *Rhodes*, which drove Part of them on the Coast of *Cyprus*; where *Isaac*, King of the Island, a Prince of a very bad Character, imprisoned the *English* that had escaped the Shipwreck, and seized their Effects. King *Richard* provoked at this Barbarity, as soon as the scattered Fleet was joined, landed his Men, and attacked *Isaac* so furiously, that he was forced to abandon the Shore. The King of *England* pursuing this Advantage, with Ease made himself Master of the City of *Limisso*; and soon after *Isaac* and his only Daughter were made Prisoners. He entreated King *Richard* not to put him in Irons, who granted his Request so far, that instead of Irons he ordered him to be bound with silver Fetters. The Conquest of the whole Island soon followed, which *Richard* gave some Time after to *Guy of Lusignan*, the last King of *Jerusalem*, whose Family enjoyed it near 200 Years. Before *Richard* left *Cyprus*, he consummated his Marriage with the Princess *Berenguella*.

Whilst



Whilst the King was making himself famous by these great Actions abroad, *Longchamp* the Regent abused his Power at home to such a Degree, that his Collegue the Bishop of *Durham*, and the six Counsellors the King had appointed to assist them, complained to Prince *John*, and got him to join with them in order to depose him; which they effected, and conferred the Regency on the Archbishop of *Roan*, till the King's Pleasure should be known. *John* was glad of this Opportunity of having a Hand in the Administration, and improved it so as to make a strong Party for the Crown, in case his Brother died during his Expedition, in Prejudice of his Nephew *Arthur*, Duke of *Bretaign*, Son to his elder Brother *Geoffrey*.

To return to the Affairs of *Palestine*. *Acon* or *Ptolemais* had been besieged by some Christian Princes a whole Year. When *Philip* of *France* arrived, he continued the Siege, but with little Success. King *Richard* arriving afterwards, carried it on so vigorously, that in spite of all the Attempts of the Sultan *Saladin* to raise it, the City at length surrendered upon Articles, *July 12, 1191*. And now the Christian Army expected to march towards *Jerusalem*, but the Dissention between the two Kings, which broke out afresh, occasioned chiefly by *Philip's* envying *Richard's* Glory, and the Superiority he had obtained by the Number and good Condition of his Troops, and his personal Valour, proved an Obstacle to the Design. And *Philip* finding himself very weak after a violent Fit of Sickness, and being impatient to go and take Possession of *Artois*, which was fallen to him by the Death of the Earl of *Flanders*, quitted *Palestine* and returned home, leaving 10,000 of his Men under the Command of the Duke of *Burgundy*. Soon after his Departure,

*Richard* and *Saladin* exhibited a Spectacle of Horror, by putting the Prisoners to Death, each had in his Power, which were some Thousands. This was occasioned by *Saladin's* refusing to perform the Articles of the Surrender of *Acon*, upon which *Richard* is thought to have begun with beheading the *Turkish* Prisoners, and *Saladin*, by way of Repriſal, did the same by his *Christian* Captives. Such Instances of Barbarity are rarely to be found in History, and whether they can be justified by the Laws of War, or the Law of Retaliation, I shall not take upon me to determine.

After this, *Richard* resolved to besiege *Ascalon*; and as he was marching towards it with that Design, *Saladin* posted himself advantageously in the Way, with an Army of 300,000 Men. Here a great Battle ensued, which was fought on *Sept. 7, 1191*. *Richard* attacked the *Saracens*, so much superior to him in Number, with such undaunted Valour and Resolution, that he in the End entirely defeated them, leaving 40,000 dead on the Field of Battle. After which he repaired the maritime Cities of *Ascalon*, *Joppa*, and *Cæsarea*, which *Saladin* had abandoned after having demolished their Walls. Then he marched towards *Jerusalem*, and in his Way took the great *Babylon* Caravan, consisting of 3000 loaded Camels, and 4000 Horses or Mules, and guarded by 10,000 Horse. By this means he made himself Master of an inestimable Booty. After which he continued his March towards *Jerusalem*, and from a Hill had a Prospect of the City: But Want of Forage obliged him to put off the Siege. In the mean Time, the Duke of *Austria* with the *Germans*, and the Duke of *Burgundy* with the *French*, deserted him, and the *Italian* Troops under the Marquis of *Montferrat*

*ferat* refused to serve any longer. These Things, together with the Diminishing of his own Troops by Sickness and Battles, the Fear of *Philip's* attacking his Dominions in his Absence, and the News of what his Brother *John* was doing in *England*, made *Richard* resolve to return home. But before his Departure he caused *Henry*, Earl of *Champaign*, to be elected General of the Forces that were to be left behind in *Palestine*, and concluded a Treaty with *Saladin* for three Years. Thus ended this famous *Crusade*, which drained *England* and *France* of Men and Money, and after all proved of but very little Advantage to the *Eastern Christians*.

*Richard* embarked for *England* towards the End of the Year 1192, and meeting with a Storm, was forced on the Coast of *Istria*, and from thence between *Aquileia* and *Venice*. Whether by Mistake or otherwise, he entered the Territories of the Duke of *Austria*, whom he had affronted at the Siege of *Acon*, and took the Road to *Vienna*. Though he travelled in the Disguise of a Pilgrim, as did also his Attendants, he was however at last accidentally discovered to the Duke of *Austria*, and seized at a Village near *Vienna*. The Emperor *Henry VI.* demanded this Royal Prisoner of the Duke, who delivered him up, upon Assurance given him that he should have a good Share in his Ransom. The News of the King's Imprisonment quickly reached *England*, and caused the greatest Consternation among his Friends, whilst Prince *John* took this Opportunity to endeavour to wrest the Crown from his Brother, but was prevented by the Diligence of the Queen his Mother and the Barons, who preserved their Fidelity to their imprisoned Sovereign. Finding he could not make a sufficient Party in *England*, he went over to *Normandy*,

and failing also in his Attempts there, he applied to the King of *France*, and made a Treaty with him. *Philip*, glad of any Pretence to embroil *Richard's* Affairs, resolved to seize on the Provinces he held in *France*. He made himself Master of *Gisors*, *Eureux*, and the Country of the *Vexin*, and laid siege to *Roan*; but he failed in this last Attempt, being repulsed with great Loss, and forced to abandon the Siege.

In the mean Time Queen *Eleanor* left no Stone unturned to procure the Liberty of the King her Son, whilst *Philip* and *John* did all they could to prevail with the Emperor to keep him still a Prisoner. *Eleanor* at last had her Desire, chiefly by Means of the German Princes, who vigorously espoused the Cause of the unfortunate King before the Emperor; and so *Richard* was set at Liberty, upon paying down 100,000 Marks of pure Silver, which the Queen his Mother raised in *England* for that Purpose, and giving Hostages for the Payment of 50,000 more. The King was no sooner released, but he set out with all Speed for the *Low Countries*, and embarking at *Antwerp*, arrived at *Sandwich* on the 20th of *March*, 1194, after having been absent from *England* four Years, of which he had been fifteen Months a Prisoner.

*Richard* was received with great Demonstrations of Joy by his Subjects, but he did not make any long Stay in *England*. For having reduced the few Castles that were still in the Hands of *John's* Adherents, and caused himself to be crowned a second Time, he passed over into *France* with a considerable Army, to be revenged on *Philip* for his late Insults, and for encouraging the Rebellion of his Brother *John*. At the Instances of his Mother, he was reconciled to Prince *John* at *Roan*, upon his making his Submission: But  
a War



a War commenced between the two Kings, the Particulars of which are but of small Moment, neither of them gaining much Advantage over the other. It lasted five Years, being often interrupted by Truces, which were as often broke on both Sides; but at last it ended in a Truce for five Years, wherein it was agreed, that each Party should remain in Possession of what he held at that Time.

Whilst *Richard* was in *France*, a great Sedition was raised in *London*, by one *William Fitz-Osborn*, commonly called *Longbeard*, on Account of a Tax, which he alledged would fall wholly on the Poor, with whom he had gained great Credit by affecting always to appear an Advocate for them. The Tumult could not be appeased without the chief Citizens taking to Arms. In the End *Longbeard* was taken and hanged, with nine of his Accomplices.

About this Time lived the famous *Robin Hood*, with his Associate *Little John*, who with their Gang are said to have infested *Yorkshire* with their Robberies. Some say he was of noble Descent, and was reduced to these Courses by his Riot and Extravagance. He never hurt any Person, robbed only the Rich, and spared the Poor. A Proclamation being issued against him, he fell sick at the Nunnery of *Berkely*, and desiring to be let Blood, was betrayed and bled to Death.

*Richard*, after the Truce he had made with *France*, might have enjoyed some Repose after his many Fatigues, if his Avarice had not put him upon an Action, which occasioned his Death. A Gentleman of *Limosin*, which was held of the Duchy of *Guienne*, having found a Treasure that had been hid for some Ages in the Grounds, *Richard* pretended it belonged to him, as Sovereign of the Country. The Gen-

tleman would have given him a Part, but finding the King was resolved to have the Whole, he applied for Protection to *Vidomar*, Viscount of *Limoges*, who sheltered him in the Castle of *Chaluz*. *Hoveden* says it was *Vidomar* himself who found the Treasure in his own Estate. Be that as it will, *Richard* marched into the *Limosin*, to lay siege to the Castle. But as he was taking a Turn round it in order to view it, one *Bertram* an Archer let fly an Arrow at him from the Walls, which shot him in the Shoulder close to his Neck. The Wound, under the Management of an unskilful Surgeon, gangrened, so that he died of it eleven Days after he received it, viz. on the 6th of *April*, 1199. The Castle being taken before he died, and the Person who shot him brought before him, he asked him why he did it. The Man boldly replied, it was to revenge the Death of his Father and Brother whom the King had slain, and that he was glad he had rid the World of one who had done so much Mischief. The dying King forgave him, and ordered him his Liberty with a present of 100 Shillings. But as soon as the King was dead, *Marchad*, General of the *Flemings*, caused the miserable Man to be fled alive.

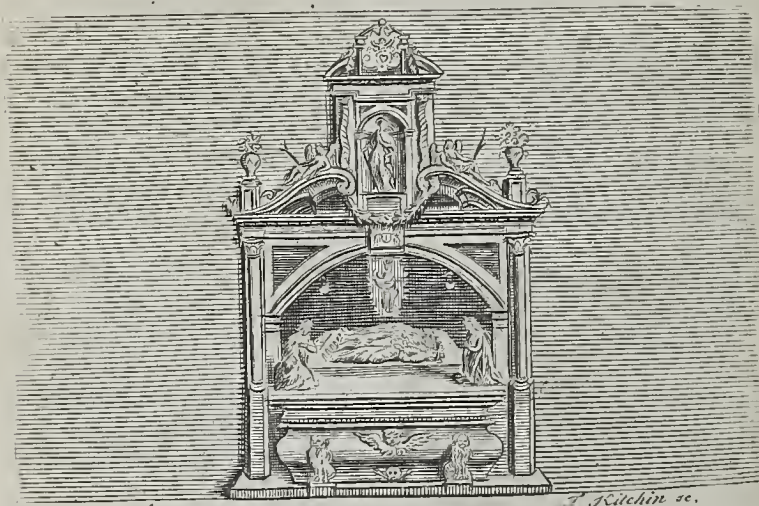
Thus fell King *Richard*, in the 10th Year of his Reign, and forty-third of his Age. Before he died he made his Will, leaving his Kingdom and his other Dominions to his Brother *John*, and ordered his Body to be buried at *Fonteverard*, at the Feet of the King his Father, to testify his Grief for his undutiful Behaviour towards him. He left only a natural Son, whose Name was *Philip*, to whom he gave the Lordship of *Cognac* in the Duchy of *Guienne*.

He was certainly a Prince of an intrepid and dauntless Spirit, of unquestionable

questionable Valour and Courage, whence he was surnamed *Coeur de Lion*, or *Lion's Heart*. It approached indeed too near to a certain brutish Fierceness, and if he is to be commended for this, we are at a Loss for any other Topick of Praise. If those who have writ his Life have not misrepresented him, *Pride*, *Avarice* and *Lust* were his reigning Vices. It is said that a certain Priest once took the Freedom to admonish him to put off these ill Qualities, which were usually called his *three Daughters*. The King told him he had been thinking to do so, and would give the first to the *Templars*, the second to the *Monks*, and the third to the *Bishops*. He imposed exorbitant Taxes on his Subjects, and extorted large Sums from them by unjustifiable Methods. During his whole Reign, he never was above eight Months in *England*, which

doubtless was unhappy under his Government. But the People thought the Renown their King gained in his Wars redounded to the Honour of the Nation, and so they were well enough pleased.

*Richard* was the first King of *England* who bore *three Lions passant* in his Arms. He ordered that Weights and Measures should be the same all over the Kingdom. In his Reign the City of *London* began to assume a new Form, with respect to its Government, to have a *Mayor*, and to be divided into several Corporations or Societies, now termed *Companies*. *Henry Fitz Alwin* was the first Mayor, who continued in that Office four-and-twenty Years. *William of Newbury*, so called from a Monastery in *Yorkshire*, of which he was a Member, wrote his History of *England* about this Time.







T. Wotton sc.

## JOHN. 1199-1216.

**T**HOUGH King *Richard* had by his Will given all his Dominions to his Brother *John*, he did not succeed to them without some Trouble, and a good deal of Art and Management. Besides that the last Will of a Prince is but of little Weight, if the Interest or Spirit of the People runs against it, Prince *John* had a Nephew who was his Competitor, and had as good, if not a better Title than himself, namely *Arthur*, Duke of *Bretaign*, Son to his elder Brother *Geoffrey*. As to *England* indeed there appears to have been no Regulation with regard to the Succession to the Crown since the *Norman* Conquest, and so *John*'s Title might be as good as *Arthur*'s, besides his having his Brother's Will on his Side: But in the foreign Provinces possessed by the *English*, the Right of Succession in the direct Line was generally received. As here therefore the greatest Difficulty lay, *John* staid in *France*, where he was when his Brother died, to get

himself established in those Provinces; whilst his Friends took Care of his Interest in *England*. These were his Mother Queen *Eleanor*, (who apprehended, if her Grandson *Arthur* ascended the Throne, his Mother *Constance* would have the Administration of Affairs during his Minority, he being then but 13 Years old) *Hubert*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, *William Marshal*, afterwards Earl of *Pembroke*, and the Chief *Justiciary*, who had great Power during the *Interregnum*; as Queen *Eleanor* was very much beloved by the People, the Archbishop was at the Head of the Clergy, and *Marshal* was a Lord of distinguished Worth. These four Persons served Prince *John* so effectually, that they first brought over the Magistrates of the Cities and Towns to their Side, and by their Means the People. Which done, they summoned the lesser Nobility to take the Oath of Allegiance to *John*, who generally complied, perceiving the Bent of the People.

Then

Then the Bishops and Barons were summoned to take the same Oath: But these were not so easily managed. They did not think it expedient absolutely to refuse taking the Oath, but under Pretence of examining into the Laws of the Kingdom, they demanded further Time, and presently began to fortify their Castles. This alarmed John's Friends, upon which they convened an *Assembly-General* at *Northampton*, where they promised, in that Prince's Name, that he would fully restore all the Rights and Privileges of the Nobles and People. By this, and other Promises of a more private Nature to those who were most opposite, all the Lords were at last prevailed upon to swear Allegiance to him; and to John was secure of the Crown before he came over to *England*.

In *France* Things did not go on quite so successfully. The Pretensions of young *Arthur*, the Apprehension of his being favoured by the King of *France*, and the general good Disposition of the People towards him, created John a great deal of Trouble. All the Lords of *Poitou*, *Tourain*, *Main*, and *Anjou*, had resolved to acknowledge *Arthur* for their Sovereign; and the Governor of *Angers* had already delivered up that Place to him. However, John having prevailed on the Governor of *Chinon* to put into his Hands the Treasure of the late King his Brother, which was deposited in the Castle there, he ordered Matters so as to secure the chief Lords of *Normandy*, and having raised an Army, by the Help of the same Money, he besieged and took *Mans*: And to strike a Terror into the *Normans*, he ordered the Walls to be razed, and the Burghers to be imprisoned. This had such an Effect, that the *Normans*, however they were inclined to *Arthur*, thought it the wisest Way to submit to his

Uncle: Which as soon as they had resolved on, John came to *Roan*, and was crowned *Duke of Normandy*.

John having thus secured *Normandy*, thought it not adviseable to defer his coming over to *England* till he should have reduced the other Provinces. Accordingly he landed at *Shoreham*, on the 25th of *May*, came to *London* the next Day, and was crowned on the 28th, being then 32 Years of Age. As no Prince was ever more desirous of a Crown, so none wore it with more Dishonour, or found it attended with greater Trouble and Vexation. His whole Reign was nothing but a Series of Misfortunes: And *Philip* of *France*, *Pope Innocent III.* and his own Barons, in their Turns, cut out so much Work for him, as rendered him unhappy as long as he lived.

Prince *Arthur's* Mother despairing of being able to withstand John, who, she plainly perceived, designed to seize upon all the Provinces his Father and Brother had been possessed of, put herself and Son under the Protection of the King of *France*, and delivered to him the principal Places of *Bretaign*, *Tourain*, *Poitou*, *Anjou*, and *Main*, to hold them in the Name of *Arthur*. *Philip* was well pleased with this Incident, as thinking he should by this Means have an Opportunity of recovering the Provinces the *English* were possessed of in *France*. Under Pretence of acting for *Arthur*, he had already broke the five Years Truce he had concluded with *Richard*, and made himself Master of certain Places. Upon this King John hastened into *Normandy*, and drew together a numerous Army to oppose *Philip*; who, being surprized at this great Armament, craftily drew John into a Truce of 50 Days, whereby he imprudently lost the Advantage he might have taken, and *Philip* had Time to make further Preparations.



So when the two Monarchs had an Interview before the Expiration of the Truce, in order to bring Matters to an Accommodation, *Philip* talked so big, and made such large Demands, that the Conference came to nothing, and Hostilities commenced on both Sides. *Philip* soon made himself Master of several Places in *Bretaign*, which had sided with *John*, particularly of the Castle of *Balun*, which he ordered to be demolished as soon as taken. He then laid Siege to *Lewardin*; but upon *John's* Approach at the Head of his Army, he retired into *Main*, and soon after was forced to retreat into his own Dominions.

*William de la Roche*, Governor of the young Duke of *Bretaign*, perceiving by *Philip's* Conduct, that he only made use of that Prince for a Pretence to carry on his own ambitious Views, had removed him and his Mother from the *French* Court, and conducted them to King *John*, to whom he had reconciled them. But some Suspicions being raised in their Minds, whether with or without Foundation, that the King had a Design aga<sup>n</sup>st their Lives, they both withdrew privately from his Court, and put themselves again under the Protection of the King of *France*; who by this Means had a plausible Pretence to carry on the War: But *John* having strengthened himself by an Alliance with the Emperor *Otho* his Nephew, whilst the Earl of *Flanders* likewise declared for him, and all *Guienne* came over to his Side, the *French* King thinking he could get nothing by the War, employed the Cardinal of *Capua* to offer *John* Proposals of Peace; which he impolitically listened to and accepted, though he had the highest Probability of gaining great Advantages by the War. *Philip*, by this Treaty, obliged himself to give no Assistance to Duke *Arthur*, and to

restore to *John* all he had taken from the *English* since *Richard's* Death; and *John* promised to pay 30,000 Marks of Silver for the Dowry of *Blanche* of *Castile* his Niece, whom *Lewis* the Son of *Philip* was to marry; and not to assist, directly or indirectly, the Emperor his Nephew, who was at War with *France*.

Thus the Duke of *Bretaign* was deserted by the King of *France*, tho' he still chose to remain at the *French* Court; and King *John* taking this Advantage, dispossessed him of all the Provinces that had acknowledged him for their Sovereign; except *Bretaign*, which was his own before King *Richard's* Death.

This prosperous State of King *John's* Affairs was of but very short Duration. An imprudent Step of his own gave the King of *France* a fresh Opportunity of acting against him, which he was glad to lay hold of. This was his marrying *Isabella* of *Angoulesme*, who had been betrothed to *Hugh* Earl of *Marche*. His Passion was so great for her, that in order to make her his Wife, he divorced *Avisa* of *Gloucester* under Pretence of Consanguinity, and made no Scruple of breaking through the Engagement between *Isabella* and the Earl of *Marche*; which in the End occasioned the Ruin of his Affairs in *France*, as we shall soon see.

In the mean Time, the *English* looked upon the late Treaty with *France* as very dishonourable. It gave them a mean Opinion of their King, that he should in so cowardly a Manner purchase a Peace, when he had so favourable an Opportunity of carrying on the War with Advantage; and upon his Return to *England*, when he demanded a Subsidy of three Shillings upon every Hide of Land for the Payment of the Dowry of *Blanche* of *Castile*, it was not submitted to without much

Discontent, and great Murmuring among the People, who could not conceive what *England* had to do with the Dowry of a *Spanish* Princess, to be married to a Prince of *France*. Soon after the Levying of this Tax, the King was crowned a second Time, together with his new Queen.

Not long after, King *John* had an Interview with the King of *Scotland* at *Lincoln*, and received his Homage; but whether for the whole Kingdom of *Scotland* or not, is uncertain. Whilst they were there, the Body of *Hugh* Bishop of *Lincoln*, reputed a Saint, being brought from *London* to be interred, they both went out to meet it, and taking the Coffin on their Shoulders, bore it for some Time. But notwithstanding this and other Marks of Respect shewn to the Clergy, King *John's* Nomination of a Person to the vacant See of *Lincoln* was rejected with the utmost Contempt by the Canons of that Church; which was owing to *Innocent III.* the then Pope's resolving by all Methods to prevent Princes having any Thing to do with the Election of Bishops and Abbots. It was owing to the same Pope's Schemes for wresting out of the Hands of Princes all Manner of Jurisdiction over the Church, that *Hubert* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, tho' before a great Stickler for *John*, convened a Synod without the King's Leave, and continued it sitting notwithstanding his express Prohibition. This, and the Archbishop's endeavouring to vie with the King in Magnificence, was a great Mortification to him; but his Dread of the Clergy made him shew his Repentment no farther than by causing himself to be crowned a third Time at *Canterbury*, purely to put the Archbishop to an extraordinary Expence.

The King's ill Government at home, as well as the bad Manage-

ment of his Affairs abroad, caused great Discontents among his Subjects. He usurped such an absolute Power, as made them apprehensive that their Liberties were in Danger. This alarmed the Nobility, and put them upon forming Schemes to oppose his arbitrary Proceedings. Their Disgust first shewed itself on the following Occasion. The *Poitevins* having revolted, the King summoned the Barons to attend him at *Portsmouth*, in order to pass over with him into *France*. But the Barons, who assembled at *Leicester*, refused to go over with him, unless he would first restore them to their Privileges, as he had promised before his Coronation. The King, instead of giving them any Satisfaction, began to take violent Measures against them, and they not being sufficiently prepared for their Defence, at last submitted, and came to the King at *Portsmouth*; but when they were come, he dispensed with their Attendance, upon their paying him two Marks of Silver for every Knight's Fee. However, this Discontent of the Barons, which was every Day increased by the King's ill Conduct, broke out at last into a furious and bloody Civil War.

*John* having sent the Earl of *Pembroke* with some Troops into *Normandy*, in a little Time went thither himself, and shortly after had an Interview with the King of *France*, who treated him with all the Marks of Respect and Friendship. And at the same Time the late Treaty between them was renewed and confirmed. But all this was designed to draw *John* into a Snare, for *Philip* was all this while contriving how to strip him of his Dominions in *France*, and made use of the Earl of *March*, whom *John* had injured by his late Marriage, as an Instrument to pave the Way to what he intended. The Earl was easily stirred up to Revenge



for the Affront that had been put upon him, and having the Promise of a powerful Assistance from *Philip*, his Resentment soon broke out into Action; in which he was joined by *Arthur*, who was now made to hope, that he should soon recover the Territories his Uncle had deprived him of. And now every Thing being ripe for *Philip* to put his Designs in Execution, he required *John* to deliver up to *Arthur* all the Provinces he held in *France*, and demanded Satisfaction for the Earl of *Marche*; and upon his Refusal, summoned him to appear before his Court of Peers; which *John* also refusing to do, *Philip* hereupon invaded *Normandy*, and made himself Master of several Places. And having given his eldest Daughter *Mary* in Marriage to *Arthur*, he sent him with some Troops to head the revolted *Poitteuins*; who being informed that his Grandmother, Queen *Eleanor*, was at *Mirabel* with a small Garrison, marched directly thither, and soon became Master of the Town. But finding it difficult to take the Castle, whither *Eleanor* had retired, with his small Number of Forces, he called in the Earl of *Marche* to his Assistance. King *John* having Intelligence of this, marched with all Expedition to the Relief of the Castle, and coming near them before they had made much Progress in the Siege, they resolved to go and give him Battle, which proved fatal to them. The *Poittevin* Troops were routed at the first Onset, with a terrible Slaughter; and Prince *Arthur*, the Earl of *Marche*, and 200 Knights, were taken Prisoners.

This Victory might have been of great Advantage to *John*, if he had made a right Use of it; but his Management after it, did him so much Harm, and brought such an Odium upon him, that he had much better have been without it. He sent his Nephew *Arthur* to *Falaise*, and there

endeavoured to persuade him to relinquish the King of *France*, and to put himself under his Protection: But *Arthur*, unpractised in Dissimulation, not considering that he was at his Mercy, was so far from seeming to be prevailed upon, that he even upbraided his Uncle with usurping the Crown of *England*, as well as the *French* Provinces, and threatened, that to the last Moment of his Life he would seek all Occasions to be revenged. Upon this, *John* ordered him to be carried to *Roan*, and confined in the *New Tower*; where some say the King ordered his Eyes to be put out, but was disappointed by those who were to execute this cruel Design. However that be, he had not been long at *Roan* but he disappeared on a sudden, and it was never certainly known what became of him; but the general Opinion was, that he was murdered by the Orders of the King his Uncle; which Opinion seems to be but too well founded.

Presently after the Death of *Arthur*, King *John* returned into *England*, and was crowned a fourth Time: And then returning to *Normandy*, he found the Report of *Arthur's* Murder was every where spread to his great Infamy and Disadvantage. Nothing could give the King of *France* a better Pretence for accomplishing all his Designs against him. The *Bretons* complained of the barbarous Murder of their Duke, alledged it must be perpetrated by *John's* own Hands, or at least by his Order, and applied to the King of *France* for Justice. *Philip* represented this Affair in the blackest Colours to his Court of Peers, and *John*, as a Vassal of *France*, was summoned to appear before them and answer to the Charge: Which he not doing at the Day appointed, was adjudged a Traitor, and sentenced to forfeit all his Dominions in *France*, which were

to be re-united to that Monarchy. *Philip* soon took Methods to put this Sentence in Execution. He entered *Normandy* with a powerful Army, and reduced the greatest Part of it, whilst *John* minded nothing but his Pleasures, and was so indolent and slothful, as if he was wholly insensible of his Danger. In fine, what by the Arms of *Philip*, what by his Policy and Intrigues, and what by the unaccountable Negligence and Inactivity of *John*, the whole Province of *Normandy* was re-united to the Crown of *France*, in the Year 1204, after it had been severed from it 320 Years, during the Government of 12 Dukes, of which King *John* was the last. Soon after, *Anjou*, *Touraine*, *Main* and *Poitou*, submitted to the conquering Arms of *Philip*, and nothing was left to *John* but the Duchy of *Guienne*, which *Philip* had no Mind to attack.

The same Year died Queen *Eleanor*, Widow of *Henry II.* and Mother of *John*, having lived to see the Decay of that Monarchy, to which she had annexed so many Provinces.

Before we leave the Affairs of *France*, we must take Notice, that in 1206, King *John* led a considerable Army into *Poitou*, and reduced the greatest Part of that Province. But here again he was out-witted by *Philip*, who finding himself not very well prepared, sued for, and obtained a Truce for two Years.

King *John's* Misfortunes abroad, great as they were, did not give him half the Trouble and Vexation, that an Affair at home occasioned him, which I am now going to relate. *Hubert* Archbishop of *Canterbury* dying in 1205, some of the Monks of *St. Austin* in *Canterbury*, at a private Meeting in the Cathedral, elected *Reginald*, their Sub-Prior, Archbishop in his Room. The King hearing of this was exceedingly offended, but the Monks pacified him by their

Submission. He then recommended to them *John de Gray* Bishop of *Norwich*, who was chosen by the whole Fraternity. The Sub-Prior set out for *Rome* as soon as he was elected to obtain the Pope's Confirmation and after the Bishop of *Norwich* was chose, the Monks sent Deputies to *Rome* to get him confirmed. When the Matter came to be heard, the Pope (*Innocent III.*) annulled both the Elections, and ordered the Deputies of the Monks to chuse for their Archbishop Cardinal *Stephen Langton*, an *Englishman* then at *Rome*. They would have refused, but the Pope threatening them with Excommunication unless they complied, they at last did it with great Reluctance; and the Pope immediately confirmed the Election, and consecrated *Langton* with his own Hands.

Whilst these Things were doing at *Rome*, *John* was making himself more and more unpopular and odious to his Subjects, by violently extorting from them the thirteenth Part of all their Moveables. And when he came to hear of what had been transacted in relation to the See of *Canterbury*, he fell into a most excessive Passion; and imagining it had been the Act of the whole Body, he expelled all the Monks of *St. Austin* from their Monastery, and banished them out of the Kingdom. He wrote a sharp Letter to the Pope, upbraiding him with his unjust Proceedings, and threatening to break off all Inter-course with *Rome*, unless he revoked what he had done. But *Innocent*, bent upon carrying his Point, laid the whole Kingdom under an Interdict; the Effect of which was, that Divine Service ceased in all the Churches, and the Sacraments ceased to be administered, except to Infants and dying Persons; the Church-Yards were shut up, and the Dead buried without any Priest daring to assist at the Funerals. King *John*, to be even with



with the Pope, confiscated the Estates of all the Ecclesiasticks who obeyed the Interdict; and as in those Times, almost every Priest had his Concubine, the King ordered the Concubines to be shut up in Prison, and would not let them out but upon their paying large Fines. And as there were some Priests, who in spite of the Interdict administered the Sacraments, the King took them under his Protection, and ordered the Magistrates to hang on the Spot all that should molest them: Which as soon as the Pope was informed of, he communicated all such as disobeyed the Interdict, or complied with the King's Orders.

Though *John* remained still inflexible, yet he was not without his Fears, as the People generally took Part with the Pope; and therefore for his better Security he raised an Army, under Pretence of making War upon *Scotland*, and caused all his Vassals to renew their Homage to him. The Pope finding that the Interdict, which had been in force above a Year, had not produced the Effect he designed, proceeded to excommunicate the King, though the Sentence was not published till some Time after. In the mean Time *John* led his Army into *Ireland*, against the King of *Connaught*, who had raised some Disturbances there. At *Dublin* he received the Homage of thirty petty Princes; after which having taken the King of *Connaught* Prisoner, an End was put to this Commotion, and the whole Island remained in Obedience to the King; who before his Departure caused the Laws and Customs of *England* to be established in *Ireland*.

The Inflexibility that *John* had hitherto shewn began to make the Pope very uneasy. He knew it would be dangerous to the *Holy See* to drop the Contest, and that possibly it might be as dangerous to carry it any far-

ther, as he was doubtful of the Issue. He therefore sent two Nuncios into *England*, under the Pretence of making Peace between the King and the Clergy; but his Design was only to sift *John*, to know his Disposition and Intentions. The Nuncios managed the Matter so cunningly, that they easily saw how he was farther to be dealt with. He made large Advances towards a Reconciliation, but it was their Business to put it off till the Pope had obtained the utmost he aimed at. They therefore added a Condition, which the King would not, nor indeed could, comply with; which was the Restitution of all that had been taken from the Clergy, and full Satisfaction for their Damages by this Controversy: Upon this the Negotiation broke off, and the Nuncios departed, after having published the Sentence of Excommunication against the King.

And now the Pope plainly perceiving that the King wanted to get rid of this Affair at any Rate, went on boldly to other Measures. He absolved all *John's* Subjects from their Allegiance, solemnly deposed him, and empowered the King of *France* to put the Sentence in Execution, promising him the Remission of all his Sins, together with the Crown of *England*, as soon as he should have dethroned the Tyrant. *Philip* accepted of the Pope's Commission, and made great Preparations to invade *England*. In this Crisis *Pandolph*, one of the two Nuncios above-mentioned, came over with the Character of Legate for *England*; who so wrought upon the King's Fears, which he had already conceived from *Philip's* formidable Preparations, and the Disaffection of his own Subjects; that he was at last induced to purchase a Reconciliation with the Pope, even at the Price of his Crown, as nothing short of this would satisfy the haughty and ambi-

bitious Pontiff. Accordingly, before a numerous Assembly of his Officers and great Men, in *Dover Church*, he took the Crown from his Head, and laid it, with the Scepter, at the Legate's Feet, and then signed a *Charter*, wherein he resigned for himself and Successors, the Kingdom of *England*, and Lordship of *Ireland*, to the Pope, and acknowledged himself a Vassal of the *Holy See*. Which done, he did Homage to the Pope in the Person of the Legate, who kept the Crown and Scepter five Days, and then returned them to *John*, to hold them from thenceforward of the Pope; whilst all People were shocked at the shameful Condescension of the King, and the intolerable Pride of the *Roman Pontiff*. This was in the Year 1213. The Pope's Business in *England* being done, *Pandulph*, in his Return through *France*, forbade *Philip* in the Pope's Name to proceed in his Expedition; but he was so far from complying, that he endeavoured to get his chief Lords and the Princes his Vassals to join with him in it. They all seemed inclined to do so, except the Earl of *Flanders*, who boldly opposed his Design. *Philip* resolving first to humble him, ordered his Fleet to the Coast of *Flanders*, and marched with his Army to attack the Earl by Land; who had in all Likelihood been subdued, if *John* had not sent his Fleet to his Aid, under the Command of the Earl of *Salisbury*, who surprized and totally destroyed the *French Fleet*; which Disaster put a stop to *Philip's* Designs against *England*.

This great Success roused the Courage of *John*, and made him resolve to carry the War into *France*. In order to this he summoned the Barons to attend him thither; but their Discontents being now grown to a great Height, and ready to break out into Action, they per-

emptorily refused to do it; and *John*, after having received Absolution from the Hands of Cardinal *Langton*, was making Preparations to chastise them for their Obstinacy. But herein he was vigorously opposed by the Cardinal, who told him he would excommunicate all those who should take up Arms before the Interdict was removed: And siding wholly with the Barons, he shewed them the *Charter* of King *Henry I.* advising them to make it the Ground of their Demands. Hereupon they entered into a Confederacy to stand by one another, till their Grievances were redressed, and their antient Privileges restored. *John*, in this dangerous State of his Affairs, thought the best Course he could take was to obtain the Protection of the Pope. In order to this, he made a second solemn Resignation of his Crown to his Holiness in the Person of Cardinal *Nicholas* the Legate; upon which the Interdict was taken off. And now the King passed over into *France*, reduced *Poitou*, and entered *Anjou*, whilst the King of *France* was engaged in the *Low-Countries* against the Emperor and the Earl of *Flanders*. But *Lewis* the French King's Son soon raised an Army to make Head against this Invasion, and *John* resolved to march and give him Battle; but the *Poitevins* refusing to follow him, and News being brought, that *Philip* had obtained a great Victory in *Flanders*, he not only dropt his Design of attacking Prince *Lewis*, but abandoning the Siege of *La Roche*, retreated with some Precipitation; and soon after, by the Mediation of the Pope's Legate, he demanded and obtained a Truce for five Years.

The Barons, who still had their main Point in View, resolved immediately upon the King's Return, to demand the Re-establishment of their Liberties. The *Normans*, when they



they found themselves thoroughly settled in the Kingdom, being apprehensive that the same Power which gave them their Possessions, might, whenever it pleased, deprive them of them again, were become entirely *English*, and had taken every favourable Opportunity that offered to get the *Saxon* Laws, commonly called the Laws of King *Edward*, restored, and they thought this the most promising Juncture, when they had a King, whose Tyranny, Imprudence and Cowardice, had quite alienated the Affections of the greatest Part of his Subjects. The Barons therefore having prepared themselves for War, in case the King should refuse to comply with their Demands in a peaceable Way, came in a Body to the King about *Christmas*, and insisted on the Restitution of the Laws of *St. Edward*. The King knowing how well they were provided, was afraid to give them a flat Denial, but told them they should have his Answer at *Easter*. At which Time, in the Year 1215, the Great Men, with above 2000 Knights, well mounted and armed, besides other Horse and Foot, met at *Stamford*, and advanced to meet the King at *Oxford*; who being afraid to trust himself with them in Conference, dispatched the Earl of *Pembroke* to know their Demands. They immediately sent back a long Writing, containing the Laws and Customs of the Kingdom in the Times of the *Saxons*, and declared, if the King would not confirm them, they would compel him to it by seizing his Castles. *John* having read over the Articles, fell into a violent Passion, and swore he would never comply with them. Upon which the Barons chose a General, *Robert Fitzwalter*, giving him the Title of *Marshal of the Army of God, and of Holy Church*, besieged the Castle of *Northampton*, and had that of *Bedford* delivered up

to them; and marching to *London*, were received by the Citizens, and besieged the King in the *Tower*. They also sent Letters to the neutral Barons, and those of the King's Party, that if they would not join with them in the common Cause, their Estates should be plundered and their Houses demolished. These vigorous Measures made the King more tractable, so that he sent the Earl of *Pembroke* to let them know he would comply with their Demands. Accordingly both Parties meeting on a Day appointed in a Meadow called *Runnemede*, between *Staines* and *Windfor*, the King seemingly with a good Will, tho' compelled to it by Force, signed two *Charters*, containing all that the Barons desired; the one called the *Charter of Liberties*, or the *Great Charter*, [*Magna Charta*], and the other the *Charter of Forests*, which have ever since been looked upon as the Basis of the *English* Liberties. They were not only signed by the King, but by all the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, sealed with the Great Seal, and confirmed by the King's solemn Oath.

How firmly soever the King had bound himself to observe the *Charters*, he soon repented of having signed them, and under the utmost Vexation, studied all Methods to free himself from this Restraint, and to be revenged on the Barons. His Rage and Resentment at last put him upon raising an Army of Foreigners, and bringing them over to *England*. As he had no Money to pay them, he sent over some of his Confidants into *France*, *Germany* and *Flanders*, to promise that whoever should list in his Service, they should have the confiscated Estates of his rebellious Barons, as he called them. Whilst this Affair was transacting, he retired to the *Isle of Wight*, and there kept himself concealed, till he should know the Success of his Project.

People jok'd at this Retirement, but none were able to penetrate into the King's Design. He also writ to the Pope, who zealously espous'd his Cause, excommunicated the Barons, annull'd the *Charters*, and absolv'd the King from the Oath he had taken to observe them. But the Barons made light of the Pope's Thundrings, and perceiving the King's ill Designs, seiz'd upon *Rocheſter*, where was a vast Quantity of Provisions which the King had laid up. But the foreign Army being arriv'd, who were very numerous, all Soldiers of Fortune, *John* retook *Rocheſter*; and then dividing his Army into two Bodies, the Earl of *Salisbury* with one ravag'd the *Southern* Counties, whilst the King with the other did the same by the *Northern*; and numberless Outrages and Cruelties were committed by these foreign Troops on this Occasion.

The Barons were exceedingly alarmed at this sudden Turn of Affairs, and finding themselves not strong enough to take the Field, kept themselves shut up in *London*; whilst *John's* Army of Foreigners plundered their Estates, and committed all Manner of Devastations. In this Distress they had recourse to a dangerous Expedient; which was to invite over *Lewis*, Son to the King of *France*, promising to place the Crown on his Head, if he would come with a Force sufficient to rescue them from the Tyranny of King *John*. *Philip* being pleas'd with this Invitation, sent over his Son, with a numerous Army, notwithstanding the Pope's Prohibition, and his threatening Prince *Lewis* with Excommunication the Moment he set Foot on *English* Ground. That Prince landed the 21st of *May*, 1216; and soon made himself Master of *Rocheſter* and the whole County of *Kent*, except *Dover-Castle*, which *Hubert de Burgh* valiantly defended for the

King. From *Rocheſter*, *Lewis* march'd to *London*, where the Barons and Citizens took the Oath of Allegiance to him. From this Time he acted in every Thing as Sovereign, tho' it does not appear that he was ever crown'd. Soon after, he became Master of the *Southern* Counties, and in short, of the best Part of *England*. And *Alexander I*, King of *Scotland*, came, pursuant to *Lewis's* Summons, and did Homage to him in Person, for the Lands he held of the Crown of *England*.

In the mean Time, *John* was in perpetual Motion, marching from Place to Place, and by all Means avoided coming to a Battle. He thought himself safest in *Norfolk*, and at first fix'd upon *Lynn* as a Place of Security for his Crown, Scepter, and other Treasures: But soon fearing they were not safe there, he resolv'd to remove them to some other Place; and in his Passage over the Washes between *Norfolk* and *Lincolnshire*, had like to have been drown'd with his whole Army; and actually lost all his rich Baggage. His Grief for this, and his other Vexations, threw him into a Fever, which was said to be heighten'd by his eating of Peaches. However this be, the Distemper increasing, carried him off at *Newark*, on the 18th of *October*, 1216, in the 51st Year of his Age, and 18th of his Reign. He was buried in the Cathedral of *Worcester*, where his Tomb is still to be seen. In his Reign, in 1208, the Citizens of *London* had Authority given them to elect themselves a Mayor, annually, and also to chuse a Common Council.

The Monks in giving the Character of this Prince have blacken'd him to a very high Degree, representing him as having neither Faith, Religion, Conscience or Honour; but these Writers must be read with Caution, whenever they give the Characters



acters of Princes who have had any Contest with the Pope. However, if we form a Judgment from his Actions, we must allow that he was, upon the whole, a bad King. He was rash, furious, hot-headed, voluptuous, cruel, arbitrary, and almost wholly governed by his Passions. He was generally hated by his Subjects, especially in the latter Part of his Reign. His Fortune never suited with his Temper, which made him very unhappy: He loved Ease and Quiet, and yet was continually in Action. He was insolent in Prosperity, and dejected and mean-spirited in Adversity; and the Crown,

which he so ambitiously fought after, instead of making him happy, made him truly miserable. He had two Sons and three Daughters, all by *Isabella of Angoulesne*; and six natural Children.

In this Reign, *Constantinople* was taken by the *French* and *Venetians*, and the *Crusade* against the *Albigenses* was set on foot, which gave Rise to the horrid Court of *Inquisition*.

*Gervase*, a Monk of *Canterbury*, *Roger de Hoveden*, *Ralph de Diceto* Dean of *London*, and *Walter* a Monk of *Coventry*, *English* Historians, lived about this Time.



*T. Kitchin sc.*



T. Kitchen sc.

## HENRY III. 1216-1272.

1216.

**H**ENRY, the eldest Son of King John, called *Henry of Winchester*, because born there, was but in the tenth Year of his Age when his Father died; and considering the State of the Kingdom at that Time, a foreign Prince with a powerful Army having made such a great Progress towards subduing the Nation to his Obedience, and almost all the Nobility being in League with him, and having owned him for their Sovereign, it was a Wonder that the Crown should be secured to so young a Prince as *Henry*. But this was principally owing to the Address and Resolution of the brave *William Marshal* Earl of *Pembroke*, who, as he had been all along a faithful Servant to King John, proved himself to be no less so to his Son. As difficult as the present Conjuncture was, there were some Things indeed, which encouraged him to hope for Success in his Project of placing the young Prince on the Throne. He knew, that the

Barons, who had called Prince *Lewis* to their Aid, must in Time be sensible, that they had taken a desperate Course, and that the Remedy they made use of was worse than the Disease, since it would in the End reduce the Nation to a shameful Servitude; and that therefore it was probable they would be willing to desert the Prince of *France*, could they be sure of a Pardon from *Henry*. He farther knew, that they were already disgusted at *Lewis's* bestowing all his Favours upon *Frenchmen*, and that they were apprehensive, that when he had carried his Point, he designed to banish them and confiscate their Estates, and place Foreigners in their Room; which had induced forty of them privately to make their Submission to the old King. Under these Circumstances as soon as *John* was dead, the Earl of *Pembroke* convened the Lords who had constantly adhered to that Prince and presenting young *Henry* to them said, *Behold your King*; and then making



making a pathetick Speech to them, which was applauded by the whole Assembly, they unanimously cry'd out, *Henry shall be our King*. Upon this a Day was immediately appointed for his Coronation, which was accordingly perform'd at *Gloucester*, on the 28th of *October*. After which, he did Homage to the *Holy See*, in the Person of *Gallo* the Pope's Legate; which it was not expedient then to oppose, as the Legate most zealously espoused *Henry's* Interest, and as the Assistance of the Pope was of great Importance to him at that Time.


After the Coronation, the Lords chose the Earl of *Pembroke* Guardian to the young King, and Regent of the Kingdom; who forthwith sent Letters to all the Barons and Corporations, informing them of *Henry's* Accession, and promising great Rewards to all that would return to their Duty. This made many of the confederate Barons begin to think of making their Peace with the new King; towards which, the *Excommunication* of Prince *Lewis*, which was publish'd every *Sunday*, and renewed by the Legate, with all the accustomed Formalities, in a Synod at *Bristol*, contributed not a little; as also his being oblig'd to raise the Siege of *Dover*, which he could neither take by Force, nor prevail on *Hubert de Burg* by Bribes, and threatening to put his Brother to Death, whom he had in his Hands, to deliver up. However, he took *Hertford-Castle*, and several other Places, and then return'd to *London*.

Towards *Christmas*, the two Parties agreed upon a Truce during the *Holidays*, which was afterwards prolong'd till a Month after *Easter*. In the mean Time *Lewis* went over to *France* for fresh Forces; and in his Absence many of the Barons quitted his Party, and made their Peace with the King; among the rest, *William*

*Marshal*, eldest Son to the Earl of *Pembroke*, one of the most zealous of *Lewis's* Partisans. The *Cinque Ports* also declared for *Henry*, and sent out a Fleet to oppose *Lewis's* Return. It fought the *French Fleet*, but could not hinder his Landing at *Sandwich*, which he in Resentment, as being one of the *Cinque Ports*, immediately reduc'd to *Athes*.

When the Truce was expir'd, the Regent sent the Earl of *Chester* to besiege *Mount-Sorrel* in *Leicestershire*: But the Earl of *Perche*, being order'd by *Lewis* to march directly towards him with a much superior Force, oblig'd him to raise the Siege; and flush'd with this Success went to besiege *Lincoln Castle*, which held out for the King, tho' the City had all along sided with the Confederate Barons. This Castle being of great Importance, the Regent drew all his Forces together, and march'd with great Expedition to its Relief. And here a great Battle ensued on the 19th of *May*, 1217, in which the *French Army* was totally routed, and the Earl of *Perche* slain. The City of *Lincoln* was deliver'd up to be plunder'd by the Soldiers, who found so vast and rich a Booty, that they call'd it *Lincoln Fair*.

*Lewis*, who was again besieging *Dover Castle*, but with no greater Success than before, as soon as he heard of the Defeat at *Lincoln*, retired to *London*, and sent to *Philip* his Father for speedy Succours. *Philip*, in order to keep fair with the Pope, would not concern himself publicly in the Affair; but ordered it so, that *Blanche*, *Lewis's* Consort, got ready a Body of Troops, with Ships to transport them to *England*. As they were coming over, they were met by the Fleet of the *Cinque-Ports*, towards the End of *August*, which took and destroyed the greatest Part of the *French Fleet*. What contributed most to this Success of the

 the *English*, was their having great Quantities of Quick-Lime, which being thrown into the Air, was carried by the Wind directly into the *Frenchmen's* Faces, and blinded them.

The great Blow at *Lincoln*, and this of the Fleet, and his being now blocked up in *London*, made *Lewis* sue for Peace. And so a Treaty was concluded on *Sept. 11*; whereby it was agreed, that all who had sided with him should be restored to whatever Rights and Privileges they enjoyed before the Troubles; and *Lewis* renounced all Manner of Pretensions to *England*: Soon after which he set sail for *France*, leaving *Henry* in full Possession of the Kingdom.

After Prince *Lewis's* Departure, the King made his solemn Entry into *London*, and was received with great Joy by the People, as he took an Oath to maintain the Nation in their Privileges. Soon after, the King of *Scotland* did Homage to him for the Lands he held in *England*, and deliver'd up *Carlisle*, which he had taken during the late Confusions.

Thus King *Henry* was firmly settled on the Throne by the prudent Management of the Regent. That wise Minister met indeed with some Trouble from some of those Lords, to whom King *John* had given the Estates of the Confederate Barons, and who could not easily be brought to restore them to the old Proprietors, according to the late Treaty. But the Regent having by Force reduced one of them to Reason, who held out a Siege of eight Days, the rest soon submitted. And it certainly shewed great Wisdom in the Regent, to see that the Treaty should be fully executed, as it had so manifest a Tendency to the future Quiet of the Nation.

Affairs being thus happily settled, the Regent, to give a farther Satisfaction to the Minds of the People,

sent positive Orders to all the Sheriffs to see the two *Charters* of King *John* punctually observed; which not having all the Effect he intended, he sent itinerant Justices into all the Counties, to see to the strict Observance of them. But whilst this great Man was thus wisely pursuing the true Interest of his Sovereign and Good of the People, he was, to the great Grief of the Nation, taken off by Death in the Year 1219. Happy had it been for the King and Kingdom, if those who succeeded him had followed his wise Measures of Government: But they took the quite contrary Course, which involved both in the utmost Confusion and Distraction.

After the Death of the Earl of *Pembroke*, the Government, during the King's Minority, was committed to the Bishop of *Winchester*, who was made Regent, and *Hubert de Burg*, who had defended *Dover*, and was made Chief Justiciary. Soon after, the King was crowned again, with more Pomp and Solemnity than the Circumstances of the Time would at first permit. In 1221, the new Building of *Westminster Abbey* was begun, King *Henry* himself laying the first Stone. The same Year *Joanna* the King's Sister was married to *Alexander II.* King of *Scotland*; and *Hubert de Burg* married *Alexander's* eldest Sister.

The new Ministers at first seemed to have the Good of the Kingdom at heart, but they soon discovered that they were for governing by other Maxims than those of the late Regent. *Hubert de Burg* got the Ascendency with his Master over the Bishop of *Winchester*, and so insinuated himself into the Royal Favour, that he rose to an exorbitant Degree of Power, which he exercised in a most illegal and arbitrary Manner. Tho' he was, in Effect, Prime Minister, yet as the Bishop of *Winchester*, who



who was appointed Regent by the Parliament, was by his Office superior to him, he contrived to get him removed. In order to this, he obtained a Bull from the Pope, in 1223, whereby the King was declared of full Age, and no longer obliged to make use of a Regent; and all who had the Custody of the King's Castles were enjoined to surrender them to the King. But this being contrary to the Laws of the Realm, whereby the King was not to be of Age till one-and-twenty, the Barons refused to comply with it. Upon which *Hubert* had recourse to this Artifice: He got the King to demand of him the *Tower of London* and *Dover-Castle*, of which he had the Custody; which he surrendered on Condition the other Barons would do the same: Several of them, not perceiving the Trick, followed his Example; and then the King restored to *Hubert* the Castles he had given up, purely to draw the Barons into the Snare; which gave them a mean Opinion of the King, and a very bad one of the Favourite. Those who were not imposed upon by this Artifice, he threatened with Excommunication, unless they complied; by which some were frightened into a Surrender of their Castles, but others were determined not to comply with these insidious and arbitrary Measures of the Minister, who was now grown excessively proud and haughty.

*Lewis VIII.* King of *France*, who succeeded his Father *Philip*, broke the Peace with the *English* in 1224, confiscated all the Territories they held in *France*, marched into *Saintonge*, and took several Places, and afterwards besieged *Rochelle*, which in a few Days surrendered to him. His Pretence was, that *Henry*, as Duke of *Guienne*, had not been present at his Coronation; but in Reality, it was because he thought the

Minority of that Prince was a proper Opportunity for him to expel the *English* entirely out of *France*. Upon this a Parliament was called, and the King demanded of them a Fifteenth upon Moveables; which they granted, on Condition the *Charters* of King *John* were strictly observed for the future. The King's Circumstances made him promise this should be done, tho' afterwards he shew'd little Regard for his Word. With the Money thus granted he raised an Army, and sent it into *Guienne*, under the Command of his Brother, Prince *Richard*, whom he made Earl of *Cornwall*; but we don't find that he made any great Progress there.

In 1226, the Parliament declar'd the King of Age, tho' he was not yet so old as the Law required. After which, the first Thing he did was a great Act of Injustice: For he obliged all those who had *Charters* to renew them, in order to raise Money to fill his Coffers. In this, and every Thing else, he was wholly governed by *Hubert de Burg*, who representing to him, that if he kept the Bishop of *Winchester* near him, he would be still looked upon as under a Regent, that Prelate was hereupon dismissed and sent to his Diocese. And now *Hubert* being without a Rival, and having a perfect Sway over his Master, began to set himself above the Laws, making the King believe that his only Design was to render him absolute; which *Henry*, a weak and capricious Prince, was of himself but too much inclined to. From this Disposition of the King, and the pernicious Influence and Advice of such a Minister, what could *England* expect but numberless Exactions and Oppressions? Of which many Instances soon appeared, which tended to alienate the People's Affections from their Sovereign. But what most of all contributed to this, was the King's annulling, all on a sudden, the two *Charters*,

*Charters* of the King his Father, which he had solemnly sworn to observe, pretending he was not bound by what he had promised in his Minority. *Hubert* was so far from regarding the Murmurs of the People on this Occasion, that he caused himself to be created Earl of *Kent*, as a Reward for the great Service he had done his Master. The Barons were so disgusted at these Proceedings, that soon after the Earl of *Pembroke*, with a great many other Earls and Barons, entered into a Confederacy with Prince *Richard* (whom the King his Brother had offended) and took up Arms to compel the King to restore the *Charters*. But *Hubert* having cunningly brought about a Reconciliation between the King and his Brother, the Confederacy was broke for the present.

*Henry*, about this Time, neglected a very favourable Opportunity of retrieving the Affairs of the *English* in *France*. *Lewis IX.* succeeding his Father *Lewis VIII.* under the Regency of *Blanche* his Mother, the *French* Barons being uneasy under her Government, entered into a League against her. The *Normans* sided with them, and sent *Henry* Word, that if he would come over, they would unanimously receive him, and put him in Possession of that Province. The *Poitevins* and *Gasccons* also pressed him to lay hold of the present Juncture, to drive the *French* out of the Places they held in those Provinces. But 'twas all to no Purpose: He by the Advice of his Favourite sent them an Answer, that he would wait for a more convenient Opportunity, whereas a better could never have offered. When this Advantage was at an End, by Matters being accommodated between the *French* Lords and the Queen-Regent, then *Henry* all on a sudden was very hot upon recovering by Arms the Provinces the *Eng-*

*lish* had lost. He made great Preparations, and summoned all his Vassals to meet him at *Portsmouth*, and assembled a very gallant Army. But when they came to be embarked, there were not Ships enough to transport them; and so the Design came to nothing. The King fell into such a Passion at this Disappointment, that he called *Hubert de Burg*, *Old Traitor*, and would have killed him, if the Earl of *Chester* had not interposed, charging him with being bribed by the *French* Court to frustrate his Design. But the cunning Minister, knowing the King's weak Side, found the Means to get into Favour again.

The King having spent the Winter in extorting great Sums of Money from his Subjects, the Spring following, 1229, went over with his Army into *France*. And here, tho' upon his landing at *St. Maloes*, Circumstances appeared again in his Favour, the Duke of *Bretaign* putting into his Hands all his strong Towns and Castles, the Difference between the Queen-Regent and the Malcontents breaking out again, and the *Normans* pressing him to march forthwith into their Country; yet *Henry* scandalously neglected all these Advantages, spent his Time in a trifling Manner, gave the Queen-Regent Opportunity of making up Matters with her Barons, and upon the Approach of her Army, shamefully returned into *England*. 'Tis said, he was inclin'd to march into *Normandy*, but was dissuaded from it by *Hubert de Burg*.

In 1232, the King demanded a Subsidy of the Parliament, for the Payment of his Debts contracted on Account of his Expedition against *France*; but had the Mortification to be refused, as so ill a Use had been made of the Money that had been granted him.




Things being so ill managed both Abroad and at Home, by the pernicious Counsels of *Hubert de Burg*, ever since it was perceived that the King was capable of entertaining Suspensions against him, his Enemies did not cease to meditate his Down-fall. In order to this, they prevailed on the King to re-admit the Bishop of *Winchester*, (*Hubert's* mortal Enemy) to his Presence and Councils ; who no sooner had the King's Ear, but he set himself with all his Might to pull down his Rival, and managed Matters so, that *Hubert* was turned out of his Office of Chief Justiciary, and *Segrave*, a Confident of the Bishop's, put in his Room. Nor did it end here : The King commanded *Hubert* to give an Account of all the Money that had passed thro' his Hands, and ordered him to be prosecuted for several Crimes. Instead of appearing and answering to his Summons, *Hubert* thought fit to take Sanctuary in the Priory of *Merton*. Upon which the King was so enraged, that he ordered the Mayor of *London* to go and force him from it, and bring him dead or alive. The Citizens of *London*, who had a mortal Hatred against *Hubert*, for some severe Proceedings against them, were forward enough to execute this Order ; but the ill Consequences that might attend such a violent Measure, being represented to the King, he countermanded it. However, *Hubert* coming out of his Sanctuary to visit his Wife at *St. Edmundsbury*, the King ordered him to be pursued by some Soldiers, who dragged him from a Chapel at *Brentwood*, where he had taken Sanctuary, and brought him to the Tower of *London*, with his Feet chained under his Horse's Belly. But the Clergy made such a Clamour against this Violation of the Church's Privileges (as all Churches, and their Appendages, were Sanctuaries in

these Days) that the King was fain to send him back to the Chapel again ; ordering however the Sheriff, on Pain of being hanged, to guard it so strictly, that he might neither escape, nor have any Sustainance given him. Reduced to this Extremity, *Hubert* surrendered himself to the Sheriff, who conveyed him in Irons to the Tower, amidst the insulting Shouts of the People. Matters being carried thus far, the King, who was of a fickle Temper, and never continued long in the same Mind, relented all on a sudden ; and so the Affair ended in sending *Hubert* to the Castle of the *Devises*, till the King should otherwise dispose of him : Which was a great Disappointment to the Bishop of *Winchester*, who hoped he would not come off with his Head.

The Bishop, however, was now Prime Minister, and by humouring the Passions and Inclinations of the King, acquired an exorbitant Power, which he made a worse Use of, than even *Hubert de Burg* himself. He did all he could to alienate the King's Affections from his Subjects, representing the Barons as too powerful, turbulent, and aspiring, and that they wanted to make themselves independent ; and therefore, that the only Way to repress their Insolence, was to send for a Number of Foreigners, and give them the Posts and Places which the Barons held. This pernicious Advice being agreeable to the arbitrary Disposition of the King, in a short Time great Numbers of *Gascons*, or *Poitervins* arrived, which the Bishop of *Winchester*, their Countryman, and *Peter de Rivaulx* his Son, who passed for his Nephew, invited over. These were promoted to the chief Posts in the Government, and had the Wardship of the young Nobility committed to them. The Barons were exasperated at these Proceedings, and

*Richard*

*Richard* Earl of *Pembroke*, Brother to the late Earl, took the Liberty to remonstrate to the King, in strong Terms against them. But the Bishop gave him so haughty and insolent an Answer, telling him, among other Things, that if the Foreigners already in the Kingdom were not enough to reduce the King's rebellious Subjects to Obedience, more should be sent for over; that the Barons from this Time began to withdraw from Court, and to enter into a League, in order to put a Stop to these arbitrary and despotick Measures.

Not long after, the King having called a Parliament, the Barons instead of meeting according to the Summons, sent Deputies to him, to acquaint him, that if he did not remove the Bishop of *Winchester* and the *Poitevins*, they were resolved to  set another Prince on the Throne, who should govern according to Law. This furnished that bold and desperate Minister with a Handle for putting the King upon violent Measures, even so far as to reduce those, who refused to submit, by Force of Arms. He summoned all the Vassals of the Crown to meet him with their Troops at *Gloucester*. The Earl of *Pembroke* and some others refused to appear. Upon which the King ordered their Estates to be plundered, and their Houses to be pillaged. If the Barons had held together, he would scarce have ventured to have taken such a Step: But some of them having broken the Confederacy, left the rest to his Resentment. The Earl of *Pembroke* retired into *Wales*, where Prince *Llewellyn* granted him Protection and Assistance. The King marched against him, but the Earl surprized and routed the Royal Army: Upon which *Henry* retired to *Gloucester*, and thinking himself not safe there, went and shut himself up in *Winchester*; the Earl still making

considerable Progress, burning the Town of *Shrewsbury*, and ravaging the Lands of the Courtiers on the Borders of *Wales*.

But the Minister accomplished that by Treachery; which the King could not do by Force. As the Council consisted of none but his Creatures; he sent an Order to the Governors in *Ireland*, signed by twelve Privy Counsellors, to plunder the Estates of the Earl of *Pembroke* in that Country, on Purpose to draw him over thither, promising they should have those Estates for their Pains. He also sent over a *Charter* for that Purpose, which he artfully got the King to sign among other Papers of little Importance, and then had the Seal affixed to it, either by the Connivance of the Chancellor, or, as *M. Paris* says, they stole the Seal from him. Upon receiving this *Charter*, the *Irish* Governors set about executing the Order; they levied an Army, and ravaged the Earl's Lands, which drew him over to *Ireland*, to revenge himself on these Aggressors, as the Bishop of *Winchester* designed it should. And being there, he was basely betrayed by some pretended Friends, who engaged him in a Battle, in which he was killed by a Stab in his Back with a Dagger.

The Bishop's Power did not continue long, after this vile Piece of Treachery, and Abuse of his Master's Authority. The Archbishop of *Canterbury* made such Representations to the King, of the ill Consequences, both to himself and the Nation, of his keeping so odious a Minister any longer near him, and how much it would be his Interest to remove him, that his Eyes being at last opened, the Minister was disgraced and sent to his Diocese, and *Rivaulx*, *Seagrave*, and all the rest of his Creatures, turned out. They were also ordered to give an Account of their Actions,



Actions, and of the Money that had passed thro' their Hands; but when the Day came for them to give in their Answers, they, after the Example of *Hubert de Burgh*, took Sanctuary in several Churches, and the Bishop of *Winchester* sheltered himself in his Cathedral. This was in the Year 1234. In 1236 he went to *Rome*, and died in the Year 1238, justly deemed by all one of the chief Authors of the Troubles in this Reign. *Segrave* and *Passalew*, two of the old Ministers, some Time after their Disgrace, made their Peace with the fickle and avaricious King, by a Present of a thousand Marks each, and so were discharged from all farther Prosecutions. Thus wicked Ministers often purchased an Indemnity by the very Money of which they have cheated the Publick, and for which they ought to be severely punished.

In 1236, King *Henry* married *Eleanor*, second Daughter to *Raymond*, Earl of *Provence*. The Marriage was celebrated with great Pomp and Magnificence, but through the Weakness and Imprudence of the King proved unhappy to the Nation. For though he had so lately experienced the ill Effects of his unbounded Favours to Foreigners, yet now he became more impolitic than ever in this Respect, giving himself wholly up to the Direction of the Queen's Relations and other Foreigners their Adherents, loading them with Gifts, Pensions, Places, and Offices, to the great Prejudice and Oppression of his *English* Subjects, and Impoverishment of the Realm; which, together with the Grievances occasioned by this Measure, was the Source of perpetual Disputes and Misunderstandings between the King and his Parliaments for near thirty Years, and ended at last in a Civil War, called the Barons War. We cannot enter into

a Detail of all the Particulars during this long and confused Period, nor indeed would it signify much to do so. Let it suffice therefore to take notice of some principal Events.

Soon after the King's Marriage, *William of Provence*, the Queen's Uncle, came over, and so gained the Affection of the King, that he in effect became sole Minister, and managed every thing as he pleased; at which the *English* Barons were exceedingly disgusted, and the Parliament made heavy Complaints. The King, to quiet them, made a Shew of redressing some Grievances, but still adhered to his Favourite. He had now a Mind to remove the Bishop of *Chichester* from the Chancellorship, in which he had behaved well; but it is remarkable, that he refused to resign it, alledging, that the Parliament had intrusted him with that Office, and therefore he could not lay it down, but by the same Authority.

Whenever *Henry* promised to redress Grievances, it was all a Pretence, to bring about his own Ends, and obtain Money from the Parliament; which when he had succeeded in, he always returned to his old Courses, and governed as bad or worse than ever. And now, as if he had a Mind to affront his Subjects in the highest Degree, he recalled to Court the two hated Ministers, *Segrave* and *Rivaux*, and again made them his Favourites and Confidants. Soon after which, by Virtue of a Bull from the Pope, he would have annulled all the Grants he had made in his Nonage; but the Parliament would not consent to it.

In 1237, the King, in order to obtain another Subsidy from his Parliament, pretended to condemn his former Conduct, and promised no longer to be guided by Foreigners; and got a certain Priest to make a smooth and plausible Harangue for

that Purpose. But this did not prevail on the Barons, who were but too sensible of the King's Insincerity and Dissimulation, and that the large Sums he had already obtained upon many plausible Pretences, had been employed only in enriching Foreigners. However, the King having promised to restore the Charters obtained in the late Reign, and ordered the Curse, formerly denounced by Cardinal *Langton*, against such as should infringe them, to be published in all the Churches; and having added to his Council some Lords that were acceptable to the Barons, the Parliament was at last so far imposed upon as to grant him the Subsidy; but on Condition, that for the future he should reject the Counsels of Foreigners, and that four Knights should be chosen in every County, to collect and secure the Money in some Monastery, in order to be restored to every one again, if the King was not as good as his Word: And yet the Money was no sooner raised, but the King seized it, and made the same bad Use of it as formerly, and continued his Foreigners in his Council as much as ever. Upon which Prince *Richard* his Brother earnestly expostulated with him, but to no Purpose.

The Earldom of *Chester* was the same Year annexed to the Crown, upon the last Earl's dying without Issue.

In 1239, the Queen was delivered of a Prince, who was named *Edward*, and succeeding his Father, proved a great and famous King.

When the Parliament, who had been so often deceived by the King, refused to grant him any Subsidies, he raised Money upon the People by Loans and other illegal Methods. The *Jews* were always great Sufferers in this Respect, from whom he extorted large Sums upon every Occasion.

Whilst the King was thus oppressing the rest of his Subjects, the Clergy were no less exposed to the Oppressions of the Pope. Each sided with the other in his Exactions and Extortions, and they both, as it were, went Hand in Hand together in draining and ruining the Nation. So that the Court of *Rome* never had a finer Time of it in *England* than in this Reign. In 1240, the Pope nominated no less than three hundred *Italians* to the vacant Benefices.

*Henry*, who was always most extravagantly bent upon conferring Favours on the Queen's Relations, in 1241, got *Boniface* her Brother elected Archbishop of *Canterbury*; thus placing a young Man and a Foreigner at the Head of the *English* Church.

Tho' *France* was in Possession of a great Part of *Poitou*, *Henry* invested his Brother Prince *Richard* with that Earldom; and the King of *France* thinking he had as good a Right, invested *Alphonso* his Brother with the same. This occasioned a new War between the two Crowns, in which *Henry* came off with as little Reputation as usual, and *Lewis* made an entire Conquest of *Poitou*.

The King, who was always wanting Money, and squandering it away when he had it, in 1243, put himself to a greater Expence than he could afford, on account of the Marriage of Prince *Richard* with *Cincia*, the Queen's Sister. 'Tis said the Wedding-Dinner consisted of thirty thousand Dishes.

In 1245, the Queen was delivered of another Son, who was named *Edmund*.

The Court of *Rome* continuing its Exactions, and the Clergy fearing openly to oppose the Pope, the Lay-Barons began to consult how to free the Nation from such grievous Oppressions; and the Parliament, in



1246, in Letters signed by the King, the Bishops, and the Barons, laid before the Pope the following Grievances, demanding Satisfaction therein.

1. That his Holiness, not satisfied with the yearly Payment of *Peter-Pence*, exacted from the Clergy great Contributions. 2. That Patrons had not the Liberty to present fit Persons to the vacant Livings, the Pope conferring them generally on the *Italians*, who carried the Income of their Benefices out of the Kingdom. 3. That the Pope exacted Pensions from the Churches. 4. That when an *Italian* Priest died, his Benefice was presently bestowed on one of the same Nation: And that whereas the *Italians* were invested without Trouble or Expence, the *English* were obliged to go and prosecute their Right at *Rome*. 5. That the Clause *Non obstante*, in the Bulls, entirely destroyed all Laws, Customs, Statutes and Privileges of the Church and Kingdom. But instead of redressing these Grievances, the Pope took Occasion to oppress the Clergy more than ever, and would have laid several new Impositions upon them, if the King had not now a little exerted himself. About this Time died the King's Mother, *Isabella*, Queen Dowager of *England*, and Countess of *March*; for she married the Earl of *March*, her first Lover, after King *John's* Death.

In 1248, the King demanded a new Subsidy from his Parliament. But they, instead of complying with his Will, asked him how he could for Shame expect any such Thing, after having so often broke his Word; and upbraided him with his excessive Bounties to Foreigners, in Prejudice of his native Subjects. Whereupon he prorogued them; and at the next Meeting, being spirited up by his pernicious Foreigners, contrary to his Temper, which was naturally timid, he spoke to them in

very rough and haughty Language: But this only provoking them the more, the Barons told him, that since he did not intend to reform what was amiss, they were not so mad as to impoverish themselves for the sake of Foreigners. And so he dissolved them, for fear of their proceeding to more vigorous Measures: And to supply his Wants, which were purely occasioned by his unbounded Favours to Foreigners, he was forced to sell his Plate and Jewels; which being quickly purchased by the Citizens of *London*, who always pleaded Poverty, when the granting him any Aid was in Question, he in Resentment set up a Fair at *Westminster*, to last fifteen Days, during which the *Londoners* were commanded to shut up their Shops, and all Fairs, that used to be kept at that Time, were prohibited all over *England*.

Another Method *Henry* took to raise Money, was by sending Judges into the several Counties, to make Inquisition of all Trespases committed in the Royal Forests; which Commission was so vigorously executed, that the most trifling Faults were punished by excessive Fines and Confiscations; which procured the King prodigious Sums, but at the same Time, the Hatred of the People.

In 1251, the Clause *Non obstante* began first to be used in the King's Writs or Orders, in Imitation of the Pope; that is, *Notwithstanding any former Order, or any Thing else*: After which it became very common; which occasioned one of the King's Justices to say with a Sigh, *Alas! what Times are we fallen into! The Civil Court is corrupted in Imitation of the Ecclesiastical, and the River is poisoned from that Fountain.*

Whilst King *Henry* was daily giving his Subjects fresh Cause of Complaint, by his arbitrary Proceedings, he impolitickly fell out with *Simon*

*de Montfort*, who had been in great Favour with him, had married his Sister, and was made Earl of *Leicester*. This Nobleman had done him great Service in reducing the rebellious *Gascons* in *Guienne*; but being afterwards accused by them of some oppressive Practices in his Government of that Province, (tho' the true Cause of their Uneasiness was his Vigilance to keep them from revolting again) the weak King gave Ear to his Accusers, and turned his Repentment against the Earl of *Leicester*; who perceiving the Storm, got over Prince *Richard*, the Earl of *Gloucester*, and several other great Lords to his Side, and a Sort of Confederacy was formed in his Favour. The King, who in order (as he thought) to secure the Allegiance of the *Gascons*, was for sacrificing their Governor to their Repentment, seeing that Matters were not likely to go as he would have them, in great Passion called the Earl *Traytor*; upon which he in as great a Passion, told the King *he lied, and that if he were not a King, he would make him eat his Words*: Which, perhaps, is the first Instance of a Subject's giving his Sovereign the Lye to his Face. The King, tho' after this he could not look upon the Earl without Horror, yet perceiving the strong Party that was formed in his Favour, was intimidated, and outwardly reconciled to him, and even sent him again Governor of *Guienne*; but immediately after his Departure, he conferr'd that Province upon Prince *Edward* his eldest Son. Some Time after, the *Gascons* revolted again, and joined with the King of *Castile*, who pretended a Right to *Guienne*. *Henry*, under the Pretence of his engaging in an Expedition to the *Holy-Land*, but in Reality, in order to carry on the War in *Guienne*, obtained a Subsidy from his Parliament, upon his again most solemn-

ly swearing to cause the two Charters of King *John* to be observed; but he soon applied to the Pope to be absolved from his Oath. He went over to *Guienne* in Person, but the Affair was soon made up between the two Kings, by the Marriage of Prince *Edward* with *Eleanor*, the King of *Castile*'s Sister. Upon which the young Prince was not only invested with *Guienne*, but *Ireland*, and the Sovereignty of *Wales*, whose Prince had put himself under *Henry*'s Protection.

As much as *Henry* had distressed himself and the Nation by his unreasonable Humours, as if his Affairs were not already sufficiently involved, his Vanity, Folly, and Imprudence threw him into new Troubles. The Kingdom of *Sicily* being in Dispute between the Pope and *Conradin*, Son of the Emperor *Conrade*, of the House of *Suabia*, and afterwards between the Pope and *Manfred*, *Conrade*'s Bastard-Brother; the Pope finding himself distressed by this War, and not able to carry it on without the Assistance of some other Power, made an Offer of the Crown of *Sicily* to *Henry*, for his second Son *Edmund*, in case he would assist in the Conquest of that Kingdom. *Henry* greedily accepted this imaginary Present, and seemed as well pleased, as if his Son had been in actual Possession of that Crown; and by this Means became the entire Tool and Bubble of the Pope. Money was what the Pontiff wanted, and the King not only sent him all his ready Money, and what he extorted from the *Jews*, and his other Subjects, and was lent him by his Brother Prince *Richard*, but likewise bound himself to pay whatever Sums the Pope should borrow on the Score of the Affair of *Sicily*. And though the Money borrowed under this Pretence was not applied for carrying on the War in *Sicily*, but



but the Pope all the while suffered *Manfred* to remain in the quiet Possession of the Crown, yet the most flagrant, unjust, and scandalous Methods were made use of, by the Court of *Rome*, to extort immense Sums from the *English* Clergy; whilst the King, by the Pope's Assistance, got what he could from his other Subjects, for the Repayment of the Sums borrowed for this Undertaking. By this Means, *Henry* was brought into such Distress, that he at last sent Ambassadors to *Rome* to renounce, in his Son's Name, the imaginary Grant of *Sicily*, which had already cost him so dear, and had consequently raised an universal Discontent in the Nation.

It was now that the Barons began to exert themselves, and to take Measures against the King. The whole Nation had, doubtless, been grievously oppressed: But the great Power and Credit of Foreigners, particularly the Queen's Relations, and the King's Half-Brothers, Sons of the Earl of *March*, by whom he had been a long Time wholly governed, and the immense Riches they enjoyed, was the chief Grievance of the Barons, and the real Cause of their Complaint. Accordingly, in a Parliament held at *Oxford* in 1258, (in which, it is for the first Time observed, there were twelve Barons, as *Deputies*, or *Representatives* of the Commons) the Confederacy was so strong against the King, (the Barons coming well attended and well armed) that they compelled him in effect to lay down the sovereign Authority, and to lodge it in four and twenty Commissioners, twelve to be chosen by the King, and twelve by the Barons. *Simon de Montfort*, Earl of *Leicester*, their President, who drew up the following Articles, which were approved of by the Parliament, called the *Statutes*, *Provisions* or *Expedients* of *Ox-*

*ford*. 1. That the King should confirm the *Great Charter*. 2. That the Office of *Chief Justiciary* should be given to one of fit Capacity and Integrity. 3. That the *Chancellor*, *Treasurer*, *Justices*, and other publick *Ministers*, should be chosen by the *Four and Twenty*. 4. That the King's Castles, and all Strong-Holds, should be in the Custody of the said *Four and Twenty*. 5. That it should be Death for any Person to oppose, directly or indirectly, what should be enacted by them. 6. That the Parliament should meet three Times a Year. The King was obliged to give his Assent to these Articles, and Prince *Edward* likewise was constrained to swear to the Observance of them. Some Opposition was made to them, but the Confederacy was too strong to be overborne. The Consequence was, that the Foreigners were forced to leave the Kingdom, and the Barons entered into an *Association* to stand by the *Oxford Provisions*, with their Lives and Fortunes; in which they were joined by the City of *London*.

Thus this arbitrary and ill-advised Prince, who had all along shewn so little Regard to his Subjects, found himself at once reduced to little more than the Shadow of a Sovereign. But he could not well brook this Restraint, and therefore soon sought Means to free himself from the Yoke of the Barons. A Breach between the Earls of *Leicester* and *Gloucester*, the two Chiefs of the Confederacy, put him in Hopes of succeeding. He accordingly got the Pope to absolve him from his Oath concerning the *Oxford Provisions*; and, in the Parliament assembled at *London* in 1261, he declared he no longer looked upon himself obliged to observe those Regulations, and then retired to the *Tower*, having gained the Governor to his Side. Here he issued out Proclamations, and did

several other Things, against the Acts of the *Four and Twenty*. But the Earls of *Leicester* and *Gloucester* being now reconciled, the King found himself but in an ill Situation. An Accommodation was more than once set on foot, but it came to nothing, partly thro' the Indiscretion of the King, and partly thro' the violent Spirit of some of the Barons. At last having gained to his Side Prince *Richard* his Brother (now King of the *Romans*) and his Son, Prince *Edward*; Henry was more emboldened than ever to oppose the Barons, who were firmly resolved to stand by what had been agreed upon in the Parliament at *Oxford*.

The War accordingly broke out between the two Parties, in 1263, the Barons having chosen the Earl of *Leicester* for their General. They soon became Masters of *Gloucester*, *Hereford*, *Bridgnorth*, *Worcester* and other Places in those Parts; and the City of *London* declared in their Favour. Nevertheless the War remained doubtful, each Side gaining Advantages over the other, till the famous Battle of *Lewes*, which was fought on May 14, 1264; in which the Royal Army was routed, King *Henry* himself, and his Brother the King of the *Romans*, were made Prisoners; and Prince *Edward* (who had beat the *Londoners* in the first Attack) and *Henry*, Son to the King of the *Romans*, were forced to surrender themselves Prisoners to the Barons.

The Earl of *Leicester* having thus got the King in his Hands, disposed of him just as he pleased, and made him sign what Orders he thought fit. And now the Barons drew up a new Plan of Government, which was confirmed by the Parliament, which met on the twenty-second of *June*; previous to which, they made the King sign Commissions, appointing in each County certain Magistrates,

called *Conservators*, who were ordered to send up four *Knights* of each County, nominated or chosen by the Assent of their respective Counties, to sit in the Parliament as Representatives of their several *Shires*: From whence many date the Original of the Commons sitting in Parliament. The Barons Plan, which this Parliament approved of, was, *That the Parliament should appoint Three Commissioners, who should have Power to chuse a Council of Nine Lords, to whom the Administration of the publick Affairs should be committed: That the King might change any of the Nine, or all of them, by the Advice of the Three Commissioners; and might change or turn out the Three, provided it was done by the Consent of the Community of the Barons: And that the Nine should nominate all the publick Officers.*

Thus Things continued for above a Year, whilst the Earl of *Leicester* was at the Head of the Government, and, in Effect, exercised the supreme Authority, in the Name of the King, whom he carried about with him from Place to Place, as he had Occasion to remove with his Army, and made use of the Royal Name for whatever he had a Mind to enforce. He met indeed with some Trouble, from an Insurrection of some Lords in the Counties bordering upon *Wales*, whom he march'd in Person against, and had the good Fortune entirely to vanquish. The great Preparations the Queen was making in *France*, gave him also great Uneasiness; but he was luckily delivered from his Apprehensions on that Occasion by the Fleet, which was to bring over an Army of Foreigners, being detained so long by contrary Winds, that at last the Troops were forced to return home. But what disturbed him most, was that some of the Lords of the Confederacy, particularly the Earl of *Gloucester*, jealous of his aspiring to the



the Crown, began to turn against him. To obviate their Suspicions, he called a Parliament, chiefly, as he pretended, to consult about setting Prince *Edward* at Liberty. 'Tis remarkable, that express Mention is made of two *Knights* being sent to this Parliament, as Representatives for each County, and two *Burgesses* for each City and Borough. The Assertors of the Antiquity of the *House of Commons* infer, that this was before a customary Thing, because the Historians do not remark that it was a new Establishment; whilst their Opponents say, there would have been no Need to take notice of this Particular here, if it had been a usual Thing before. All that this Parliament, which was wholly at *Leicester's* Devotion, did in relation to Prince *Edward*, was, to order that he should be removed from *Dover-Castle*, and remain with the King; which was doing nothing at all, as the King himself was a Prisoner in *Leicester's* Hands.

However, the Prince had, not long after, the good Fortune to make his Escape, and went and put himself at the Head of some Troops, which the Earl of *Gloucester* had raised; which soon increasing to a considerable Army, and even superior to that of the Earl of *Leicester*, he marched in order to attack him. He first cut in Pieces a small Army, which young *Simon de Montfort* was conducting to reinforce his Father; and then advancing immediately against the Earl, he fell upon him near *Evesham*, and in an obstinate and bloody Fight, on *August, 4, 1265*, totally routed *Leicester's* Army, and set the King his Father at Liberty; the Earl himself and his Son *Henry* being slain on the Spot.

King *Henry* no sooner found himself at Liberty, but his Mind was wholly bent upon taking Vengeance on his Enemies; he confiscated the

Estates of the Confederate Barons, and severely chastised the City of *London*. *Simon de Montfort*, eldest Son of the late Earl of *Leicester*, not doubting but he should be one of the first that should suffer, endeavoured to make the King of the *Romans* his Friend, who was in his Custody in *Kennelworth-Castle*, by releasing him without a Ransom, soon after the Battle of *Evesham*. But perceiving the King wholly governed by Passion and Resentment, he quitted the Castle of *Kennelworth*, leaving a strong Garrison in it, and threw himself with some Troops into the *Isle of Axholme*: But Prince *Edward* soon forced them to surrender, on Condition their Lives and Limbs should be spared. *Simon de Montfort* now found so powerful a Mediator in the King of the *Romans*, that King *Henry* not only pardoned him, but would have restored him to Favour, if the Earl of *Gloucester* had not opposed it. However, he had Liberty to depart the Kingdom, and the King was to grant him a yearly Pension, if he delivered up *Kennelworth-Castle*, which now it was not in his Power to do. He soon after joined himself with some Pirates of the Cinque Ports, and plundered all the Merchant-Ships that came in his Way.

There were, after this, several Insurrections, which we need not mention particularly, as they were soon quelled. The Castle of *Kennelworth* held out a long Siege and Blockade, till the Besieged were forced to eat their Horses, and did not surrender till the Year 1267. The Malecontents, who had seized the *Isle of Ely*, were the last who surrendered, which they did soon after those of *Kennelworth*.

The Tranquillity of the Kingdom being thus perfectly restored, Prince *Edward* undertook a Voyage to the *Holy-Land*; where being disappointed of the Reinforcements he expected

from *France* and elsewhere, he could do but little, though he sufficiently shewed the *Saracens* what they might expect from him, if he had had more Forces. He had like to have been assassinated by one of the *Infidels*, who was just going to stab him in the Belly with a Dagger; but the Prince warded off the Blow with his Arm, in which he was dangerously wounded. The Villain was going to strike again; but *Edward* gave him such a Kick on the Breast, that he threw him down backwards, and wresting the Dagger out of his Hand, dispatched him with it. Finding he could make no great Progress in *Palestine*, unsupported as he was, he concluded a Truce with the Sultan for ten Years, ten Months, and ten Days, and set sail for *England* in 1272.

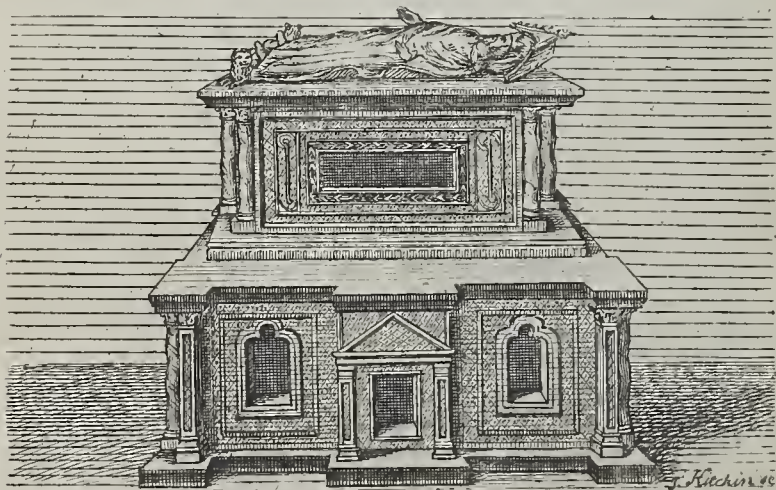
His Father King *Henry* did not live to see him return. He died on Nov. 16. 1272, after a very long Reign of fifty-six Years, and twenty Days, aged sixty-six; and was interred in the Abbey-Church at *Westminster*, near the Shrine of *Edward the Confessor*, which was removed thither in 1269, just as the Church, the most stately then in *Europe*, was finished.

His inconstant, fickle Temper, his narrow Genius, his arbitrary Notions, his Greediness of Money, and lavishly squandering it away on his Favourites, or in ill-concerted Projects, wherein the Good of the Nation was not at all concerned; his being a constant Slave and Tool to the Court of *Rome*, and his little Courage as well as Conduct, appear in all his Actions, during his long confused and distracted Reign. But it must be observed, that to the Struggles in this Reign, the *English* in great Measure owe the Liberties and Privileges they enjoy at this Day. With all his Faults, he may justly be commended for his Continenence, and Aversion to Cruelty, being always satisfied with punishing his rebellious Subjects only in their Purfes.

He had nine Children, whereof only two Sons, *Edward* and *Edmund*, and two Daughters, *Margaret* and *Beatrice*, survived him.

*Matthew Paris*, a Monk of *St. Alban's*, one of the most celebrated Historians of this Kingdom, flourished in this Reign.

Trial by *Fire* and *Water Ordeal* was, by this King's Command, laid aside by the Judges, and soon after grew quite out of Use.



EDWARD





T. Kitchen sculpsit

## EDWARD I. 1272 — 1307

2. **T**HIS Prince, the eldest Son of *Henry III.* was on his Return from the *Holy-Land*, when his Father died. His Absence at that Time might have given Occasion to some Commotions, if the Malcontents of *Leicester's* Party had not been for some Years sufficiently humbled, and if the Nation in general had not had so good an Opinion of Prince *Edward*, that it would have been dangerous to have attempted any Thing to his Prejudice. Accordingly, upon *Henry's* Death, the Barons unanimously swore Fealty to *Edward*, though they had not even heard from him for some Time; and wrote him a very dutiful Letter, inviting him to come and take Possession of the Throne. They then committed the Regency of the Kingdom to three proper Persons whom they made choice of for that Purpose; and the Parliament that met soon after, consisting of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and Knights of the Shires and Burghesses, approved of what had

been done for preserving the Peace of the Kingdom.

In the mean Time *Edward* pursuing his Voyage, arrived in *Sicily*, and at *Messina* first heard of his Father's Death. From hence he set out for *Rome* to visit the new Pope, *Gregory X.* who had attended him in the *Crusade*, in Quality of Legate. After this, he passed through *France*, was honourably received by King *Philip* at *Paris*, and did him Homage for *Guienne*. Then coming to *Bordeaux*, he received the Homage of the Vassals of that Duchy.

Having settled his Affairs in *Guienne*, he came into *England*, and was receiv'd with all Demonstrations of Joy. He was crowned soon after, *August 19. 1274.* with *Eleanor* his Queen, who had attended him in his Expedition; *Alexander III.* King of *Scotland*, the Duke of *Bretaign*, and all the Lords of the Realm, being present at the Solemnity; on which Occasion five hundred Horses were let loose about the Country, for all that could catch them to keep them.

The first Thing King *Edward* did,

did, after his Coronation, was to send Commissioners into all the Counties, to enquire into the *Fiefs* held of the Crown, and to examine into and punish the Misdemeanors of such Magistrates as had abused their Authority in oppressing the People; which gave universal Satisfaction. The Parliament, which sat soon after, in 1275, enacted some good Laws for securing the Liberties of the People, and the Privileges of the Clergy; which were called the *Statutes of Westminster*.

*Edward's* Thoughts had been for some Time bent upon chastising *Llewellyn*, Prince of *Wales*, whose Father and Grandfather had done Homage to *Henry III.* for all that Country. The *Welsh* had made some Struggles to throw off the Yoke, and their present Prince had very much countenanced and encouraged the late Malcontents in *England*. *Edward* had therefore long determined to disable him from doing any more Mischief; but his Voyage to *Palestine*, and the Circumstances of the Times, had hitherto hindered him. A fit Opportunity now offered. The Parliament had summoned *Llewellyn*, before *Edward's* Arrival, to appear and do Homage to the absent King; which he refused. And the King, after his Arrival, summoned him several Times for the same Purpose; but *Llewellyn* always excused himself and would not appear. Hereupon *Edward* resolved to punish him for his Disobedience, declared War against him, and marched with a great Army into his Country, and by cutting a Way thro' a vast Forest, opened a Passage to the Center of *Wales*; and advancing farther, drove the *Welsh* to the Mountain *Snowdon*, their usual Retreat, when pursued by the *English*. His Fleet at the same Time attacked and took the *Isle of Anglesea*. This rapid Progress of *Edward's* Arms, made *Llewellyn* sue

for Peace, which he obtained, but upon very hard Terms; tho' *Edward* afterwards generously relaxed them, being satisfied with his Success, and with having thus mortified his Enemy.

In 1279, the Earldom of *Ponthieu* and *Montrevil* fell to *Edward*, in Right of his Queen, upon the Death of the Queen of *Castile* her Mother. But to obtain the Investiture of this Earldom from the King of *France*, he was forced to renounce all Claim to *Anjou* and *Normandy*, as King *Henry* his Father had done.

The Coin having very much suffered by Clipping and Adulterating, during the late Troubles, and Information being given, that the *Jews* were chiefly concerned in it, the King caused all that were in the Nation to be seized in one Day; and two hundred and eighty of them being convicted of Clipping and Coining, received Sentence of Death, and were executed accordingly.

About this Time, the King proposed, and the Parliament passed a Statute, forbidding all Persons to dispose of their Estates to *Societies*, which never die without the King's Consent. This was called the *Statute of Mortmain*, and was occasioned by the prevailing Practice of Persons alienating their Lands to the Church, insomuch that if a Stop had not been put to it, there was Danger, that all the Lands in *England* would, in Time, come to be in the Hands of the Clergy and *Monasteries*.

The next Year, 1280, (tho' some say several Years after) the *Statute of Quo Warranto* was passed, occasioned by many Persons, during the late Troubles, appropriating to themselves Lands which they had no Right to. It required all those, who were possessed of such contested Estates, to shew how they came by them, and produce their Title before the Judges, to be examined into.

This



This was well intended, but the King, by ill Advice, or thro' the Desire of heaping up Money, began to make a bad Use of it. As many who held Lands of the Crown must have lost their Titles, tho' their Possession was of long Standing, he took Advantage of this Misfortune, and issued a Proclamation for all that held Lands of the Crown to lay their Title before the Judges. The Earl of *Warren* appearing, and being required to shew his Title, whereby he held his Lands, he drew an old rusty Sword out of the Scabbard, and said, '*Twas by this my Ancestors gained their Estate, and by this I will keep it as long as I live.*' This brave and bold Answer opened the King's Eyes, and to his Honour, thinking better of the Matter, he recalled his Proclamation, and put a Stop to this Grievance, which had been loudly complained of.

*Llewellyn* having revolted, at the Instigation of his Brother *David*, committed great Ravages on the Borders, and surprized and defeated the King's Generals that were sent against him. But *Edward* marching with a numerous Army into *Wales*, totally routed *Llewellyn's* Forces in a great Battle, in which *Llewellyn* himself was slain; and the King caused his Head, crowned with Ivy, to be exposed to View on the Walls of the *Tower of London*. *David* his Brother soon after fell into the Hands of the *English*, who, being the last of the Race, was cruelly put to Death as a Traitor, his Head fixed up by his Brother's, and his four Quarters sent to *York*, *Bristol*, *Northampton*, and *Winchester*. After the Defeat of *Llewellyn*, *Edward* with Ease became Master of the whole Country, and *Wales* was united to the Crown of *England*, in the Year 1283. Thus the *Welsh*, the Remains of the antient *Britons*, lost their Liberty, after having bravely

maintained it for above eight hundred Years. But to make them Amends, (if any Thing could do it) they became one Nation with their Conquerors, and have enjoyed the same Laws and Privileges with them ever since. 'Tis said, that the *Welsh* being still uneasy without a Prince of their own, *Edward* purposed to give them for their Prince, the Son whom he hoped his Queen, who was then with Child, would be delivered of: That with this View, he ordered it so, that she should lie in at *Caernarvon*, where she was brought to-bed of a Prince, named *Edward*; and that immediately thereupon he convened the *States of Wales*, and told them he would give them a Prince born among them, who could not speak a Word of *English*; and then nominated to them his Son, just born at *Caernarvon*. However this be, the young Prince was not invested with the Principality of *Wales*, till he was seventeen Years old; and from that Time, the King's eldest Son has been always Prince of *Wales*.

In 1287, King *Edward*, leaving the Regency to the Earl of *Pembroke*, went over to *France*, where he staid about three Years.

Being returned to *England* in 1289, he presently set about reforming Abuses in the Administration of Justice, severely fined and punished several Judges, who were found guilty of taking Bribes, and obliged them to swear, that for the future they would take neither Money nor Presents, except only a moderate Breakfast. The next Year, the *Jews* were all banished the Kingdom.

The chief Affair of this Reign was the Conquest of *Scotland*, which tho' it redounded much to the Glory of King *Edward's* Arms, we can say nothing to the Justice of it. 'Tis pretty plain, that as soon as King *Alexander III.* died, he began to project the uniting of *Scotland* with

*Eng-*

*England.* With this View he got his Son Prince *Edward* married to *Margaret*, *Alexander's* Grand-Daughter, then Queen, and the only Remains of his Race, but she dying soon after, there arose great Disputes in *Scotland* about the Succession, and several great Men laid claim to the Crown. Among these, the chief were *John Baliol*, and *Robert Bruce*, whose Influence was so great, that they divided almost all *Scotland* between them. The two Parties, in order to prevent a Civil War, chose the King of *England* Arbitrator of their Differences. But before he would proceed to a Decision, he declared, that he acted in this Affair as Sovereign Lord of all *Scotland*, and required the States to own him as such ; which tho' they never expressly did, yet as they did not directly oppose his Pretensions, being perhaps over-awed by his Presence, he hastily took it for granted. And then upon the Question being severally put to them, he was owned as Sovereign by all the Claimants. After which, he was put in Possession of the Kingdom, that he might be able to deliver it up to the Person that should be declared King. Then having heard the Pretensions of the Claimants, he thought fit to decide in Favour of *Baliol*, and declared him King of *Scotland* ; upon which he swore Fealty and did Homage to King *Edward*, whose Conduct in this whole Affair, the *Scots* say, was a continued Series of Artifice, Corruption and Violence.

King *Edward* was no sooner in Possession of the Sovereignty of *Scotland*, but he carried his Prerogative to the utmost Height, to the great Offence of the *Scots*, and even of the new King, who upon trifling Occasions had Summons after Summons sent him to appear before King *Edward* at *Westminster*, or wherever he should be. *Baliol* finding him-

self treated rather as a Slave than a Vassal, began to concert Measures for throwing off the Yoke of the *English*, which was become so intolerable to him. A favourable Opportunity seemed to offer, as a War was broke out between *France* and *England* ; *Philip* having seized upon all *Guienne*. He therefore entered into an Alliance with *Philip*, who got the Pope to absolve *Baliol* from his Oath of Fealty to *Edward* ; then, depending on the succours he expected from *France*, he sent a Letter to King *Edward*, renouncing the Homage he had paid him ; who, exasperated at this, instead of carrying his Army over into *France*, marched it against *Scotland*, resolving now upon the entire Conquest of that Kingdom..

Accordingly, in 1296, King *Edward* entered *Scotland* with his Army, having first gained *Robert Bruce* to his Side, by promising him the Crown, in case he would declare against *Baliol*. He first took *Berwick* by Stratagem, which was as it were the Key of the two Kingdoms. Then marching towards *Dunbar*, with a Design to besiege it, he received Intelligence, that *Baliol* was approaching with a numerous Army. Upon this he advances towards him, and being met, a terrible Battle was fought, in which the *Scots* were defeated, with the Loss, as 'tis said, of above twenty thousand Men. After this, he marched back to *Dunbar*, whose Gates were opened to him ; and, in a short Time, took *Roxborough*, *Edinburgh*, *Sterling*, *Perth*, and all the important Places, and in effect became Master of all *Scotland*. The *Scots* therefore had nothing to do but to submit to the Mercy of the Conqueror, and *Baliol* came and resigned his Crown to him, to be disposed of as he should think fit. What was an irreparable Loss to *Scotland* on this Occasion, was the burning of the Records, which was said



said to be done by *Edward's* Orders. Then having placed *English* Garrisons and Governors in all the Castles, he returned in Triumph to *England*, carrying with him the Crown and Scepter of *Scotland*, with the rest of the *Regalia*, and the famous Stone of *Scone*, on which the Inauguration of their Kings used to be performed.

Prince *Edward*, whom the King had left Regent, on his going over to *Flanders*, having assembled the Parliament, which granted him a large Subsidy, confirmed King *John's* two *Charters*, by an authentick *Act*, which was signed by the King in *Flanders*, and sealed with the Great-Seal, which he had carried along with him.

Whilst the King was in *Flanders*, on account of the *French* War, he was alarmed with the News of the Revolt of the *Scots*, under the Conduct of the brave *William Wallace*, a Man of no great Family or Fortune, but ever since esteemed a famous Hero. This valiant Man, being grieved at the Servitude his Country groaned under, did Wonders with a small Number of Forces which he headed at first; which being soon increased by the coming-in of all the true Lovers of their Country, he soon drove the *English* out of their strong Places, and recovered all *Scotland*, leaving them only the single Town of *Berwick*; for which brave Exploits he was immediately declared Regent of the Kingdom by the Army.

*Edward*, upon this, returned forthwith to *England*, and putting himself at the Head of a numerous Army, marched into the Heart of *Scotland*, and met the Enemy at *Falkirk*, where, in a bloody Battle, he gave them a total Overthrow, and improving this great Advantage, retook all the Strong-Holds with as much Ease as he had lost them. Having thus, as one may say, con-

quered *Scotland* a second Time, he returned to *England*. This was in 1298. In the mean Time, the *Scotch* Lords growing jealous of *Wallace*, he laid down the Regency, tho' he never ceased upon all Occasions to act for the Good of his Country; and those who had any Remains of a publick Spirit, made Choice of *Comyn* for Regent; by whose Advice, the next Year, another vigorous Attempt was made to shake off the *English* Yoke. The whole Kingdom rose, and all the Inhabitants of the Cities as well as of the Country, taking Arms at the same Time, drove the *English* once more out of *Scotland*. *Edward* enraged at this, as soon as the Season permitted, entered that miserable Kingdom a third Time, in 1300, and entirely routed the *Scotch* Army, which consisted of ill-armed and undisciplined Militia. Those who remained, betook themselves to the Fens, which the Conquerors durst not pass. *Edward* refusing to accept their Offers of Submission, the *Scots*, in Despair, thought of putting themselves under the Protection of the Pope, and sent Ambassadors to offer the Sovereignty of their Country to *Boniface VIII.* who readily accepted of it. But *Edward* had so little Regard to the Pope's Pretensions, that he swore, if he heard any more of them, he would destroy *Scotland* from Sea to Sea. As desirous as he was to finish his Conquest, he durst not refuse the King of *France* a Truce, which he demanded in Behalf of the *Scots*, whilst the Treaty for the Restitution of *Guienne* was depending. When the Truce was near expiring, *Edward* sent *Segrave* into *Scotland* to renew the War. He divided his Army into three Bodies, not so much with a Design to fight the *Scots*, as to destroy the Country; but the *Scots* falling upon them, routed them all three, one after another, in one Day.

The

The Peace being concluded between *France* and *England*, in 1303, by which *Guienne* was restored to *Edward*, he found himself at full Liberty to act as he pleased against the *Scots*. And so he entered *Scotland* a fourth Time, with so powerful an Army, that he met with no Resistance. He penetrated to the utmost Bounds of the Island, laying waste the Country on all Sides. *Sterling-Castle* held out all the Winter, and did not capitulate till *July* following. The Taking of this Castle finished *Edward's* fourth Expedition and third Conquest of *Scotland*. The brave *Wallace* being betrayed into his Hands, he caused him to be executed as a Traitor, and ordered his Quarters to be hung up in four of the chief Towns in the Kingdom.

At his Return to *England*, in 1305, he publicly imprisoned Prince *Edward* his Son, for having, at the Instigation of *Piers Gaveston*, one of his Favourites, committed some Outrage against the Bishop of *Litchfield*.

This was a wise and popular Action; but what he did soon after, shewed that he was not disposed to govern with that Equity and Moderation which the People expected: For he obtained of Pope *Clement V.* a Dispensation from his Oath, with regard to the two *Charters* of Liberties. This Pope granted him the *Tenths* for three Years, reserving one half to himself. The Parliament opposed this, and forbade the Collectors to levy the *Tenths*: But *Edward* by his own Authority took off the Prohibition, and ordered the Collectors to go on.

The *Scots*, tho' so often subdued, could not sit easy under the Yoke. *Robert Bruce*, Earl of *Carrick*, Son to one of the Competitors for the Crown, already spoken of, who was now dead, and to whom *Edward* had not performed his Promise of making him King, entered into a

Confederacy with *Comyn* to restore the Liberty of their Country. But *Comyn* proved false, and betrayed the Design to King *Edward*; which *Bruce* discovering, stabbed him with his own Hands; and then declaring himself, such Numbers flocked to him, that he went to *Scone*, and was there crowned; after which the People in general came over to his Side. But King *Edward* sending the Earl of *Pembroke* with an Army against him, he was twice defeated, and forced to retire to one of the *Hebrides*, and there wait for a more favourable Conjunction. *Edward* afterwards arriving in *Scotland*, with a numerous Army, found the Work already done to his Hands; what was left for him to do, was to punish the Friends and Adherents of *Bruce*, which he did in a very severe and cruel Manner, beheading three of his Brothers, and hanging other great Men, and scarce pardoning any that fell into his Hands. Then returning, he did one very commendable Thing; he banished *Gaveston*, as a Corruptor of the young Prince, and made the Prince swear never to recall him.

*Bruce* had now an Opportunity to come out of his Retirement, and having soon drawn together a good Number of Troops, he attacked the Earl of *Pembroke*, whom the King had left his General in *Scotland*, and obtained a signal Victory, taking the Earl himself Prisoner; after which he gained several other Advantages, and took many strong Places.

*Edward* was now so exasperated against the *Scots*, that he resolved to destroy them without Mercy, and made vast Preparations to put his Design in Execution. But Heaven prevented him: For he was scarce come to *Carlisle*, where he had one of the finest Armies *England* had ever seen, but he was seized with a Distemper, which soon



put an End to his Life. He caused himself to be carried by easy Journeys towards *Scotland*, being fondly desirous of dying in a Country he had thrice conquered. But being come to *Burgh upon the Sands*, in *Cumberland*, he there died, on the seventh of *July*, 1307, aged sixty-eight Years, having reigned thirty-four Years, seven Months, and twenty Days. His Corps was carried to *Westminster*, and deposited by that of *Henry* his Father. When he was near his End, he earnestly pressed his Son to prosecute the War with *Scotland*, and advised him to carry his Bones at the Head of his Army, assuring him the *Rebels* could never stand the Sight of them. He ordered him to send his Heart to the *Holy-Land*, with 32,000*l.* for the Maintenance of the *Holy-Sepulchre*; and commanded him never to recall *Ga-weston*.

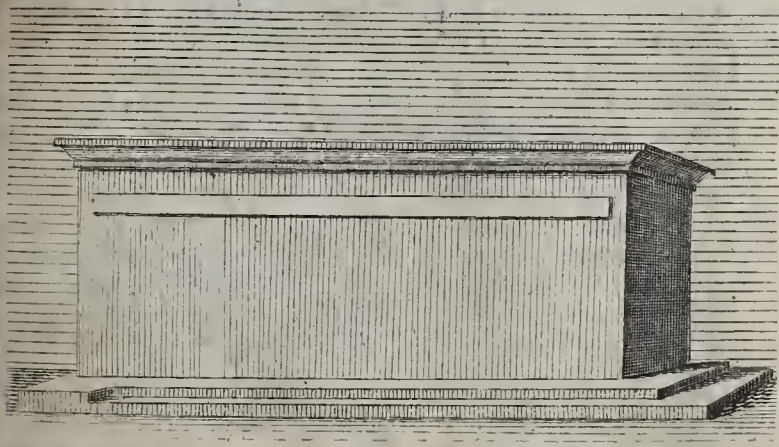
His Person was graceful, taller by the Head than the Generality of Men, and would have been perfectly well-shaped, if his Legs had not been a little too long for the rest of his Body: Whence he had the Surname of *Long-Shanks*. He was a Prince of a solid Judgment and great Penetration, was prudent, valiant, just, tem-

perate and chaste, had the Love and Esteem of his Subjects; and *England* had been a great Gainer by his Administration. The Constitution of Parliament, such as it is at this Day, was so well established in his Reign, that an additional Law was made to the *Great Charter*, which enacted, that no Tax should be levied upon the People, without the Consent of the *Commons*. Tho' he acquired great military Glory in the *Scotch* War, yet his whole Behaviour, in relation to that Kingdom, is the greatest Blemish upon his Character.

He had by *Eleanor* of *Cassile*, four Sons and nine Daughters, but *Edward*, his Successor, was the only one of the Sons that survived him. By *Margaret* of *France*, his second Wife, he had two Sons, and a Daughter. *Eleanor* his first Queen died in 1291, In Memory of whom he erected a Cross wherever her Corps rested in the Way from *Lincolnshire* to *Westminster*.

The Title of *Baron* was, in this Reign, confined to such as the King called to Parliament, which before was common to all who held Lands of the Crown.

*Matthew* of *Westminster*, a *Benedictine* Monk, wrote his *History* of *England* in this Reign.



*J. Hatchin sc.*



T. Kitchen sc.

## EDWARD II. 1307-1327

1307.

**E**DWARD II. surnamed of *Caernarvon*, from the Place of his Birth, was about two and twenty Years old, when he succeeded his Father, the great King *Edward I.* No Prince ever ascended the Throne under more favourable Circumstances, especially if we consider the perfect Tranquillity and Harmony then subsisting in the Nation, and his being the Son of so universally-esteemed a Father; and no Prince ever made a worse Use of them. He had, besides, the Advantage of being one of the handsomest Men of his Age, his Stature noble, his Mien perfectly agreeable, his Presence majestick: But thro' the whole Course of his Reign it appeared, that the Endowments of his Mind bore no Proportion to his bodily Perfections; that he was infatuated to the last Degree of Weakness; that he had neither Courage, Judgment nor Foresight; that he was wholly governed by his unreasonable Passions; and, in short, that he was

entirely destitute of all those Qualities, which are necessary to form a great Man, or a good Prince.

No sooner was his Father dead, even before he had performed the last Offices to him, but contrary to his last Command, and the Oath he had taken to him, he recalled his Favourite *Gascon*, a native of *Gascony*, and the Debaucher of his Youth; and was so unreasonably fond of heaping Favours upon him, that he immediately became the richest and most powerful Lord of the Kingdom. It seemed as if *Edward* wanted to be King, only to have it in his Power to advance his Favourite, whom he was pleased to see act as King, whilst he himself was content to be his humble Slave. And never did Minister make a more insolent Use of his Power than *Gascon*.

The only Thing, in which *Edward* was forward to obey his Father, was to consummate his Marriage with *Isabella of France*, Daughter

ter



ter of *Philip the Fair*. He went over to *Boulogne* for this Purpose, where the Nuptials were solemnized with the utmost Magnificence, in the Presence of four Kings, namely, those of *France, Navarre, Almain, and Sicily*. During his Absence, which was but short, he was so impolitick, as to appoint the odious *Gaveston* Guardian of the Realm, with an unlimited Authority; which so exasperated the Barons, that they entered into a League to prevent his Coronation upon his Return. He being in no Condition to oppose them, promised in the next Parliament to grant them all they could reasonably desire; with which being satisfied for the present, the Coronation was performed by the Bishop of *Winchester*, on Feb. 24, 1308. As here we have the first perfect Copy of a Coronation Oath, it may be proper to insert it; especially, as it will shew that *Magna Charta* was not the Original Claim, but only a Confirmation of the ancient Liberties of the People.

Bishop of *Winchester*. Sir, *Will you keep and confirm by your Oath to the People of England, the Laws established by the pious Kings your Predecessors; and particularly, the Laws, Customs, and Liberties, granted to the Clergy and People by the glorious St. Edward your Predecessor?*

King. *I will, and promise it.*

Bishop. Sir, *Will you preserve to God, to Holy Church, to the Clergy and People, the Peace of God, fully and to the utmost of your Power?*

King. *I will.*

Bishop. Sir, *Will you cause to be observed in all your Judgments, Right and Justice with Discretion, in Mercy and in Truth, as far as you are able?*

King. *I will.*

Bishop. Sir, *Will you promise to keep and cause to be kept the Laws and Statutes that the Community of your Kingdom shall judge fit to enact,*

*and will you defend and protect them to the utmost of your Power?*

King. *I do promise it.*

This Oath was no sooner taken than broken. *Gaveston* was continued in Power, had the whole Administration in his Hands, and governed with an absolute Sway. At the same Time he filled the Court with Libertines, Buffoons and Parasites, was proud and insolent to the last Degree, and so ridiculously vain, as to affect to wear the King's Jewels, and even the Crown, which *Edward* took a Pleasure in letting him do. He would also insult the best of the Nobility, passing bitter Jest upon them, and giving them Nick-Names. All this increased the Hatred of the Lords against him, and they brought the Parliament into their League, who so peremptorily demanded *Gaveston's* Banishment, that the King durst not oppose it. However, he delayed it as long as he could, and in the mean Time continued to heap Favours on him without any Bounds or Decency; and when he was forced at last to part with him, he did it in such a Manner as to shew his great Affection to him, by making him Governor of *Ireland*. However, he was soon recalled, and behaved as insolently as ever. By the vigorous Measures of the Barons, who compelled the King to place the Regulation of the Government in the Hands of one-and-twenty Lords, (called *Ordainers*) chosen by Parliament, *Gaveston* was banished a second Time; but was as soon recalled as before. And now the Earl of *Lancaster*, Grandson to *Henry III.* by his Son *Edmund*, entered into a close Confederacy with the Earls of *Warwick, Pembroke, Arundel, Hereford, Warren*, the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and many other Bishops and Barons; who unanimously resolved to take Arms, and chose the Earl of *Lancaster* their General. They then dispersed

dispersed themselves into several Parts of the Kingdom to raise Forces, and with the utmost Expedition drew together a great Body of Troops. In the mean Time *Edward*, though he could not be ignorant of these Proceedings, appeared quite indolent and unconcerned, and was taking his Diversions at *York*, where he was with his Favourite. The Confederates marched directly for that Place, in order to surprize him; but upon Notice of their Approach, he retired to *Newcastle*, and not thinking himself safe there, left it in Haste, and shut himself up, with *Gaveston*, in *Scarborough-Castle*; from whence he went into *Warwickshire* to raise Troops, but it was now too late. The Barons entered *Newcastle* the Day the King had left it, and seized his and *Gaveston's* rich Equipages, which in their Hurry they had left behind. The King left *Gaveston* in *Scarborough-Castle*, as thinking he was there most secure: But the Barons laying Siege to it, it surrendered in a few Days. *Gaveston* had capitulated to see the King, and be tried by his Peers; which was promised him; and the King wrote to the Confederates for that Purpose, and conjured them to spare *Gaveston's* Life: But he was carried off to *Warwick-Castle*, by the Earl of *Warwick*, and there, after a hasty Trial, beheaded.

The King was exceedingly incensed at this violent Proceeding, but had it not in his Power to revenge it. He was pursued by the Barons, and retired to *London*; where thinking himself not safe, he went to *Canterbury*. Shortly after, an Accommodation was effected by Means of the Pope's Nuncio, the Earl of *Ewreux*, and the Earl of *Gloucester*; and Peace was restored in the Year 1313; in which Year, the Queen brought the King a Son, who was named *Edward*.

We must now go a little back,

and take a short View of the Affairs of *Scotland*, which were growing stronger and stronger every Day, whilst *England* was weakened by intestine Broils and Commotions. King *Robert Bruce*, who deserves the Title of the Restorer of the *Scotch* Monarchy, having suppressed the several Factions, had brought all his Subjects to unite in throwing off the *English* Yoke, and happily succeeded in his Design. The *Scots* had Reason to fear the worst when *Edward I.* died. Immediately after, *Edward II.* marched as far as *Dumfries*, and struck a Terror into the whole Nation. But their Hopes were revived, when, leaving his Army under the Command of *John Comin*, a *Scotch* Lord, he returned all on a sudden to *England*, to meet *Gaveston*, and marry the Princess *Isabella*. Soon after which, the *English* under *Comin* were shamefully defeated by King *Robert*, and again by *Edward Bruce*, his Brother, in the County of *Galloway*. *Edward* upon this, as averse as he was to War, marched a great Army into *Scotland*, in 1308, but was forced to return for Want of Subsistence, which the Enemy had wisely taken care to carry off or destroy. The Disputes afterwards about *Gaveston*, gave *Bruce* an Opportunity to make farther Progress. He entered *England* twice, and returned with great Booty. He recovered several strong Places from the *English*, and the *Isle of Man* submitted to him. In 1313, he sent *Edward* his Brother to besiege *Sterling*, the strongest Place in *Scotland*, and the only one that remained in the Hands of the *English*. After a brave Defence, the Governor capitulated to surrender the Town in a Year, if it was not relieved before.

In the mean Time King *Edward*, at the Head of an hundred thousand Men, entered *Scotland*, and advanced



vanced within View of *Sterling*; where *Robert* waited his Coming at the Head of thirty thousand. And now was fought the ever-memorable Battle of *Banockbourn*, (*June 25, 1314*.) in which, notwithstanding the great Inequality of Numbers, the *English* Army was totally routed, with a most dreadful Slaughter. The *English* make the Number of the Slain ten thousand. In all Probability they were a vast many more. The *Scotch* Writers raise them to fifty thousand. The Earl of *Gloucester*, a great many other Lords, and about seven hundred Knights, lay dead on the Field of Battle. *Edward* hastily retreated into *England* with the Remains of his shattered Army, and *Scotland* after this had Peace for several Years.

This Peace indeed was only on the Side of the *Scots*, who, after the Victory at *Banockbourn*, had no Enemy to oppose them; but *Bruce* continued to make several Incursions into *England*, and ravaged the Borders in a terrible Manner. *Edward's* Affairs were at so low an Ebb, that he intreated the Pope to interpose his Authority to procure him a Peace. The Pope complied, and sent his Legates to publish a Truce for two Years, till a Plan of Peace could be settled, upon Pain of Excommunication to those who refused it. *Edward* readily accepted it, but *Bruce* paid so little Regard to it, that he besieged and took *Berwick*. *Edward* attempted to recover it, but was soon obliged to raise the Siege; and afterwards the two Years Truce was agreed upon between the two Kingdoms. About four Years after, viz. in 1323, King *Edward* having got the better of his Barons, marched his Army into *Scotland*; but for Want of Provisions was forced once more to retreat. *Robert* pursued him so closely, that he overtook him at *Blackmore*, where *Edward's* Bag-

gage fell into his Hands, and he narrowly escaped being taken Prisoner. The *English* Army being dispersed, *Robert* marched on, ravaged the Country to the very Walls of *York*, and then returned laden with Spoils. Having thus humbled King *Edward*, he at last agreed to a Truce for Thirteen Years.

Thus much for the Affairs of *Scotland* in this Reign. Let us now return home, and see how Matters were carried after *Gaveston's* Death, and the Accommodation between the King and his Barons. Though the Difference was outwardly made up, the mutual Hatred still remained, and increased every Day. The King was wholly possessed with the Desire of Revenge, which he manifested on all Occasions, particularly against the Earl of *Lancaster*, the Chief of the late Confederacy, and the Favourite of the People. This put the Barons upon forming new Projects. They presented a Petition, containing a long List of Grievances, and demanded a speedy Redress; which the King evading, they resolved to take Arms, and were just upon the Point of coming to a Rupture, when Matters were again made up, by means of the Pope's Nuncio, and some Lords of a more moderate Disposition, in 1318.

But Things did not remain long in this Situation. The Lords, ever jealous of the King and those about his Person, found Means to introduce into Court a young Gentleman, named *Hugh Spencer*, and got him made High-Chamberlain, that he might be a Spy upon the King, and inform them of what passed at Court. But he, by the Advice of his Father, of the same Name, and his own Inclination, soon found the Art of insinuating himself so into the King's Affection, that from a Spy, he became his Confident, and possessed the Place of *Gaveston* in

his Heart. Being thus become the Favourite of his Sovereign, he made a bad Use of his Power as ever *Gaveston* did; and having got his Father made Earl of *Winchester*, these two Ministers had now the whole Management of Affairs in their Hands, and did every Thing, that their Pride, Avarice, Ambition or Revenge could suggest. This caused great Murmuring and Discontent in the Nation, and the Earl of *Lancaster* with Ease formed a strong Party against the two Favourites. The Association was renewed, the Barons levied Troops with great Expedition, and *Roger Mortimer* was sent to plunder the Lands of the *Spencers*; who discharged his Commission with the utmost Rigour and Severity. The Barons being thus in a Condition to stand their Ground, so vigorously petitioned for the Removal of the *Spencers*, that the King durst not oppose their Demands: And the Parliament being met, passed an Act for their Banishment; which was accordingly put in Execution.

But Matters soon took another Turn by Means of the Queen, who before used to act the Part of a Mediator between the King and the Barons. Having received some Affront from the Governor of *Leeds*, which belonged to one of the Associated Barons, she so spurred on the King to Revenge against their whole Body, that under Pretence of punishing one private Person (as he gave out by Proclamation, in order to remove the Fears of the People) he raised an Army, besieged and took the Castle of *Leeds*, and hanged up the Governor; and then turned his Arms against the whole Body of the Confederates. He took *Warwick-Castle*, and some others; and then thinking himself strong enough to stand against all his Opposers, he recalled the two *Spencers*, who could

not to stir him up to farther Revenge. Most of the confederate Barons threw themselves upon the King's Mercy. As to those who stood out, many of them were put to Death, some fled the Kingdom, and others were imprisoned; among whom was *Mortimer*, whom the *Spencers* confined in the *Tower*. The Earl of *Lancaster*, with what Troops he could raise, retired into the *North*, in order to join the *Scots*; but being pursued, was taken and beheaded at *Pontefract*. Nine Lords of his Party were executed at *York*, and others in other Parts of the Kingdom: And never had so much *English* Blood been spilt on the Scaffold since the *Norman* Conquest. But we shall soon see how these Barbarities were retaliated on the *Spencers*, and upon the King himself; of which also the Queen, by an unexpected Turn of Affairs, was the chief Instrument.

The *Spencers* having got rid of the Earl of *Lancaster* and several Lords of his Party, exercised their exorbitant Power without any Controul, and in the King's Name did whatever they pleased. But their Revenge was not yet thoroughly satisfied, whilst the Bishops of *Lincoln* and *Hereford*, and *Roger Mortimer*, were still alive. They endeavoured to get the two former condemned as Traitors in the King's Court; but the whole Body of the Clergy opposing it, as a Violation of their Rights, the Judges durst not pronounce the Sentence. However, this Attempt against their Lives filled them with Resentment, and an Opportunity soon offered for their taking a full Revenge. *Roger Mortimer* was twice condemned to die, and twice pardoned, by Means of a powerful Intercession with the King. However, he was sentenced to perpetual Imprisonment, but found Means to escape into *France*. The *Spencers* knew it was the Queen who



who hindered them from taking a full Revenge upon *Mortimer*. All agree that she was in Love with him, and her scandalous Familiarity with him afterwards made it too plainly appear. The *Spencers* therefore took all Opportunities to mortify her, inasmuch that she complained of it to *Charles* King of *France* her Brother, and was fully bent upon seeking Revenge in her Turn, tho' to the Ruin of the King her Husband.

An Opportunity soon offered, by some Disputes between *Charles* of *France* and *Edward*, about *Guienne*. Ambassadors were first dispatched into *France* to bring Matters to an Accommodation. But it being signified to *Edward*, that if the Queen went over, she would soon bring her Brother to hearken to reasonable Terms, she was accordingly desired to go over to *France*; from whence she never returned till she came with an armed Force. This was not a Contrivance of the *Spencers* to get rid of the Queen, as some have thought, but the Proposal came from the Court of *France*, and very likely at the Desire of the Queen herself. Neither the King nor the *Spencers* perceived the Treachery, and so swallowed the fatal Bait.

Queen *Isabella's* Designs were not discovered for some Time; she must first have the young Prince her Son over with her. To effect this, and to cover her real Intentions, she negotiated a Sort of Treaty with the King her Brother, one Article of which was, that King *Edward* should do Homage in Person for *Guienne*; and he was actually making Preparations to go over. The *Spencers* did not like this, fearing some Commotions might be raised in his Absence. However, an Expedient was found out, whether in *France* or in *England*, most probably in *France*, which freed them from this Unass-

ness, as they could not see the Design of it. It was hinted to the King, that if he would give up to *Edward*, his Son, *Guienne* and *Ponthieu*, *Charles* would accept of the Homage of the young Prince, and restore to him the Places he was to deliver up by the late Treaty. This Bait was also swallowed, and the young Prince was sent over. This was all that *Isabella* wanted, and the King saw his Error when it was too late. He then sent Letter after Letter, commanding the Queen to return with her Son; but she always made some Excuse or other, and was all the while carrying on a Plot to dethrone the King her Husband. After the Arrival of the Prince, all the *English* who had taken Refuge in *France*, or had been banished, came in to her; among whom was *Roger Mortimer*, who became her chief Counsellor. However the King her Brother might under-hand encourage and assist her, he did not care to act openly in it. She must therefore have recourse to the Earl of *Hainault*, and to engage him in her Interest, concluded a Treaty of Marriage between his Daughter *Philippa* and Prince *Edward*, without the Consent of the King: And having got a Body of Troops, she embarked, and landed in *England*, on September 22, 1326, trusting more to her Friends in the Kingdom, to whom she had, in all Likelihood, communicated her Design before she went over, than to the Forces she brought with her. Accordingly she was no sooner landed, but she was joined by *Henry of Lancaster*, Brother to the late Earl, the Bishops of *Hereford* and *Lincoln*, and several other Lords; and the Enemies of the *Spencers* were so diligent in raising Troops, that her Army soon grew very numerous, and struck a Terror into all who had any Mind to serve the King. Being

therefore deserted by all, he endeavoured to retire to *Ireland*, but was drove back on the Coast of *Wales*, and concealed himself in the Abbey of *Neath*. He had left *Spencer* the Father in *Bristol*, which being soon taken, the old Man was immediately hung up in his Armour without any Formality. The City of *London* declared for the Queen; and the Bishop of *Exeter*, who endeavoured to keep it for the King, was beheaded by the Populace. Prince *Edward* was now declared Guardian of the Realm: And Search being made for the King, he was soon found where he lay concealed, having with him only young *Spencer*, Chancellor *Baldock*, *Simon de Reading*, and a few Domesticks, every Body else having deserted him. With these the unhappy King was conducted to *Monmouth-Castle*, and the Bishop of *Hereford* was sent to demand the Great Seal of him; which he delivered up for the Queen and Prince to make use of it as they thought fit. This was his last Act of Authority, shortly after which he was conducted to *Kenelworth*.

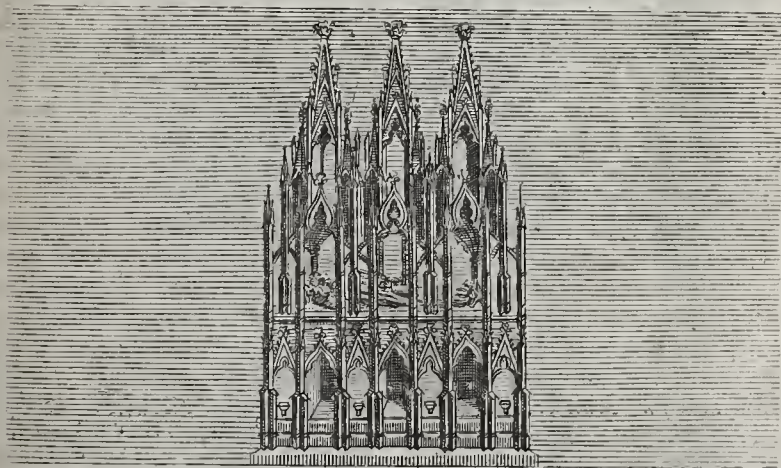
The Queen having got the Great Seal, called a Parliament in the imprisoned King's Name: But before it met, she caused *Spencer* to be hanged on a Gibbet fifty Feet high, and *Simon de Reading* on one ten Feet lower. The Parliament being met in *January*, 1327, unanimously resolved, That the King should be deposed, and *Edward* his Son made King in his Room. The Substance of the Charge exhibited against him was, that he had not governed according to the Laws of the Land; that he had made use of evil Counsellors, and had rejected the Advice of his faithful Subjects; in short, that he was incapable of governing, and that he was found incorrigible, and without Hopes of Amendment. Prince *Edward* was immediately

proclaimed in *Westminster-Hall*, by the Name of *Edward III*. But the generous young Prince vowing he would not accept of the Crown, without his Father's Consent, it was thought necessary to send Commissioners to oblige the King to resign it to his Son. The Bishops of *Lincoln* and *Hereford* being sent before to prepare him for it, when the Commissioners arrived, the unhappy King came out of his Room in a mourning Habit, and was so moved at the Sight of them, that he fainted away. Being come to himself, they represented to him the ill Consequences that might attend his refusing to comply with what they came about. Upon which this unfortunate Prince, with a melancholy Air, submitted to all that was required of him, acknowledging his Sins to be the Cause of his Misfortunes. He expressed his Grief at the Aversion his People had against him, and at the same Time his Obligation for the Respect they had shewn to his Son. He then delivered into their Hands the Crown, Scepter, and other Ensigns of Royalty; which done, Judge *Trussel* made use of this Form of Words, which was entirely new, there having been no Precedent of the like Nature: *I William Trussel, Procurator of the Prelates, Earls, Barons, and People, in my Procuracy named, having for this full and sufficient Power, do surrender unto you Edward, late King of England, the Homage and Fealty of the Persons aforesaid, and do acquit the same, in the best Manner the Law and Custom can give it; and do make this Protestation in the Name of all those that will not be in your Fealty or Allegiance for the future, nor claim or hold any Thing of you as King, but account you as a private Person, without any Manner of Royal Dignity.* Upon which, Sir *Thomas Blunt*, the High-



High-Steward, broke his Staff, and declared all the King's Officers discharged. Thus ended the Reign of *Edward II.* (*Jan. 20, 1327.*) in its twentieth Year, and the forty-third of his Age; of whom it may be said, that his Ruin was more owing to his Weakness than his Wickedness. He was a Prince of so little Capacity, that he could not distinguish between what was for his Advantage, and what was prejudicial to his Interest. He followed his Humour, without concerning himself about the Consequences, and without being able to remedy the Evils he brought upon himself by so doing. In a Word, he was exceedingly like his Grandfather *Henry III.* and had not Capacity enough to follow the good Example of his Father. Besides *Edward*, who succeeded him, he had another Son called *John of Eltham*; and two Daughters, *Joanna* married to *David* King of *Scots*, and

*Eleanor*, Wife of the Duke of *Guelder*. In this Reign there was the most terrible Earthquake, that had ever been felt in *England*, and a dreadful Famine, which lasted three Years, and destroyed a vast Number of People. It is said, that not only the most loathsome Animals were used for Food, but that Men, particularly the Prisoners, devoured one another. During this Time, the brewing any Sort of Beer was prohibited on Pain of Death, that the Corn, which used to be consumed that Way, might be applied to the making of Bread. This Period is also famous for the total Suppression of the Order of *Knights-Templars*, not only in *England*, but all over *Christendom*. This was said to be owing to their enormous Vices. Their Estates were assigned to the *Hospitallers*, or *Knights of St. John of Jerusalem*, now called *Knights of Malta*.



*J. Kitchen sc.*



T. Kitchen sc.

## E D W A R D III. 1327—1377.

1327. **U**PON the forced Resignation of the old King, the Prince his Son was again proclaimed, on *January, 20, 1327*, by the Name of *Edward III.* and was crowned at *Westminster* on the 26th, being then in the fourteenth Year of his Age. The Beginning of his Reign was so unhappy, that the People did not think they had changed much for the better. This was not owing to the King, who was a Prince of uncommon Capacity and Penetration for his Age, but to the Queen-Mother, a Woman of strong Passions, and her Favourite *Mortimer*, a Man of more Presumption and less Ability, than the *Spencers*. For though the Parliament had appointed twelve Regents during the King's Minority, yet *Isabella*, having the Power in her own Hands, seized the Government, and managed the Affairs of the Kingdom as she and *Mortimer* thought fit. He was her Prime Minister, and acted more like a Sovereign than a Sub-

ject, disposing of all Offices, and of the Publick Revenue, according to his Pleasure; and by his Pride, Arrogance and Cruelty, soon became as odious to the Nation, as ever *Gaveston* or the *Spencers* had been.

To pass by the many State Artifices of this intriguing Queen and her insolent Minister, let us see how Matters stood with *Scotland* at the Beginning of this Reign. King *Robert Bruce*, thinking to take Advantage of King's *Edward's* Minority, broke the Truce with the *English*, and sent the Earl of *Murray* and Sir *James Douglass* at the Head of twenty thousand Men, to ravage the Counties bordering on *Scotland*. *Edward* hearing of this, was fired with an ardent Desire of taking Revenge, and signaling himself in the Defence of his Country. Those who governed in his Name, though they did not like the War, could not with Safety to themselves sit down quiet under such an Insult. An Army of sixty thousand Men, including the *Hainaulters*



*Hainaulters* lately brought over, was therefore drawn together; which being come to *York*, just as the King was going to head them, a Quarrel arose between the *English* and *Hainaulters*, which came to Blows, and a great deal of Blood was spilt. This occasioned a longer Stay at *York* than was convenient, and in the mean Time the *Scots* passed the *Tyne* between *Carlisle* and *Newcastle*, and ravaged the Country on this Side the River. This hastened the King's Departure, but the *Scots* had made such quick Marches, that the *English* could not come up with them, nor find them out. It was therefore resolved to pass the *Tyne*, to wait for them in their Return home; but *Edward* had no sooner done this, but he was forced to come back again for Want of Subsistence. And after this, when he got Intelligence of the *Scotch* Army, and marched in order to fight them, they had so posted themselves, that he could not come at them, to give them Battle. And so he returned to *York*, exceedingly mortified at his Disappointment in this Expedition.

The late King was all this while a close Prisoner in *Kennelworth-Castle*. His harsh and cruel Treatment began to raise Compassion in the People; and *Henry of Lancaster*, who had the Custody of him, relented so far, as to entertain Thoughts of freeing him from his Confinement. This alarmed the Queen and *Mortimer*, who even suspected that he had a Design to restore the old King. They therefore resolved to discharge *Lancaster*, and to appoint the imprisoned King such Keepers as they could best confide in. Sir *John Maltrevers*, and Sir *Thomas Gurney*, two Men of a brutish Disposition, were the Persons they fixed upon to put their wicked Designs in Execution. They were in Hopes that the cruel Treatment he should meet

with from them, would soon cause him to end his Days with Grief, Vexation and Fatigue. They were ordered to remove him from *Kennelworth* to *Berkley-Castle*. And when their barbarous and inhuman Usage of him in the Journey, and afterwards, did not answer their End, they received express Orders to put the miserable King to Death. No sooner had the *Russians* received these hellish Instructions, but they put them in Execution with unparral-  
 leled Cruelty. They entered the King's Room when he was in Bed, clapt a Pillow upon his Face to prevent his crying out, thrust a Pipe up his Fundament, that no Scar might appear, and through it run a red-hot Iron into his Bowels; in which exquisite Torture he expired, about eight Months after he had been deposed. The Wretches who perpetrated this horrid Murder came to miserable Ends, *Gurney* dying abroad by the Hands of the Executioner, and *Maltrevers* perishing in Exile; and we shall soon see how divine Vengeance pursued those who set them to work. The Body of this unfortunate Prince was buried in a private Manner in the Abby-Church at *Gloucester*, where the King his Son (who at first was made to believe his Father had died a natural Death) some Years after erected a stately Monument.

In 1328, the young King's Marriage with *Philippa* of *Hainault* was solemnized. And the same Year, by the Advice of *Isabella* and *Mortimer*, a most dishonourable Treaty of Peace (at least in the Opinion of the Nation) was made with *Scotland*; King *Edward* renouncing all his Pretensions to that Kingdom, and the Princess *Joanna* his Sister being given in Marriage to Prince *David*, the King of *Scotland's* Son. Shortly after, *Mortimer*, as a Reward for his pretended Service in this Affair, was created Earl of *March*, in full Parliament.

liament. The brave *Robert Bruce*, the *Scots* King, died soon after his making this advantageous Peace, and left his Crown to his Son *David*, then about eight Years old!

The Queen-Mother and *Mortimer*, by their whole Management, made themselves more and more odious to the Nation. And the Earl of *Lancaster*, the Earl of *Kent*, the King's Uncle, and some other Lords, began to take Measures to pull them down. They entered into an Association, and published a Manifesto, containing the Motives of their taking Arms. But *Isabella* and *Mortimer* so managed Matters with the King, persuading him that the Design of the Malcontents in taking Arms, was to dispossess him of his Crown, that he began to make vigorous Preparations against them. Which might have been attended with ill Consequences, if the Archbishop of *Canterbury* had not persuaded the Queen to come to an Accommodation, by artfully hinting to her, that the Manifesto of the Malcontents was so plausible, that there was Danger of the whole Nation's siding with them. As the League was not yet strong enough, the Lords thought fit to accept of a Pardon. And so the Queen and her Favourite as yet stood their Ground; but they retained a strong Resentment in their Hearts against these Lords, and the Earl of *Kent* fell a Sacrifice, not long after, to their Treachery and Malice.

In the mean Time an Affair happened in *France*, which, joined with *Edward's* Ambition, gave Rise to the chief Business of this Reign, and brought *France* to the very Brink of Destruction. This was the Death of *Charles the Fair*, Queen *Isabella's* Brother, without Issue Male. But as he left his Queen *Joanna* big with Child, the first Dispute was about the Regency till she should

be delivered. King *Edward* laid Claim to it, as Nephew and nearest Relation to *Charles*. But *Philip de Valois*, Cousin-German to the deceased King, maintained, that as the *Salick Law* excluded the Females, and their Descendants, as he thought, from the Succession to the Crown, they consequently had no Right to the Regency. The Matter was decided by the Peers of *France* in Favour of *Philip*; and how much soever *Edward* was inclined to assert what he thought was his Right, he was not in a Condition to do it during his Minority. At length *Joanna* being delivered of a Princess, *Edward* sent Ambassadors to demand for him the Crown of *France*; but no Regard was had to this Demand, and *Philip* caused himself to be crowned, by Virtue of the same Judgment which assigned him the Regency. *Edward* not having it in his Power at present to maintain his Pretensions, let the Matter lie dormant for some Time, and even found himself obliged to do Homage to *Philip* for *Guienne* and *Ponthieu*; which, however, the Queen-Mother, and the Earl of *March*, could hardly have brought him to do, if they had not suggested to him the Expedient of his privately protesting beforehand against the Homage he was going to pay. This done, he went over, in 1329, and came to King *Philip* at *Amiens*; where the Homage was performed in a most solemn Manner, in Presence of the Kings of *Navarre*, *Majorca*, and *Bohemia*, and all the chief Lords of *France*.

King *Edward's* Return to *England* was soon followed by a great Revolution at Court, in 1330. As he began at length to be suspicious of the Queen his Mother's Conduct, there were Enemies enough found to lay hold of the Disposition the King was then in, to hasten her Ruin,



Ruin, and that of her Favourite. They so wrought upon him by representing their ill Conduct in the most glaring Light, that with much Difficulty he got them both seized at *Nottingham*, where the Court then was. Then calling a Parliament, he told them, that with the Consent of his Subjects he intended to take upon himself the Government, tho' he was not yet at the Age prescribed by the Law: To which the Parliament readily assented. He first seized on the extravagant Dowry, which the Queen his Mother had caused to be settled upon her, amounting to two Thirds of the Revenues of the Crown, and then confined her in the Castle of *Rising*, where she continued the Remainder of her Life, which was eight-and-twenty Years. Her Favourite *Mortimer* Earl of *March*, was treated with the utmost Severity. He was charged with having assumed the Government without Authority, with having placed Spies about the King, to keep him always in Subjection, with procuring the Death of the King's Father by his express Orders, with having lived too familiarly with the Queen-Mother, &c. For all which Crimes he was hanged as a Traitor on the Common Gallows at *Tyburn*.

The same Year the King was blessed with a Son, who was named *Edward*, after his Father, and became, at length, one of the most accomplished Princes that *England* had ever seen. The Art of Weaving Woollen-Cloth was about this Time brought from *Flanders* into *England*, by *John Kempe*, to whom King *Edward* granted his Protection, and invited over Fullers, Dyers, and other Artificers, belonging to that Manufacture, which has since proved to advantageous to *England*.

After *Edward* was at Liberty to act for himself, his first Attempt was upon *Scotland*. The dishonourable

Treaty that Queen *Isabella* and *Mortimer* had drawn him into with *Robert Bruce*, set very uneasy upon him. But not chusing at first to act openly in violation of it, he underhand employed *Edward Baliol*, Son of *John Baliol*, whom *Edward I.* had made King of *Scotland*, to bring about his Designs. *Baliol* had lived in *France* ever since his Father's Death, and *Edward* caused it to be insinuated to him by the Lord *Beaumont*, that he had now a fair Opportunity to mount the Throne of *Scotland*, whilst *David Bruce* was in his Minority; and that the King of *England* was disposed to second his Endeavours. *Baliol* readily listening to this Proposal, came into *England*; and as those Lords who had formerly Grants of Lands in *Scotland*, from *Edward I.* were privately told that their serving *Baliol* would be agreeable to the King, the Hopes of recovering those Lands made them readily engage in *Baliol's* Cause. And so he embarked with a small Army, and landed at *Kinghorn* near *Perth*; and in a few Days routed four *Scotch* Armies, each superior in Number to his own. After which he besieged and took *Perth*. These and other Successes induced a great many Lords and Gentlemen to come in, and swear Fealty to him. In short, young King *David* was obliged to fly into *France*; soon after which, *Baliol* was crowned at *Scone*, and did the same Homage to King *Edward* for *Scotland*, as his Father had done to *Edward I.* He also yielded up to him the Town and Castle of *Berwick*, which were still in King *David's* Hands. Things thus succeeding according to *Edward's* Desire, he raised an Army on Pretence of appeasing some Troubles in *Ireland*; but presently throwing off the Mask, marched it towards *Scotland*, and laid Siege to *Berwick*. The Regent whom King *David* had left

left in *Scotland*, advanced with a great Army to its Relief ; but *Edward* met him at *Halydon-Hill*, and in a bloody Battle, *Anno 1333*, entirely routed him : After which *Berwick* surrendered, which *Edward* annexed for ever to the Crown of *England*.

King *Edward*, at his Return from *Scotland*, left *Baliol*, with a Body of Troops to compleat its Reduction. But the voluntary Homage he had paid, and the many Places he had given up to *Edward*, besides *Berwick*, so exasperated the *Scots*, that the next Year they rose against him, and coming upon him unawares, totally routed him, and drove him out of the Kingdom. Hereupon *Edward* marched again into *Scotland* with a numerous Army, but the *Scots* were so encamped, that he could not attack them. He passed the Winter at *Roxburgh*, and in the Spring, 1335, attacked *Scotland* by Sea and Land, and advanced as far as the *Northern Ocean* : Yet neither did he gain any great Advantage by this Incurſion, it being impossible to keep the *North Parts* of *Scotland*, without a continual Standing-Army. So he ſtaid ſome Time at *Perth*, whiſt the Earl of *Cornwall* ravaged the *Western Counties*. Before the End of the Year, the *Scots* finding that *Edward* was fully reſolved to continue the War, moſt of them ſubmitted ; and then he returned to *England*, leaving the Earl of *Athol* to command in his Abſence ; who, as he was beſieging *Kildrummy*, was attacked, defeated and ſlain by *Dunbar* and *Douglas*, who marched to the Relief of the Place. This occaſioned *Edward* to march once more into *Scotland*, where he ravaged the Counties that had revolted, and in his Return burnt *Aberdeen* to Aſhes. Then leaving a ſmall Army under *Baliol*, he came back to *England*, being now bent upon putting

his Project againſt *France* in Execution. He maintained, that the *Salick Law*, in excluding Females, did not exclude their Male-Iſſue ; and inſinuating from thence, that the neareſt Male Relation ought to ſucceed, he reſolved to wreſt the Crown from *Philip de Valois*. In which Project he was encouraged by *Robert d'Artois*, whom *Philip* had diſgusted.

Whiſt he was preparing for this important War, in 1337, he called a Parliament, chiefly to ſettle the Buſineſs of the *Woollen Manufacture*. In it he created his eldeſt Son, Prince *Edward*, Duke of *Cornwall*, who was the firſt in *England* that had the Title of *Duke* ; and ever ſince, the eldeſt Son of the King of *England* is by Birth Duke of *Cornwall*.

*Edward* having made vaſt Preparations, and entered into ſeveral powerful Alliances, the firſt Step he took, was to order the Duke of *Brabant*, one of his Allies, to demand the Crown of *France* in his Name, at the ſame Time making him his Lieutenant-General for that Kingdom, and commanding the *French*, whom he ſtilled his Subjects, to obey him. In 1338, he ſet ſail from *England*, with a conſiderable Fleet, and arrived at *Antwerp*, where he made a long Stay, to ſettle ſome Matters of Importance to his grand Deſign. The firſt Campaign was not opened till *September*, 1339, when *Edward* put himſelf at the Head of forty thouſand Men, and marched towards the Enemy, who were advancing with a numerous Army to give him Battle. However, Matters were ſo ordered, that nothing was done, and the firſt Campaign ended without any Bloodſhed.

The next Year, *Edward* took the Title of King of *France*, uſing it in all publick Acts, and quartered the Arms of *France* with his own, adding this Motto, *Dieu Et mon Droit*, God and my Right. He ſoon after obtained



obtained a great Victory over the *French* at Sea ; for with a Fleet of three hundred Sail, attacking the *French* Fleet of four hundred, on the Coast of *Flanders*, he took or sunk them all except thirty. Then landing his Forces, he went and laid Siege to *Tournay* ; but the *French* Army advancing to its Relief, so harrassed the Besiegers, that *Edward* could make little or no Progress in the Siege. At length a Truce was agreed upon between the two Parties, by the good Offices of *Joanna de Valois*, Mother-in-Law to *Edward*, and Sister to *Philip*, which was to last from the 20th of *September* to the 25th of *June*, and was succeeded by another Truce for three Years, by the Mediation of the Pope, after the two Kings had begun to commit Hostilities against each other, in the Dispute about the Succession to the Duchy of *Bretaign* ; *Philip* taking Part with *Charles de Blois*, whom he had declared Duke of *Bretaign*, and *Edward* espousing the Interest of *John de Montfort*, the other Claimant.

Whilst King *Edward* was in *France*, *Robert Stuart*, Regent of *Scotland* for King *David*, gained great Advantages over *Baliol*. He took *Perth*, and forced *Baliol* to retire to the Borders ; and some Time after he became Master of *Sterling*. *Edward* being returned into *England*, upon the Truce made with *France*, resolved to invade *Scotland* once more by Sea and Land ; but his Fleet suffering by a violent Storm, prevented him. Soon after King *David* being furnished with Men and Money by the King of *France*, returned to *Scotland*, and having got together a considerable Army, marched towards the Frontiers, and proceeded as far as *Durham*, which he besieged and took, and put all the Inhabitants to the Sword. In

his Return he made an Attempt upon *Werk-Castle*, belonging to the Countess of *Salisbury* ; but the News of *Edward's* Approach made him desist. Being come to the Castle the very Day that *David* marched off, he made a Visit to the Countess of *Salisbury* ; which gave Occasion for some to affirm, though without Grounds, that he fell in Love with her. He marched in Quest of the *Scots* the next Day, but hearing they were retired to *Gedeor's-Forest*, he left off the Pursuit. And soon after, being intent upon continuing his *French* War, he offered *David* a Truce for two Years, which he accepted, and had an Opportunity by that Means to fix himself more firmly on his Throne.

Whilst the Truce with *France* and *Scotland* subsisted, King *Edward* called a Parliament, in which he solemnly confirmed all the Liberties contained in the *Great Charter*, and created Prince *Edward* Prince of *Wales*. This Parliament passed an Act, called the *Statute of Provisors*, against those who brought *Provisions* from *Rome* for *Benefices*.

We are now come to a Period, which shines with a distinguished Lustre in *Edward's* Reign. He had made great Preparations to renew the War with *France*, as soon as the Truce should be expired. But *Philip* hastened it on, by seizing and beheading several Lords of *Bretaign* ; by which Action, *Edward* maintained, the Truce was broken. He therefore appointed the Earl of *Northampton* his Lieutenant-General in *France*, commanding him to defy *Philip* in his Name, and to declare War against him : And if he did but little before, he now made himself ample Amends, by the Rapidity of his Conquests, and surprising Success of his Arms. He first sent over *Henry of Lancaster* Earl of *Darby*,  
who

who made a great Progress in *Guine*; but the vigorous Efforts of the Duke of *Normandy* put a Stop to it, and forced him to retreat. Upon this, *Edward* lands in *Normandy*, in 1346, with his Son the Prince of *Wales*, who was now to make his first Campaign, being about sixteen Years old. He ravaged the Country in a terrible Manner through which he passed, burning and plundering every Thing that came in his Way. At length having bravely forced a Pass over the *Somme*, which was guarded by twelve thousand *French*, he went and encamped at *Cressy*. Being closely pursued by *Philip*, he found he could not avoid a Battle; and so he pitched upon an advantageous Ground, and drew up his Army in Battalia, expecting the Enemy. The Battle began at Four in the Afternoon, *August 26*, 1346, which was very obstinate and bloody, and proved fatal to the *French*. The Prince of *Wales*, young as he was, performed Wonders. To him the Victory was chiefly owing, the King his Father leaving him the Honour of it. *Philip* fought with undaunted Valour, was twice dismounted, and wounded in the Neck and Thigh; when being forced to retire, the Victory was soon compleated, and followed with a dreadful Slaughter of the flying Troops. There were slain in this Battle, the King of *Bohemia*, who was blind, the Earl of *Alençon* King *Philip's* Brother, the Duke of *Lorraine*, the Earls of *Flanders* and *Blois*, fifteen other eminent Noblemen, and twelve hundred Knights; and above eighty *French* Standards were taken. It is said, that in this famous Battle the *English* for the first Time made use of Cannon, then unknown to the *French*; and that the Victory was in Part owing to the Surprise this Novelty occasioned in their Enemies.

After this, *Edward* besieged *Ca-*

*lais*, which held out a Year; and he at last reduced it by Famine. *Philip* endeavoured to relieve it with an Army of one hundred and fifty thousand Men, but could by no Means attack *Edward*, he was so strongly intrenched. After taking of this important Place, he consented to a Year's Truce, and returned in Triumph to *England*.

During the Siege of *Calais*, *Philip* got the King of *Scots* to make a Diversion in *England*, who advanced as far as *Durham*, at the Head of a numerous Army; but Queen *Philippa* marching against him, defeated him and took him Prisoner. Some Years after, the *Scots* surprized *Berwick*; but *Edward* soon retook it. King *David* remained a Prisoner eleven Years, and then was released upon giving twenty Hostages to pay 100,000 Marks, at 10,000 a Year, till all was paid. A ten Year's Truce was at the same Time concluded between the two Kingdoms. *David* died in 1368, and left his Crown to *Robert Stuart* his Nephew.

Not long after the Taking of *Calais*, *Edward* instituted the most famous Order of Knighthood in the World, viz. that of the Garter. The Occasion of it is somewhat uncertain; but the common Opinion is, that it owed its Rise to the Countess of *Salisbury's* dropping her Garter, as she was dancing. 'Tis said the King stooped to take it up; and the Countess shewing some Surprise, as thinking he had some other Design, he said to her, *Honi soit qui Mal y pense*, that is, *Dis honour*, or *Evil be to him that thinks Evil of it*. In Memory of this, 'tis pretended, he instituted this Order, and gave for its Motto the Words he had spoken to the Lady.

About the same Time, the Merchants having complained of the Depredations committed by some *Spanish* Ships on the *English* Coast, *Edward* did not disdain to go in Person

\* *Honi more properly means Shame.*



Person with some Ships, and gave Chase to these Corsairs. He took twenty-six of their Ships, sunk some, and dispersed the rest.

*Philip de Valois* dying in 1350, left his Son *John* his Successor, who prolonged the Truce to 1354, and then to the Year following; but it was ill kept on both Sides. When it was near expiring, *Edward* invested the Prince of *Wales* with the Duchy of *Guienne*, and sent him thither to prosecute the War. From hence the Prince made an Incurfion, and ravaged *Languedoc*. He afterwards made a second Incurfion with twelve thousand Men, passing through *Perigord*, and *Limofin*, entering *Berry*, and advancing to the Gates of *Bourges*. As he was fetching a Compafs, in order to retire to *Bordeaux*, to avoid the King of *France*, who was advancing with sixty thousand Men, the said King came up with him, near *Poitiers*, at a Place called *Maupertuis*; and here a memorable Battle was fought, on September 19, 1356, in which the Prince of *Wales*, notwithstanding the vast Superiority of the *French*, obtained a compleat Victory, and took King *John* Prisoner, with *Philip* his fourth Son. The Duke of *Bourbon*, the Constable of *France*, and Marshal *de Nefse*, above fifty other great Lords, and eight hundred Gentlemen, were slain. The Prince's modest and generous Behaviour towards his Royal Prisoner, was no less conspicuous than his Courage and Conduct during this glorious Action. A Truce for two Years was soon after agreed on, and the Prince came over to *England* the April following, bringing the captive King along with him, who was conducted to *London*, and treated with all the Honour and Respect imaginable, by King *Edward* and all the Royal Family, as well as by the generous and heroic Prince of *Wales*.

King *John* agreed upon a Treaty

with the King of *England*, in order to recover his Liberty; but the *States* of *France* thought it so disadvantageous, that they would not ratify it. Upon which *Edward* prepared to renew the War with more Vigour than ever, and in 1360 went over to *Calais* with an Army of an hundred thousand Men, with Intent to subdue that miserable Kingdom. But he missed of his Aim. For tho' after an unsuccessful Attempt upon *Rheims*, he took *Seins*, and ravaged *France* to the very Gates of *Paris*, yet he could by no Means draw *Charles* the Dauphin and Regent out to an Engagement, who kept himself shut up within the Walls, wisely avoiding a Battle, till *Edward* having lost many of his Men by Sickness, and tired with fruitless Attempts, consented to a Treaty of Peace, which was concluded at a Village called *Bretigny*, and signed May 8, 1360; whereby the King of *France* was to pay three Millions of Crowns of Gold for his Ransom, and the King of *England* was to hold *Guienne*, *Poitou*, *Saintonge*, *Aginois*, *Limofin*, *Quercy*, *Bigorre*, *Gaur*, *Angoumois*, *Rovergne*, *Perigord*, *Montreuil* and its Territories, *Guifnes*, *Ponthieu*, *Calais* Town, Castle, and Territory, &c. All Things being concluded, King *John* was set at Liberty, and returned into *France*, where he ratified the Treaty by his Letters Patent, and soon gave a farther Proof of his Sincerity, by putting *Edward* in Possession of the Countries assigned him by the said Treaty. Towards the End of the Year, 1363, he came over to *England* again about some Matters of Importance, and was very honourably received by King *Edward*. The Kings of *Scotland* and *Cyprus* being in *England* at the same Time, Sir *Henry Picard*, Citizen and Wine-Merchant of *London*, entertained the four Kings and their Retinues with a mag-

a magnificent Feast at his own House. King *John* died in *England* the 8th of *April* following, which was no small Grief to *Edward*, who loved and esteemed him for his Virtue. This memorable Saying is ascribed to him, *Though Faith and Truth were banished from the rest of the World, they ought to be preserved inviolable in the Mouth of Kings.*

In 1364, *John de Montfort*, Son of the former *John*, and Son-in-Law to King *Edward*, defeated and slew *Charles de Blois*, his Competitor for the Duchy of *Bretaign*, in the famous Battle of *Aray*; which put an End to the Quarrel between the two Houses, and gave *Montfort* the Possession of *Bretaign*.

In 1366, Pope *Urban V.* in a haughty Manner demanded the Tribute which King *John* of *England* obliged himself and Successors to pay to the *Holy See*, of which there were thirty Years Arrears due. But both King and Parliament so vigorously opposed this Imposition, declaring King *John's* Engagement to be null, as without Consent of Parliament, and contrary to his Coronation-Oath, that the Pope thought fit to drop it; and neither *Edward*, nor his Successors, had any more Trouble upon that Head.

Not long after, the famous Prince of *Wales* marched with an Army of thirty thousand Men from *Bordeaux*, in order to restore *Peter* the Cruel, King of *Castile*, who had been driven from his Dominions by his Bastard-Brother, *Henry* Earl of *Translamare*. He succeeded in his Enterprize, by totally routing the *Spanish* Army in the Battle of *Nejara*. Which Expedition, tho' glorious in its Success, was not very honourable, since it was undertaken in favour of one of the most brutish and cruel Princes that ever lived; who was afterwards again deposed by his Brother, and deservedly slain. If the Prince of *Wales* had

known, or considered, the vile Character of *Peter*, in all Probability he would not have espoused his Cause. However, the Expedition was fatal to him, for he contracted a Distemper in *Spain*, which he never got rid of; and in order to pay his Troops was forced to lay a Tax upon *Guienne*, which furnished them with a Pretence to revolt, to which they were before but too much inclined.

Hitherto *Edward's* Reign had been happy and glorious, but the latter Part of it was full of Misfortunes. In 1368, he lost his second Son, *Lionel*, Duke of *Clarence*, who died in *Italy*, whither he went to consummate his Marriage with the Duke of *Milan's* Daughter. By his first Marriage he left a Daughter, named *Philippa*.

The Year following, *Charles V.* who succeeded King *John* his Father, upon some frivolous Pretences, broke the Treaty of *Bretigny*, which was disagreeable to the *French* Nation, and declared War against *Edward*. This War was as unfortunate to the *English*, as the former was glorious; for *Charles*, without ever stirring out of his Palace, so well directed the Motions of the War in the Cabinet, that the *English* were worsted every where, and in the End found themselves deprived of all their late Acquisitions in *France*, except *Calais*. However, a Truce was concluded between the two Crowns, in 1374. At the Beginning of this War, the King and the whole Nation had a most sensible Affliction in the Death of his good Queen *Philippa*.

King *Edward*, now in his old Age, had the Weakness to fall in Love with *Alice Pierce*, one of the Ladies of the Bed-chamber to Queen *Philippa*; to whose Humour he entirely gave himself up, and squandered away the publick Money upon her. The Parliament obliged him to turn her away, but he soon recalled her.

On

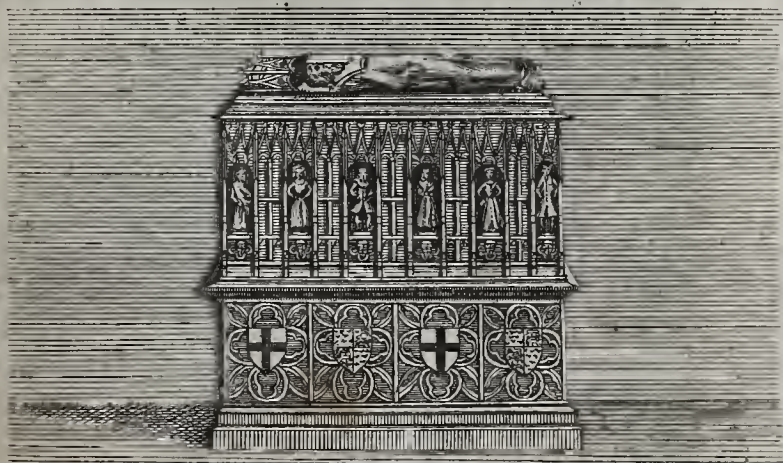


On June 8, 1376, *Edward Prince of Wales*, the Delight and Hope of the Nation, died in the forty-sixth Year of his Age. He was brave, generous, liberal, humane and courteous, and exceedingly beloved by the whole Kingdom. He was called *The Black Prince*, from his wearing black Armour. The Parliament attended his Corpse to *Canterbury*, where he was interred. He had married *Joanna*, Daughter to *Edmund*, Earl of *Kent*, who was beheaded by the Intrigues of *Isabella* and *Mortimer*, at the Beginning of this Reign. By her he left one Son, *Richard*, about ten Years old, whom the King his Grandfather created Prince of *Wales*, and Earl of *Chester*, designing him for his Successor.

King *Edward* did not long survive his Son. He died at *Sheen* (now *Richmond*) on June 21, 1377, in the sixty-fifth Year of his Age, and fifty-first of his Reign; and was buried in *Westminster-Abbey*. This great Prince, when he drew near his End, saw himself deserted by every body. His Courtiers and Chaplains all forsook him. *Alice* his Favourite, when she saw him dying, seized upon every Thing that was valuable, even

to the Ring on his Finger. He was one of the best and most illustrious Kings that ever sat on the *English* Throne, and what Faults he had were greatly outweighed by his Virtues and amiable Qualities. He had, besides his two Sons already mentioned, *William*, who died an Infant; *John of Ghent*, or *Gaunt*, Duke of *Lancaster*; *Edmund*, surnamed of *Langley*, Earl of *Cambridge* and Duke of *York*; *William* of *Windsor*, who died young; and *Thomas* of *Woodstock*, Duke of *Gloucester*. He had also five Daughters.

Towards the End of this Reign, *Dr. John Wickliff*, a Man of great Piety and Learning, began in his Sermons and Writings to oppose Transubstantiation, Persecution for Religion's Sake, and other corrupt Doctrines and tyrannical Practices of the Church of *Rome*. He was the first celebrated *English* Reformer, had soon a great Number of Followers, not only among the common People, but in the University of *Oxford*, and at Court, and was powerfully protected against the Designs of the Pope and Bishops, by the Duke of *Lancaster*, Lord *Percy*, and other great Men.



*J. Kitchen sc.*



## RICHARD II. 1377—1399

<sup>1377</sup> **U**PON the Death of Edward III. his Grandson Richard, Son of the *Black Prince*, succeeded to the Crown. He was born at *Bordeaux*, and was now about eleven Years old. He had three Uncles, who might upon specious Pretences have disputed the Succession with him; but they were so far from endeavouring to supplant him, that they were the first to do him Homage. And so on the sixteenth of <sup>1377</sup> July, twenty-four Days after Edward's Death, young Richard was crowned without any Opposition.

The Truce with *France* was expired near three Months before Edward's Death. The King of *France* was making vast Preparations to compleat the Expulsion of the *English* out of all the Places they held in *France*; whilst at the End of the last Reign, and at the Beginning of this, the *English* seemed wholly unconcerned about the War. And so, whilst five Armies were employed in different Places to finish the Work

in *France*, the *French* made several Descents upon *England*, burnt *Hastings*, *Portsmouth*, *Dartmouth* and *Plymouth*, and plundered the *Isle of Wight*. For this the People blamed the King's Uncles, who took upon them the Administration of Affairs till the Parliament should meet; not considering that they had neither Money nor Forces, nor any lawful Authority to raise them.

The Parliament met in *October*, and gave the Regency of the Kingdom to the three Uncles, joining with them some Bishops and Lay-Lords. This mortified the Duke of *Lancaster*, the eldest of the Uncles, a Prince of a haughty Temper, who had flattered himself with the Hopes of being sole Regent. <sup>21 if they was not</sup>

Whilst Preparations were making to guard the Coasts, and to oppose *France*, the King of *Navarre* put *Cherbourg* into the Hands of the *English*, as the Duke of *Bretagne* soon after delivered up *Brest* to them. These Places, together with *Calais* and



and *Bourdeaux*, might have been of great Advantage to the *English*, as by means of these four Towns they might have invaded *France* four several Ways: But they made not a proper Use of this Advantage; and *Richard*, towards the End of his Reign, gave up *Brest* and *Cherbourg*, for a very inconsiderable Sum.

When Measures were taking in *England*, to assist the Duke of *Bretagne*, the *French* Court, in order to divert the Storm from their own Country (according to their usual Artifice) encouraged the King of *Scotland* to make a Diversion on his Side. He accordingly broke the Truce, and took *Berwick* by Surprise; but the Earl of *Northumberland* drew together a Body of Troops, and retook it by Storm. In this Siege, his Son *Henry Percy* signalized himself with such Bravery and Resolution, that he gained the Surname of *Hotspur*. In the mean Time, Hostilities continued to be carried on in several Places, between the *French* and *English*, without any general Action, or decisive Battle.

In 1380, the Parliament passed an Act to render foreign Ecclesiasticks incapable of holding any Benefice in *England*; and effectually to remove this Grievance, they passed another Act, forbidding all the King's Subjects, under severe Penalties, to farm Benefices conferred on Foreigners by the Pope.

Whilst the Nation was involved abroad, and those about the King had more Regard to their own private Interest than that of the Publick, a surprising Insurrection broke out, which threatened the whole Kingdom with Destruction. The Parliament had imposed a Poll-Tax, whereby all Persons, above fifteen Years old, were obliged to pay twelve Pence a Head, the Monks and Nuns not excepted. This Tax was levied with great Moderation at first: But

at length being farmed by divers Persons, who having advanced such a Sum to the King, were to have what they could raise by it, these Farmers and their Collectors levied the Tax with great Rigour, in order to enrich themselves. One of the Collectors, having demanded of a *Tyler* at *Deptford*, whose Name was *Walter*, from thence called *Wat Tyler*, twelve Pence for one of his Daughters, the Father refused to pay it, alledging that she was under the Age mentioned in the Act. The insolent Collector attempting in a Way not very modest to satisfy himself of the Truth of this, *Wat* took up a Hammer, and knocked out his Brains. The People took his Part, and promised to stand by him. Immediately the Populace rose in *Kent*, and chose *Wat Tyler* for their Leader: And they were soon followed by those of *Essex*, under the Conduct of *Jack Straw*. To the Poll-Tax were added other Grievances, the little Care taken by those at the Helm to guard the Coasts against the *French*, notwithstanding the large Sums that had been raised for that Purpose, the Extortion of the Judges and Lawyers, the Oppression of the Nobles, &c. Which Grievances being inflamed by seditious Spirits, and, as some say, by the Monks, who thought themselves aggrieved by the Poll-Tax, the People rose in great Numbers, and *Wat* soon found himself at the Head of 100,000 Men. With these he marched directly for *London*, freeing all the Prisoners as he went along. This formidable Mob proceeded to the utmost Extravagancies: They cut off the Heads of those Lords, Gentlemen, Judges and Lawyers they could lay Hands on; and bound themselves by Oath never to own for King any whose Name should be *John*; which was occasioned by their Hatred to *John of Gaunt*, Duke of *Lancaster*, who

at this Time was gone to the Borders to negotiate a Truce with the *Scots*.

Being come to *Black-Heath*, *Wat Tyler* reviewed his Army, and continuing his March towards *London*, took and plundered *Southwark*. Shortly after, he entered *London*, the City Mob opening the *Bridge Gates* to him, in Spite of the Magistrates. Here this enraged Rabble committed the most horrid Ravages, burning and plundering the Houses of the Judges, Lords, and principal Citizens. Then they seized the *Tower*, and finding there the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and the High-Treasurer, they without any Ceremony cut off their Heads. The King and Council were exceedingly alarmed at these furious Proceedings, and in great Perplexity what Course to take to put a Stop to them. At last it was resolved to offer the Rebels a Charter confirming the People's Liberties, and a general Pardon; which those of *Essex* accepting, returned to their Homes. *Wat Tyler* still continued at the Head of thirty or forty Thousand Men; and the King coming to *Smithfield*, sent to desire him to come and confer with him. *Wat* returned a haughty Answer, that he would come when he thought fit. He however set forward at the Head of his Troops, and meeting the King in *Smithfield*, they had a Conference together, both on Horseback. He made such extravagant Demands, that *Richard* knew not how to answer him; and now and then he would lift up his Sword, as if he threatened the King. This Insolence so enraged *Walthworth*, Mayor of *London*, who was by the King, that he struck the Rebel on a sudden such a furious Blow on the Head with his Sword, as instantly killed him.

The Rebels seeing their Leader fall were just upon the Point of revenging his Death, when the young King, with a Courage and

Presence of Mind, that could hardly be expected from his Years, cried out aloud to them, *My Friends, will you kill your King? What though you have lost your Leader, I will be your Captain. Follow me.* With that turning his Horse about, he put himself at their Head, and marched to *St. George's Fields*. The Rebels, imagining he had declared for them, readily followed him. When they were come thither, they presently saw a great Number of Citizens well armed, whom the Mayor had raised, marching towards them, and thinking the whole City was coming out against them, they immediately threw down their Arms, and the whole Multitude was soon dispersed, without the Loss of one Life, but that of *Wat Tyler*, their Leader.

There were much the same Kind of Insurrections in *Norfolk* and *Suffolk*; but the Bishop of *Norwich*, putting himself at the Head of some Troops, quickly suppressed them. Those in *Essex* began also to stir again, but the King marched against them, and defeated them. Great Numbers were slain, and others were taken and executed; among whom was *Jack Straw*, their Leader. He confessed, if they had succeeded, their Intention was to kill the King, to extirpate the Nobility, and the Clergy, except the Mendicant Friars, to divide *England* into several Kingdoms, to make *Wat Tyler* King of *Kent*, to abolish all the old Laws, and make new ones. This formidable Insurrection was in the Year 1381, and did not last above a Month, from the Beginning to the End.

A Marriage having been concluded between King *Richard* and *Anne* of *Luxembourg*, Sister to the Emperor *Wenceslaus*, she arrived in *England*, and was received with great Pomp and Magnificence, soon after the Troubles were appeased.

The



The same Year the King granted Power to the Bishops to imprison Hereticks; but the House of Commons soon got it revoked.

In 1385, the Scots, by the Assistance of France, as well as the French themselves, were preparing again to invade England. This alarmed the Court, and made them so exert themselves, that in a little Time, Richard was at the Head of a very numerous Army, some even say 300,000 Men. Though with this Army he might have subdued Scotland, he made little or no Use of it. Instead of pushing the Scots vigorously, who would not have been able to stand before him, he employed himself in ravaging the Country about Edinburgh, whilst they slipped by him into Cumberland, and committed terrible Devastations. And tho' he might have intercepted them in their Return, he omitted to do it, and returned ingloriously into England. It must be owned indeed, that marching with the greatest Part of this Army first towards the Southern Parts of the Island, he by the Intelligence which the French had of the great Number of his Forces, prevented the Invasion from France, which was at the same Time intended.

The Year before, the famous Reformer Wickliff, who, notwithstanding all the Efforts of the Bishops, passed his Days quietly at his Parish of Lutterworth in Leicestershire, died there in Peace. He was educated in Merton-College at Oxford, where he took the Degree of Doctor of Divinity. He had such powerful Protectors at Court, that all the Bishops could do against him was to condemn his Doctrines. But his Followers, called Lollards, who were very numerous, were cruelly persecuted in the succeeding Reigns.

Richard's chief Favourites now were, Nevil Archbishop of York, Ro-

bert de Vere Earl of Oxford, whom he created Marquess of Dublin, (the first who bore the Title of Marquess in England) and Duke of Ireland; Michael de la Pole, Son to a Merchant in London, whom he made Earl of Suffolk and High-Chancellor; and Judge Tresilian. These, by humouring his Passions, got an absolute Ascendant over him. That they might ingross him to themselves, they inspired him with a Jealousy of his three Uncles, especially the Duke of Lancaster, persuading him, that he aspired to the Crown; whilst these could not without Indignation see Persons of obscure Birth or inferior Rank ingross all the King's Favour and Confidence. These jealousies and Animosities proved fatal to the King himself, who always loved those best that flattered him most, and were for justifying whatever was agreeable to his Inclination.

These Favourites were become so odious, that when the King demanded a Subsidy from the Parliament, on account of another French Invasion that was threatened, instead of answering his Desire, they presented an Address for the Removal of his Favourites. Richard was exceedingly enraged at this Proceeding, and said, *that to please the Parliament, he would not turn out the meanest Scullion in his Kitchen.* A few Days after, he sent the Chancellor, in an imperious Manner to renew his Demand of the Supply. But the two Houses uniting on this Occasion, peremptorily refused it, unless he would first remove the Favourites. Things were even upon the Point of coming to a Rupture, when the King, thinking better of the Matter, complied. After which, the Duke of Ireland's Estate was confiscated by Order of Parliament, and the Chancellor was obliged to restore all the Grants the King had made him; which done, the Parlia-

ment appointed fourteen Commissioners, to manage Affairs jointly with the King. But so fickle and imprudent was *Richard*, that as soon as the Parliament broke up, he recalled his own Ministers, and caressed them more than ever, who now made use of all their Arts to be revenged on their Enemies. The Duke of *Gloucester*, the youngest of the King's Uncles, who had acted vigorously against them, was the chief Object of their Resentment; whom they endeavoured to get poisoned, but he escaped for that Time.

The remaining Part of this Reign was nothing but Confusion, and a Series of arbitrary Measures. The Ministers formed a Design to make the King absolute, which *Richard* was very well pleased with. It was agreed, that he should raise an Army, to terrify the Duke of *Gloucester*, and the other Lords his Associates; as the Earls of *Arundel*, *Warwick*, *Nottingham*, and *Darby*, which last was eldest Son to the Duke of *Lancaster*. Then a Parliament was to be called, which was to be wholly at the King's Devotion, and none to be returned but such as were set down in his List. For this Purpose he sent for all the Sheriffs and Judges to *Nottingham*, and communicated to them his Design. The Sheriffs refused to comply; but the Judges were not so scrupulous as to what was referred to them. Being asked, whether the King might not turn out the fourteen Commissioners appointed by Parliament, and annul what other Acts he pleased, they replied, *That the King was above the Law*. And some through servile Flattery, others compelled by Menaces, signed this Opinion. The King then issued out Commissions for levying an Army, but so few were willing to serve him, that he was forced to desist. And all he got by this was, that by discovering his Designs, he increased

more and more the Hatred of the People.

The Duke of *Gloucester* and the other Lords, alarmed at these Proceedings, and knowing that the chief Aim of the Court was their Destruction, resolved to take Arms; and, as they were in great Credit with the People, soon raised an Army of 40,000 Men. This threw the King into great Perplexity, but he thought the best Way was to amuse them by fair Promises, whilst the Duke of *Ireland* went and raised an Army in *Wales*; which he soon did, but being met by the Earl of *Darby*, in *Oxfordshire*, was defeated, and forced to fly into *Holland*. From thence he went to *Louvain*, where he died about three Years after. In his Baggage, which was taken, was found a Letter from the King, ordering him to march with all Speed to *London*, and promising to live and die with him. It was also discovered, that he designed to make up Matters with *France* at any Rate, in order to have the Assistance of that Crown to reduce his Subjects to Obedience. *Richard's* Measures being thus defeated, he took Shelter in the *Tower*, and the Lords immediately marched their Army to *London*. They demanded a Conference with the King, which, in the Circumstances he was in, he durst not refuse. They upbraided him with the *Nottingham* Plot, and all his other Measures to destroy them, and to make himself absolute. He seemed much affected, and shed Tears at this Remonstrance; and it was agreed, that he should meet them the next Day at *Westminster*, in order to settle with him the Government. But they were no sooner gone from the *Tower*, but he altered his Mind, and sent them Word he would not meet them. Hereupon they let him know, that if he did not come, they would chuse another King. Frightened at this




this Declaration, he not only came, but consented to the Banishment of his Favourites. As to the Judges, they were taken off the *Bench*, and sent to the *Tower*.

The Parliament meeting in *February*, 1389, several Persons were impeached of High-Treason. Some were banished, and had their Estates confiscated. The Chief Justice, Sir *Robert Tresilian*, and some others, were hanged at *Tyburn*. After this, a general Pardon was passed for both Parties, the King renewed his Coronation Oath, and all the Lords repeated their Oaths of Allegiance to him. During these Transactions the Duke of *Lancaster* was in *Spain*, endeavouring to possess himself of the Crown of *Castile*, which he claimed in Right of his Wife, eldest Daughter of *Peter the Cruel*. At his Return, the King invested him with the Duchy of *Guienne*, not out of any Affection for him, but with a View of having him at a Distance.

Though Matters had been thus made up, the unhappy Temper of the King soon threw all in Confusion again. Being now come of Age, he was resolved to take the Government into his own Hands; when it soon appeared, that he was not at all disposed to rule with Moderation according to the Laws, but that he was fully resolved to follow the Opinions and Maxims of his late Favourites. His Queen, being dead, he married *Isabella*, Daughter of *Charles VI.* of *France*, and made a dishonourable Truce with that Crown for twenty-eight Years. The Dukes of *Lancaster* and *York*, seeing how Matters went, quitted the Court, and the Duke of *Gloucester*, who had taken the Freedom to upbraid the King his Nephew, on several Occasions, was treacherously seized, hurried over to *Calais*, and there smothered between two Featherbeds. The Earls of *Warwick*

and *Arundel* were apprehended and sent to the *Tower*. The King now took more timely and effectual Methods to have a Parliament at his Devotion. He changed all the Sheriffs, and the Magistrates of Cities, and Boroughs, and suffered none to continue in Place, but such as would be subservient to his Will. A pack'd Parliament being by such Means obtained, they stuck not at sacrificing to the King's and his Ministers Resentment, the best Lords in the Kingdom. *Thomas Arundel*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, was banished, and his Estate confiscated; the Earl of *Arundel* was beheaded, and the Earl of *Warwick* sentenced to perpetual Exile in the *Isle of Man*. This Parliament, so agreeable to *Richard's* Mind, was adjourned to *Shrewsbury*, though in those Days the Parliament usually sat but one Session. Here they established such Maxims as were destructive to Liberty and the Constitution. They approved the Opinion for which *Tresilian* and other Judges had been condemned. Accordingly the Judges, who attended during the Session, decided, *That when the King proposed any Affair in Parliament, it was High-Treason to go upon any other Business before the King's was dispatched*. Thus this scandalous Parliament, by humouring the King in every Thing, was only hastening his Ruin. I shall mention but one Instance more of their arbitrary Proceedings: By an unprecedented Act, they appointed a certain Number of Commissioners, and invested them with the Authority of the whole House.

In 1398, *John of Gaunt* Duke of *Lancaster* died. His Son the Earl of *Darby*, whom *Richard* had created Duke of *Hereford*, was banished a little before. But this very Person was made an Instrument in the Hand of Providence to pull down *Richard*, as we shall see presently.



So many great Men being either dead or banished, and the Parliament having given their Sanction to his arbitrary Power, *Richard* now thought himself above all Restraint, and minded nothing but his Ease and Pleasure; whilst his Ministers, wholly intent upon their own private Advantage, let the Affairs of the Nation go to wreck. To shew what Lengths the King and his Ministers went to raise Money; seventeen Counties were condemned of Treason for taking Arms under the late Duke of *Gloucester*, notwithstanding the general Pardon; and to save their Estates, were forced to give blank Bonds to be filled up with what Sum the King pleased: And every one bound himself under great Penalties, by what was inserted in these Bonds, to stand by the Statutes of the *Shrewsbury* Parliament.

Such tyrannical Proceedings could not fail of making the Nation very uneasy. And in the midst of the general Discontent, a Rebellion happening in *Ireland*, the infatuated King went over in Person with his Troops in order to quell it. He was no sooner gone, but a Conspiracy began to be formed in *England*, to deprive him of his Crown. The Malecontents, after several Consultations, resolved to call in the Duke of *Hereford*, or *Lancaster*, who was now in *France*; and to that End wrote to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, who was also there, to communicate their Design to him, promising to assist him to the utmost of their Power. The Duke, laying hold of this Opportunity to try his Fortune, got a few Ships of the Duke of *Bretagne*, and embarking with the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and a small Number of Men, set sail, and hovered some Time about the Coast of *England*, to see if the People would declare for him. As soon as

it was known, that he was on the Coast, they began to take Arms in several Places. Upon this the Duke landed, in *July*, 1399, near *Ravensthorpe* in *Yorkshire*, where he was presently joined by the Earl of *Northumberland*, and *Henry Percy* his Son, with some Troops; and the People flocked to him so from all Parts, that in a few Days he saw himself at the Head of 60,000 Men. The Duke of *York*, whom the King had left Regent, a Man not much disposed for Action, and the rest of the Council, hereupon left *London*, and repaired to *St. Alban's*; which they had no sooner done, but the City declared for the Duke. Soon after, the Earl of *Wiltshire*, and the rest of *Richard's* Ministers, thinking themselves not safe where they were, left the Duke of *York*, and retired to *Bristol-Castle*; and the Duke, finding it impossible to stem the Torrent, withdrew to his own House. The Duke of *Lancaster* first marched to *London*, where the Citizens received him with the greatest Demonstrations of Joy and Affection, as their Saviour and Deliverer. He then proceeded directly for *Bristol*, and laying Siege to the Castle, where the Ministers were retired, became Master of it in four Days; when he caused the Earl of *Wiltshire*, and some others of *Richard's* Counsellors, to be beheaded, to satisfy the Multitude, who were exceedingly enraged against them. And soon after, the Duke of *York* his Uncle came in to him.

Whilst these Things were doing, the contrary Winds hindered the King for some Weeks from having any News from *England*. At last, when he was informed of the Duke his Cousin's Descent, instead of coming over himself with his Forces, he sent the Earl of *Salisbury* before him to levy Troops; which he did in *Wales* and *Cheshire*, to the Number



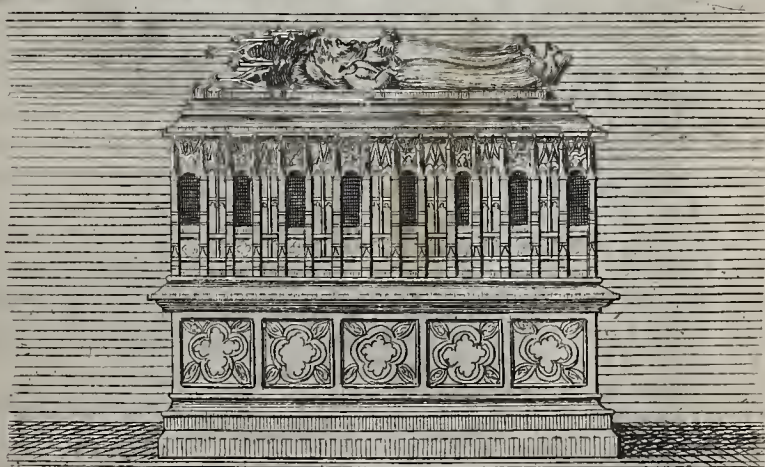
of 40,000. But having continued in Arms for some Time, and the King not appearing, they dispersed, and returned home.

Soon after the King arrived, and when he found how Matters stood, and that all the Nobility and the People had declared against him, he was in the utmost Consternation, and knew not which Way to turn himself. At last he withdrew privately from his Army, and went and shut himself up in *Conway-Castle*, in *Wales*. The Duke of *Lancaster* being marched to *Chester*, *Richard*, in the Extremity he was in, thought it best to throw himself upon his Enemy's Generosity, and even offered to resign his Crown, provided he would spare his life, and allow him an honourable Pension; and then went and conferred with the Duke at *Flint*. From hence they set out both for *London*, where *Richard* was presently conducted to the *Tower*; and the Duke having caused him to call a Parliament, the Day before it met, he repaired to the *Tower*, with a great many Lords, and there *Richard* delivered up the Crown and Scepter, and signed an Instrument, confessing himself unworthy and unfit

to govern the Kingdom any longer. Which Instrument of Resignation was the next Day approved of in Parliament. They then drew up several Articles of Accusation against him, upon which he was solemnly deposed, much in the same Manner as *Edward II.* had been.

The Throne being thus vacant, the Duke of *Lancaster*, as had been agreed, rose up, and claimed the Crown; and it was unanimously resolved, *September 30, 1399*, that he should be proclaimed King of *England* and *France*, and Lord of *Ireland*: Which was done accordingly the same Day.

Thus ended the unhappy Reign of *Richard*, in its twenty-third Year. He seemed to be a Prince of generous Inclinations in his younger Years; but afterwards being corrupted by Flattery, grew excessively full of himself; most profusely expensive in Pomp and Shew, and Diversions; assuming, arbitrary, cruel and inflexible: Which losing him the Affections of his Subjects, in the End, by a sudden and surprizing Revolution, lost him his Crown. He had no Issue by either of his two Marriages.



*H. Robinson sc.*

H E N R Y



T. Kitchen sc.

## HENRY IV. 1399—1413.

1399.

**H**ENRY Duke of Lancaster and Hereford, surnamed of Bolingbroke, from his being born there, was the eldest Son of John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster. He ascended the Throne in the Manner above-mentioned, though Mortimer, Earl of March, had a better Claim to the Crown, as being descended from Philippa, Daughter of the Duke of Clarence, Henry's Father's eldest Brother. This Mortimer's Father had been declared presumptive Heir to the Crown, who was Grandson of Roger Mortimer, executed as a Traitor in King Edward's Reign; whose Sentence had been reversed, as being contrary to Law, he having been condemned upon the Notoriety of the Facts, without being suffered to speak in his own Defence. Henry could not but have a great Liking for the Parliament, which had given him the Crown; and so, though it was called in Richard's Name, and consequently ceased upon his being deposed, yet he thought fit

to continue it, though as a new Parliament, under his own Authority. He was crowned on the 13th of October, being thirty-three Years old: And on the same Day he published a Proclamation, declaring he had ascended the Throne, by Right of Conquest, by Virtue of Richard's Resignation to him, and as the next Heir Male of that King. He chose to build his Claim on these three weak or false Foundations, rather than own that he derived his Right from the general Consent of the People, which was the only lawful Title he had. This done, he created his eldest Son Henry, thirteen Years old, Prince of Wales, Duke of Aquitaine, Lancaster, and Cernwall, and Earl of Chester.

The Parliament meeting the Day after the Coronation, first passed an Act of Indemnity, in Favour of those who had taken Arms for the King, whilst only Duke of Lancaster. They then unanimously repealed all the Acts of the Shrewsbury Parliament, and so put the Rights and Liberties

ties



ties of the People on the same Foot they were on before *Richard's* Usurpations. This done, they reversed the Sentences against the Earls of *Arundel* and *Warwick*, and proceeded against the Authors and Advisers of the late Measures taken against those two Earls, and the Duke of *Gloucester*. As *Richard* had given them the Estates of these three Lords, the Parliament deprived them of those Estates, and also of their Titles. But *Henry*, willing to begin his Reign with Mildness, suffered them to enjoy their own Estates, and, as some say, restored them to their Titles. As they pleaded that *Richard* had compelled them to do what they did, the Parliament passed an Act, declaring, That, for the future, Compulsion should be no Excuse to justify unlawful Actions. After this, the King published a general Pardon, excepting however the Murderers of the Duke of *Gloucester*; one of whom was taken and hanged at *London*, and his Head sent over, and fixed on one of the Gates of *Calais*.

The Parliament, thinking they had not done enough in giving *Henry* the Crown, thought fit to secure it to his Issue, by passing an Act to settle his Succession in the House of *Lancaster*. This might have been attended with no ill Consequences, as *Mortimer* and his Brother died without Issue, had not the second Son of the Duke of *York* married *Anne* their Sister: which at length proved the Source of that long and bloody Contest between the Houses of *York* and *Lancaster*.

A very important Affair still remained, in which the King desired the Advice of his Parliament; and that was, how to dispose of *Richard* their late Sovereign. The Bishop of *Carlisle* ventured to make a smart Speech in his Defence, and against *Henry*; for which he was deprived of his Bishoprick and imprisoned,

but soon released. The Result of the Parliament's Deliberation on this Head, was very extraordinary: They resolved, That *Richard* should be confined during Life, and maintained in a princely Manner; but if his Deliverance should any Ways be attempted, he should suffer Death: Which was in effect condemning him to die, at the same Time that they pretended to grant him his Life. Soon after, *Henry* removed him from the *Tower* to *Leeds-Castle* in *Kent*, and from thence to *Pontefract-Castle* in *Yorkshire*.

The Convocation being sitting at the same Time with the Parliament, *Henry* thought it so necessary for his Establishment on the Throne, to make the Clergy his Friends, that he sent the Earls of *Northumberland* and *Westmoreland* to assure them, that he would maintain them in all their Privileges and Immunities, and was ready to join with them in extirpating *Heresy*, and punishing obstinate *Hereticks*: Than which, nothing could please the Clergy better.

To preserve the Esteem of the rest of his Subjects, he affected great Popularity, discovering, on all Occasions, a Regard for their Liberties, and his Aversion to *Richard's* tyrannical Government. With this View, he caused all the blank Bonds, which *Richard* had extorted, as well from the City of *London*, as from the 17 Counties, to be brought into *Chancery*, and publicly burnt.

But all this did not hinder a Conspiracy being formed against him, which broke out so early as at the Beginning of the Year 1400. The chief Conspirators were the Dukes of *Surrey* and *Exeter*, *Thomas Spencer* Earl of *Gloucester*, and the Earl of *Salisbury*. These had been *Richard's* chief Favourites, to whom he had given the Estates of the Earls of *Arundel* and *Warwick*, and the Duke of *Gloucester*. Their first Design

sign was to assassinate King *Henry*, in order to restore *Richard*. But this Method failing, they had recourse to Arms. They soon got together a good Body of Forces, and encamped near *Cirencester*. They went and lodged within the Town, the Duke of *Surrey* and Earl of *Salisbury* at one Inn, and the Duke of *Exeter* and Earl of *Gloucester* at another, whilst the Army lay without; and no Care had been taken to guard the Gates. The Mayor, taking Advantage of this Oversight, raised 400 of the Townsmen in the Night, and having shut the Gates, attacked the two Inns where the two Lords were. They defended themselves a great Part of the Night, though they had none but their Domesticks with them. At last, the Inn, where the Duke of *Surrey* and the Earl of *Salisbury* were, was broke open, and the two Lords were taken and beheaded on the Spot, by the Mayor's Order. The Duke of *Exeter* and Earl of *Gloucester* escaped over the Houses, and coming to the Camp, found their Army had deserted. They were soon after taken, and both likewise beheaded.

The Suppression of this Conspiracy was soon followed by the Death of the late King. Some say, he was starved to Death, but the most commonly received Account is this, That Sir *Piers Exton* coming to *Pontefract*, accompanied by eight Men, *Richard* observed that the same Day his Victuals were not tasted at Dinner as usual, and asking the Reason, the Person, whose Office it was, told him, that *Exton* had brought Orders from the King to the contrary. At which *Richard* took up a Knife and struck him on the Face. *Exton* and his Accomplices rushing in at the Noise, the poor King perceived he was going to be assassinated; but resolving to sell his Life at as dear a Rate as possible, he snatched a Pole-Ax from

one of them, and defended himself with such Fury, that he killed four of them. At last coming accidentally near *Exton*, who was got upon a Chair, the Assassin struck him so violent a Blow on the Head with a Club, that he fell dead at his Feet. Such was the End of this unhappy Prince, when he was about thirty-three Years old. His Body was brought from *Pontefract*, and interred in *Langley Church* in *Hertfordshire*; but *Henry V.* removed it to *Westminster-Abbey*, and erected for him and his first Queen, *Anne*, a noble Tomb of Grey Marble, on which lie their Effigies of gilt Copper.

About the Time of the late Conspiracy, *Owen Glendour* began to appear in *Wales*. He got the *Welsh* to renounce their Subjection to *England*, and to own him for their Sovereign. From which Time he stiled himself Prince of *Wales*, and maintained his Authority there for some Years. He made an Incurſion into *Herefordshire*, and in a Battle took *Edmund Mortimer*, Earl of *March*, Prisoner; for which King *Henry* was not sorry. *Glendour* still continuing to ravage the Country bordering upon *Wales*, the King marched against him in 1401, but returned without Success; the Enemy having retired to the Mountains, it was impossible to attack him. He had no better Success in his second Expedition, the next Year, which he made with a more numerous Army. *Glendour* again retiring to the Mountains of *Snowden*, the King could not come at him. And as he was preparing to ravage the Country, the Weather on a sudden grew so very stormy, that he was forced to desist. The *English* fancied *Glendour* had made a Contract with the Devil to raise these Storms, in order to prevent the Ruin of his Country.

The Parliament, which met in 1401, confirmed and enlarged the Statute



Statute of *Provisors*, commonly called the Statute of *Præmunire*, against those who solicited *Bulls*, called *Provisors*, from *Rome*, for *Benefices* either actually *vacant*, or that should become so ; as also against those who carried into the *Ecclesiastical Courts*, Causes that belonged to the *Civil*. The Penalty was Forfeiture of Lands and Goods, with Imprisonment during the King's Pleasure. Several other Offences of the like Nature were in after Times made liable to the same Penalty ; which gave a great Blow to the Pope's Power in *England*.

Though *Henry* did not think fit to refuse his Assent to this Statute, yet, to keep fair with the Clergy, he connived at the frequent Breach of it ; and by the Influence of the Court, and the Intrigues of the Clergy, an Act was obtained in this very Session, for the burning of *Hereticks*, occasioned by the great Increase of the *Wickliffites*, or *Lollards*. One *William Sawtre*, a *Lollard*, Parish Priest of *St. Osith* in *London*, was immediately after condemned by the *Ecclesiastical Court*, and being delivered over to the *secular Power*, was burnt alive by Virtue of the King's Writ (called the *Writ de Hæretico comburendo*) directed to the Mayor and Sheriffs of *London*. Thus *Henry* sought to please the Clergy, at the Expence of the Lives of honest and conscientious Men, called *Hereticks*, only because they differed from the then commonly received Opinions, which were the Effect of gross Ignorance, Popish Priestcraft and Superstition.

In 1402, the King was alarmed with a Rumour industriously spread, that *Richard* was alive, and had raised a great Army in *Scotland*, in order to come and dethrone the Usurper ; and Papers were stuck up at all the publick Places, containing the severest Invectives against *Henry*. For this, Sir *Roger Clarendon*, na-

tural Son of the renowned *Black Prince*, eight Monks, and several other Persons, suffered Death. About the same Time, the King married *Joan of Navarre*, Widow of the Duke of *Bretagne* ; but he had no Issue by her.

This Year the *Scots* invaded *England* twice, and were both Times defeated by the Earl of *Northumberland* and *Henry Hotspur* his Son. In the first Battle at *Nisbet*, *Hepborne*, the *Scotch General*, was slain ; and in the second, at *Halydown-Hill*, the Earl of *Douglafs* the other General, and a great many Persons of Distinction, were taken Prisoners.

These Successes, advantageous as they were, laid the Foundation of a Quarrel between the King and the Earl of *Northumberland*. The King would have it, that the Prisoners of Distinction belonged to him, and ordered the Earl to deliver them into his Hands. The Earl on the other Hand thought, that after such signal Services he had a Right to the Benefit of their Ransom. This Affair occasioned first a great Coldness between the King and the Earl ; which growing at last to a thorough Animosity, the Earl entered into a Conspiracy with his Brother the Earl of *Worcester*, his Son *Hotspur*, and other Lords, to dethrone *Henry* ; which broke out in 1403. For this Purpose they settled a Correspondence with several *Scotch* Lords, and sent Agents to *Owen Glendour*, and *Edmund Mortimer*, who was still a Prisoner in *Wales*, to persuade them to come into the Plot. It was agreed to place *Mortimer* on the Throne, that the Earl of *Northumberland* should hold all *North* of the *Trent*, and do Homage to the Crown for it, and that *Glendour* should have all *West* of the *Severn*. Matters being thus settled, the Earl of *Worcester*, and *Henry Hotspur*, marched with an Army and joined *Glendour*, who

who was advanced as far as *Shropshire*. King *Henry* having an Army in Readiness, marched against them, and found them encamped at *Shrewsbury*. Both Armies soon engaged. The King was like to have been worsted at first, and had his Horse killed under him; but in the End gained a complete Victory. Young *Percy* [*Hotspur*] was slain in the Battle; and the Earl of *Worcester* was taken Prisoner, and beheaded. The Earl of *Northumberland*, who had been detained by Sickness in the *North*, being recovered, was marching to reinforce the Malcontents: But hearing of their Defeat, came and threw himself on the King's Mercy, who remembering that he had been the chief Instrument in procuring him the Crown, thought fit to pardon him.

In 1405, Prince *Henry*, the King's eldest Son, led an Army against the *Welsh*, and defeated them in two Battles; in the latter of which *Glendour's* Son was taken Prisoner. Nevertheless, the *Welsh* depending on Assistance from *France*, continued in their Revolt, in Hopes of better Success.

Another Thing which encouraged *Glendour* to hold out, was, in all likelihood, his Knowledge of a Plot, which had been for some Time hatched in *England*, and broke out this Year. The first Author of it was *Richard Scroop*, Archbishop of *York*, whom *Richard* had raised to that Dignity. He drew several Lords into a Confederacy to dethrone *Henry*; among whom were *Thomas Mowbray* Earl Marshall, the Lords *Bardolph*, *Hastings*, and *Falconbridge*, and even the Earl of *Northumberland*, whom the King had lately pardoned. They levied a great Number of Troops, and drew them together at *York*, where they published a severe Manifesto against the King. *Henry* was not less happy

in having this Conspiracy crushed than in the former. *Ralph Nevil* Earl of *Westmoreland*, being then in the *North*, in order to prevent any IncurSIONS from the *Scots*, though he did not care to engage the Rebels, whose Forces were much superior to his; yet managed with such Artifice and Cunning, that, pretending he was desirous to join the Conspirators, he so imposed upon the Credulity of the Archbishop and *Mowbray*, that they agreed to have a Conference with him, which was held in an open Plain, the Guards on both Sides having advanced at equal Distance. Here, after great Familiarity and Pretensions of Friendship, to shew in his Turn how much he confided in them, he ordered his Guards to withdraw: And the two Lords, willing to shew the same Frankness, ordered theirs to withdraw likewise. They were scarce out of Sight, when the others returned upon full Gallop, and having seized the two Conspirators, carried them to *Westmoreland's* Army. This was such a Consternation to the whole Confederacy, that every one began to shift for himself. The King being come to *Pontefract* some Time after, the Archbishop and *Mowbray* were brought before him, and sentenced to be beheaded, which was executed accordingly. Then marching to besiege *Berwick*, whither the Earl of *Northumberland* and the Lord *Bardolph* had retired, he took the Lords *Hastings* and *Falconbridge* on the Road, who were likewise beheaded.

Upon the King's Approach, *Northumberland* and *Bardolph* took Refuge in *Scotland*, from whence the next Year they retired into *Wales*; where the *French* had made a Descent, in favour of *Glendour*, and, in Conjunction with him, had taken *Carmarthen*, and *Worcester*. They had Time to reembark, before *Henry* could come up with them; who notwithstanding



withstanding had the bad Fortune to return, without doing any Thing against the *Welsh*. All the Time the Earl of *Northumberland* was in *Wales*, he was contriving with *Glendour*, how to dethrone King *Henry*; to this End, having privately secured the Assistance of the *North*, where he had still great Interest, he and *Bardolph* returned to *Scotland*, and entered *England* with some *Scotch* Troops, by the *Northern* Counties, where they soon had a considerable Army, and advanced into *Yorkshire*. Here *Sir Thomas Rokeby*, Sheriff of *York*, having raised some Forces to retard their Progress till the King should come up, the Rebels thought fit to attack him; but it was to their Ruin; for they were totally routed by the Sheriff's Forces, the Earl of *Northumberland* slain, and Lord *Bardolph* taken Prisoner, who died soon after of his Wounds. This was in 1408.

Though the *French* took every Opportunity to do *Henry* ill Offices, yet they always pretended they never broke the Truce. They invaded *Guienne*, made several Attempts upon *Calais*, though in vain, supported *Glendour* in *Wales*, and encouraged the Malcontents in *England*. For all this, *Henry* being wholly intent upon securing himself at home, did not care to involve himself in Wars abroad. And so he never came to a Rupture with *France*, but the Truce was confirmed almost every Year, though as often broke by the *French*. At length, the intestine Divisions in *France*, between the Houses of *Orleans* and *Burgundy*, proved of singular Advantage to him. From that Time, the *French* being wholly taken up with their own Affairs, had no Leisure to concern themselves with other People's. By this Means, and by the Death of the Earl of *Northumberland*, *Glendour's* Affairs went quick-

ly to Decay. The *Welsh* despairing of his being ever able to do what he had promised them, began to desert him; upon which he privately withdrew from them, and spent the rest of his Days in some unknown Place. The Duke of *Orleans* sued to *Henry* for Assistance against the Duke of *Burgundy*, and he actually sent an Army into *France*, for that Purpose; but when they arrived, they found that a Peace had been concluded between the two Parties: And the *English* Army not being duly paid by those who had sent for them, made dreadful Havock in their Return.

Let us now go a little back, and see how Things were managed with regard to the Civil Government. In 1406, an Act was passed to secure the Freedom of Elections of Members to serve in Parliament. From hence it should seem, that the King had done something inconsistent with such Freedom. However, he gave his Assent to this Act, for the Sake of a Subsidy he intended to demand. When the Demand was made, the Parliament told him, there was no apparent Necessity for it. But in order to obtain it, he kept them so long sitting, that they were obliged to consent to it for their own Convenience. He did the same in 1410, when he rejected the Petition of the Commons, for repealing or altering the late barbarous Act against the *Lollards*; and to shew how averse he was to relax any Thing in this Point, caused one *Thomas Badby* to be burnt, who was the second that suffered Death on account of *Wickliff's* Opinions.

Notwithstanding *Henry's* Severity in the former Part of his Reign, when he had no more to fear from *France*, *Scotland*, *Wales*, or the Malcontents in *England*, he applied himself to govern in such a mild and popular Manner, that he gained the good

good Opinion of his Subjects, and removed, in great Measure, the ill Impressions that his former Behaviour had made upon them.

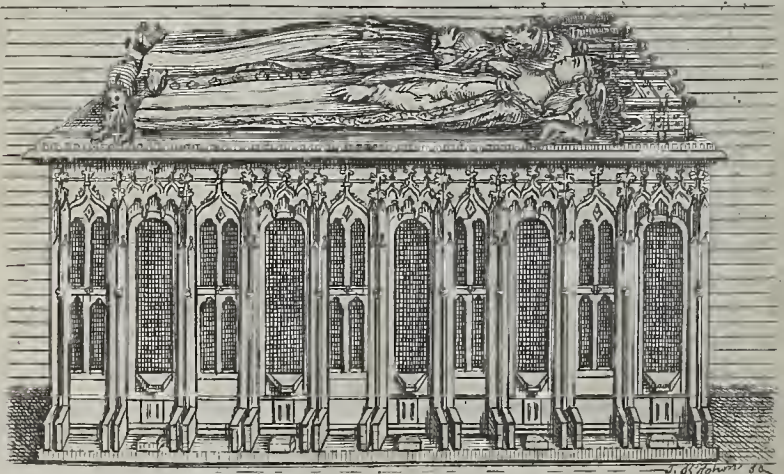
In the mean Time, the Prince of *Wales* suffered himself to be so debauched by evil Companions, that he gave himself up to riotous and disorderly Practices; and his and his Associates extravagant Pranks were the common Subject of Discourse. One of his Companions being arraigned for Felony, he resolved to be present at the Trial, and while Sentence was passing, in a great Passion struck the Judge on the Face; who immediately ordered him to be arrested and committed to the *King's-Bench*. The Prince hereupon relenting, in a submissive Manner suffered himself to be led quietly to Prison.

King *Henry* did not long enjoy his State of Tranquillity. He was seized with a Distemper which put an End to his Life on *March 20, 1413*, in the forty-sixth Year of his Age, and fourteenth of his Reign. His Corpse was removed to *Canterbury*, and there interred. An extreme Jealousy for the Crown was his distinguishing Character, and the Desire of preserving it, the sole Motive of his

Actions, which had very little worth or eminent in them: One Thing; at least, ought to be looked upon as an indelible Stain to his Memory, *viz.* his being the first Burner of Hereticks; though that, perhaps, is the Reason, why some have been so lavish in his Praises.

He had by *Mary de Bohun*, his first Wife, Daughter of *Humphrey*, Earl of *Hereford*, four Sons, *viz.* *Henry*, who succeeded him; *Thomas*, Duke of *Clarence*; *John*, Duke of *Bedford*; and *Humphrey*, Duke of *Gloucester*; and two Daughters, *Blanch*, married to the Elector *Palatine*; and *Philippa*, to the King of *Denmark* and *Norway*.

*Robert Knolles*, who had bravely signalized himself in King *Edward's* Wars in *France*, *William of Wickham* Bishop of *Winchester*, and *Sir Richard Whittington* Mayor of *London*, were eminent in this Reign for their Works of Charity and munificent Foundations. The Poets *Geoffrey Chaucer*, and *John Gower*, reckoned the first Reformers of the *English* 'Tongue, also flourished about this Time. There was a dreadful Plague in *London*, in *Henry's* Reign, which swept away above 30,000 Persons.







*W. H. W. sc*

## HENRY V. 1413 — 1422.

**H**ENRY IV. was succeeded by his eldest Son Prince *Henry*, born at *Monmouth*, in 1388, and thence called *Henry of Monmouth*. His dissolute Behaviour, in his Father's Life-Time, made the People somewhat fearful how he might prove, when he came to ascend the Throne. Among other Pranks, he and his Companions, it is said, would lay in Wait for, and rob his Father's and his own Receivers on the High-Way. However, a certain Nobleness of Mind, and Greatness of Soul, often discovered itself amidst all his Extravagances, which were thought to be chiefly owing to Want of Employment, in one of his lively and active Spirit: For his Father being jealous of his forward and enterprizing Genius, had excluded him from all Posts both Civil and Military, after he had given such signal Proofs of his Courage and Conduct in his Expedition against the *Welsh*. Be that as it will, the Nation was soon eased of its Fears; and *Henry*, of a loose and

vicious Prince, became a wife, virtuous, just and great King.

Having been proclaimed by the Name of *Henry V.* immediately after his Father's Death, viz. *March 20, 1413*, he was crowned on the 9th of *April* following. After which, the first Thing he did, was to send for his old Companions; when, to the Surprise of all, he exhorted them in a very pathetic Manner to forsake their evil Courses; and making them handsome Presents, charged them at the same Time, on Pain of his Displeasure, never to come to Court. He then chose a Council of the gravest and ablest of his Subjects, turned out such Judges as had abused their Authority, continued the deserving, particularly the Chief Justice *Gascoigne*, who had committed him for his Insult in Court, when Prince of *Wales*, and filled up the Places of those he had removed with Persons of the like Honour and Integrity. He did also the same with respect to inferior Magistrates. By which wise Beginnings,

1413.

ginnings, he entirely secured the Affection and Esteem of his Subjects, and continued to do it through the whole Course of his Reign.

The only Blot upon his Character was his persecuting the *Wickliffs* or *Lollards*. But that was owing more to the Superstition of the Times, and the bloody Zeal of the Bishops and Clergy, than to his own natural Temper; and he often expressed his Dislike of such Proceedings. However, by the Contrivance of the Bishops, Sir *John Oldcastle*, Baron of *Cobham*, a Man of great Merit, whom they looked upon to be the chief Protector of the *Lollards*, was apprehended and committed to the *Tower*; and being convened before the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and some of his Brethren, was pronounced a *Heretick*; and delivered over to the secular Power. His Execution would soon have followed, if he had not escaped out of the *Tower*, and fled into *Wales*; where he lay concealed four Years. At length, while the King was in *France*, he was retaken and brought to *London*, and there hung up by the Middle with a Chain, and burnt alive. He shewed a wonderful Firmness and Resolution to the last, and was the first of the Nobility who suffered on account of Religion.

Whilst Lord *Cobham* lay hid in *Wales*, some *Lollards* met together to worship God in *St. Giles's Fields*, which was then overgrown with Bushes. They chose this for a Place of Secrecy, as their Meetings had been forbid by Proclamation. The Bishops having Information of their being together, by Means of some false Brethren, as it should seem; they persuaded the King, that there were 20,000 of them in Arms, with *Oldcastle* at their Head, who were conspiring against his Person. The King believing the Story, and hav-

ing a good deal of Fire in his Temper, marched with some Troops to the Place about Midnight, where finding about 80 or 100, he fell upon them, killed about 20; and took 60; some of whom were afterwards hanged and burnt, and among them, Sir *Roger Aston*.

*Henry* had no sooner mounted the Throne, but he began to think of recovering what the *English* had lost in *France*. A favourable Juncture offered, by the Revival of the Animosities and Civil Wars between the *Orleans* and *Burgundy* Factions; of which King *Henry* did not fail to make his Advantage. *Charles VI.* had been King of *France* for many Years. But this Prince being frequently afflicted with Fits of Lunacy, was incapable of governing; and the Struggle about the Guardianship of the King and Kingdom, was the Rise of these violent Commotions; the *Dauphin*, in the mean Time, being only a Tool played off by both Parties as their Occasions required. The *Orleans* Faction at length prevailing, the Duke of *Burgundy* sought to make an Alliance with King *Henry*. This gave him an Opportunity to interfere in the Affairs of *France*; and taking the Advantage of these intestine Divisions, he by his Ambassadors renewed his Claim to that Kingdom, as Heir to King *Edward III.* But lest this should be thought too much, the Ambassadors, saving the Right of their Sovereign, contented themselves with demanding *Normandy, Anjou, Main, Touraine, &c.* and all that had been yielded to *Edward III.* by the Treaty of *Bretigny*. This occasioned several Embassies between *England* and *France*, and the Truce between the two Crowns was renewed from Time to Time. When *Henry* made his first Demand, it is said, the *Dauphin* in Derision sent him a Tun of Tennis Balls; and

*Henry*



*Henry* sent him Word back, that he would shortly return the Present in such Balls as would break the strongest Gates of *Paris*. At length, the *French* Ambassadors proposed a Marriage between King *Henry* and *Catherine*, Daughter of *Charles VI.* which *Henry* consented to, provided it was to be only the Consequence of the Peace, and not the Foundation of it, in Prejudice of the Resstitution he demanded. However, the *English* Ambassadors were instructed to abate in their Demands from Time to Time; and at length reduced them to the Treaty of *Bretigny*, and a Million of Crowns for the Princess's Portion; which Sum they would lower, on Condition that, if two Sons should be born of this Marriage, the youngest should have *Montreuil* and *Ponthieu*, in full Sovereignty. To this the *French* thought fit to return no Answer, and *Henry* prepared for War; the Duke of *Burgundy* in the mean Time carrying on several private Negotiations with him, not sticking to betray his Country in order to accomplish his Designs.

Whilst Affairs were in this Situation, the King called a Parliament at *Leicester*, in which a severe Act was passed against the *Lollards*, viz. That all the Magistrates of the Kingdom should take an Oath to do their utmost to suppress *Hereticks*, and assist the Bishops therein. It was also enacted, that whosoever read the Scriptures in *English*, should, as *Hereticks* and Traitors, if they continued obstinate, be first hanged and then burnt. Immediately a severe Persecution commenced against the poor *Lollards*. Many were executed; some fled the Kingdom; and others, thro' Terror at these shocking Cruelties, abjured their Religion. And yet the Commons passed this Act, only that the Suspicion of Heresy in their Body might not de-

feat a Project they had in View against the Ecclesiasticks; as it had done twice in the late Reign. This was an Address to the King to seize upon the exorbitant Estates of the Clergy. This exceedingly alarmed the whole Body; and, after several Consultations, they agreed to give up a Part, in order to save the rest; and so delivered into the King's Hands 110 *Alien Priories*. Another Method to avert the Blow was, for the Archbishop of *Canterbury* to make a laboured Speech to the King in Parliament, in order to divert him from Affairs at home, by engaging him in Wars abroad. Accordingly he used such Arguments to persuade the King to attempt the Conquest of *France*, as entirely suited with the Ambition and martial Temper of the young Monarch. And the Commons, at last, approving of the Design, granted him a Subsidy of 300,000 Marks. And now People's Minds being wholly taken up with this Affair, the Project against the Clergy dropt of Course. In this Parliament, *Henry Percy*, Grandson to the late Earl of *Northumberland*, was restored to the Honour and Estates of his Father and Grandfather.

The Negotiations were renewed, and still carried on, between *France* and *England*; but Matters were come to that pass, that it was easy to see, both Sides sought only to gain Time. All Hopes of Accommodation being at an End, when *Henry* was just going to embark, a Plot was discovered against his Person; for which the Earl of *Cambridge*, the Lord Treasurer *Scroope*, and *Thomas Grey*, a Privy Counsellor, were executed. It is thought they were bribed by *French* Gold to engage in this Conspiracy.

This Affair being over, *Henry* embarked with his Troops in *August*, 1415, and landed on the 21st at

1415. *Havre de Grace* in *Normandy*. He marched directly and laid Siege to *Harfleur*, which he took after a vigorous Resistance; and expelling the Inhabitants, peopled it with *English*. This was a good Beginning, though it cost him dear by the Loss of Abundance of his Men, who were either killed in the Siege, or died of the Flux, which raged also very violently among those who survived. Notwithstanding which, he resolved to march to *Calais*; and so passing thro' *Caux* and *Eu*, he after a most fatiguing and difficult March crossed the *Somme*, on the 19th of *October*; where the *French* Army under the Constable d' *Albert*, four Times, some say six Times, as numerous as the *English*, were waiting to give him Battle, in full Confidence of Victory. *David Gam*, a *Welsh* Captain, being sent to view their Situation, on his Return said, 'There were enough to kill, enough to take Prisoners, and enough to run away; with which brave Saying, the King was not a little pleased. The *French* making no Haste to advance, Henry, after encouraging his Men, and exhorting them to put their Trust in God, the Giver of Victory, thought fit to attack them first, being determined either to conquer or die. The Battle began at Ten in the Morning, and lasted till almost Five in the Afternoon, *Oct.* 25, 1415, when by the surprizing Courage and Conduct of the King, and the Bravery of his Troops, the whole numerous *French* Army, said to consist of more than 100,000 Men, was entirely defeated. The Constable d' *Albert*, the Duke of *Alençon*, several other Princes and great Men, and Officers of Note, with 10,000 private Soldiers, were slain. Among the Prisoners, who were very numerous, were the Dukes of *Orleans* and *Bourbon*, and many other Persons of Distinction. The *English* lost only the Duke of

*York*, and the Earl of *Suffolk*, a few Knights, and 400 private Men; though some make their Loss much less. The King first returned solemn Thanks to God for this great Victory; after which, he asked the Name of the Castle which stood near the Field of Battle; and being told it was called *Agincourt*, Then, says he, in all Time to come, the Action of this Day shall be called the Battle of *Agincourt*. The next Morning, Henry continued his March to *Calais*, and about the Middle of *November* returned in Triumph to *England*.

As to the State of *France* after this famous Battle, the Civil War between the contending Parties broke out with more Fury than ever; which was of the greatest Advantage to Henry, and contributed more to bring about his Designs, than his continuing the War would have done. His Alliance was courted sometimes by one Party, and sometimes by the other, and he carried on his Negotiations in such a Manner, during the whole Year 1416, and Part of the next, as to give them Time to destroy one another. The Earl of *Armagnac*, new Constable, was in the Possession of the Government, and of the King's Person, and was a mortal Enemy to the *Burgundians*. From him the *Orleans* Faction were now called *Armagnacs*. Henry was desirous of an Alliance with the Duke of *Burgundy*, which that Prince would not have entered into, if he could have compassed his End, of being again at the Head of the Government, without it. But not being able to do this, a Treaty, after several private Negotiations, was at length agreed to, which turned much to Henry's Advantage. The Constable, in the mean Time, amused him with a Negotiation, till on a sudden he besieged *Harfleur*, both by Sea and Land; but the Duke

The Battle of  
*Agincourt*.

of



of *Bedford*, the King's Brother, being sent with a Fleet against him, destroyed the *French* Fleet, and forced him to raise the Siege. The Earl of *Armagnac*, being of a violent Temper, and exceeding jealous of his Authority, had not only caused the Duke of *Burgundy*, by his cruel and revengeful Proceedings against his Adherents, to throw himself into the Arms of King *Henry*; but fearing that *Isabella* of *Bavaria*, Wife of *Charles* VI. who shewed a great Uneasiness at being forced to be governed by a Subject, might find Means to remove him, he got the King and *Dauphin* to consent to her being carried as a Prisoner to *Tours*; for which, she ever after had a mortal Hatred against the *Dauphin* her Son; which produced very important Effects, to the Advantage of the King of *England*.

Affairs being in this Situation, whilst the Duke of *Burgundy* approached *Paris* at the Head of an Army, King *Henry* landed in *Normandy*, about the End of *July*, 1417; where he soon made a great Progress, took *Caen*, and several other Places. The Campaign lasted all the Winter with great Success. The Town of *Falaise* was taken in *December*, and the Castle surrendered in *February*, 1418. He became Master of *Evreux* in *May*; took *Cherbourg*, after a Siege of three Months; and *Roan*, which held out almost as long again, in the Beginning of the Year 1419; the Besieged having been reduced by Famine to the last Extremity. And now all *Normandy*, except a few Castles, was again fallen under the Dominion of the *English*, 215 Years after it had been taken from them in the Reign of King *John*.

In the mean Time, the Duke of *Burgundy* had found Means to rescue Queen *Isabella* from her Confinement at *Tours*, and conducted her to

*Troye* in *Champagne*, where she presently assumed the Title of Regent, and joined with the Duke of *Burgundy*, whose Enemy she had formerly been, against the *Dauphin* and Constable. The *Burgundians* prevailed in *Paris*, and made a cruel Slaughter of the *Armagnac* Faction, threw the Earl of *Armagnac*, the Constable, into Prison, and soon after hauled him out and murdered him, and ignominiously dragged him along the Streets. After which, the Queen and Duke of *Burgundy* entered *Paris* in Triumph, and assumed the whole Administration of the Government in the Name of the King. The *Dauphin* escaped, and took upon himself the Title of Regent, to create new Troubles.

And now in all likelihood the Duke of *Burgundy* would soon have broke with *Henry*, had he not been afraid lest the *Dauphin*, who had a strong Party in *France*, might at length dispossess him of his Authority. To keep up his Jealousy, *Henry* very politickly affected to listen to some Proposals of the *Dauphin*; and carried on a Negotiation with him, though he knew, that only the Duke of *Burgundy*, who was Master of the King, could make an authentick Peace. The Duke also treated with *Henry* with a View to frighten the *Dauphin*; with whom, at the same Time, he made several Attempts for a Reconciliation, without Success; but at last it was brought about, and there was Danger of their uniting against *Henry*; who seeing how Matters stood, on a sudden surprised and took *Pontoise*, which opened him a Way to the very Gates of *Paris*. Nevertheless his Affairs had been in a sad Situation, by having all *France* united against him, if the *Dauphin*, bearing still an inveterate Hatred in his Heart, had not caused the Duke of *Burgundy* to be assassinated at a Conference that

was held between them. This immediately gave a Turn to the Affairs of France, and brought them to such a Crisis as Henry desired. For now the young Duke of Burgundy, who had the King in his Hands, joined with the Queen in making up Matters with Henry upon his own Terms, in order to be revenged on the Dauphin. And so, after some Time spent in Negotiation, a Treaty was concluded at Troye, on the 21st of May, 1420, whereby it was agreed, that Henry should marry the Princess Catharine, that he should be Regent of the Kingdom during King Charles's Life, and that after his Death, the Crown of France should descend to the King of England and his Heirs for ever. This Treaty was sworn to by the Queen and Duke of Burgundy in the Name of King Charles, and confirmed by the States of France. Henry hereupon espoused the Princess Catharine, and the Marriage was solemnized on the 30th of May. And now the English and Burgundians joining their Forces against the Dauphin, took Sens, in June; Montreuil soon after, and Melun, in November, which held out a long and obstinate Siege; after which, the two Kings made their Entry together into Paris, and the two Queens the next Day.

In February, 1421, Henry arrived in England with his Queen, who was crowned a few Days after. He left the Duke of Clarence, his Brother, to command his Army in France, who was slain by a Body of Scots in the Dauphin's Service, in the Battle of Baugé. The Parliament, which met in May, granted the King a Subsidy for carrying on the War against the Dauphin; but at the same Time, in a Petition they presented, told him, that the Conquest of France proved the Ruin of England.

In June, the King returned to France, and drawing his Forces to-

gether, marched to the Relief of Chartres, and forced the Dauphin to raise the Siege. Then he took Dreux, and in October laid Siege to Meaux, which was not wholly subjected till the Beginning of May following. About which Time, Queen Catharine arrived from England, and the two Courts kept their Whitsun-Holidays together at Paris, in a grand and magnificent Manner; though Henry's Court was much more numerous and splendid than Charles's.

In the Midst of all this Glory, whilst Henry was pleasing himself with the Prospect of entirely subduing the Dauphin and his Party, and was actually marching against him, he fell sick by the Way, and was forced to return back to Vincennes, where he died on the last Day of August, 1422, in the 34th Year of his Age, after a short but triumphant Reign of nine Years, four Months and eleven Days. His Body was brought over to England, and buried in Westminster-Abbey. He was, upon the whole, a Prince of an excellent Character, and had all the Qualifications requisite to a great Man. He was a good Soldier and an able Politician, capable of forming great Projects, and as skilful and indefatigable to put them in Execution. Though his Courage is unquestionable, of which he gave a most glorious Proof in the Battle of Agincourt, yet his Success in France was more owing to the intestine Divisions of that Kingdom, and his Policy in turning them to his Advantage, than to his Arms. He was a great Lover of Justice, chaste and temperate, at least after his Accession; and, according to the Religion of those Times, devout and pious. He had, by his Queen Catharine, only one Son, Henry, born Dec. 6, 1421, at Windsor, from thence called Henry of Windsor; whose Fortune proved the Reverse of his Father's, as we are now going to see.

HENRY





T. Kitchen sc.

## H E N R Y VI. 1422.—1461.

**H**ENRY of *Windfor* was scarce nine Months old, when he succeeded his Father, the great *Henry V.* He was immediately proclaimed not only King of *England*, but Heir of *France*, pursuant to the Treaty of *Troye*; and upon the Death of *Charles VI.* who died in less than two Months after, the Duke of *Bedford*, Uncle to the Infant King, ordered him to be proclaimed King of *France*, at *Paris*, according to the same Treaty; and took on himself the Regency of that Kingdom, as the late King his Brother had desired, when near his End. On the other hand, the *Dauphin*, as soon as he heard of his Father's Death, caused himself to be proclaimed King of *France*, and was crowned in *November* at *Poitiers*. Thus *France* had two Kings at the same Time, who for many Years contended for the Sovereignty of the whole Kingdom, with doubtful Fortune, till in the End, *Henry VI.* lost all that *Henry V.* by

his Valour and Conduct, and a Conjunction of lucky Incidents, had acquired.

The Council in *England*, at the Head of which was the Duke of *Gloucester*, the younger of the King's Uncles, ordered every thing that was necessary for the good Government of the Kingdom, till the Parliament should meet; which they summoned for the 9th of *November*, and which the Duke of *Gloucester* was commissioned under the Great Seal to hold in the King's Name.

The main Business of their Meeting (when the Queen sat among the Lords with the Royal Infant in her Lap) was to settle the Government during the King's Minority. They named the Council, filled up the great Offices of the Crown, and appointed *John* Duke of *Bedford*, as being the elder of the late King's Brothers, Protector of the Kingdom; but as he was Regent of *France*, the Duke of *Gloucester* was empowered to act as Protector in his Absence.

*Humphrey  
the good Duke  
of Gloucester*

*Humphrey*

This done, they appointed *Thomas Beaufort Duke of Exeter*, and *Henry Bishop of Winchester*, both Sons of *John of Gaunt*, by *Catharine Roet* his third Wife, and great Uncles to the King, to be his Governors to take care of his Person and Education.

Whilst *England* and *Ireland* enjoyed a profound Peace, *France* was the Seat of War; where *Charles* endeavouring to recover the Throne of his Ancestors, and the Duke of *Bedford* to secure for King *Henry*, what the late King had obtained by the Treaty of *Troye*, numberless Lives were lost in the Quarrel, which lasted upwards of 30 Years.

The Regent Duke of *Bedford*, pursuing the Scheme of the late King his Brother, intended first to reduce all the Places *Charles* still held in the *Ile of France*, and the neighbouring Provinces, and then to attack him beyond the *Loire*. One of King *Charles's* Generals having taken *Meulan* by Storm, in *January* 1423, the Regent laid Siege to it in *February*, and retook it.

Not long after, the *English* under the Earl of *Salisbury*, and the *Burgundians*, boldly attacked and defeated *Charles's* Army, consisting of *French* and *Scots*, in the Battle of *Crevant*. A great many were killed on the Spot and taken Prisoners, and among them several Officers of Distinction; but Authors differ as to the Numbers. After this, the Earl of *Salisbury*, having finished the Reduction of *Champagne*, entered the *Ile of France*, and made himself Master of *Coucy* with some other Castles. And the Regent in the mean Time took *Crotot* in *Picardy*.

On the other hand, some of King *Charles's* Generals took *Ham*, *Guise* and *Compiègne* by Surprise; but they were all three soon retaken by the *English*. About the same Time, a Body of *English*

Troops, under *John de la Pole*, Brother of the Earl of *Suffolk*, was defeated at *Gravelle* in *Maine*, with the Loss of 1400 Men (according to some but 300, so much do Authors differ) and *Pole* himself was taken Prisoner. But this Advantage no Way compensated for the Loss King *Charles* had sustained in the Battle of *Crevant*, which was followed by a much greater the next Year, 1424.

The Regent being informed that some of *Charles's* Party had taken *Ivry* on the Frontiers of *Normandy*, by Surprise, marched with the utmost Expedition into those Parts, and laid Siege to it about the Beginning of *July*. It soon capitulated to surrender on the 15th of *August*, if not relieved by that Day. King *Charles* receiving News of this, determined to relieve the Place at all Adventures, and to make use of the Troops which the Duke of *Milan* had sent him, and the *Scotch* Troops lately arrived, for that Purpose. To these joining some of his own, he made up an Army of 20,000 Men, the strongest he had ever had. The Earl of *Douglas* commanded in Chief, accompanied by all the Nobility of *Charles's* Party, in hopes of sharing in the Glory of this Expedition. When they came in View of the *English* Army before *Ivry*, on the 13th of *August*, they found them so strongly intrenched, that not thinking it proper to attack them, they turned about, and laid Siege to *Verneuil*, which soon surrendered. The Regent's Army having been reinforced by the Earl of *Salisbury*, amounted to about 15,000. On the 15th *Ivry* surrendered according to the Capitulation, and the next Day, the Regent marched towards the *French* Army, which was still at *Verneuil*. Having very advantageously posted himself, he waited for the *French* to attack him first; which they



they did, contrary to the Opinion of the Earl of *Douglas*, and had soon Cause to repent of it: For by the Valour and prudent Conduct of the Regent, they were totally routed and put to Flight. Five Thousand were slain according to some, others make them almost double the Number; among whom were the Earl of *Douglas* himself, and the Viscount of *Narbonne*, who, by raising Dissensions in the Council of War, had forced him to the Attack contrary to his better Judgment; as also the Earl of *Buchan*, and many other great Men and Officers of Distinction. This Victory cost the *English* about 2000 of their bravest soldiers. The next Day, *August* 17, the Regent invested *Verneuil*, which soon surrendered; and here, all the Baggage of the *French*, *Scotch*, and *Italian* Generals, and the Money for the Payment of the Army, fell into his Hands. Soon after, the brave Earl of *Salisbury* besieged and took *Mans*, the Capital of *Maine*, and before the End of the Campaign finished the Conquest of that Province.

A little before, *James I.* King of *Scotland* was set at Liberty, on Condition that the *Scots* should no longer assist the *French* against the *English*. He had been a Prisoner in *England* ever since the Year 1406. His Father, King *Robert*, was sending him to *France*, to be out of the Way of his Uncle the Duke of *Albany*, who aspired to the Crown. The young Prince sailing by the Coast of *Norfolk*, went on Shore to refresh himself; where he was seized and sent up to *Henry IV.* who confined him in the *Tower*. King *Robert* died a few Days after, and the Crown devolved upon his captive Son. The Duke of *Albany* assumed the Regency, and goverred all in *Scotland*, and was glad to have the King his Nephew detained in *England*, lest otherwise he should be

stripped of his Authority; and this is the Reason why *Scotland* attempted but little against the *English*, from that Time. But after the Death of the Duke of *Albany*, his Son and Successor in the Regency being but a weak Prince, the great Men in *Scotland*, whose Interest it was to stop the Progress of the *English* in *France*, sent several Aids to *Charles*. To prevent this for the future, and to get the *Scots* already in *France* recalled, was the Reason of giving King *James* his Liberty at this Time, upon the Condition before mentioned.

Towards the End of the Year 1424, *Edmund Mortimer* Earl of *March* died, in his Government of *Ireland*, without Issue; and *Richard* Duke of *York*, his Nephew, Son of *Anne*, his Sister, and the Earl of *Cambridge*, beheaded in the late Reign, whose elder Brother died without Issue, succeeded to all his Rights, particularly that of the Crown of *England*.

Hitherto the Affairs of the *English* had gone on prosperously in *France*, and the victorious Duke of *Bedford* was in a very fair Way of compleating its Conquest. By the Defeats at *Crevant* and *Verneuil*, and the Loss of so many Towns and Strong-Holds, King *Charles's* Condition was become almost desperate, insomuch that the *English* stiled him, in Derision, the *Little King of Bourges*. In these sad Circumstances, an Affair turned up in his Favour, which laid the first Foundation of the Ruin of the *English* in *France*. This was a Quarrel between the Duke of *Gloucester* and the Duke of *Brabant*, on account of *Jaqueline* of *Hainault*, Wife to the latter, through whom, at her Father's Death, he became possessed of *Hainault*, *Holland*, *Zeland*, and *Friesland*. But the being at Variance with her Husband, ordered Matters so, that she was carried

*Humphrey*

1426  
Humphrey

+

+

ried off by some *English* Knights and brought to *London*. Here she got her Marriage dissolved by the Anti-Pope, *Benedict XIII.* after which, the Duke of *Gloucester* took her to Wife, with a View of getting Possession of those rich Provinces. This he attempted by Force of Arms, and employed those Troops against the Duke of *Brabant*, which should have been sent to enable the Regent to carry on the War in *France*. The Forces of the Duke of *Burgundy* were also by this Means diverted that Way, who took Part with the Duke of *Brabant*, against the Duke of *Gloucester*. These Things occasioned the War in *France* to be, as it were, at a Stand for some Time; and gave *Charles* an Opportunity to contrive Measures for retrieving his Affairs. And one main Step towards this, was his drawing off the Earl of *Richmond* from the *English*, and by his Means the Duke of *Bretagne*, his Brother.

The Earl of *Richmond*, now Constable of *France*, having levied a considerable Army in *Bretagne*, entered *Normandy* and took *Pontorson* in 1426; but to his great Mortification, failed in his Attempt upon *St. James de Beuvron*. And a little after, the *English* under *Richard de Beauchamp*, Earl of *Warwick*, who commanded whilst the Regent was in *England*, were defeated with great Loss by the Bastard of *Orleans*, at the Blockade of *Montargis*.

Though the Affair of *Hainault* was a great Hindrance to the pushing the Conquest of *France*, yet the *English* were still much superior to King *Charles*, and there was a Probability of their gaining their Point notwithstanding, for which the Regent was resolved to exert himself to the utmost. If he could drive *Charles* beyond the *Loire*, his Business would soon be done. It was with this View, that the Earl of *Salisbury*, who had the Command

of the Army given him, with *Michael de la Pole*, Earl of *Suffolk*, *Talbot*, *Falstaff*, and other experienced Leaders, marched towards the City, and on *October 12, 1428*, laid Siege to *Orleans*. As he had spent 10 Months in taking the neighbouring Places that might annoy the Besiegers, the *French* guessing at his Design, had taken care to furnish *Orleans* with Stores, and the Bastard of *Orleans*, and several other brave Officers, had thrown themselves into the City. And when the Earl of *Salisbury* came before it, finding his Army not numerous enough to invest it on all Sides, he run up 60 Forts about it, six whereof upon the six chief Avenues of the City were much stronger than the rest, in order to hinder the *French* from throwing in fresh Succours; but these Precautions did not hinder them entirely, for Troops and Convoys still got in, though not without fighting their Way through. By this means the Garrison became much more numerous than it was at first. But at the same Time the Army of the Besiegers was greatly augmented by the Supplies continually sent by the Regent. During four Months there was nothing but Assaults, Sallies, and Skirmishes, both Sides behaving with the utmost Bravery and Resolution, and no one could guess what the Event would be, which was of the last Importance both to the *French* and *English*. The latter indeed had made themselves Masters of the Bulwark of the *Tournelles*, and of the Tower on the Bridge: but this occasioned the Loss of the brave *Thomas Montacute* Earl of *Salisbury*. For as he was taking a View of the City from a Window of this Tower, a Cannon-Ball, as it passed, took off his Check, and struck out one of his Eyes, so that he died in a few Days. The Earl of *Suffolk* succeeded him in the Command of the Army,



Army, and carried on the Siege with as much Vigour as before. The Regent, in the mean Time, by sending Recruits and Provisions, did all in his Power to support him. In *Lent*, 1429, he sent a Convoy of Salt-Fish from *Paris*, under the Conduct of *Falstaff*, with a Guard of 1700 Men; who was attacked in the Road by the Earl of *Clermont*, at the Head of 3000, whom *Charles* had sent for that Purpose. But *Falstaff* managed with such Bravery and Conduct, that he entirely defeated them, killed a great Number of them, and carried off his Convoy safe to the Besiegers. This famous Action went by the Name of *The Battle of Herrings*. King *Charles* was exceedingly troubled at this Defeat, and he began to think he should soon lose *Orleans*, which in all likelihood would quickly be followed by the entire Loss of his Kingdom; when a most surprising Accident gave a sudden Turn to his Affairs.

As the *French* Writers relate the Story, a Country Girl, of twenty-one Years of Age, born in *Lorraine*, called *Joan of Arc*, and afterwards commonly known by the Name of the *Maid of Orleans*, came to King *Charles's* Court at *Chinon*, just as he was thinking of retiring into *Dauphiné*, and told him that she had a Call from God to go and raise the Siege of *Orleans*, and cause him to be crowned at *Rheims*. She was, after some Examination, entertained as one who had a divine Commission to bring about these great Events. Accordingly when King *Charles* was going to send a Convoy to *Orleans*, *Joan*, who was commonly called *la Pucelle*, or the *Maid*, desired to accompany it. She accordingly did, and when the Convoy arrived near the City, on the 29th of *April*, the *Barlard of Orleans* sallied out to secure their Passage. A bloody Battle ensued, till the *English* being worsted

were forced to let the Convoy go in; and *Joan* entered *Orleans* in Triumph, to whom was ascribed the Success of the Day. After this, putting herself at the Head of a Detachment of the Garrison, she attacked, Sword in Hand, four of the chief Forts which the *English* had raised, and took them one after another with the Slaughter of 1000, the *French* say 8000 of the *English*, who were forced to raise the Siege on the 12th of *May*, seven Months after they had sat down before the Place. It is impossible to express the Consternation the *English* were in, on this Occasion. They retreated in the utmost Disorder, and fled every where before the *French*, though still superior to them in Number. The Places they had taken near the *Loire*, were soon retaken by the *French*; and at *Gergeau*, the Earl of *Suffolk* was made Prisoner. *Baugenci* held out the longest, but at last followed the Fate of the rest. After this, they were defeated in the Battle of *Patay* in *Beauce*; 2500 Men were slain, and the valiant *Talbot* taken Prisoner. Now *Charles* resolved to go to *Rheims*, the *Maid* still accompanying him, and animating the *French* wherever she came. *Troye* and *Chalons*, and the other Places in their Way, surrendered, and the Inhabitants of *Rheims* drove the *English* Garrison out of the City; when *Charles*, with the *Maid*, entered it in Triumph, and was soon after solemnly crowned. What raised the Courage of the *French*, was the Belief that this Heroine was sent from God to deliver *France*; and the Consternation and Panic of the *English* was owing to the Opinion they had, that she was a Witch, and acted by the Help of the Devil. Tho', after all, it is highly probable, that she was prepared and trained up to act the Part she did, by some great Politicians in *Charles's* Court, on purpose

1429

the

+

✂

Purpose to revive the Courage of the dismayed *French*. But what is most extraordinary, is, that this Contrivance should succeed according to their Wish. Fortune, after this, seemed entirely to have changed Sides: The *English*, instead of being victorious, were now every where vanquished. *Charles* continued his Conquests with great Rapidity, and Town after Town submitted to him without striking a Stroke: He made an Attempt upon *Paris*, but here indeed he failed; the Regent, who was marched to the Relief of *Normandy*, against the Constable *Richemond*, having managed Matters so well there, that the *Parisians* continued firm to the *English*. However, *Charles* attacked the Suburbs of *St. Honorius*, but was repulsed, and the *Maid* wounded.

Though after the raising the Siege of *Orleans*, and the Defeat at *Patay*, the Affairs of the *English* visibly declined every where in *France*, yet they now and then gained some Advantages, and took several Places; and they might still have recovered themselves, if divers unlucky Circumstances had not concurred to their Ruin. The Differences in *England*, especially between the Duke of *Gloucester* and the Cardinal Bishop of *Winchester*, and the Nation's being exhausted by this long War, of which they began to be tired, since the late ill Success of it, hindered them from having proper Supplies from *England*; and the Duke of *Burgundy*, growing cold to the *English*, did not assist them so vigorously as he used to do, and only seemed to want a proper Opportunity to leave them and join with *Charles*. However, the Duke of *Bedford* thinking it might be of Service to have *Henry* crowned in *France*, the young King having been first crowned in *England*, on November 6, 1429, went over to *Paris*, and

was crowned there at the End of the following Year, and returned to *England* in *January*, 1432, being then ten Years old. At the same Time that the *English* were unable to bring any considerable Army into the Field. King *Charles* by his Indolence, and the Factions in his Court, as well as from other Causes, was not in a much better Condition; so that pillaging and plundering, surprising and taking of Places, and fighting now and then in small Parties, was in a manner, all that was done on both Sides for some Years.

But let us see what became of the *Maid of Orleans*. As the Duke of *Burgundy* had not yet openly deserted the *English*, he laid Siege to *Compiègne*. Here *Jean* making a Sally on the 25th of *May*, 1430, was taken Prisoner by the *Burgundians*, and at the earnest Solicitations of the Duke of *Bedford*, was delivered up to the *English*; who carried her to *Roan*, and after a long Examination, had her condemned and burnt for a Witch, in the old Market-Place there, on *May* 30, 1431.

In 1435, a Congress was held at *Arras*, in which the Design of the *French* was not so much to conclude a Peace between the two Nations, as to give the Duke of *Burgundy* a plausible Handle to break with the *English*. Accordingly the *French* Ambassadors made such Proposals as they knew the *English* would not agree to: And upon their Refusal, the Duke of *Burgundy* concluded a separate Peace with King *Charles*. After this unlucky Incident, the Affairs of the *English* went to Ruin apace: And to add to their Misfortunes, the wise and valiant Duke of *Bedford* died about the same Time, who was, in all Respects, one of the most accomplished Princes in *Europe*. He was succeeded in the Regency of *France* by the Duke of *York*: But by the Management of the Duke of

1429  
*Hen: 6. crowned King of France at Paris 1431 being only 10 years old.*

*Somer-*



*Somerſet*, his Rival, his Patent was deferred for ſome Time, to the no ſmall Prejudice of the King's Affairs. Before he arrived, the City of *Paris*, the Capital of the Kingdom, fell into the Hands of the *French*, on the 13th of *April*, 1436.

The ſame Year, the Duke of *Burgundy* beſieged *Calais* with a great Army; but the Duke of *Glouceſter*, at the Deſire of the Council, went over to relieve it, and forced *Burgundy* to raiſe the Siege: After which he purſued him into *Flanders*, and having ravaged the Country, returned with a very large Booty. Some time after, the Duke of *Burgundy* made another Attempt upon *Calais*, but to as little Purpoſe as the former. *See: 5th Kate v. Shakeſpear*

In 1437, died *Catharine of France*, King *Henry's* Mother, and Widow of *Henry V.* After the Death of that great Prince, ſhe ſo far deſcended from her Rank and Dignity, as to marry *Owen Tudor*, a *Welſh* Gentleman, who was ſaid, whether upon good Grounds I know not, to have ſprung from the antient Kings of *Wales*. He had by her three Sons, *Edmund*, *Jasper*, and *Owen*. The eldeſt was created Earl of *Richmond*, by *Henry VI.* and married *Margaret*, only Daughter of *John Beaufort*, Duke of *Somerſet*, Grandſon of *John of Gaunt*. From this Marriage ſprung *Henry* Earl of *Richmond*, afterwards King of *England*, under the Name of *Henry VII.*

This Year the War was carried on with a good deal of Vigour on both Sides. King *Charles*, roused by the Duke of *Burgundy*, began to exert himſelf; and the *Engliſh*, under the valiant *Talbot*, (afterwards Earl of *Shrewſbury*) gained ſeveral great Advantages over the *French*; *Talbot* all along giving ſignal Proofs of his Valour and Conduct, as did the Duke of *York*, in raiſing the Siege of *Pontoiſe*. Things went on

in much the ſame Way for ſome Years, both Sides harraſſing one another, and endeavouring to make themſelves Maſters of ſeveral Places of Importance, ſometimes one Party prevailing, and ſometimes the other; till, in 1444, a Truce was concluded at *Tours*, between the two Nations, which was prolonged from Time to Time, till 1449.

Soon after the Commencement of the Truce, King *Henry*, by the Management of *William de la Pole*, Earl of *Suffolk*, and the Cardinal, married *Margaret of Anjou*,\* who arrived in *England* in 1445; and, being a Woman of great Parts, of a high Spirit, and a bold enterprizing Genius, got the whole Adminiſtration into her Hands; ſo that ſhe and her Favourites managed the King, who was of a weak and eaſy Nature, and had no Capacity for Government, juſt as they pleaſed. This cauſed great Uneaſineſs in the People, and Contentions among the great Men; and all Things in *England* were running into Confuſion, by the ambitious and deſtructive Meaſures of the Queen and her Miniſters. *Charles* being ſenſible of this Situation of the *Engliſh*, wanted to renew the War, and made great Preparations for it, ſoon as the Truce ſhould be expired; whiſt *England*, being wholly taken up with its intestine Broils, was altogether unconcerned about its Intereſt in *France*. And an Accident happened which gave *Charles* a Handle to begin ſooner than he intended. This was the ſurprizing of *Fougeres*, by *Suzienne*, Governor of *Lower Normandy* for the *Engliſh*, in 1448, whiſt the Truce ſubſiſted; and the Duke of *Somerſet*, then Regent, and the *Engliſh* Miniſtry, reſuſing to give the Satisfaction that *Charles* thought fit to demand, he firſt took ſeveral Places by Way of Reprisals, and then fell upon *Normandy* with four Armies.

\* Daughter of *Rogniet*, ſubular King of *Sicily*, *Naples* & *Jeruſalem*. ſhe was ſlain by the ſame ſuicide. one *Leon*, *Edward*, Prince of *Wales*, who was murdered.

at once, the *English* having made no Preparations for its Defence. *Roan* opened its Gates to the Conquerors; *Harfleur* was besieged and taken; a Body of *English* were defeated in the Battle of *Fourmigny*, the Duke of *Somerſet* ſurrendered *Caen*, *Cherburgh* ſubmitted; and, in ſhort, all *Normandy* was reduced under the Power of the *French*, before the End of *Auguſt*, 1450. *Guienne*, the next Year, followed the Fate of *Normandy*, after having been 300 Years in the Poſſeſſion of the *English*. Some Time after, the Inhabitants were diſpoſed to throw off the Yoke of the *French*, and return to their old Maſters, and *Talbot* was ſent over with ſome Troops to ſupport them in their Deſign. But being overpowered by the *French*, as he was attempting to relieve *Caſtillon*, he was defeated and ſlain, and all *Guienne* again ſubmitted to the *French* in 1453; and nothing remained to the *English*, of all their vaſt Acquiſitions in *France*, but only *Calais*, and *Guijnes*.

Thus *Henry* loſt *France*. We are now to turn our Thoughts to what was doing in *England*, which ended in the Loſs of his Crown and Life. There were two Parties in his Court; one the Duke of *Glouceſter*'s, the other the Cardinal of *Wincheſter*'s; with whom were joined *Kemp* Archbiſhop of *York*, and *William de la Pole*, Earl, afterwards Marqueſs and Duke of *Suffolk*. <sup>Humphrey</sup> The Duke of *Glouceſter* was exceedingly beloved by the People; for excepting when his Ambition carried him away, in relation to the Affair of *Hainault*,\* he had all along a ſincere Regard to the Inter-eſt of the King his Nephew, was ever a Friend to the Nation, and zealous for preſerving its Honour and Poſſeſſions in *France*. But the Cardinal got the better of him in the Council and in the King's Confidence, in which the Duke of *Glouceſter* loſt Ground every Day.

For *Henry*, though a pious and devout Prince, had ſo narrow a Genius; and ſo little Judgment and Penetration; that he was eaſily deceived by Appearances, and having no Capacity himſelf to govern, was blindly led and governed by others. And the Enemies of the Duke of *Glouceſter*, having artfully got the Aſcendant over him, managed in ſuch a Manner as to make themſelves odious to the Nation, particularly in their ſhameful Neglect of the *French* War. To ſecure themſelves therefore againſt the People's Reſentment, they contrived the King's Marriage, <sup>with Margaret of Anjou p. 18</sup> as above-mentioned, with a Princeſs allied to the Enemy of *England*, and who had not a Penny to her Portion; and beſides gave up the Province of *Maine*, as a Condition of the Marriage. She was no ſooner come over, but ſhe joined her Inter-eſt to that of the Cardinal, <sup>de la Pole Earl of Suffolk</sup> and the other ſworn Enemies of the Duke of *Glouceſter*; who had expreſſed his Diſlike of the Match. They now thought themſelves able to get rid of him; and reſolved to do it, that he might no longer reproach them for their ſelf-inter-eſted and deſtructive Proceedings. They firſt removed him from the Council-Board: And then a Parliament being ſummoned at *St. Edmundsbury*, which met in 1447, the Duke coming to take his Place; was arreſted and cloſely confined; under Colour that he deſigned to kill the King, and ſeize the Crown, though nobody believed a Word of the Matter: The next Morning he was found dead in his Bed, People making no Doubt but he was murdered.

Thus fell *Humphrey*, <sup>brother to Henry</sup> commonly called *The good Duke of Glouceſter*, firſt Prince of the Blood; and was interred at *St. Alban's*. The Cardinal, one of the chief Contrivers of his Death, ſurvived him but about a Month, and left the World and his

\* on account of which he married Jacqueline the repudiated wife of the Duke of Brabant v. p. 12566.



his immense Riches with as much Reluctance as ever any one did. And now the Queen and *Suffolk* governed all in the King's Name, and none but their Creatures were employed in the Administration. The universal Hatred of the People against them, for their violent and arbitrary Proceedings, and particularly for the Murder of the Duke of *Gloucester*, made the Duke of *York* begin to think of asserting his Claim to the Crown, which in all likelihood he would never have done, whilst he had a Prince of that Character to contend with.

In 1450, the Commons so vigorously pursued the Duke of *Suffolk*, that the Queen, in order to save him, found herself under a Necessity to have him banished. But in his Passage to *France*, being met by an *English* Man of War, the Captain, without any Ceremony, ordered his Head to be cut off. And so fell another principal Author of the Duke of *Gloucester's* Murder. He was succeeded in the Queen's Confidence, by *Edmund Beaufort*, Duke of *Somerſet*, almost as odious to the People, as *Suffolk* had been.

The Duke of *York* at first proceeded with great Caution, by his Emissaries and Agents privately founding the Inclinations of the People, and causing his Right to the Crown to become the Subject of Conversation, as Heir, by his Mother, of the House of *Mortimer* or *March*, descended from the Duke of *Clarence*, third Son of *Edward III.* and eldest Brother of the Duke of *Lancaster*, as has been mentioned before. The Loss of *Normandy* about the same Time, and the continual Display of the Queen's ill Government, under a weak and passive King, strongly disposed People's Minds to a Change, and formed a considerable Party in Favour of the Duke. As an Essay how the People stood

affected, he instigated one *Jack Cade*, under the Name of *John Mortimer*, to raise a Rebellion in *Kent*; where he drew together great Numbers of Malcontents, under Pretence of reforming the Government, and became so strong, that he encamped on *Blackheath*, cut in Pieces a Detachment of the King's Army, and entered *London*, as it were in Triumph, the City opening her Gates to him: But this Insurrection, which might have proved fatal under a more experienced Leader, was soon at an End; *Cade* was deserted by his Followers, and at last taken and slain.

The Court was very uneasy at the Proceedings of the Duke of *York*, and used several Precautions against them. His Pretence at first was to bring the evil Counsellors, particularly the Duke of *Somerſet*, to condign Punishment. All the Arts that Policy could suggest, were made use of to entrap him, and it was sometimes with great Difficulty he escaped out of the Snare. At length having concerted Measures with his Friends, especially *Richard Nevil*, Earl of *Salisbury*, and his Son of the same Name, Earl of *Warwick*, commonly called *The Stout Earl of Warwick*, the War broke out between the two Houses of *Lancaster* and *York*; the former having for their Device the *Red Rose*, and the latter the *White Rose*; and whole Torrents of *English* Blood were spilt in this Contest.

The first Battle was fought near *St. Alban's*, on May 31, 1455, when the Royal Army was totally routed, with the Loss of 5000 Men. The Duke of *Somerſet* and several other Nobles and great Men were slain, and the King himself taken Prisoner. *York* affected to treat him with great Respect, and was appointed Protector of the Realm, as he had been once before. But to gain the Affections of the People, and let the World

World see how disinterested he was, he left the King and Queen at full Liberty; the Consequence of which was, that he was again dismissed from the Protectorship, and he and his Friends retired from Court. After this there was a Reconciliation between the two Parties; but as it was not sincere, the Quarrel soon broke out again.

In 1459, the Earl of *Salisbury* defeated the King's Troops commanded by the Lord *Audley*, and killed 2400, together with *Audley* himself, and all his principal Officers. This Battle was fought on *Blore-Heath* in *Shropshire*, and was the second in this Quarrel.

The third was the Battle of *Northampton*, fought on *July 19, 1460*, in which the Earl of *March*, eldest Son of the Duke of *York*, the Earl of *Warwick*, and the Lord *Cobham*, gained a compleat Victory, killing 10,000 of the Royalists. The King was again taken Prisoner, and the Queen, with the Prince of *Wales*, fled to *Durham*, then retired into *Wales*, and afterwards into *Scotland*.

And now a Parliament was called, which the Duke of *York* expected would offer him the Crown. Being disappointed, he sent them a Memorial justifying his Claim: But all that the Parliament did, was to resolve, That *Henry* should enjoy the Crown during his Life, after which it should devolve upon the Duke of *York* and his Heirs. In the mean Time, the Duke was absolute Master of the Government, and of the King's Person; who giving himself up wholly to his Devotions, appeared quite unconcerned at this Turn of Affairs.

But the Queen did not rest so contented. She had drawn together, in the *North*, an Army of 18,000 Men. The Duke of *York* marched against her with but 5000, expecting his Son, the Earl of *March*, to join

him: But before he could come up, the Duke was attacked by the Queen's Forces near *Wakefield*, in *Yorkshire*, on *Dec. 31, 1460*, his Army put to Flight, he himself slain, and his Head fixed up on the Walls of *York*; where the Earl of *Salisbury's* soon accompanied it, he having been taken and beheaded at *Pontefract*. The young Earl of *Rutland*, the Duke's second Son, about 12 Years old, was taken in the Flight, and cruelly slain by the Lord *Clifford*.

Notwithstanding this Discouragement, the Earl of *March* resolved to maintain the Quarrel, and did it with Success. He first defeated *Jasper Tudor*, Earl of *Pembroke*, at *Mortimer's Cross* in *Herefordshire*: And though the Queen got the better of the Earl of *Warwick* at *Bernard's Heath*, near *St. Alban's*, and freed the King her Husband; yet the Earl of *March* coming up with a great Army, and being joined by the Remains of the Earl of *Warwick's*, the retired into the *North*; and the Earl entered *London*, as it were in Triumph, about the Beginning of *March, 1461*, and was, by the Management of the Earl of *Warwick*, proclaimed King on the 5th of the same Month, by the Name of *Edward IV*. And here ends the Reign of *Henry VI*. who during the whole Time of it, which was 38 Years and a half, was little more than the Shadow of a King. He had no Vices, but such a natural Weakness of Mind as made him quite incapable of governing; so that he was easily led by any who ruled in his Name, though their Measures were ever so contrary to one another.

*Henry* founded *King's College* in *Cambridge*, and *Eton College* near *Windso*r. And it was about this Time, that the Art of Printing, being found out by *John Guttenburghen* at *Mentz* in *Germany*, was brought into *England* by *Caxton*.

E D W A R D





T. Kitchin sc.

## EDWARD IV. 1461—1483.

**E**DWARD Earl of *March*, Son of *Richard* Duke of *York*, who was slain in the Battle of *Wakefield*, was about nineteen Years old when he was proclaimed King, on *March* 5, 1461, in the Room of *Henry* VI. by Virtue of an extraordinary Kind of Election: For the Earl of *Warwick* having drawn up his Troops in *St. John's Fields*, and caused the People, who came out to see them, to form a Ring, stood in the Middle, and asked them with a loud Voice, first, whether they would have *Henry* of *Lancaster* for King? They all cried, *No, no*. Then he demanded of them, Whether they would have *Edward*, Son of the late Duke of *York*, for their King? To which the whole Multitude answered with loud Acclamations expressing their Assent. This done, he assembled a great Council of the Nobles and Magistrates in and about *London*, who declared, that the Crown was devolved upon *Edward*, and accordingly made him an Offer of it;

which, with a great Shew of Modesty, he accepted. He began his Reign with an Act of Cruelty, in causing a Tradesman of *London* to be executed, for saying he would make his Son Heir to the Crown, meaning, as it is said, his own House, which had that Sign.

A few Days after *Edward* was proclaimed, he put himself at the Head of his Army, consisting of 40,000 Men, in order to march against Queen *Margaret*, whose Army in the North was increased to 60,000. And having secured the Passage at *Ferribridge*, and recovered it again after having been beat from thence, he gained a compleat Victory over the Queen's Army, in a great Battle between *Caxton* and *Towton* in *Yorkshire*, which was fought on *Palm-Sunday*, and continued from Morning to Night, in which, it is said, near 37,000 lost their Lives. *Henry* and *Margaret*, who staid at *York* to wait the Issue of the Battle, retired to *Berwick*, and from thence

1461

to *Edinburgh*: And *Edward* coming to *York*, took down the Heads of his Father and the Earl of *Salisbury*, and caused those of the Earl of *Devonshire* and some others, he had taken in the Battle, and beheaded, to be fixed up in their Room. Then he returned to *London*, where he arrived on the 8th of *June*, and was solemnly crowned on the 29th.

Shortly after, King *Edward* called a Parliament, which approved of his Coronation, confirmed his Title, and repealed all the Acts that had been made against the House of *York*. In this Parliament, the King created *George* his eldest Brother, Duke of *Clarence*, and *Richard* his younger Brother, Duke of *Gloucester*.

*Edward* was solicitous to conclude a Truce with *Scotland*, in order to prevent *Henry* and his Queen from having any Assistance from thence. But *Margaret*, to break his Measures, delivered up *Berwick* to the *Scots*, and concluded a Marriage between Prince *Edward* her Son, and *Margaret*, Sister to King *James III*. But as there were violent Factions in *Scotland* at this Time, King *Edward* concluded a Treaty with the Earl of *Ross*, and those of his Party, in order to stir up new Troubles there.

Queen *Margaret* had gone over to *France* to solicit Succours from *Lewis XI*. which having obtained, she entered *Northumberland*, with *Henry*, and the Prince her Son, in 1463. She had also some Assistance from the *Scots*, and her Army daily increased by the Coming-in of the *English* in the Northern Parts, so that it soon became very considerable. *Edward* immediately sent the Lord *Montague*, Brother to the Earl of *Warwick*, to oppose their Passage, designing to follow himself with a greater Force. *Montague*, in his March, met with a Detachment of the Enemy, under the Lords *Hun-*

*gerford* and *Ross*, which he attacked and totally routed. And then marching on to *Hexham*, he surprized *Henry* in his Intrenchments, and obtained a compleat Victory. The Dukes of *Somerset*, *Ross*, and *Hungerford*, were taken Prisoners and beheaded, with several other Officers of Note. But *Henry*, *Margaret*, and their Son, escaped and fled into *Scotland*. As a Reward for these great Services, *Edward* created the Lord *Montague* a Marquess, and at the same Time made *William Herbert* Earl of *Pembroke*. Soon after he concluded a Truce with *France*, with the Duke of *Burgundy*, and with *Scotland*.

*Henry* and *Margaret* being thus deserted by those, who alone were able to assist them, were in the utmost Perplexity. The poor deposed King fearing to stay any longer in *Scotland*, came privately into *England*, hoping to conceal himself there till he should have an Opportunity of escaping by Sea. But unhappily being discovered and seized at *Waddington-Hall* in *Lincolnshire*, whilst he was at Dinner, he was in an ignominious Manner conducted to *London*, and confined in the Tower. It is thought Queen *Margaret*, with her Son, intended also to conceal herself in *England*, from a Story related by *Monstrelet*, who says, that as they were travelling, they fell into the Hands of Robbers, who would have killed them, if their quarrelling about sharing the Booty had not given them an Opportunity to escape into a Wood; where they would have perished with Hunger, if a Peasant had not accidentally met them, and conducted them to the Sea-Side. Whether this Adventure be true or not, *Margaret*, after her leaving *Scotland*, went over with the young Prince to *René* of *Anjou*, her Father.

King *Edward*, now having no Enemies



Enemies to oppose him; confiscated the Estates of the *Lancastrians*, who refused to make their Submission by a Time prefixed, and bestowed them on his Friends: After which, he studied to make himself popular, and by all Manner of Ways to gain the Affection of his Subjects. He even granted an absolute Pardon to all *Henry's* Friends, excepting only *Ralph Grey*, and *Humphry Newil*.

In 1464, the King sent the Earl of *Warwick* to demand for him in Marriage, *Bona of Savoy*, Sister to the Queen of *France*; who actually concluded a Treaty with the King of *France* for that Purpose. But whilst this Affair was negotiating, he happened to fall desperately in Love with *Elizabeth*, Daughter of Sir *Richard Woodville*, and Widow of Sir *John Grey*: And finding he could not gratify his Desire without marrying her, he made her his Wife, notwithstanding all the Arguments the *Duchess of York* his Mother made use of to dissuade him from it. Immediately Sir *Richard Woodville*, the Queen's Father, was created Earl of *Rivers*, and soon after he was made Treasurer and High-Constable of *England*: And *Anthony Woodville*, his Son, was married to the richest Heiress in *England*. These Things were attended with very ill Consequences. The Marriage itself, so much below the Dignity of a King, was disagreeable to the Nation. The Favours heaped on the Queen's Relations raised the Jealousy of the Nobles; and particularly of the Duke of *Clarence*, the King's Brother. And, what was worst of all, the Earl of *Warwick*, provoked at the Assault put upon him by this Marriage, when he had just concluded one in *France*, became *Edward's* mortal Enemy, and as he had set him on the Throne, was resolved to use his utmost Efforts to pull him down.

He began to form this Project of dethroning *Edward*, soon after the Affair of the Marriage, but was obliged to keep it secret, till he thought himself in a Condition to attempt it. In the mean Time, he withdrew from Court, and was almost forgot. Though *Edward* knew he was greatly disgusted, he did not imagine he had any such Design in View; and it was not till about the Beginning of the Year 1469, that the Earl thought himself able to begin the Execution of his Project. In order to this, he had gained over his two Brothers, the Archbishop of *York*, and the Marquis of *Montague*; and not long after found Means to engage the Duke of *Clarence*; the King's Brother, in the Plot. This Confederacy being formed, before they declared themselves openly, they, by Means of their Friends, stirred up a formidable Insurrection in *Yorkshire*. What made the People so ready to rise in Arms, was but a trivial Affair, their being obliged to contribute to a publick Hospital, which they deemed an Imposition in order to enrich the Directors. But it soon appeared that *Warwick*, and his Friends, made use of this as an Handle to stir up the People, and were under-hand the chief Fomenters of this Rebellion. The King imagined that some Friends to the House of *Lancaster* had set these Commotions on foot, but did not, in the least, suspect the Earl of *Warwick*, and his Brother. He ordered *Herbert*, Earl of *Pembroke*, Governor of *Wales*, to draw together what Forces he could, and march against the Malcontents, as they were advancing towards *London*, and afterwards retiring to *Warwick*. The two Armies met near *Banbury* in *Oxfordshire*, where a Battle was fought, in which *Pembroke* was defeated, and being taken, was beheaded by the Rebels, together

with Sir *Richard Herbert* his Brother. There was an Infurrection of much the same Nature in *Northamptonshire*, where the Malcontents went in a tumultuous Manner to a Mansion-House of the Earl of *Rivers*, the Queen's Father, seized him, and beheaded him at *Northampton*.

The King was so far from suspecting *Warwick* and his Brother, that he gave them a Commission to levy Troops, in order to oppose the Rebels. They made use of this Commission to raise Forces, but instead of acting against the Rebels, they declared for them. The King hereupon marched against them in Person, and when the two Armies came near one another, whilst a Negotiation was on foot, in order to an Accommodation, the Earl of *Warwick* attacked the King's Camp unawares in the Night, put them in the utmost Confusion, and took the King Prisoner, who was conducted to *Middleham-Castle* in *Yorkshire*, and put under the Custody of the Archbishop of *York*. This was in 1470.

*Warwick* now thought his Business as good as done. But how surprized was he, when he was informed, that *Edward* had found Means, by bribing his Guard, to escape from his Confinement, and that he was actually arrived in *London*, which the Earl had taken no Care to secure, as not apprehending, in the least, such a sudden Turn of Affairs! An Accommodation was attempted by some Lords of a peaceable Disposition; but that coming to nothing, both Sides began again to prepare for War, and to raise Forces with all imaginable Diligence: For *Edward's* Army had been dispersed by the late Surprize, and *Warwick* thought himself so secure, in having the King his Prisoner, that he had disbanded the best Part of his Troops.

Sir *Robert Wells* was sent by the Earl to raise Forces in *Lincolnshire*, whilst he and *Clarence* did the same in other Counties. As *Wells* had great Interest in that County, he was soon at the Head of a considerable Army. The King hereupon was resolved to attack him, before he had joined the other two; and so falling upon him, near *Stamford*, routed his whole Army, and put them to Flight, with the Slaughter of 10,000 of them, and *Wells* himself was taken and beheaded. This Action was called, *The Battle of Lose-Coat Field*, from the *Lincolnshire-Men* throwing off their Coats, in order to run away the faster.

*Warwick* and *Clarence*, who had not yet compleated their Levies, were thunder-struck at this Defeat, and hearing that the King was on the March to attack them, they had no other Course to take, but to retire into *France*, and there concert new Measures. Being arrived there, they waited on King *Lewis*, who promised them a powerful Aid. But it was necessary also, that they should enter into an Alliance with Queen *Margaret*, in order to restore *Henry*, as that would be the best Pretence for dethroning *Edward*. And thus mutual Interest made the Queen and *Warwick* Friends, between whom there had been before the greatest Enmity. In the mean Time *Edward*, though he had Intelligence from the Duke of *Burgundy* of what was contriving against him in *France*, took very little Notice of the Matter, but followed his Pleasures, to which he was extremely addicted.

*Lewis* having furnished the Earl of *Warwick* with Money and Troops, set Sail with the Duke of *Clarence*, and landed at *Dartmouth*. By the Coming-in of the People, he soon found his Army increased to 60,000. He forthwith proclaimed *Henry VI.* and



and marched in Pursuit of *Edward*, who fled before him, and with great Difficulty embarked, and took Refuge in *Holland*. The two Chiefs entered *London* in Triumph, the Beginning of *October*, 1470; and the Earl of *Warwick* repairing to the *Tower*, released *King Henry*, after a six Years Imprisonment, who was solemnly proclaimed on the 14th, as again ascending the Throne. Thus the Earl restored *Henry*, whom he had before deposed to set up *Edward*; and was, on these Accounts, commonly called the *King-Maker*.

A Parliament was now called, which met on *Nov. 20*; and, according to the salutary Principle, by which we have seen that those Assemblies acted, of always siding with the Strongest, voted *Edward* a Traitor and Usurper, confiscated all his Estate, and annulled all the Acts made in his Reign. They also declared all those to be Rebels and Traitors, who had borne Arms in Defence of *Edward's* pretended Right. Thus this Parliament undid all that *Edward's* Parliament had done.

The Duke of *Burgundy*, to whom *Edward* had fled for Protection, after several Debates within himself, resolved to assist him in regaining the Crown. Accordingly, having furnished him with some Ships, Money, and a small Body of Men, *Edward* set Sail from *Verre*, about the Middle of *March*, 1471, and landed at *Ravenspur* in *Yorkshire*. He was received but coldly at first, and therefore pretending he was only come to claim his own private Estate, he took only the Title of Duke of *York*, and solemnly owned *Henry* for his Sovereign. When he came to *York*, the Magistrates refused to open their Gates to him; but the People compelled them to it, upon his promising not to hurt the City, and that he would continue faithful to

*King Henry*. Though he staid not long at *York*, his Army was greatly increased, and he resolved to march towards *London*. In the mean Time, the Earl of *Warwick* went and encamped at *Coventry*, expecting the Duke of *Clarence* to come and join him with his Troops. But as *Edward* had, some Time ago, privately won over his Brother the Duke, who promised to desert *Warwick*, whenever he could do it with Advantage, he was now as good as his Word; and the two Brothers joining their Forces, left *Warwick* behind, and marched directly for *London*; where *Edward's* Party prevailing, upon the News of his Approach, the Inhabitants were determined to receive him: And so he entered the City on the 11th of *April*, amidst the loud Acclamations of the People; and *Henry*, after a seven Months Phantom of a Reign, was sent again to the *Tower*.

Thus *Edward* was again on the Throne, but he could not be said to be established, whilst the Earl of *Warwick* remained unsubdued. Two Days after his coming to *London*, he put himself at the Head of his Army, and advanced to meet the Earl, who was marching towards *London*, and come as far as *St. Alban's*. Both Armies continuing their March, they met each other at *Barnet*. Here a dreadful Battle was fought on *April 14th*, being *Easter-Day*, which began early in the Morning and continued till Noon, both Sides fighting with the greatest Obstinacy and Resolution, till *Warwick's* Army, overpowered by Numbers, was put to the Rout, great Numbers being slain on the Spot, with the Earl himself, and the Marquess of *Montague* his Brother.

Queen *Margaret*, with Prince *Edward* her Son, was just arrived from *France*. This Princess, who had hitherto shewn the utmost Firmness

of Mind amidst all the Turns of Fortune, was so surprized at the News of this fatal Blow, that she fell into a Swoon, and abandoning herself to Grief and Despair, took Sanctuary at the Abbey of *Beaulieu* in *Hampshire*. But the Duke of *Somerset*, the Earl of *Pembroke*, and other Lords her Friends, persuading her to try her Fortune once more, by putting the Prince of *Wales* her Son at the Head of an Army, she consented; and those Lords, in a very short Time, got together a good Number of Troops, which being joined by the scattered Remains of the Earl of *Warwick's*, made up no inconsiderable Body. The King, being thoroughly acquainted with these Proceedings, lost no Time, but resolved to attack them before the Earl of *Pembroke* should join them with the Troops he had been raising in *Wales*. And so coming up with them at *Tewkesbury*, where they had intrenched themselves in Haste, eighteen Days after the Battle of *Barnet*, he entered their Camp, and entirely routed them with a terrible Slaughter. The Queen, the Prince of *Wales*, and the Duke of *Somerset*, were taken. The last was beheaded. The Prince, then eighteen Years old, was stabbed to Death in cool Blood, by the Dukes of *Clarence* and *Gloucester*, the Earl of *Dorset*, and the Lord *Hastings*; at least, in their Presence. And Queen *Margaret* was imprisoned in the *Tower*, where she remained till, in 1475, she was ransomed by *Lewis XI.* for 50,000 Crowns.

The Battle of *Tewkesbury*, which was the twelfth in the Quarrel between the *Two Roses*, was soon followed by the Murder of the unfortunate King *Henry VI.* in the 50th Year of his Age. *Edward* thinking he should never be at Peace, whilst that Prince was alive, resolved at last to sacrifice him, innocent as he was, to his own Security. The

Duke of *Gloucester*, *Edward's* Brother, a Man of a cruel and bloody Disposition, undertook to dispatch him, and, it is said, stabbed him with his own Hand in the *Tower*. His Body was buried in the Abbey of *Chertsey*, but afterwards removed to *Windso*.

*Jasper Tudor*, Earl of *Pembroke*, hearing of the Defeat at *Tewkesbury*, and thinking it in vain any longer to oppose King *Edward*, dismissed his Troops, and staid some Time with the Earl of *Richmond* his Nephew, in *Wales*, where they had great Interest and Credit. But *Edward* making use of all his Arts to get them seized, or made away with, they embarked for *France*; and being drove on the Coast of *Bretagne*, were detained there by the Duke. The Earl of *Richmond* being the only Prince that was left of the House of *Lancaster*, who could lay any Claim to the Crown, King *Edward* was very pressing in demanding him of the Duke of *Bretagne*; who at first refused, and at length delivered him to the *English* Ambassadors: But knowing *Edward's* Design was to sacrifice him, he repented of what he had done, and got him out of the Ambassadors Hands again, just as they were going to embark. Thus the Earl was preserved by a Sort of Miracle, who was one Day to ascend the Throne of *England*.

King *Edward*, being now firmly established on the Throne, spent a great Part of his Time in negotiating Truces and Alliances with foreign Princes and States; as the Kings of *Scotland*, *Denmark*, *Castile*, and *Portugal*; and in settling the Differences between the *English* and the *Hanse-Towns*; which was at last happily effected.

*Lewis XI.* being at War with the Duke of *Burgundy*, offered King *Edward* a Truce, lest he should assist the



the said Duke: And *Edward* consented to it, only till the State of his Kingdom would permit him to be revenged on *Lewis*, for assisting Queen *Margaret*. At length a Truce being concluded between *Lewis* and the Duke, the latter employed his Arms to enlarge his Dominions on the Side of *Germany*. But *Lewis* did all he could understand to obstruct him in his Designs. This put him upon entering into an Alliance with King *Edward*, in order jointly to carry the War into *France*; which was what *Edward* wanted, and was now in a Condition to undertake. Accordingly he passed over with his Army into *France*, in 1475. But the Duke of *Burgundy* (whose Design, it is likely, was only to cause *Edward* to make a Diversion in *France*, in order to prevent *Lewis* from interrupting his Projects in *Germany*) not joining him, as he had promised, and the Constable of *St. Paul*, who had promised to deliver him up *St. Quentin*, not being as good as his Word, *Edward* thought fit to consent to a Peace, of which *Lewis* made the first Offers, and which was concluded between the two Monarchs, by Plenipotentiaries at *Amiens*, and sworn to at an Interview between them, on the Bridge of *Pequigny*. And so *Edward*, after all his great Preparations, returned to *England*, without doing any Thing at all. But this was, in a great Measure, owing to the rich Presents *Lewis* bestowed on *Edward*'s principal Courtiers, and the Pensions he privately assigned them. And the same Thing hindered him from interposing in the Affairs of *France*, when the Good of *England*, and of all *Europe*, required it, upon *Lewis*'s seizing a great Part of the *Burgundy* Dominions, and endeavouring to get Possession of the rest, after the Duke's Death, in Prejudice of his Daughter and Heiress,

*Maria*, who was afterwards married to *Maximilian* of *Austria*, Son to the Emperor *Frederick*.

The King, not content with his Severity against the Chiefs of the *Lancastrian* Party, and even those of a lower Rank, in executing, immoderately fining, imprisoning and banishing great Numbers of them, completed the Tragedy in the Year 1478, by the Death of his own Brother, the Duke of *Clarence*. The King was never heartily reconciled to him for joining with the Earl of *Warwick* to dethrone him, though he was afterwards the chief Means of his reascending the Throne; and accordingly he neglected him as much as ever. The Duke was haughty and ambitious, and at the same Time hasty and passionate, and too free and unguarded in his Expressions. He would often make severe Reflections on the King, and among other Things, it is said, he hinted that he was a Bastard. Be that as it will, he had made the Queen his Enemy, and the Duke of *Gloucester*, who was close and reserved, and stuck at nothing to come to the main Point he had in View, which was no less than the Crown, joining with her and the rest of *Clarence*'s Enemies, spared no Pains in giving the King an ill Opinion of him, as a Person dangerous to his Crown and Life. At last his Death was resolved on, the Manner of which was somewhat extraordinary; for he is said to have been drowned in a Butt of *Malmsey* Wine.

*Edward*, instead of assisting *Maximilian* of *Austria*, who was endeavouring to recover the *Burgundy* Dominions, suffered himself to be abused and managed by the King of *France*, or rather by his own Ministers whom *Lewis* had bribed; and having now no Inclination for War, devoted himself wholly to his Pleasures, which were so profuse,

that they were more expensive than War itself, and put him upon extorting Money from his Subjects by very cruel Methods.

*Lewis* continued to amuse *Edward*, lest he should join with *Maximilian*, till he had clandestinely prevailed on the *Scots* to break the Truce with *England*; which they did in 1481, and made an Irruption into the Borders, which came to no more than the carrying off some Booty. However, the Duke of *Gloucester*, marched with an Army into *Scotland*, and proceeded as far as *Edinburgh*; where having obliged King *James* to keep the Truce, and to restore *Berwick*, which Queen *Margaret* had given up, there was an End of this Affair. It must be observed, that *James III.* hated by his People, and especially by the Nobility, for his tyrannical Proceedings, had of his own Head, or by the sole Advice of his odious Favourites, broken the Truce with *England*; but all at the private Instigation of the King of *France*.

This Treachery of *Lewis* opened *Edward's* Eyes, and made him resolve on a War with *France*, after he had let many fair Opportunities slip. Besides, the *French* King had, ever since the Treaty of *Amiens*, artfully shifted off the Marriage of the *Dauphin* with the Princess *Elizabeth*, eldest Daughter of *Edward*, which was one of the Articles of that Treaty; and now he at last managed Matters so dexterously with the *Flemings*, that he married him to *Margaret*, Daughter of *Maximilian* and *Maria*, against the Will of her Father. *Edward*, enraged at having been thus imposed upon, was fully bent on the War, how little Likelihood soever there was of Success, in the Circumstances he was in at this Time. But in the Midst of his Preparations, Death put an End to all his Projects. He was seized

with a violent Fever, most probably the Effect of a Surfeit, which carried him off, on the 9th of *April*, 1483, in the forty-second Year of his Age, and twenty-third of his Reign.

His good Fortune may be admired, if we consider in what Circumstances he obtained the Crown, and recovered it after he had lost it, and that he was victorious in every Battle he fought in Person. But he is blamed by all for his Cruelty, in causing so many to be executed, after he had taken them in Battle, and the Breach of Faith he was sometimes guilty of on these Occasions: And the Murder of King *Henry*, and the Prince of *Wales* his Son, as well as of his own Brother, the Duke of *Clarence*, can never be thought of without Horror, however it may be justified by Reasons of State, in which Honour and Conscience are seldom regarded. At his Accession to the Throne, he was one of the handsomest Men in *England*, perhaps in *Europe*. He had a noble Mien, a free and affable Deportment, and an undaunted Courage: Which Qualities, joined together, gained him such Love and Esteem among the People, as very much contributed to his Success. All agree that he was excessively addicted to his Pleasures. He had a great many Mistresses, among whom was *Jane Shore*, Wife to a Citizen of *London*. Of his three chief Mistresses he said, that one was the merriest, (meaning *Jane Shore*) another the wittiest, and the third the holiest Woman in the World, because she would never stir out of the Church, but when he sent for her. He had however no more than two natural Children, which were by *Elizabeth Lucy*; *Arthur*, created Viscount *L'Isle*, by *Henry VIII.* and *Elizabeth*, Wife of *Thomas Lumley*.

By his Queen, *Elizabeth*, he had  
three

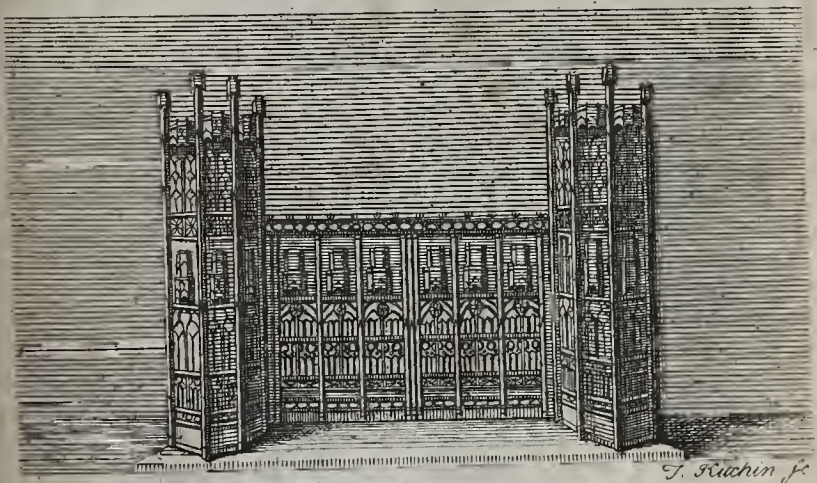


three Sons and eight Daughters, of whom, one Son and two Daughters died in their Infancy. His Sons, who survived him, were *Edward*, Prince of *Wales*, who succeeded him, and *Richard*, Duke of *York*. His surviving Daughters were, *Elizabeth*, who had been contracted to the *Dauphin*, and was at length married to King *Henry VII.* *Cicely*, betrothed to the Prince of *Scotland*, afterwards the Wife of the Lord *Wells*: *Anne*, who was contracted to *Philip*, Son of *Maximilian* of *Austria* and *Maria* of *Burgundy*; but that Match not succeeding, she married *Thomas Howard*, Duke of *Norfolk*: *Bridget*, who was a Nun: *Mary*, who was promised to the King of *Denmark*, but died before

her Marriage: And *Catharine*, whose Husband was *William Courtney*, Earl of *Devonshire*.

In Praise of King *Edward*, it must be said, that he was a great Encourager of Trade, particularly of the Woollen Manufacture. He was interred at *Windsor*, in the Collegiate Chapel, begun by him, and finished by the Lord *Reginald Bray*.

Several Men, famous in their Professions, flourished in his Reign, particularly *Thomas Littleton*, Judge of the *Common-Pleas*, and *John Fortescue*, Judge, and Chancellor of *England*. In the last Year of King *Edward*, *Thomas Parr* was born in *Shropshire*, whom we shall hereafter find remarkable for his great Age, in the Reign of King *Charles I.*





T. Kitchen sc.

## EDWARD V. 1483—

1483.

**T**HIS Prince was about 12 Years old, when his Father *Edward IV.* died ; upon which he was immediately proclaimed King, though he was never crowned. He bore the Royal Title but for a very short Time, no more than two Months, and 12 Days ; which can scarce be called a Reign, as it was wholly taken up with the Artifices of his Uncle, the Duke of *Gloucester*, to deprive him of the Crown, and place it upon his own Head ; in which he but too well succeeded, through such a Series of artful Wiles and cunning Dissimulation, and such horrid Violence, Cruelty and Injustice, as can scarce be paralleled. Though he so soon arrived at the Point his Ambition had in View, yet he proceeded cautiously, opening himself by Degrees, and not letting his most trusty Confidants into the Secret of his grand Design, till Matters were ripe to put it in Execution.

The State of the Court before,

and at young *Edward's* Accession, tended very much to forward the Duke of *Gloucester's* Project. The Queen, by her Influence over the late King, had got all her Relations and Favourites promoted to Titles and Honours, which occasioned the invidious Distinctions between the old and the new Nobility. The latter bore all the Sway at Court, and the former were by Degrees, as it were, banished from thence ; all, except *Henry Stafford* Duke of *Buckingham*, the Lord *Stanley*, and the Lord *Hastings*, who were hearty Friends to *Edward IV.* especially the two latter, though they had no Respect for the Queen. The Duke of *Gloucester*, to keep fair with both Parties, in his Brother's Life-Time, publicly made his Court to the Queen. but in private joined with the old Nobility, particularly *Buckingham*, *Stanley*, and *Hastings*.

Immediately, upon *Edward's* Death, a Contention arose between the two Parties, which should be Masters



Masters of the young King's Person, and consequently of the Government. The Queen, in order to secure her Power, was for keeping him in her and her Relations Hands; and the antient Nobility were for rescuing him from them, that by that Means they might remove the Queen and her Relations from the Government. The young King was then at *Ludlow* with *Anthony Woodville*, Earl of *Rivers*, the Queen's Brother, whom the late King had appointed his Governor. The Queen, jealous of the Designs of her Enemies, had wrote to him to raise a Body of Forces for conducting the new King safe to *London*, in order to be crowned. The Duke of *Gloucester* being then at *York*, *Buckingham* and *Hastings* sent to him immediately, to acquaint him with the King's Death, and the Queen's Proceedings, earnestly pressing him to take Measures for getting the young King into his Hands, for that the Government of the Realm rightly belonged to him, during the Minority. It appears pretty plain, by every Step of the Duke of *Gloucester*, that from this Time, if not before, he designed to ascend the Throne, in Prejudice of his two Nephews. He wrote back, desiring the two Lords, with others of their Friends, to meet him at *Northampton*, in order to confer together of what was proper to be done. Here *Gloucester* having harangued them upon the Necessity of taking the King from his Mother and her Relations, it was agreed that he should try to persuade the Queen to order the Earl of *Rivers*, her Brother, to disband his Forces. Accordingly he found Means to represent to her in such Manner the Inexpediency and dangerous Consequences of the Measure she was taking, and how it would excite the Jealousy of the Nation, that she

was prevailed on to write to her Brother to dismiss his Troops; which he did, and set out with the King for *London*, attended only with his Domesticks.

When they came near *Northampton*, the Dukes of *Gloucester* and *Buckingham*, who had brought a Number of armed Men into the Town, went out to meet the King, and paid him all the Respect due to his Dignity. They also very much caressed the Earl of *Rivers*, till, the Scheme they had formed for that Purpose succeeding, they caused him to be arrested, together with the Lord *Grey*, the Queen's Son by her former Husband, Sir *Thomas Vaughan*, and Sir *Richard Hawse*, and sent them Prisoners to *Pontefract*, under the Custody of Sir *Richard Ratcliff* the Governor, who shortly after, by the Duke of *Gloucester's* Order, caused them to be beheaded.

Having got the King into their Hands, they conducted him to *London*, paying him all due Respect as they passed along. He entered the City, on the 4th of *May*, amidst the loud Acclamations of the People, attended by a great many Lords, the Duke of *Gloucester* riding before him bare-headed; after which he was lodged in the Bishop's Palace. Then the Duke, instead of a Parliament, whose Business it was, summoned a great Council to settle the Government during the King's Minority; which consisting chiefly of the old Nobility, and the Duke's Friends, soon declared him Protector both of the King and Kingdom.

The Queen, upon hearing what passed at *Northampton*, had taken Sanctuary, with the Duke of *York*, her other Son, about nine Years old, and the rest of her Family, in *Westminster-Abbey*. The Protector could not proceed to his grand Design, without getting the young Duke also

also into his Hands ; which he did by Means of the Cardinal Archbishop of *Canterbury*, who was sent to persuade the Queen to deliver him up. She at first refused, being justly apprehensive of the Protector's Designs ; but, at last, being told that Force would be made use of, if she did not comply, she parted with him, after the tenderest Caresses, never to see him more. Upon Sight of him, the Protector ran to him and embraced him, feigning the utmost Affection, and brought him to the King, who was overjoyed to see his Brother. Soon after, he lodged them both in the *Tower*, from whence the Kings used formerly to proceed to their Coronation.

The Duke of *Gloucester* now thought himself in a Condition to pursue the main Project of his Ambition, and of Protector to make himself King. To this End, he communicated his Thoughts, first to the Duke of *Buckingham*, who came readily into the Design, and pushed it on as heartily as the Protector himself. Some other trusty Friends were let into the Secret, and held frequent Consultations about it with the Duke. The Lords *Hastings* and *Stanley* were not of this Number, though they had hitherto joined with the Duke, not thinking he designed to proceed any farther. *Hastings*, in particular, had hitherto been very serviceable to him ; but as he was known to have a great Affection for the late King's Children, though he hated the Queen, it was resolved, either to win him over, or to dispatch him out of the Way. One *Catesby*, a Confident of his, was employed to sound him, as it were at a Distance, by occasionally introducing a Discourse about State-Affairs, and then telling him how People talked of the Duke of *Gloucester's* Right to the Crown, upon a Report that *Edward IV.* himself,

and all his Children, were illegitimate ; for the Protector, by his Emissaries, had taken Care to spread such a Report. *Hastings*, not suspecting *Catesby*, discovered to him his whole Mind, and expressed himself with the utmost Warmth in favour of *Edward's* Children. *Catesby* betrayed him, and so his Death was resolved on.

The Protector had all this while made Shew of preparing for the King's Coronation, and to that End had appointed a particular Council, under Pretence of regulating Matters relating to that Solemnity, which was first fixed to the 22d of *June*, and then on divers Pretences put off to the 2d of *November* ; for, at the same Time, he had another Council, consisting of none but his Creatures, whose sole Business it was to consult Means for deferring the Coronation, and advancing the Protector to the Throne. The main Thing was to give some plausible Colour to his Pretensions among the People. To this End, as has been said, *Edward IVth's* Children were all to be deemed Bastards, on Pretence of his being engaged in a Marriage-Contract with another Lady, before he espoused *Elizabeth Woodville*. And lest this should not take, it was to be given out, and Proofs pretended, such as they were, that the late King, and Duke of *Clarence*, were the Offspring of the Duchess of *York's* unlawful Amours, and that the Duke of *Gloucester* was her only Son by her Husband the Duke of *York*. These Things were, by the Direction of the Protector and his Council, first rumoured about, by Means of *Catesby*, and such like trusty Emissaries.

The Lord *Hastings*, all this while, knew nothing of *Catesby's* Treachery. And so he came without any Fear to the Council, which the Protector had assembled in the *Tower*,  
on



on the 13th of June, on purpose to get him dispatched. The Protector came in at Nine in the Morning, very chearful and complaisant to all the Lords. Then he withdrew, and about an Hour after returned, biting his Lips, and knitting his Brows, as if some great Matter disturbed him. He was silent a-while, and at last broke out on a sudden, and asked them, *What they deserved who had plotted against his Life?* Lord Hastings made Answer, that *They ought to be punished as Traitors. Well then,* replied the Protector, *it is that Sorcerers, my Sister-in-Law,* (meaning the Queen) *and her Accomplices.* Then stripping his Left Arm, and shewing it to the Council, almost withered and dried up (tho' every one knew it had been long in that Condition) he said, *See what that Sorcerers, and Shore's Wife, have done by their Witchcrafts; and they would have done the same to the rest of my Body, if God's Mercy had not prevented them.* Hastings, who kept Jane Shore after Edward's Death, being concerned at hearing her accused, said, *If they are guilty of such a Crime, they ought to be punished.* What, says the Protector, instantly raising his Voice, *dost thou answer me with Ifs and Ands? I tell thee, they have plotted against my Life, and thou thyself art accessory to their Crime.* As he spoke these Words, he struck the Table twice with his Hand, and presently a Number of armed men rushed in, and the Protector arrested Hastings for High-Treason. In the Confusion, one of the Soldiers struck at the Lord Stanley with a Battle-Ax (having Orders, it is likely, to kill him, as it were by Chance) but he escaped by getting under the Table. However, he was arrested, together with the Archbishop of York, and the Bishop of Ely, they being all three firmly attached to the young

King. The Protector was so impatient to have Hastings executed, that he swore *he would not dine, till he had seen it done.* Accordingly he was beheaded on a Log of Wood, before the Tower-Chapel, there not being Time to erect a Scaffold. It is remarked, that he suffered on the same Day and Hour, that the Lords and the two Knights at Pontefract were beheaded, to whose Death he had but too readily consented.

Jane Shore was brought before the Council, as an Accomplice with Lord Hastings; where she pleaded her Cause so well, that they did not think fit to condemn her. However, she was prosecuted in the Bishop's Court for Incontinence, in leaving her Husband to live with other Men. And so she was condemned to do open Penance in St. Paul's Church, in a White-Sheet, with a Wax Taper in her Hand; which she accordingly did, before all the People.

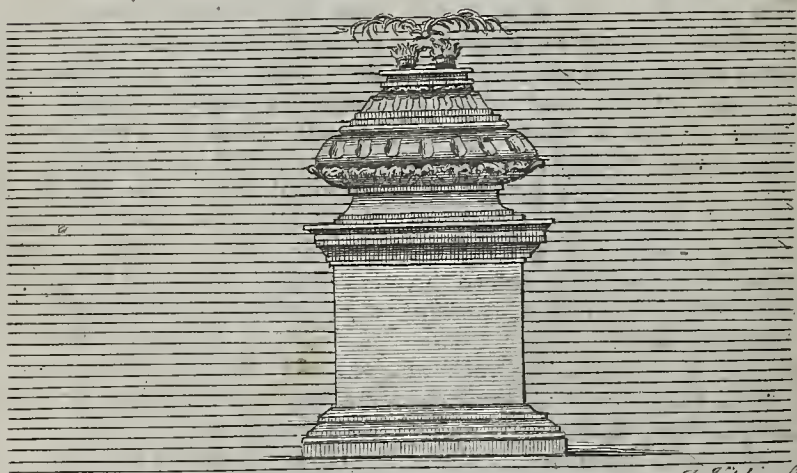
The King's Friends being all dead, or in Prison, or effectually terrified by the late severe Proceedings; the Protector and Buckingham deemed this to be the Crisis for putting their Design in Execution. Accordingly they caused to be spread, more than ever, the Illegitimacy of Edward's Children, and of Edward himself. And the Protector having before gained Sir Edward Shaw, Mayor of London, he got his Brother, Dr. John Shaw, a popular City-P preacher, to preach a Sermon at St. Paul's Cross on the Subject, from the Apocryphal Text, *Bastard Slips shall take no deep Root.* But all that was got by this, was, that the Preacher was ever after despised for his Pains.

However, to lose no Time, as the principal Point was to gain the Citizens, the Duke of Buckingham, in an eloquent Speech, harangued the Mayor, Aldermen, Common-Council and principal Citizens, who were ordered

ordered to meet at *Guild-Hall* for that Purpose. He enlarged on the Objections against *Edward's* Children, and the noble Qualities of the Duke of *Gloucester*, as the only legitimate Son of the Duke of *York*, whom he recommended for their King, and in the End desired them to declare their Minds. Every one stood amazed, and there was a profound Silence. The Duke repeated the Sense of his Speech in other Words, but it had no better Effect; till the Recorder was ordered to speak to the People, which he did, though much against his Will. He only repeated the Substance of the Duke's Speech, and the Duke concluded with demanding their positive Answer, whether they would have the Duke of *Gloucester* for their King or no? Upon this, there was a confused Murmur, and it was uncertain, whether the People said *Yea* or *No*; when some of the Duke's Servants

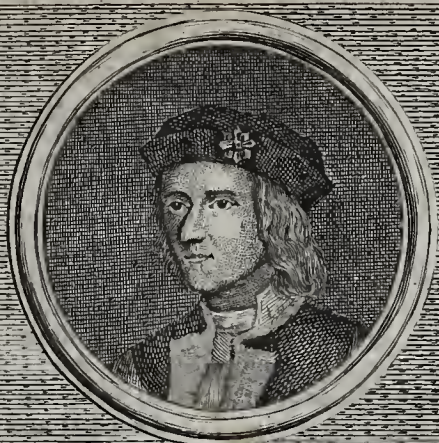
pressing in, cried out, *Long live King Richard*: Who being joined by some Citizens, that were bribed, and the Rabble without Doors, the Cry grew pretty strong, *King Richard! King Richard!* Then the Duke of *Buckingham*, affecting to take it for granted, that this was the Sense of all the People, went the next Day, with the Mayor, Aldermen and others of the Cabal, to the Protector, to offer him the Crown. He appeared exceedingly surprized, as if he had known nothing of what had passed, and feigned a great Reluctance against complying with their Request; but, at last, suffered himself to be prevailed upon; and, on *June 19*, accepted the Crown, as if it were at the Desire of all the People of *England*.

Thus ended the Farce, to the great Grief of all worthy Citizens and honest Men; who yet did not dare openly to express their Concern.



*T. Stichen sc.*





T. Kitchen Sculp.

RICHARD III.

*surnam'd Crook-Back.* 1483-1485

**T**HE Duke of Gloucester having thus accomplished the End he had in View, was proclaimed King on the 20th of June, 1483, by the Name of Richard III. and was solemnly crowned, together with his Queen, on the 6th of the following Month. In the mean Time, he appointed the Lord John Howard Earl Marshal, and created him Duke of Norfolk; his Son Thomas Howard, Earl of Surrey; William Berkley, Earl of Nottingham, and the Lord Lovel, one of his chief Confidants, Viscount Lovel, on whom he likewise conferred the Office of Chamberlain. He also released from Confinement, the Archbishop of York, and the Lord Stanley; and taking Dr. Morton, Bishop of Ely, out of the Tower, committed him to the Custody of the Duke of Buckingham, who sent him to Brecknock Castle in Wales.

Richard enjoyed the Crown, which he had obtained by such unjust and cruel Methods, but two Years and

two Months; which whole Time was spent by him, in contriving Methods to support himself on the Throne; and by his Enemies, in Plots and Conspiracies to pull him down; in which they at last succeeded, and at the same Time deprived him both of his Crown and Life.

As he could not think himself safe, whilst his two Nephews, the young King and his Brother the Duke of York, were yet living, he resolved on the wicked Expedient of dispatching them out of the Way; which was accordingly done soon after his Coronation. The two innocent Children were still in the Tower, the Government of which he had given to Sir Robert Brackenbury, one of his Creatures. He chose to be absent from London whilst the hellish Design was executed, that he might be the less suspected; and so set out with the Duke of Buckingham, to visit several Counties. Being come to Gloucester, he sent express Orders

to *Brackenbury*, to put the two young Princes to Death. *Brackenbury*, more conscientious than *Richard* imagined, humbly desired to be excused. Upon which he sent him a written Order, by Sir *James Tyrrel*, requiring him to deliver up, to the said *Tyrrel*, the Keys and Government of the *Tower* for one Night only. *Brackenbury* obeyed; and *Tyrrel* brought in two Russians, *Miles Forest*, and *John Dighton*, whom he had hired to perpetrate the horrid Fact. In the Dead of the Night, when the Princes were asleep, they entered the Chamber, and rushing upon them, stifled them both in their Bed, and then buried them under a little Stair-Case. This *Tyrrel* confessed, who was executed in the next Reign. In 1674, some Bones were found there, supposed to be theirs, which *Charles II.* caused to be put in a Marble-Urn, and removed to *Westminster-Abbey*.

From *Gloucester*, King *Richard* set out for the *North*, to quell some Disorders in those Parts; and coming to *York*, was crowned there a second Time, in the Beginning of *September*. At the same Time, he created *Edward* his Son Prince of *Wales*, who was then ten Years old.

Having got rid of his Nephews, and taken Measures for renewing the foreign Alliances, and endeavoured to make those his Friends whom he most suspected, by giving them considerable Posts and Employments, particularly the Office of Lord-Steward of the Household, to the Lord *Stanley*, (who had married *Margaret*, Countess of *Richmond*, Mother to the Earl, who was still in *Bretagne*;) *Richard* now thought himself very secure; But at this very Time, a Conspiracy was forming, which, though it proved unsuccessful at first, in the End completed his Ruin.

The Duke of *Buckingham*, who

had been the chief Instrument in placing *Richard* on the Throne, was at the Head of this Conspiracy. He thought himself neglected by *Richard*, or, at least, not rewarded in Proportion to the Service he had done him. It is said, the King had broke his Word with him, with regard to some Lands he had promised to give him. However, he retired from Court, exceedingly disgusted, meditating nothing but Revenge, and soon began to concert Measures with *Morton*, Bishop of *Ely*, his Prisoner in *Wales*, how to dethrone the Usurper, whom he had so lately set up. After several Conferences, and thoroughly understanding one another, the Scheme they fixed upon, was to set *Henry* Earl of *Richmond* on the Throne. In this Project, they were sure of having all the Friends of the House of *Lancaster* on their Side, *Henry* being the only Relict of that Family, as has been observed. And in order to engage the *Yorkists*, it was thought necessary, that *Henry* should promise to marry the Princess *Elizabeth*, eldest Daughter of *Edward IV.* Matters being thus concerted, the first Step that was taken, was, by a trusty Messenger, to acquaint the Countess of *Richmond* with their Design; who came heartily into it, and found Means privately to impart it to the Queen-Dowager, in her *Sanctuary*, who readily gave her Consent, that *Henry* should marry her Daughter. This done, they each of them engaged their most faithful Friends in the Plot, and these drew in others; which, indeed, was no hard Matter, as the Usurper was universally hated by the Nation. The Countess then sent two trusty Persons into *Bretagne*, to inform the Earl her Son of what was doing in his Favour, and to invite him over. His Condition there seemed not very promising for such an



an Undertaking. But upon the Duke of *Bretagne's* promising to assist him, he sent Word to the Countess his Mother, that he should be ready to come over in *October*. Though the Conspirators took all imaginable Care to conceal themselves, yet *Richard* had some confused Intimations of a Plot, and beginning to suspect the Duke of *Buckingham*, ordered him to Court; but he peremptorily refused to come, declared against the King, and took up Arms, drawing together the Forces, he and his Adherents had privately lifted in *Wales*, and marching towards the *Western* Counties, in order to join his Friends who were ready to rise there, and where the Earl of *Richmond* designed to land. But the Duke being stopped in his Passage by a dreadful inundation of the *Severn*, which lasted six Days, his whole Army dispersed, and he being left with only one Servant, went and concealed himself in the House of one *Banister*, to whom both he and his Father had been great Benefactors. Nevertheless, upon *Richard's* publishing a Proclamation, offering a very great Reward for apprehending him, he was basely betrayed by *Banister* to the High-Sheriff of *Shropshire*, and soon after lost his Head. About the same Time, the Earl of *Richmond* appeared on the Coast of *England*, and was like to have fallen into the Hands of his Enemies; but he luckily escaped, and sailed back to *Normandy*, and from thence returned into *Bretagne*, to wait for a more favourable Opportunity. In the mean Time, *Richard* proceeded with Severity against the Conspirators putting many of them to Death, and gave an extraordinary Commission to Sir *Ralph Ashton* for that Purpose. Among others, Sir *William Collingburn*, a *Wiltshire* Gentleman, was hanged, drawn and quartered, for abetting the Earl of *Richmond's*

Project, and for writing the following satyrical Rhime, on *Richard*, and three of his Favourites:

The Cat, the Rat, and Lovel the Dog,  
Rule all *England* under a Hog.

Alluding to *Catesby*, *Ratcliff*, and *Lovel*, who bore a Dog for his Arms, as one of *Richard's* Supporters was a *Wild Boar*. But many, to escape the King's Severity, fled into *Bretagne*, to the Earl of *Richmond*; among whom was *Thomas Grey*, Marquess of *Dorset*, Son to King *Edward's* Queen.

The Storm being thus in Appearance blown over, King *Richard* thought fit to call a Parliament; which meeting on *January* 23, 1484, and being wholly devoted to the King, made no Scruple to declare the Issue of *Edward IV.* illegitimate, to confirm *Richard's* irregular Election, and recognize his pretended Right to the Crown. Then they passed an Act of Attainder against the Earl of *Richmond*, and all his Adherents. But it was very happy for his Mother, the Countess, that nobody discovered her having any Hand in the Plot. After all, several good Statutes were passed by this Parliament, for the better administering Justice, and for abolishing a late Imposition, which had been practised in *Edward IVth's* Reign, and had been very grievous to the Subject, under the Name of a *Benevolence*.

This Year the King, for his greater Security, confirmed the Alliance with *Portugal*, and concluded a Truce with *Scotland*. But notwithstanding all his Precautions, he was still apprehensive of fresh Trouble from the Earl of *Richmond*. And, indeed, that Prince had not relinquished his Design, notwithstanding the late Interruption it met with. He had many *English* Lords now with him, who had escaped to *Bretagne*, after the late Disappointment;  
p and

and assured him, that the Nation in general were his Friends; and the Duke of *Bretagne* promised to continue his Assistance. But here he was soon in great Danger. For the Duke being grown old and infirm, his Prime-Minister, *Landaïs*, one of a very mean Extraction, now governed all in his Name; and made himself so odious to the Nobility, and all the People of *Bretagne*, that to support himself against them, he sought foreign Assistance, and believed he had a good Opportunity of receiving it from King *Richard*, on Condition of delivering the Earl of *Richmond* into his Hands. Nothing could be more agreeable to *Richard*, and a Negotiation was actually carried on, between this hated King, and equally hated Minister, for this Purpose. In the mean Time, the Earl knew nothing of all this: But the Bishop of *Ely*, who had made his Escape, and, tho' abroad, had good Spies about *Richard*, advertised him of the Danger he was in. Upon which, with great Difficulty, he escaped in Disguise from *Bretagne*, and repaired to the Court of *Charles VIII.* King of *France*, who had succeeded his Father, *Lewis XI.* The generous Duke of *Bretagne* was angry with his Minister for giving the Earl any Cause of Uneasiness, and permitted all the *English* to follow him. And not long after, *Landaïs*, for all his insolent Proceedings, met with his deserved Reward on a Gibbet. The Earl was very civilly treated at the Court of *Charles VIII.* who at length promised him some Assistance, not so much out of Regard to him, as to cause new Troubles in *England*. Here, also, he had the Satisfaction to see the Earl of *Oxford* come to him, who had been imprisoned by *Edward IV.* in the Castle of *Hammes*, in *Picardy*, but had now prevailed on the Governor and Garrison to declare for the Earl of *Richmond*.

*Richard* had Intelligence, that something was also contriving against him in *England*, but could not discover by whom. After some Time, he found out, that what was carrying on in favour of the Earl, was chiefly grounded on his having promised to marry the Princess *Elizabeth*. To prevent him therefore, he resolved to marry her himself. In order to this, by various plausible Pretences, particularly by promising to secure the Crown to the Princess after his Death, as the Prince of *Wales* was now dead, and he had no other Child, he so wrought on the Queen-Dowager, that she delivered her five Daughters into his Hands. Then he took care to get rid of *Anne* his Queen, Daughter of the great Earl of *Warwick*, either by causing her to die with Grief and Vexation by his ill Treatment, or by actually poisoning her. She would have been more pitied, if she had not married the Murderer of her former Husband, who was *Edward*, Prince of *Wales*, Son to *Henry VI.* *Richard* now made his Addresses to the Princess, his Niece, but found her absolutely inflexible. In the mean Time, as he grew every Day more odious, many Lords and Gentlemen went over to the Earl of *Richmond*, and offered him their Service: Others did the same, to avoid being sacrificed to his Suspicions; and those who staid at home, waited only for an Opportunity to declare against him. *Richard* had also impolitically laid up his Fleet in the Spring, 1485, at which Time, he thought himself pretty secure from all Danger.

All Circumstances thus concurring, the Earl set sail from *Harfleur*, on the 31st of *July*, with only 2000 Men, which *France* had lent him, together with the Ships, to transport them. On the 6th of *August*, he landed at *Milford-Haven*, and marching towards *North-Wales*, was joined by

Sir



Sir *Rice ap Thomas*, with a considerable Body of *Welsh* Troops. As the Earl was of *Welsh* Extraction, that Country in general readily favoured his Design. In a few Days he arrived at *Shrewsbury*, where the Inhabitants presently received him, and Sir *George Talbot* brought him an Aid of 2000 Men. The Lord *Stanley*, and his Brother Sir *William*, raised Forces, as if it had been for the King, but had given private Assurance to the Earl, that they would join him at a proper Opportunity; which they did, after the two Parties were engaged, and were by that Means the chief Cause of the Earl's Success.

King *Richard*, having heard of the Earl's Landing, ordered all his Forces to be drawn together at *Nottingham*, resolving to go in Person and fight him. And the Earl being no less desirous to decide the Quarrel with one Blow, resolved to go and meet *Richard*. In his March he was joined by Sir *Walter Hungerford*, Sir *Thomas Bourchier*, and several others, who deserted the King. The two Armies met near *Bosworth* in *Leicestershire*, and the Battle was fought on the 22d of *August*. The Earl of *Richmond* was at first in Danger of being worsted, when the Lord *Stanley* joining him with 5000 Men, and his Brother with 2000, the King's Army was entirely routed, after a Fight of two Hours, in which he gave signal Proofs of his Valour and Courage. In the Heat of the Battle, espying the Earl, he rode furiously to attack him, and killed Sir *William Brandon*, the Earl's Standard-Bearer, who stood in his Way, and threw Sir *John Cheney* to the Ground, who had taken the former's Place. When he saw the Day was lost, he rushed into the Midst of his Enemies, and was slain. It is very likely he was betrayed, and that some great Men, who staid with him, held secret Intelligence with the Earl of *Richmond*.

It is said, that on the very Morning of the Battle, before it began, the following Lines were found fixed on the Duke of *Norfolk's* Tent-Door, who was slain fighting for *Richard*:

*Jockey of Norfolk*, be not so bold;  
For *Dickon* thy Master is bought and fold.

Sir *Richard Ratcliff* was also slain; and the perfidious *Catesby*, being taken Prisoner, was executed at *Leicester*.

Thus fell King *Richard*, aged about 34 Years, who, excepting his unjustifiable Methods to get and keep the Crown, may be reckoned no bad King. He took care to suppress Vice, and promote Sobriety and Virtue, and had a great Regard to the due Administration of Justice, except where his Crown was concerned. Lord *Verulam* says he was in military Virtue approved, and a good Law-Maker. He founded the College of *Heralds*, and made them a Corporation. He was certainly endowed with great Parts and Abilities, which would have made him a truly great Man, if they had been rightly applied. His boundless Ambition made him aspire to the Crown, and it was for the Sake of that only, that he was guilty of all that Treachery, Dissimulation and Cruelty, which justly renders his Memory detested. He was really *Crook-Backed*, from whence he had his Surname.

His Crown being discovered by a Soldier among the Spoil, was brought to the Lord *Stanley*, who set it on the Earl of *Richmond's* Head, and saluted him *King*. His Body was found stript naked, covered with Blood and Dirt, and in that Condition was thrown cross a Horse, with the Head hanging on one Side and the Legs on the other, and carried to *Leicester*, where it was interred. He was the last King of the *Plantagenet* Race, who had swayed the Scepter ever since *Henry II*.



T. Kitchen Sculp.

## HENRY VII. 1485-1509.

1485.

**H**ENRY, Earl of *Richmond*, was the Son of *Edmund Tudor*, Earl of *Richmond*, and of *Margaret*, descended from a Bastard-Son of *John of Gaunt* Duke of *Lancaster*, by *Catharine Rowet* or *Swinford*, Mistress, afterwards Wife, to that Prince; upon which, his Children by her were legitimated by Act of Parliament, by the Name of *Beaufort*, in the Reign of *Richard II.* but with the express Exception, that neither they nor their Issue should succeed to the Crown.

Immediately after the Victory at *Bosworth*, the Earl caused *Te Deum* to be sung, and his whole Army to fall on their Knees, to return God Thanks; after which, they saluted him with unanimous and repeated Shouts of *Long live King Henry!* from which Time, he took on himself the Stile and Authority of King. And though his Title to the Crown, as being of the House of *Lancaster*, was liable to many Exceptions, yet he chose to make that alone the Foun-

dation of his Claim, without mixing it with any other Title, but only in a secondary Way, in Aid of the former. He therefore put off his Marriage with *Elizabeth* of the House of *York*, whose Title was deemed better than his, till the Parliament should have adjudged him the Succession, that he might not seem to be beholden to her for his Right; and resolved to be crowned before the Parliament met, to prevent their entering into any Debates about his Title, and that he might not seem to hold the Crown merely by Virtue of their Consent. Nevertheless, to please the Nation, whose Intent was, that the two Houses should be united by that Marriage, to prevent any more Blood being spilt in their Quarrel, he could do no less than renew his Oath to marry that Princess, who was the eldest Daughter of *Edward IV.* and sent for her up to *London*, from the Castle of *Sheriff-Hutton*, where *Richard* had confined her. He dreaded and hated the

House



House of York, of which there was one Male Branch still living, who was *Edward Plantagenet*, Earl of *Warwick*, Son to the unfortunate Duke of *Clarence*. He therefore sent a Detachment, soon after the Battle, to take him from the same Castle, and conduct him to the *Tower* of *London*, of which he soon after made the Earl of *Oxford* Governor. And to reward some others of his chief Friends, he made his Uncle *Jasper Tudor*, Earl of *Pembroke*, who had been a Father to him, and his constant Companion in *Bretagne*, Duke of *Bedford*; the Lord *Stanley*, his Father-in-Law, Earl of *Derby*; and Sir *Edward Courtney*, Earl of *Devonshire*.

An extraordinary Kind of Distemper raged about this Time in *England*, particularly in *London*, called the *Sweating-Sickness*, because it threw Persons into a profuse Sweat, and carried them off in four-and-twenty Hours; but those who got over that Time usually recovered. It continued from the Middle of *September* to the End of *October*, and swept away great Numbers of People. Two Mayors, and six Aldermen of *London*, died of it in eight Days.

On the 30th of *October*, 1485, a little above two Months after the Battle of *Bosworth*, Henry was crowned by Cardinal *Bourchier*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*. At the same Time, he appointed a Band of fifty Men to attend him, called *Yeomen of the Guard*. No King of *England* ever had them before, and all Kings and Queens have had them since. They have been increased to 100 in daily Waiting, and 70 more not in Waiting.

The Parliament met on the 7th of *November*, and just as Henry would have it, passed an Act, *That the Inheritance of the Crown should rest, remain and abide in the King,*

*and the Heirs of his Body*. Thus they meddled not with his Title. However, being himself in no small Perplexity about it, he took a Step, which was not only needless, but contrary to Law, in getting a Bull from the Pope to confirm this Act of Succession; wherein he took Care to have all his Titles mentioned, namely, his Descent from the House of *Lancaster*, his Marriage with the Princess *Elizabeth*, his Victory at *Bosworth* and the Act of Parliament. The next Thing the Parliament did, was to reverse the Attainders of those who had taken Part with the King, whilst only Earl of *Richmond*. But the King himself had been attainted in the late Reign, which was an Affair of much more Difficulty; however, it was got over, by the Judges unanimously resolving, *That the Crown takes away all Defects and Stops in Blood; and that from the Time the King assumed it, the Fountain was cleared*. Nevertheless, the Records of his Attainder were taken off the File. Then an Act of Attainder was passed against the late King, by the Name of the Duke of *Gloucester*, and his chief Adherents. The Estates forfeited to the King by this Act, brought him in prodigious Sums. After this, he thought fit to publish a general Pardon to all who should come in and take the Oaths to him by such a Time. Then he rewarded some who had accompanied him in his Exile, creating the Lord *Chandos* of *Bretagne*, Earl of *Bath*, giving Sir *Giles d'Aubeney* the Title of Baron *D'Aubeney*, and Sir *Robert Willoughby*, that of Lord *Brooke*; and at the same Time restored *Edward Stafford*, Son of the late Duke of *Buckingham*, who lost his Life in his Cause, to the Title and Estates of his Father. *John Morton*, Bishop of *Ely*, he called to his Privy-Council, together with *Richard Fox*.

1486

The former he afterwards made Archbishop of *Canterbury* and Lord Chancellor; and the latter, Lord Keeper of the Privy-Seal, and Bishop of *Exeter*, who by Degrees was advanced to the See of *Winchester*.

Though *Henry* had a mortal Hatred to the House of *York*, yet for the Sake of his Oath, and to amuse the Nation, he thought it necessary at last to marry the Princess *Elizabeth*. Accordingly the Nuptials were celebrated, on *Jan. 18, 1486*, to the great Joy of the People, who expressed more Satisfaction than at the King's Entry, or Coronation. This exceedingly mortified him; and, indeed, though he had made *Elizabeth* his Queen, yet he treated her with great Coldness and Indifferency as long as she lived. Soon after the Marriage, he made *Thomas Stanley* Earl of *Derby*, High-Constable, *William Stanley* his Brother, Lord Chamberlain, and the Lord *D'Aubeney*, Governor of *Calais*.

About the Middle of the Spring, *Henry* being on a Progress in the *North*, when he came to *York*, was informed, that the Lord *Lovel* had raised a Rebellion in those Parts, and that *Humphrey Stafford*, and his Brother *Thomas*, were in Arms in *Worcestershire*. This very much alarmed the King, who expected no such Matter, and was consequently unprepared. However, he sent the Duke of *Bedford*, with such Forces as could be got together in Haste, first to offer the Rebels a Pardon, provided they would lay down their Arms: Which the Lord *Lovel* fearing they would accept, went off first, and concealed himself in *Lancashire*, till he had an Opportunity of retiring to *Flanders*. Then all his Troops submitted to the King's Mercy. The *Staffords*, who were besieging *Worcester*, hearing of this, raised the Siege, left their Troops, and took Sanctuary in *Coln-*

*ham-Church*, near *Abington*; from whence, however, being taken, *Humphrey*, the eldest, was executed at *Tyburn*, and *Thomas* pardoned, as being judged to be drawn in by his Brother.

On *Sept. 20*, the Queen was delivered of a Prince, who was named *Arthur*, in Memory of the famous *British* Monarch, from whom *Henry* would have it thought, that he was descended.

The *Yorkists* who assisted in raising *Henry* to the Throne, did it purely out of Hatred to the Person and Government of *Richard*, and with a View to unite the two Houses by *Henry's* Marriage with the Princess *Elizabeth*. Upon this they expected to be treated with the same Favour as the *Lancastrians*; and those who desired the Good of the Nation, hoped that henceforward all Distinction would cease between the two Parties. But *Henry* was unhappily in another Way of thinking: And, therefore, he not only behaved with great Coldness to the Queen, and put off her Coronation as long as he could, his Ambition not enduring it to be thought, that she had any Right to the Crown; but on all Occasions shewed his great Aversion to the whole *York* Party, looking upon that House to be his Rivals: Which Partiality bred a great deal of ill Blood, and was the Source of most of the Troubles that afflicted his Reign.

A Rumour being raised, that the Duke of *York*, one of *Edward's* Sons, was yet alive, having by some Means or other escaped his Uncle's cruel Design, the People readily gave into it, and shewed their Disposition, by eagerly swallowing this false Report. And this gave Occasion to *Richard Simon*, a Priest at *Oxford*, to set up one *Lambert Simnel*, a Baker's Son, and Student under him, and impose him upon the World for the said Duke. Or, it may



may be, the Priest was underhand set to work by some of the *Yorkists*, who hated *Henry*, though he only at first appeared to be concerned. *Simuel* was a very personable young Man, of quick Wit and a forward Genius; so that the Priest was at no great Pains in instructing him to act his Part. However, a Report being soon spread, that the Earl of *Warwick* was escaped out of the *Tower*, which, though false, caused great Joy among the People; *Simon* now judged it best to instruct his Pupil to personate that Earl. It was thought proper to have the first Scene laid in *Ireland*, where the People in general were zealously affected to the House of *York*. The Priest had no sooner carried him thither, but they were so transported with Joy at the Earl of *Warwick's* Arrival, as they thought, that the Deputy and Chancellor (who perhaps were in the Plot) thought they should run no Risk in acknowledging him for their Sovereign. Accordingly, he was proclaimed at *Dublin*, King of *England* and Lord of *Ireland*, by the Name of *Edward VI.*

King *Henry* was very much disturbed at this Proceeding, but the Measures he took on this Occasion, made the *Yorkists* dislike him the more. Whether he suspected the Queen his Mother-in-Law, Widow of *Edward IV.* to have a Hand in the Plot, or no, he caused her to be confined to *Bermondsey-Monastery* in *Southwark*, and seized all her Estate. He pretended he did this, because she had delivered her Daughters into *Richard's* Hands. However, she remained there in Confinement as long as she lived. Another Step the King took, was to shew the true Earl of *Warwick* publickly to the People. Accordingly, he was conducted through the Streets of *London*, and in solemn Procession

brought to *St. Paul's*, and then carried back again to the *Tower*. But the *Irish* gave out, that the Person the King shewed for the Earl of *Warwick*, was an Impostor, and that he whom they had with them, was the true Earl.

The Plot having thus succeeded in *Ireland*, those who favoured it in *England* were not idle. Among the rest, the Earl of *Lincoln*, Sister's Son to *Edward IV.* went over to *Flanders*, to concert Measures with the Dukes Dowager of *Burgundy*, another of *Edward's* Sisters, and a mortal Enemy to *Henry*, and the House of *Lancaster*. Perhaps she was herself at the Bottom of this Plot. However, she readily agreed to furnish the pretended King with 2000 *German* Veterans; who, in *May 1487*, arrived in *Ireland*, under the Command of *Martin Swart*, with the Earl of *Lincoln*, and the Lord *Lovel*. Presently after which, they proceeded to the Coronation of their sham Sovereign, which was performed at *Dublin*, with great Solemnity. Then, with their new King and the *German* and *Irish* Forces, they came over into *England*, expecting the People to rise in their Favour; but they were disappointed, the *English* not liking to receive a King from the *Irish* and *Germans*. Besides, King *Henry* had taken care to be in a Condition to give them a proper Reception. And so having drawn his Forces together, he fell upon them, on the 16th of *June*, at a Village called *Stocke*, near *Newark upon Trent*, and after a sharp Engagement of three Hours, totally routed them. The *Germans* maintained the Fight with great Obstinacy, till they were most of them killed or wounded; and then the *Irish* ran away as fast as they could. The Earls of *Lincoln* and *Kildare*, and *Martin Swart*, were slain, and some say the Lord *Lovel*; however,

he was never seen afterwards. The new *Irish* King, now plain *Lambert Simnel* again, was taken Prisoner, with the Priest his Master. *Henry* gave *Simnel* his Life, employed him first about his Kitchen, and then made him one of his Falconers, in which Post he remained to his Death. The Priest was imprisoned, and never heard of again. And now *Henry* had a fine Opportunity to replenish his Coffers, a Thing he was ever immoderately fond of, by fining and confiscating the Estates of divers Persons, on Pretence of their favouring the late Conspiracy. To which End, immediately after the Battle, he made a Progress to *Lincoln* and *York*, which was more like an Itinerary Circuit of Justice, than a Visit to his Counties. However, he thought it necessary, at last, to have the Queen crowned, which Ceremony was accordingly performed, on the 25th of *November*, almost two Years after the Marriage.

This, and the five following Years, were remarkable for *Henry's* Conduct, with regard to the Affair of *Bretagne*. *Charles VIII.* King of *France*, taking Advantage of the Dissensions in *Bretagne*, had on various Pretences invaded that Duchy, with a Design to subdue it, and annex it to his Crown. The Duke of *Bretagne* sent to the King of *England*, to demand Succours against so powerful an Enemy, who had already made great Progress, and taken several Towns; but the King of *France* desired *Henry* either to assist him, or stand neuter. It was certainly the Interest of *England* to hinder *Bretagne* from being swallowed up by *France*. And yet *Henry*, by an unaccountable Kind of Conduct, instead of sending immediate Aid to *Bretagne*, only offered his Mediation to both Parties; whilst *Charles*, endeavouring to amuse him with Embassies and Negotiations,

went on with his Conquests. King *Henry* did not care to engage in any foreign War, whilst he did not think his Affairs well established at home; and so was willing to imagine, that *Charles* would never be able to carry his Point, with regard to *Bretagne*: And his whole Study and Policy was to make the Affair turn to his own private Advantage; Covetousness being all along his predominant Passion. And in this he succeeded according to his Wish. By representing the Danger of the Ruin of *Bretagne*, and the Necessity of engaging in its Defence, which he never intended heartily to do, he obtained a very large Subsidy from his Parliament, which met on *November* 9, 1487; which done, he kept the Money, and contented himself with only treating with the King of *France* about an Accommodation. And some Time after, he concluded a Truce with *Charles*, to commence from *July* 24, 1488, and to end on *January* 17, 1490; and so left him at full Liberty to pursue his Conquests.

In the mean Time, there was an Insurrection in the *North* of *England*, on account of levying the Subsidy; in which the Earl of *Northumberland* was murdered. And the Malcontents being farther inflamed by one *John à Chamber*, chose *John Egremont* for their Leader, and threatened to go and fight the King, in Defence of their Liberties. But the Earl of *Surrey* fell upon them, and dispersed them: *John à Chamber* was taken, and hanged with some of his Associates at *York*: And *Egremont* escaped into *Flanders*, to the Dukes of *Burgundy*, whose Palace was a sure Asylum for all the King's Enemies. The Earl of *Surrey* was hereupon made President of the *North*, and *Sir Richard Tunstall*, the King's principal Commissioner for levying the Subsidy, of which



which he was resolved not to abate one Penny.

The Duke of *Bretagne*, having been defeated in the Battle of *St. Aubin*, and having no Prospect of any Assistance, was under a Necessity of suing for Peace; which *Charles* granted, only till it should be his Interest to break it, lest *Henry* should at last open his Eyes, and send the Duke some powerful Succours next Campaign. That Prince dying soon after, and being succeeded by his eldest Daughter, *Anne*, King *Henry* made as if he would vigorously assist her; and, to that End, began to form Alliances, and entered into a Treaty with *Anne*, to send her 6000 Men. But in reality he had no more Intention to engage heartily in the War, than before. His Design was only to frighten *France*, and get more Money. He sent the Duchess those Succours only for eight Months, and was to be repaid all his Expences on that Account with Interest. And believing that *Charles* now wanted a Peace, as dreading the Alliance of *England* with *Bretagne*, he went so far as to demand of him the Arrears of the Pension which *Lewis XI.* had obliged himself to pay to *Edward IV.* and even talked of endeavouring to recover *Guienne* and *Normandy*, and the whole Kingdom of *France*, which, he said, of Right belonged to him. But by thus carrying Matters too far, which he was in no Condition to undertake, *Charles* perceived he only intended to frighten him, and so continued to pursue his Project, in relation to *Bretagne*, in which he at last succeeded.

In 1491, *Charles* besieged the Duchess *Anne* in *Rennes*, who sent Ambassadors to *Henry*, to demand immediate Succours, otherwise *Bretagne* would infallibly be lost. *Henry* pretending to be in a great

Hurry to send her some effectual Aid, borrowed Money of his Subjects under that Colour; but it soon appeared, that he was much more intent upon levying the Money, than assisting the Duchess. In the mean Time, the Siege of *Rennes* going on but slowly, *Charles* thought of a speedier Way than the Sword, to accomplish his Design upon *Bretagne*: And that was, to demand the young Duchess in Marriage, though she had been married by Proxy to *Maximilian*, King of the *Romans*, and though *Margaret*, Sister of the Archduke *Philip* had been contracted to *Charles*. Nevertheless, having found Means to gain the Duchess's Consent, the Marriage was concluded in *December*, 1491; the Consequence of which was the uniting of all *Bretagne* to the Crown of *France*.

*Henry* feigned to be greatly provoked at this Proceeding, and threatened high. He made Preparations for invading *France*, obtained a Benevolence from the Parliament, under that Pretence, actually passed over to *Calais* with a great Army, and besieged *Boulogne*. All this was done, after *Charles* (who, being bent on the Conquest of *Naples*, desired by all Means to avoid a Rupture with *England*) had sent Ambassadors to propose a Peace, and *Henry* had actually consented to treat about it. But then it was necessary to bring him off with Honour; and so the two Kings went Hand in Hand in the Business; *Henry's* Expedition was a Blind, and the Siege of *Boulogne* only a Pretence. Whilst he was before that Place, the Articles of the Peace agreed on by the Commissioners on both Sides, were brought to him: But to save Appearances, he desired the Opinion of his Lords and General Officers, who agreed, that he ought to accept of them, and gave their Reasons at large,

large, under their Hands. And so the Treaty was signed at *Eftaples*, November 3, 1492; the King of *France*, who wanted a Peace, on account of his Project upon *Naples*, agreeing to pay him 620,000 Crowns of Gold (or 124,000*l.*) for the Debt his Queen had contracted for the Defence of *Bretagne*; and 125,000 Crowns, (or 25,000*l.*) for the Arrears of the Pension above-mentioned. Thus by the Affair of *Bretagne*, which ended so unhappily for *England*, considering what the Parliament had given him, and this profitable Settling of Accounts, *Henry* got a great deal of Money, but very little Honour.

In *June*, this Year (1492,) Prince *Henry* was born, who in Process of Time succeeded the King his Father. The same Year is likewise remarkable for *Christopher Columbus's* sailing from *Cadiz*, with King *Ferdinand's* Licence, in order to discover the New-World, or *America*.

A new Pretender to the Crown began now to disturb *Henry's* Tranquillity; who had been, for some Time, prepared and trained up by the Duchess of *Burgundy*, to play the second *Simmel*. This was *Peter*, *Peterkin*, or *Perkin Warbeck*, Son of a converted *Jew* of *Tournay*, who had lived a considerable Time at *London*. As *Perkin* had spent his Childhood there, and afterwards generally conversed with the *English* settled in the *Low-Countries*, he was sufficiently Master of the *English* Tongue, and was, besides, a Youth of a noble Mien and Aspect, and of excellent Wit and Parts. Him, therefore, the Duchess instructed to personate the Duke of *York*, (Son of *Edward IV.*) whom she had industriously given out to be still alive. And the young Impostor acted his Part so well, that many believed him to be the Person he pretended to be; and others joined

in the Plot, from a Dislike to King *Henry*, or the Love of Novelty. But, first, the Duchess did not think it proper, that he should begin to make his Appearance in *Flanders*, for fear she should be suspected. She therefore sent him into *Portugal*; where, after he had continued privately about a Year, she sent Orders to him to repair into *Ireland*. And so landing at *Cork*, he immediately gave out, that he was the Duke of *York*, and was readily received as such. After this, the King of *France* being told, that the Duke of *York* was in *Ireland*, sent for him to his Court, before he had concluded the Peace with *Henry*; where being arrived, he treated him as the Duke of *York*, lodged him in his Palace, and appointed him a Guard. But, when *Charles* began to be sure of a Peace with the King of *England*, he sent *Perkin* away, lest *Henry* should make the Delivering of him up one of the Articles of the Treaty. Immediately he repaired into *Flanders*, to the Duchess's Court, making as if he had never seen her before; and she feigned a great Surprise, that he should have the Assurance to call himself the Duke of *York*. However, they both acted their Parts so well that upon his being examined before her Court, and giving very pertinent Answers, she pretended she was thoroughly convinced, owned him for her Nephew, ordered him a Guard of thirty Halberdiers, and gave him the Title of the *White-Rose*, the Device of the House of *York*.

The News of this presently flew into *England*, the Beginning of the Year 1493, and occasioned a great Stir among the People. Many great Men favoured the Plot, who were either Friends to the House of *York*, or disgusted with King *Henry*; particularly Sir *William Stanley*, Lord-Chamberlain,



Chamberlain, to whom the King in great Measure owed his Victory at *Bosworth*, the Lord *Fitz-Walter*, Sir *Robert Clifford*, Sir *Simon Montfort*, Sir *Thomas Thwaites*, and *William Barley*. *Clifford* and *Barley* were sent into *Flanders*, to concert Measures with the Dukes of *Burgundy*; who sending back Word that the Duke of *York* was really alive, put fresh Vigour into the Conspirators. The King, in order to stifle these Rumours, first examined Witnesses concerning the Duke of *York's* Death; but their Depositions were not much regarded: And then, by Means of good Spies, having learnt the whole Story of *Perkin's* Birth, Life, and Actions, he caused it to be published to the World. And to take care of *Ireland*, where the pretended Duke of *York* had many Friends, he sent Sir *Edward Poyning's* thither, as his Deputy, in 1494; who holding a Parliament, a famous Act was passed, called *Poyning's* Law, whereby all the Statutes of *England*, relating to the Publick, were to be of Force in *Ireland*.

King *Henry*, having by his good Policy won over *Clifford*, had perfect Information from him, of *Perkin's* Friends in *England*: Some of whom were apprehended and put to Death; particularly the Lord *Fitz-Walter*, and Sir *Simon Montfort*. And not long after, the Lord-Chamberlain *Stanley*, Brother to the Earl of *Derby*, the King's Father-in-Law was beheaded upon *Clifford's* Information; whereby his immense Riches fell into the King's Hands. This occasioned Swarms of Libels against the Judges, the Council, and even the King; and five Persons, convicted of dispersing them, were executed.

Notwithstanding these discouraging Circumstances, the Dukes of *Burgundy* was resolved that *Perkin* should do something, after all the

Pains she had been at in training him up. And so, in 1495, she ordered some Forces to be drawn together, with which he embarked, and, according to her Directions, arrived on the Coast of *Kent*, and landed some of his Men, to see how the People stood affected. The *Kentishmen* presently took up Arms, as if it were to assist *Perkin*, and then falling upon those who were landed, cut them in Pieces, except about 150, who, being taken Prisoners, were all hanged by Order of the King. *Perkin* seeing by this what sort of Encouragement he was to expect, sailed back to *Flanders*.

In *October*, the King called a Parliament, which enacted, That no Person should be impeached or attainted for assisting the King for the Time being; or if they were, it should be of no Force. But of what Use this Act could be, in Case of a Revolution, is hard to imagine.

*Perkin* staid not long in *Flanders*, but landed soon after in *Ireland*. And finding Things not so favourable since *Poyning's* Arrival, he retired into *Scotland*, to the Court of *James IV.* who gave him an honourable Reception, owned him publicly for Duke of *York*, and gave him to Wife *Catharine Gordon*, Daughter of the Earl of *Huntley*, his Relation. And, moreover, he twice invaded *England*, jointly with him, and published a Proclamation, wherein *Henry* was called *Usurper*, *Tyrant*, and *Murderer*. But the *English* Army advancing to give him Battle, and the People not rising, as was expected, after ravaging *Northumberland*, he returned into *Scotland* with his Booty.

In *March*, 1496, the King granted a Patent to *John Cabott*, a *Venetian*, and three of his Sons, *Lewis*, *Sebastian* and *Sancho*, to go on the Discovery of new Lands in *America*. *Jasper Tudor*, Duke of *Bedford*,

*Bedford*, the King's Uncle, died towards the End of this Year.

The King having got a Subsidy from his Parliament, in 1497, to enable him to revenge the late Insults of the *Scots*, it was levied, as usual, with great Rigour. This occasioned an Insurrection in *Cornwall*, which was principally stirred up by one *Michael Joseph*, a Farrier, and *Thomas Flammock*, a Lawyer, who led the Malcontents into *Devonshire*, and from thence into *Somersetshire*, their Numbers increasing as they marched along. At *Wills*, they were joined by the Lord *Audley*, whom they chose for their General, advanced into *Kent*, and encamped on *Black-Heath*. But the King marching out against them, and dividing his Army into three Bodies, entirely defeated them, killing 2000 on the Spot. *Audley*, *Flammock*, and the Farrier, were taken and executed; and the rest were pardoned.

By good Luck, the subsidy granted to *Henry* for the *Scotch* War, was almost so much Money in his Pocket; for a Peace was soon concluded between the two Monarchs, by Means of *Don Pedro d' Ayala*, the *Spanish* Ambassador. King *James* would not deliver up *Perkin Warbeck*, but honourably dismissed him and his Wife, and by their own Desire sent them into *Ireland*, before the Conclusion of the Treaty.

*Charles VIII.* King of *France*, died in *April*, 1498, after he had conquered *Naples*, and lost it again; and was succeeded by the Duke of *Orleans*, by the Name of *Lewis XII.*

The *Cornish* Rebels, making an ill Use of the King's Lenity, began again to bestir themselves, and sent for *Perkin Warbeck* from *Ireland*, telling him, if he would come and head them, they hoped, with the Assistance of other honest *Englishmen*, to place him on the Throne. *Perkin*, now destitute of other Friends,

readily embraced the Offer, and landing in *Cornwall*, with a few Men, soon found himself at the Head of 3000. He published a Proclamation, assuming the Title of King, by the Name of *Richard IV.* and marched to besiege *Exeter*. But the Citizens remaining firm in their Loyalty, and the Lords and Gentlemen of *Devonshire* having drawn some Forces together for its Relief, *Perkin* failed in his Attempt: And hearing the King was advancing with his Army, he marched to *Taunton*, and made as if he designed to fight; but withdrew in the Night, and took Sanctuary in the Monastery of *Bewley*, in *New-Forest*, where finding himself strictly guarded, he surrendered, upon the King's promising to spare his Life. His Army, which was increased to 6000, had before submitted to the King's Mercy, who pardoned them all, except a few Ring-Leaders, whom he ordered to be hanged for an Example. *Henry* had also sent a Detachment to *St. Michael's Mount*, to fetch *Perkin's* Wife. She was a beautiful and virtuous Lady, and loved her Husband, though she deserved a better, and so gained upon the King by her modest Behaviour, that he had her conducted to the Queen, and allowed her an honourable Maintenance. The King also, before he had got *Perkin* out of the Sanctuary, made his Entry into *Exeter*, thanked the Citizens for the Zeal they had shewn for his Service, and taking off his Sword, gave it to the Mayor, ordering that it should be always carried before him.

As to *Perkin*, he was brought up to Court, where every one might see and talk with him; and the King had the Curiosity to see him also, without being seen by him. Then he was made to ride twice through *London*, exposed to the Scorn and Derision of the People. After this



this, he was privately examined, as to his Life and Actions, and his Confession published to the World. He was in Appearance at Liberty, yet was ordered to be narrowly watched: Notwithstanding which, he found Means to get away, and went to the Sea-Side, in Hopes of finding a Vessel to carry him out of the Kingdom. But hearing that Orders were out to apprehend him, he turned back, and took Sanctuary in the Priory of *Shene*. The King granted him his Life, upon the Prior's Intercession, who would not otherwise deliver him up; but ordered him to be set in the Stocks, for two whole Days together, first in the *Palace-Yard* at *Westminster*, and then at *Cheapside-Cross*; from whence he was carried to the *Tower*. He had not been long there, but he plotted to make his Escape, together with the unfortunate Earl of *Warwick*, who was now but twenty-four Years old, and had been a Prisoner there ever since the Beginning of this Reign, for no other Cause but *Henry's* Jealousy. The King was not displeased, that the Earl was in the Plot, but rather glad of this Pretence to take him off, as he was the only Male left of the House of *York*. And it was generally thought, that *Henry* himself had laid Matters so, as to draw the poor Earl into the Snare. However, being resolved now to get rid of them both, *Perkin Warbeck* was hanged, and the Earl of *Warwick* beheaded on *Tower-Hill*, in *November*, 1499. The Death of this unhappy Prince brought a great Odium upon the King; but his Excuse was, that *Ferdinand* of *Arragon* had declared, he would never consent to marry his Daughter *Catharine* to Prince *Arthur*, whilst the Earl of *Warwick* was alive. A poor Excuse, indeed, for such a Crime!

The Palace of *Shene* in *Surrey*,

was burnt to the Ground, and all the rich Furniture consumed, the latter End of the preceding Year. *Henry* caused it to be rebuilt, and gave it the Name of *Richmond*, where stands the Village so called.

In 1500, the Plague raged terribly in *England*, particularly at *London*, where 30,000 died of it: And King *Henry* went over to *Calais* with his Family, to stay there till the Fury of it should be abated.

In 1501, *Catharine* of *Spain*, Daughter of *Ferdinand* and *Isabella*, arrived in *England*: And her Marriage with *Arthur*, Prince of *Wales*, was solemnized soon after. We shall hear much of this Lady in the following Reign. The Prince died about five Months after his Marriage, *April* 2, 1502, in the seventeenth Year of his Age; and some Time after, the King created *Henry*, his second Son, Prince of *Wales*, who, upon his Father's Death, succeeded to the Crown.

In *December*, the same Year, the King granted a Patent to *James Elliot*, and *Thomas Asburst*, Merchants of *Bristol*; and to *John Gonzalez*, and *Francis Fernandez*, two *Portuguese*, to go upon the Discovery of unknown Countries; as he had before done the same by the *Cabotts*.

*Elizabeth*, *Henry's* Queen, Daughter of *Edward* IV. died in *February*, 1503, not much regretted by the King, who, in the Affair of the Right to the Crown, always looked upon her as his Rival, especially as the People were generally better affected to the Title of the House of *York*, than that of the House of *Lancaster*, or rather *Tudor*.

At this Time the King grievously oppressed his Subjects, and continued to do so to the End of his Reign, by means of two infamous Ministers, *Empson* and *Dudley*, two Lawyers, the former of whom was a Sieve-

1800

1503

6-31 Sieve-Maker's Son ; who sticking at nothing to humour the King, and fill his Coffers, were guilty of such violent Extortions and arbitrary Measures to squeeze Money out of the People, as were never known before, and spread an universal Terror over the Nation.

The Avarice of *Henry* put him upon projecting the Marriage of *Catharine*, his Son *Arthur's* Widow, with his other Son, *Henry*, rather than he would part with that Princess's Dowry, which was 200,000 Crowns of Gold. *Ferdinand* agreed to it ; a Dispensation was obtained from the Pope, even though the former Marriage should be supposed to be consummated ; and so Prince *Henry* espoused his Brother's Widow. But the Marriage was not consummated till he came to the Crown.

The King's eldest Daughter, *Margaret*, was, about the same Time, married to *James IV.* King of *Scotland* : From her descended our King *James I.*

1509 The Earl of *Suffolk*, Brother to the late Earl of *Lincoln*, and Nephew of *Edward IV.* observing the Discontent of the People, on account of *Empson* and *Dudley*, had formed a Conspiracy against *Henry*, and retired into *Flanders* to forward the Design. He soon found, that the King, by his Spies, had discovered his Plot ; and so, after roving up and down in *Germany*, he returned to *Flanders*, where the Archduke *Philip* took him under his Protection. *Philip* afterwards, in 1506, as he was sailing to *Spain*, with *Joan* his Wife, who was become Queen of *Castile*, by the Death of Queen *Isabella* her Mother, was drove upon the Coast of *England* ; and landing at *Weymouth*, to refresh themselves, they found that they must not depart without seeing the King. *Henry* kept them at his Court above three

Months, under Colour of doing them Honour, till he had got every Thing of *Philip* which he wanted, and among the rest, the Earl of *Suffolk* to be delivered up ; which, however, *Philip* would not consent to, till the King had promised, upon his Honour, not to touch his Life. Upon this the Earl came over, but was presently sent to the Tower.

*Philip* died soon after, and, in 1507, a Treaty of Marriage was concluded between his young Son *Charles*, now become Archduke of *Austria*, and the Princess *Mary*, *Henry's* other Daughter. But this Match came to nothing, as we shall see in her Brother's Reign.

King *Henry*, not long after, fell into a Consumption, which made him think he had not long to live : And yet he continued to amass Riches, and *Empson* and *Dudley* went on with their Exactions ; till finding he drew near his End, he granted a general Pardon, and ordered in his Will, that his Successor should make Restitution of whatever his Ministers had unjustly extorted from his Subjects. But this had no Effect. As he could not find in his Heart to do it in his Life-Time, his Son did not think fit to part with any of the Money that fell into his Hands by his Death, which happened at *Richmond*, on the 22d of *April*, 1509, in the fifty-second Year of his Age, and twenty-fourth of his Reign.

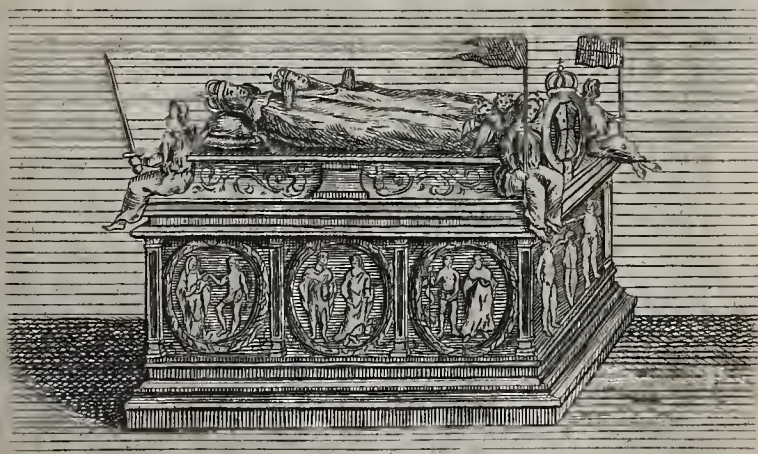
*Henry VII.* was feared by his Subjects, but not beloved : And it is no Wonder, since all his Views centered in himself, and he minded nothing, but how to keep the Crown, and to heap up Money. With regard to the former, he was always successful, by his good Fortune or Policy, ever getting the better of his Enemies ; on which Account he was held in great Repute by foreign Princes. And as to the latter, he



He had a wonderful Sagacity in making every Thing turn to his own private Advantage. This might have been borne with, if his insatiable Avarice had not put him upon oppressing his People, in order to get immense Sums from them, not to spend, but to hoard up in his Coffers. Ambition, Glory, Love, Pleasures, all gave place to this governing Passion, the Love of Money. And how successfully he indulged it, will appear, if what is said of him be true, that he hoarded up 1,800,000/ Sterling; an immense Sum in those Days! His Love of Peace was not owing to his Want of Courage, but the Fear of emptying his Coffers. He had great Abilities, but then they had only himself for their Object; and towards the End of his Reign, he affected to govern with almost an absolute Sway. Besides this, his dark, reserved and suspicious Temper, was no proper Quality to gain the Love of his Subjects. He was, indeed, called the *Solomon of England*; but on what Account is hard to say, unless it be

for the grievous Yoke he imposed on his People. As to the rest, he was chaste and temperate, an Enemy to open and scandalous Immoralities, and an Observer of Justice, where his Interest was not concerned. He was buried in the Chapel which he himself had erected, adjoining to *Westminster-Abbey*, which is exceeded by nothing of the Kind in *Europe*. He also founded a Chapel at *Windsor*, and several Convents of *Dominicans* and *Franciscans*. He had four Sons and four Daughters: Two of each have been already mentioned, and the rest died in their Infancy.

In the fifth Year of *Henry's* Reign, it was ordained, That the Mayors of *London* should have Conservation of the River *Thames*, from *Staines-Bridge*, to the Waters of *Yewdale* and *Medway*. In his thirteenth Year, *Vasco de Gama*, a *Portuguese*, discovered the Passage to the *East-Indies*, round the *Cape of Good Hope*. *St. Paul's School* was founded in this Reign, by *Dr. John Collet*, Dean of *St. Paul's*.



*J. B. Pichin*



T. Kitchen sc.

## HENRY VIII. 1509—1547.

1509.

**H**ENRY VIII. was about nineteen Years old when he succeeded his Father *Henry VII.* on the 22d of *April*, 1509, and in his Person united the two Houses of *Lancaster* and *York*. He had a learned Education, had made a considerable Progress in the Sciences, and was well versed in the Philosophy and Divinity of those Times. Though this, as is often the Case, gave him a good Opinion of his own Knowledge and Parts, which made him think himself an able Politician, whilst he was yet unexperienced in State-Affairs, whereby he was often liable to be imposed upon; yet he was a young Prince endowed with many good Qualities, of a frank and open Disposition, an Enemy to all Fraud and Dissimulation, and, the very Reverse of his Father, liberal even to Excess. He was brave without Ostentation, and inured to those bodily Exercises, which in those Days gave Lustre to Princes, and discovered, as well as improved, their Activity and Vigour.

The King's first Concern was to do a very popular Act; which was to make an Example of the two hated Ministers, *Empson* and *Dudley*, who had been the Instruments of the late King's unbounded Avarice. For this Purpose they were summoned before the Council, and, after Examination, committed to the *Tower*. It was a difficult Matter to know how to proceed against them, since what they had done was within the Letter of the Law, which they had stretched to the utmost Rigour. It was therefore resolved to have them accused of conspiring against the King and State; of which they were found guilty, and sentenced to die. But as this was straining a Point, to get them condemned, the King suspended their Execution till the Meeting of the Parliament, when an Act of Attainder was passed against them, and they were soon after beheaded on *Tower-Hill*, to the Satisfaction of all the People.

In



In the mean Time, the Business of the King's Marriage with *Catharine of Arragon*, Relict of his Brother *Arthur*, to whom he had been affianced, was debated in Council. Some were against the King's consummating the Marriage, as contrary to the Law of God, particularly *Warham*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*. But others were of another Opinion; and their Reasons prevailing, the Marriage was solemnized the Beginning of *June*, and the Coronation of both King and Queen; on the 24th of the same Month. A few Days after, *Margaret*, Countess of *Richmond* and *Derby*, Mother of *Henry VII.* departed this Life.

About this Time *Fox*, Bishop of *Winchester*, introduced to Court *Thomas Wolsey*, a Clergyman, as a fit Person to serve the King. He was a Butcher's Son at *Ipswich*, was educated at *Oxford*, and had been Chaplain to the late King, who made him Dean of *Lincoln*. The King, first, gave him the Office of Almoner. And how he afterwards rose to be Prime Minister, and to a greater Degree of Power than ever any Subject had before, will be seen in its proper Place.

The Parliament met in *January*, 1510, whose chief Business, besides the Attainder of *Empson* and *Dudley*, was to soften some Statutes, and explain them so as to prevent, for the future, any such Abuses, as those Ministers had been guilty of.

Though *Henry* had just concluded a new Treaty of Alliance with *Lewis XII.* King of *France*, yet Pope *Julius II.* and *Ferdinand* the Catholic, King of *Arragon*, the Queen's Father, to serve the Views of their own private Ambition, were making use of all their Arts to engage him to take Part in the *Italian War*, and join with them and the *Venetians* in their League against *Lewis*. The

Bait they made use of to allure *Henry* was the Recovery of *Guienne*, formerly taken from the *English*, which they promised to assist him in. But their Design was only to have him for their Tool, by causing him to make a Diversion in *France*, whilst they should drive the *French* out of *Italy*, and accomplish their own separate Views. However, the King being young, and not much versed in Politicks, and having a great Ardour for Glory; was easily drawn in; but was no more than the Dupe of the Pope and *Ferdinand* from first to last. In the mean Time, he minded little else than his Pleasures and Diversions, which *Wolsey* was very subservient to him in, and which were so extravagant, that he soon squandered away the 1,800,000 *l.* which his Father had with so much Anxiety hoarded up.

*Ferdinand's* particular View was to become Master of the Kingdom of *Navarre*, and to make use of his Son-in-Law the King of *England* to bring it about; for which the Conquest of *Guienne* for the *English* was only a Blind. This, and this only, could induce *Henry* and his Council to concern themselves in the Pope's and *Ferdinand's* Quarrel with *France*: Though it was, after all, opposed by some of the Council, and one of them expressed himself to this Purpose: *Let us therefore, says he, leave off our Attempts against the Terra firma. The natural Situation of Islands seems not to sort with Conquests of that Kind. England alone is a just Empire: Or, when we would enlarge our selves, let it be that Way we can, and to which, it seems, the Eternal Providence has destined us; and that is by Sea.*

By the Treaty, which was concluded in 1511, *Henry* was to send over 6000 Foot for the Attempt upon *Guienne*; and *Ferdinand*, for the

the same Purpose, obliged himself to furnish 500 Men at Arms, 1500 Light Horse, and 4000 Foot. Accordingly in the Spring of the following Year, the *English* Forces were transported under the Command of the Marquess of Dorset, in order to join those of *Spain*. But when they came over, they found *Ferdinand* contrived, by every Artifice, to put off the Attack of *Guienne*, till he had first made himself Master of *Navarre*; which he soon effected, whilst the *English* Troops served to favour his Design, though being exasperated at his unfair Dealing, they did not stir from their Camp. And afterwards he offered to join the *English* and march into *Guienne*, when he knew, that the *French* had so posted themselves as to render the Attempt impracticable. Thus *Henry* helped to promote the Pope's and *Ferdinand*'s Projects; the former, by keeping *Lewis* at home, and hindering him from maintaining his Conquests in *Italy*; and the latter, by giving *Ferdinand* an Opportunity of conquering *Navarre*; whilst they both had no Manner of Concern about his Interests in *France*, which was the Decoy by which they drew him in to countenance their ambitious Views,

Though *Henry* saw plainly enough how he had been imposed upon, yet he suffered himself to be drawn into a second League against *France*, by the Pope, the Emperor *Maximilian*, and King *Ferdinand*, who all had their separate Views, and made use of *Henry* as their Instrument to bring them about. Pope *Leo X.* who succeeded *Julius II.* and pursued the same Scheme with his Predecessor, was only concerned to keep the *French* out of *Italy*. The Emperor's View was to hinder *Lewis* from assisting the *Venetians* against him. And *Ferdinand*'s sole Aim was to

prevent his disturbing him in his new Acquisition of *Navarre*. To answer all these Purposes, by raising Troubles in *France*, none so proper as the King of *England*, whose youthful Heat gave him an eager Thirst for Glory and Conquest. Add to this, that their Design was to draw Money from *Henry* under Colour of supporting the League, which they knew he was able, and would be willing enough, to bestow. By the Treaty between them, the Emperor in particular was to receive from the King of *England* 100,000 Crowns of Gold, to defray the Charges of the War, which he never intended to engage in. The Pretence was, that *Lewis* should be attacked from three several Quarters at once, by the Pope, *Maximilian*, and *Ferdinand*, whilst *Henry* attacked him on another Side, and invaded him in *Guienne*, *Normandy*, or *Picardy*. But this the three former never intended; and when, by this Pretence of assisting of *Henry* in his Conquests, they had drawn him in, and he had made such Preparations that he could not go back, and so their own Ends were served in cutting out Work for *Lewis* in his own Dominions, they left the King of *England* to carry on the War by himself, which he was forward enough to do, to let the World see he could do without them.

The War between *England* and *France* began at Sea. The *English* Fleet under Sir *Edward Howard* attacked six Gallies, that were going to join the *French* Fleet at *Brest*. But Sir *Edward* being slain, and the *French* Fleet by a strong Reinforcement being become superior to the *English*, the latter returned home; and the *French*, emboldened by their Retreat, made a Descent on *Sussex*, and returned not without some Booty.

But



But *Henry's* Affairs went much better by Land, where, if we regard the Success only, he made a glorious Campaign. Having sent the best Part of his Troops over to *Calais* before him, he arrived there himself on the 30th of *June*, 1513. On the 2d of *August* he came to *Terouenne*, which his Army had before laid Siege to. Here the Emperor came to the Camp and served under him, receiving 100 Crowns a Day for his Pay, designing, by this Shew of Honour he did King *Henry*, to make some Amends for his Breach of Faith. The Duke of *Longueville* approaching with the *French* Army to relieve *Terouenne*, *Henry* went out to meet him, and had no sooner begun to engage on *August* 18, but the *French*, falling in Confusion, fled with the utmost Precipitation. Only the principal Officers, 'disdaining to follow so shameful an Example, were taken Prisoners, and among the rest *Longueville* himself. This Rout was merrily called by some *The Battle of Spurs*, because the *French* used their Spurs more than their Swords. The Consequence of this Defeat was the Surrender of *Terouenne* four Days after, and King *Henry* with the Emperor entered the Town on the 24th. The Emperor left the Army soon after, and on *September* 15, *Henry* laid Siege to *Tournay*, which surrendered in about a Week. *Terouenne* was demolished, but it was resolved to keep *Tournay*, which was thought to be owing to *Wolfey's* Advice, who had his Eye upon that rich Bishoprick, and actually procured it for himself, under Colour that its Bishop refused to swear Fealty to King *Henry*.

*Wolfey* attended the King in this Expedition: For he had by this Time so insinuated himself into the King's Favour, that he would do nothing without him. Soon after his Introduction to Court by Bishop *Fox*, he was made a Privy-Counsel-

lor. In this Situation he bent his whole Study and employed all his Arts to get an Ascendant over the young King. This he effected by joining to the utmost Diligence and Application in all the Affairs committed to his Care, an unlimited Compliance with all the King's Humours and Passions, and by accommodating himself to the Taste of the young Courtiers, who were in great Favour with the King, as their light airy Temper was more pleasing to his youthful Years, than the Gravity of his old sage Ministers. *Wolfey* would laugh, rally, sing and dance, and do many other Things not very suitable to his Character as a Clergyman; and it is even said he would be subservient to the King's secret Pleasures. These servile Compliances, and at the same Time his extraordinary Talents for Business, so wrought upon the King, that he made him his Prime Minister, and gave himself up absolutely to his Direction; whilst *Wolfey* had the Address to make him believe he was pursuing his own Measures, when they were purely the Effect of his Suggestions, and that he was consulting his Master's Glory and Interest, when he was only aiming at his own. In short, by these Means he became the most wealthy and powerful Subject that ever was, insomuch that he was not only courted and flattered at home, but even by foreign Princes, as they knew what a Sway he had over the King. The absolute Power of this Minister lasted many Years, during which Time, he managed all the King's Affairs, both foreign and domestick, and did not fail on all Occasions to discover his intolerable Haughtiness, Ambition, Revenge, and Ingratitude to his Friends. He soon got his old Patron the Bishop of *Winchester* removed from Court, as also the other

grave Counsellors, who disliked his Conduct; and suffered none to remain but his own Creatures, who were sure to be his humble Slaves.

The King returned to *England* the latter End of *October*. In the mean Time his Army under the Earl of *Surrey* had been no less successful against the *Scots*, than that commanded by himself in Person was against the *French*. It was usual with the *Scots*, whenever the *English* invaded *France*, to make a Diversion in *England* in favour of their old and constant Allies the *French*. It was both their Interest to do so, and the *French* never wanted Pensioners in the *Scotch* Council to set the Matter forward. Accordingly, whilst *Henry VIII.* was in *France*, *James IV.* of *Scotland* broke through all his Alliances with him, and invaded *Northumberland* with an Army of 60,000 Men, taking *Norham-Castle* and several other Places. *Henry*, suspecting some such Thing would happen in his Absence, had made Preparations against it before his Departure. Accordingly, the Earl of *Surrey* with 26,000 Men engaged the *Scots* Army at *Flodden*, on the 9th of *September*, and after a most obstinate and bloody Battle, in which several Thousands were killed on both Sides, obtained a complete Victory. The *Scotch* King was never seen again after the Battle, so that doubtless he fell in it. A Body was found which the *English* supposed to be his, but that was uncertain. Among the Slain were also one *Scotch* Archbishop, two Bishops, four Abbots, twelve Earls, and seventeen Barons; whereas the *English* lost not one Person of Note. After the Death of *James IV.* *Margaret* his Queen, Sister of *Henry*, married *Archibald Dowglas*, Earl of *Angus*. She had been declared Regent during the Minority of her Son *James V.* then

scarce two Years old; but lost her Regency upon this Marriage, which proved the Source of much Trouble and Confusion in *Scotland*.

In the Beginning of the Year 1514, the King made several Promotions. *John Howard* Earl of *Surrey*, who defeated the *Scots* at the Battle of *Flodden-Field*, was created Duke of *Norfolk*. He was Son to the Duke of *Norfolk*, who lost his Life in King *Richard's* Cause at the Battle of *Bosworth*. *Charles Somerset*, natural Son of *Henry Beaufort* Duke of *Somerset*, was made Earl of *Worcester*; and *Charles Brandon*, Duke of *Suffolk*. As to *Edmund de la Pole*, Earl of *Suffolk*, whom *Henry VII.* had committed to the *Tower*, *Henry VIII.* had caused him to be beheaded before he went into *France*, notwithstanding his Father's positive Promise to *Philip* King of *Castile* to spare his Life.

The same Year *Thomas Wolsey*, the Prime Minister, was made Bishop of *Lincoln*, and Administrator of the See of *Tournay*. And a little after, he was promoted to the Archbishoprick of *York*, upon the Death of Cardinal *Bambridge*.

The War with *France* lasted but one single Campaign. *Louis XII.* treated privately with *Henry* about a Peace, by Means of the Duke of *Longueville*, who was taken Prisoner in the Battle of *Spurs*; and in order to facilitate the Business, demanded in Marriage the Princess *Mary*, the King's Sister, who had been contracted to *Charles* of *Austria*. *Henry* was not averse to a Peace upon reasonable Terms; and seeing plainly, that the Pope, the Emperor, and the King of *Spain*, had only made a Tool of him, and drawn him into the War purely to serve their own Ends, under the specious Pretence of the Glory of God, and the Good of the Church, and then left the whole



whole Burden of it upon him contrary to their exprefs Engagements to join with him in it, was disposed to drop them in his Turn, and make a separate Peace with *Lewis*. And so, notwithstanding all the Endeavours of his three uselefs Allies to prevent it, a Peace was concluded between the two Monarchs, by three several Treaties, signed the 7th of *August*, 1514; one of which regarded the Marriage between *Lewis XII.* and the Princess *Mary*, who was accordingly conducted with a splendid Retinue to *Abbeville*, and the Nuptials solemnized in *October*. *Lewis* dying in less than three Months after the Marriage, the Duke of *Valois* succeeded him, by the Name of *Francis I.* And about two Months after, the Queen-Dowager took for her second Husband, *Charles Brandon* Duke of *Suffolk*, for whom she had an Inclination before her Marriage with *Lewis*, which she had consented to in Compliance with the politick Views of the King her Brother. As *Francis I.* had the same Design with his Predecessor, of recovering the *Milanese*, he had the same Reason to cultivate a good Understanding with *Henry*, and therefore readily renewed and confirmed the Alliance between the two Crowns.

Nevertheless *Henry* was soon involved in new Troubles by Means of his Favourite *Wolsey*, by whom he was wholly governed. *Francis* was very desirous of having *Tournay* restored to him, and the Affair might perhaps have been adjusted between the two Kings, if the Consequence of the Restitution of *Tournay* had not been the Restoring of its Bishop, and *Wolsey's* losing the Administration of that See and the rich Abbey of *St. Amand*. *Francis* perceiving what stood in his Way, in order to gain *Wolsey*, pro-

mised to procure him a Cardinal's Hat, and actually obtained it of *Leo X.* who had made up Matters with *Francis*, upon his great Success in *Italy*. This extremely gratified the Pride of the ambitious Prelate. But then his Revenge must be gratified too. *Francis*, had taken some Steps to have the Bishop of *Tournay* restored. *Wolsey* did not forget it, notwithstanding the late Favour he had received. He prevailed upon his Master privately to assist the Emperor against *Francis*, not doubting but it would end at last in an open Rupture, the Consequence of which he hoped would be his keeping the See of *Tournay*. However, being afterwards of another Mind upon the Affairs of *Europe* taking a different Turn, and being gained by Presents and a Promise from *Francis* of an annual Pension of 12,000 Livres *Tournois*, in Lieu of the Bishoprick, he had the Address to induce King *Henry* to do what he had before artfully prevailed on him to be against; so that *Tournay*, in 1518, was restored to the French King for 600,000 Crowns, which he obliged himself to pay to the King of *England*; and gave *Wolsey* his Letters Patent for the Pension above mentioned.

After *Wolsey* was made a Cardinal, he became more vain, haughty, and imperious, than ever. His Pride was increased by the King's having given him the Chancellorship, which *Warham* Archbishop of *Canterbury* resigned, as not able to endure the Insolence of the Cardinal, who was gratified by the King in whatever he had a Mind to. He now assumed a Sort of sovereign State, and never appeared abroad without a princely Attendance. It is affirmed, that he kept no less than 800 Servants, among whom were half a Score Lords, 15 Knights, and 40 Esquires. The Cardinal's-Hat

was carried before him on high, like a Trophy, and two Pillars of Silver were borne by two Gentlemen. He wore Silk in his Vestments, and used Gold in his Horse Trappings, which no *English* Clergyman ever did before. Though this Vanity and Insolence excited an universal Indignation, yet none durst give the King the least Hint against him; and even foreign Princes were cautious of offending him, and strove to preserve his Friendship: For such was his Power with the King, that as he was obliged or disobliged, he could make War or Peace, and give a different Turn to the Affairs of *Europe*. But in every Thing his own Interest, and not the King's, was the sole Motive of his Actions, though *Henry* was so blind as not to see it.

On *February* 11, 1516, Queen *Catharine* was delivered of a Princess, named *Mary*, who was afterwards Queen of *England*. She had before brought the King two Princes, but they both died soon after they were born.

About the same Time died *Ferdinand* King of *Arragon*, and left to his Successors the Title of *Catholic*, which the King of *Spain* bears at this Day. The Death of this politick Prince broke all *Wolsey's* Measures, to draw all *Europe* into a War with *France*, for the Sake of his own private Interest in relation to the See of *Tournay*. *Ferdinand* was succeeded by *Charles* of *Austria*, his Grandson by *Joanna* his eldest Daughter, already Queen of *Castile*, but incapable of governing either Kingdom, as she had for some Time been deprived of her Understanding. So the Administration of both fell to her Son the Archduke, Sovereign of the *Low-Countries*. This powerful Prince, who became King of *Spain* in the Manner as just related, upon the Death of *Maximilian* his

Grandfather, which happened three Years after, was elected Emperor of *Germany*, by the Name of *Charles V.*

In 1517, the Sweating-Sickness raged again in *England*, more violently than at the Beginning of the last Reign. In some Towns it swept away near half of the Inhabitants, most of those who were seized with it dying within three Hours. This Distemper being peculiar to *England*, was called *Sudor Anglicus*, or the *English Sweat*.

At this Time the Christian Princes being disposed to Peace, because the State of Affairs was such, that they could not carry on the War with any Advantage, some of them took it into their Heads to enter into a League against the *Turks*; and the Pope, to encourage this *Crusado*, or rather to enrich himself, dispatched his Indulgences for a plenary Remission of Sins, into all Christian Countries, and appointed Collectors to receive the Money to be paid for them. They were publicly set to Sale, after a most scandalous Manner, and were even gamed for at Taverns; and the Benefit of them was to extend to the very Dead, who were immediately to be released out of Purgatory, upon their Relations paying so much Money. Upon this, *Martin Luther*, an *Augustine* Friar, and Professor of Divinity in the University of *Wittenburg*, began first to write against this Sale of Indulgences, then against the Indulgences themselves, and afterwards against the Pope's Authority in general, and several of the Corruptions of the Church of *Rome*. This gave Rise to the *Reformation*, which in a little Time prevailed in many Parts of *Germany*, and several other States. *Luther* was powerfully supported against the Pope and his other Enemies, by the Elector of *Saxony* his Sovereign.

After



After the Death of *Maximilian*, the Flames of War were again kindled in *Europe*, occasioned by the Contest between the Emperor *Charles V.* and *Francis* King of *France*, who had been *Charles's* Competitor for the Imperial Diadem. Their respective Acquisitions in *Italy* were the chief Ground of the Quarrel between these two powerful and ambitious Princes; though there were several other Matters in Dispute between them: And most of the other Kingdoms and States were drawn in to take Part with one or the other. Cardinal *Wolsey*, who was now Administrator of the See of *Bath* and *Wells*, and the Pope's Legate à *Latere*, was courted both by *Charles* and *Francis*, because they knew, that he that should gain him, would of Course gain his Master. The Emperor prevailed, and *Henry* joined with him against *Francis*. The Gold and Silver of *Mexico* and *New-Spain*, which were discovered and conquered about this Time, were of wonderful Advantage to *Charles*, as they furnished him with an inexhaustible Fund of Wealth for carrying on the War. What chiefly fixed *Wolsey* to the Emperor, was his Promise, upon the next Vacancy, to help him to the Popedom, to which he earnestly aspired. *Francis* indeed had promised to assist him in obtaining it, but *Wolsey* thought *Charles*, now he was Emperor, most capable of doing it.

The Fate of *Edward Stafford* Duke of *Buckingham*, who, in 1521, fell a Sacrifice to the Cardinal's revengeful Temper, shewed how dangerous it was for any one to offend him. The Duke, who was Son of him who lost his Head in the Reign of *Richard III.* for endeavouring to set the King's Father on the Throne, and was descended from *Anne* of *Gloucester*, Granddaughter to *Edward*

*III.* happening once to say, in the hearing of *Knewet* his Steward, that if the King died without Issue, he believed he had a Right to the Crown, and if ever he should come to be King, his first Concern should be to punish the Cardinal as he deserved; *Knewet*, for some Misdemeanors, being dismissed the Duke's Service, went and told the Cardinal what his Master had said. The Duke had before given him some Disgust; and now being enraged at the Disrespect shewn him in this Speech, the Cardinal made a Handle of the former Part of it, and of some Informations he had procured of the Duke's consulting a Monk, who pretended to be an Astrologer, concerning the Succession to the Crown, to get him condemned as a Traitor by a few Lords, and he was accordingly beheaded on *Tower-Hill*. He was the last High-Constable of *England*. His Death occasioned many satirical Writings against *Wolsey*; in which among other Things it was said, That it was no Wonder a Butcher's Son should delight in Blood.

The same Year King *Henry* wrote a Book against *Luther*, entitled, *Of the seven Sacraments*, in which he also defended *Indulgences*, *Papal Authority*, &c. It was presented to Pope *Leo X.* in full Consistory, who, for this Service done the Church, bestowed on *Henry* and his Successors the Title of *Defender of the Faith*. This Title being afterwards confirmed by Parliament the Kings of *England* have borne it ever since. The same Year was remarkable for the Invention of *Muskets*, first used in the War between the Emperor and the King of *France*. *Luther* wrote an Answer to the King's Book, in which he used no more Ceremony than he had done to the Pope.

Leo X. dying soon after the King's Book was presented, Cardinal *Wolsey* left no Stone unturned to get himself chosen Pope in his Room. But here his Ambition met with a Disappointment. Though the Emperor had promised him his Interest, he did not design to be as good as his Word. He managed Matters so dexterously with the Cardinals, that he got Cardinal *Adrian*, a Native of *Utrecht*, and Bishop of *Tortosa*, who had been his Tutor, elected, believing he should have him entirely devoted to his Interest. Though this Affair was conducted with the utmost Art and Secrecy, yet *Wolsey* could not be so blind as to think that the Emperor was not concerned in *Adrian's* Election. However, he concealed his Resentment, as he was not without Hopes he would stand his Friend at the next Vacancy, which, by Reason of *Adrian's* Age and Infirmities, was likely soon to happen, as it actually did in less than two Years; but he had the Mortification to be disappointed a second Time. The Emperor had no more Regard to his Interest than before, and the Cardinals chose *Julio de Medicis* for Pope, who took upon him the Name of *Clement VII.*

The War between the Emperor and *France* broke out in 1521. Most of the Powers in *Europe* were concerned in it, and it was carried on with great Fury on both Sides, in other Countries as well as in *Italy*. It is not my Business to relate the Particulars of this War. I shall only observe, that *Francis I.* was taken Prisoner at the Battle of *Pavia*, and carried into *Spain*, in 1525, from whence he was released the Beginning of the following Year by the Treaty of *Madrid*; which he refused to ratify upon his Return to his Dominions, and entered into a League with the Pope and *Venetians* against the Emperor; whose Forces took and plun-

dered *Rome* in 1527, and made the Pope and 13 Cardinals Prisoners, who were shut up in the Castle of *St. Angelo*. King *Henry* at first took Part with the Emperor, but when he began to grow too powerful, he fell off from him, and joined with *Francis*. *Wolsey* was full of Resentment against the Emperor, for his twice deceiving him in the Affair of the Popedom, and in all likelihood helped by Degrees to turn his Master against him.

The Cardinal, as may well be supposed, was no Friend to Parliaments, he therefore took several bold Steps towards accustoming the King to govern without them. He had imposed a general Tax on the Nation, by the King's sole Authority, for supporting the League against *France*, without ever troubling himself about the Parliament. And now to make good the Engagements the King was going to enter into, in Favour of *France*, he issued out Orders in the King's Name, for levying a sixth Part upon the Goods and Estates of the Laity, and a fourth upon those of the Clergy. This threw the whole Nation into a Ferment, and had like to have occasioned a Rebellion. The King, to pacify the People, by Proclamation disavowed these Orders, and proceeded to raise the Money under the specious Name of a *Benevolence*, which was in effect doing the same Thing in a more artful Manner: For all who did not voluntary comply were to be forced into these *Free Gifts*. The Cardinal began with the City of *London*, but meeting with several Obstacles, whilst he was endeavouring to frighten the Common-Council into a Compliance, the People in the Country rose in Arms. And though by prudent Measures a Stop was soon put to this Insurrection, and some of the Ringleaders were imprisoned, whom it was thought



thought adviseable afterwards to discharge, yet the King, finding by this how the People stood affected, thought fit to declare that he had no Hand in those violent Proceedings to raise Money, and so left the whole Blame to fall upon the Cardinal. This Disposition of the King encouraged several other Complaints against his Minister, at which the King was so highly incensed, that *Wolsey* was in Danger of being quite out of Favour. But he found Means to pacify the King by the most humble Submission, by shewing him his *Will*, wherein he had made him his Heir, and by making him a Present of his stately Palace at *Hampton-Court*, which he had built with a Magnificence equal to that of the greatest Prince. Though by these Means, and by the Affection the King had really for him, he still kept his Ground, yet this Affair served a little to clip the Wings of this haughty overbearing Minister.

*Henry* at first made only a League Defensive with *Francis*, and the two Monarchs contrived Matters so as to leave the whole Burden of the War upon the Pope and the *Venetians*. But at length being apprehensive, that these two Powers would not be able to hold out long against the Emperor, whereby he might become Master of all *Italy*, they concluded a League Offensive against him, a little before the Sacking of *Rome* and the Pope's Captivity; who escaped in *December*, the same Year, 1527, and retired to *Orvieto*, after a seven Months Confinement in the Castle of *St. Angelo*. By one of the Articles of the Treaty between the two Kings, *Henry* renounced, for himself and Successors, all Right and Title to the Crown of *France*; in Consideration whereof, *Francis* obliged himself and Successors to pay a Pension

to *Henry's* Successors, of 50,000 Crowns yearly for ever. The War proved unfortunate to *Francis*, but was put an End to in 1529, by the Treaty of *Cambray* between him and the Emperor.

In 1527, an Affair was set on foot, which engaged the Attention of all *Europe* and was very remarkable in itself, as well as in its Consequences; chiefly, as it accidentally opened a Way for the Reformation in *England*. This was King *Henry's* Divorce from his Queen *Catharine*, Daughter of *Ferdinand* King of *Arragon*, and Aunt to the Emperor *Charles V.* She was his Brother *Arthur's* Widow. *Henry* had been married to her eighteen Years, and had had three Children by her, one of whom, the Princess *Mary*, was living. But he at length affirmed he had some Scruples of Conscience about the Lawfulness of his Marriage with his Brother's Wife, notwithstanding Pope *Julius's* Dispensation, as being contrary to the Law of God; on which Account he had, as he declared, for some Time abstained from her. These Scruples are said by some either to be first suggested to him, or very much cherished by Cardinal *Wolsey's* Management, chiefly by Means of *Longland*, the King's Confessor, out of Resentment to the Emperor, who was Nephew to *Catharine*. And though it seems that *Henry* was resolved upon his Divorce before he had seen *Anne Boleyn*, yet his falling in Love with her soon after, when she was become Maid of Honour to the Queen, made him prosecute the Affair with the greater Earnestness. But whatever were the King's secret Motives, whether Scruples of Conscience, Reasons of State, Aversion to the Queen, or his Love of *Anne Boleyn*, or all, or some of these together; it was resolved to apply to the Pope to get  
the

1528. the Marriage annulled, and Cardinal *Wolsey* undertook that the Business should be accomplished. *Clement VII.* seemed inclined to grant the King's Request, and even promised to do it; but in effect, his Fear of offending the Emperor, put him upon using all his Artifices only to amuse *Henry* and gain Time. *Gardiner* and *Fox* were sent the next Year, 1528, to press the Pope to dispatch the Affair according to the King's Mind. The Pontiff outwardly expressed his Desire and Intention to gratify the King and bring the Matter to a Conclusion, but in reality made use of all the round-about Ways to spin out the Affair till he should be better resolved what was most for his Interest. Instead of granting a Bull for directly annulling the Marriage, he commissioned *Wolsey*, and joined with him *Campegio*, to try the Cause in *England*, but privately gave Orders to *Campegio*, upon his Departure from *Rome*, to delay Matters as much as possible, and not to give Sentence till he had his express Commands in Writing. There was a solemn Process on the Affair in 1529, and the King and Queen both appeared before the Legates, *Wolsey* letting *Campegio* preside, and making no Manner of Opposition to his affected Delays. But after all their slow Proceedings, when the Process was ended, the King was just where he was before. *Campegio* put off the Sentence to a long Day, before which, the Pope having concluded his Treaty with the Emperor to his entire Satisfaction, thought he might safely pull off the Mask, and act openly against the Divorce. The Cause was, after all his artful Shifts and Evasions, advocated to *Rome*, and the King cited to appear there by such a Day. This threw him into great Per-

plexity; but *Dr. Thomas Cranmer* found an Expedient to rid him of his Trouble, after having once more in vain applied to the Pope. Before we proceed to this, let us see what became of Cardinal *Wolsey*.

This haughty Favourite had met with several Rebuffs besides that already mentioned, but soon after the Process his Fall came on apace. He was certainly at first very hearty for the Divorce, if he was not the first that got it proposed to the King. But whether he found it more difficult than he imagined, or had altered his Mind, his Behaviour in that Affair was the chief Occasion of his Disgrace, and *Anne Boleyn* is thought to be the chief Instrument, who becoming his Enemy, others were encouraged to join with her in hastening his Ruin. Perhaps her being a Friend to the Reformation, and his knowing that the King designed to marry her immediately upon his Divorce, made him as much against it as he had been for it before. Be that as it will, on the 9th of *October*, 1529, a Bill of Indictment was preferred against him by the Attorney-General, upon the Statute of *Præmunire*. A few Days after the King took from him the Great Seal, and gave it to *Sir Thomas More*. Then the Attorney-General preferred other Articles against him upon the same Statute. He was found guilty of both Indictments, and declared out of the Protection of the Laws; upon which all his Goods and Effects, of an immense Value, were seized for the King's Use. Nevertheless, so wavering was the King, and so unable to forget the Affection to his old Favourite, that upon his humble Petition, he granted him a Protection, and moreover sent him a Ring as a Token of his Favour; which being brought to him as he was upon the Road to one of his Country-



Country-Houses, whither he was ordered to retire, he was so transported, that he alighted from his Horse, and fell upon his Knees in the Dirt to receive it. This however did not hinder his being impeached by the House of Lords in 44 Articles, which ran chiefly upon the ill Use he had made of his Power, as Legate, Chancellor, and Prime Minister. One of them was very remarkable, *viz.* That knowing himself to have the *Grand Pox* upon him, he had the Assurance to be near the King's Person daily, often whispering in his Ear, without fearing to infect him with his Breath. Yet after this the King granted him a full Pardon, and suffered him to enjoy his Archbishoprick of *York*, whither he was ordered to retire. But he had not been long there before he was arrested by the Earl of *Northumberland* for High-Treason. This so affected him, that as they were conducting him to *London*, he died of Grief, or Poison, at *Leicester-Abbey*, about the End of *November*, 1530. His last Words to the King's Officer who stood near his Bed, were, *If I had served God as diligently as I have served the King, he would not have cast me off in my grey Hairs.* But by all his Actions it is pretty manifest, that he served himself more than the King. One Thing, however, is to be said in his Praise, that during his whole Administration, no Person was prosecuted for Heresy to please the Clergy; in which Respect he may be said in some Measure to favour the Reformation.

To return to the Business of the Divorce. The King despairing of ever accomplishing his Ends at the Court of *Rome*, which was wholly devoted to the Emperor, became accidentally acquainted with Dr. *Thomas Cranmer*, an able Divine,

who had travelled into *Germany*, where he read *Luther's* Writings, and embraced his Doctrines; which by this Time great Numbers in *England* had done, and had quite other Notions of the Papal Authority than their Forefathers had; besides, that the Principles of the *Lollards* were still deeply rooted in many. *Cranmer* being consulted about the Divorce, proposed, as the best Expedient he could think of, the sending to the foreign Universities, and getting their Opinions in Writing upon the Matter. The King highly approved of this Method, put it in Practice, and was successful; most of the Universities giving it as their Opinion, that Pope *Julius* II'd's Dispensation for the King's Marriage with *Catharine*, was repugnant to the divine Law, and therefore invalid. This Point being gained, *Henry* resolved to bring the Affair before his Parliament, which he might do with the greater Prospect of Success, as there was a general Inclination among his Subjects to throw off the Papal Yoke, which had for many Ages been so grievous to the Nation. The Remains of *Wickliff's* Doctrine, *Luther's* Books, and the late scandalous Behaviour of the Popes, had so opened their Eyes, that the Thunders of the *Vatican* were but little regarded by them: And the Interest of the Sovereign being now the same with that of the Subjects, there was no Danger in bringing Matters to Extremity with the Court of *Rome*. The Clergy were the only Body from whence he might apprehend any Opposition, but there was the less Danger from them, as the People in general had now a contemptible Opinion of them. However, to humble them, and terrify them into a Compliance, in 1531, he had them all condemned for breaking the Statutes of *Pro-*

1533.

*munire*. As it was not in their Power to inflame the People as formerly, and the Papal Authority, which was as good as at an End in *England*, could do them no Good, they were sensible they must depend on the King alone for Protection. And so they gave him 118,840 *l.* for their Pardon, by an Act of Convocation, wherein they acknowledge him *the sole Protector and Supreme Head of the Church of England*. The Convocation of *Canterland* gave 100,000 *l.* and the Convocation of *York* the rest.

Towards the End of the following Year, the King privately married *Anne Boleyn*. The same Year, Sir *Thomas More* the Lord Chancellor, a learned Man, but a violent Persecutor of the Reformed, perceiving that the King's Proceedings would end in a total Rupture with the Church of *Rome*, resigned the Great Seal, which was given to Sir *Thomas Audley*: And the Parliament passed an Act, forbidding the Payment of *Annates*, or First-Fruits, for Bishopricks, to the See of *Rome*. The next Year, 1533, an Act was passed, forbidding all Appeals to *Rome*, on Pain of incurring a *Præmunire*: The King's Marriage with *Anne Boleyn* was made publick: And Dr. *Cranmer*, having been made Archbishop of *Canterbury*, upon the Death of Archbishop *Warham*, the Judgment of the Convocations of both Provinces having been first obtained, pronounced the Sentence of Divorce between King *Henry* and *Catharine of Arragon*, on May 23, and confirmed his second Marriage; which done, the new Queen was crowned on the 1st of *June*. *Henry* sent the Lord *Montjoy* to acquaint Queen *Catharine* with the Sentence, and to persuade her to submit. But as she had formerly appealed from the Legates to the Pope, so she still re-

mained inflexible, declaring she would be the King's Wife, till the Marriage had been annulled by the Pope. Hereupon, *Henry* ordered she should be only stiled *Princess Dowager of Wales*. But she absolutely refused to be served by any who would not treat her as Queen. She died at *Kimbolton*, January 18, 1536, in the 50th Year of her Age. She was a devout and pious Princess, and led a strict and severe Life; but had very high Notions of the Papal Authority. As soon as the News of the Proceedings in *England* reached *Rome*, the Pope in a great Passion annulled *Cranmer's* Sentence, and threatened the King with Excommunication, if he did not reduce the Cause to its former State.

In the mean Time the King of *France* laboured hard to accommodate Matters between the Pope and *Henry*, particularly at an Interview he had with the former at *Marfeilles*. He also sent *John de Bellay*, Bishop of *Paris*, to try what could be done with *Henry*. Both Sides seemed inclined to an Accommodation. The Pope promised to wait till such a Day for the Return of a Courier from *England*. But the Partizans of the Emperor were so urgent with him, that though they could not make him go from his Engagement, yet they prevailed on him to give his Word, that he would wait no longer than the Day appointed; which being come, and no News from *England*, the Pope published a Sentence, declaring *Henry's* Marriage with *Catharine* good and lawful, requiring him to take her again, and denouncing Censures in Case of Refusal. Two Days after, the Courier arrived, which might have saved *England* to the See of *Rome*; but the same Measures which precipitated the Sentence, made the Pope refuse to revoke



revoke it, though desired by several of the Cardinals. After all, it looks as if the King did not act with Sincerity in this Affair, but that he only meant to have his Divorce justified by the Sentence he thought to obtain from the Pope, and then to drop him altogether. If so, the Biter was bit; but the best of it was, he had no great Reason to care for it. However it be, it was certainly best for *England*, that Matters were not made up; for in Return to the Pope's Censures, when the Parliament met, the Beginning of the following Year, 1534, an Act was passed for abolishing the Pope's Power in *England*, with *Peter-Pence*, *Procurations*, *Delegations*, Expedition of *Bulls*, and *Dispensations* coming from the Court of *Rome*. The same Act declared the King's Marriage with *Catharine* null and void, and his Marriage with *Anne Boleyn* valid, settling the Succession of the Crown upon their Issue. An Oath was enjoined according to the Act, whereby all Persons were obliged to swear, That they would be faithful to the King and Queen, their Heirs and Successors; that they acknowledged the King for *Supreme Head of the Church of England*; that the Bishop of *Rome* has no more Jurisdiction than any other Bishop, and that they renounced Obedience to him. In the next Session, the Parliament confirmed the King's Title of *Supreme Head of the Church*, and passed several other Acts against the Pope. And shortly after, a Proclamation was issued against giving the Bishop of *Rome* the Name of *Pope*, and for erasing it out of all Books, that, if possible, no Remembrance of it may remain. Pope *Clement VII.* died soon after the Rupture, and was succeeded by *Paul III.* who drew up a thundering Bull against *Henry*; excommunicating him, and absol-

ving his Subjects from their Allegiance; but did not publish it till some Years after, and even then it had no Effect.

Thus the Papal Power in *England* was abolished. But though this was in itself a happy Thing for the Nation, yet the good Effects of it were very little felt in this Reign; for from this Time the King assumed such an arbitrary Power as had scarce ever been known in *England*, and exercised it in such a Manner as was very terrible to his Subjects. What helped to give him this Power, were the Views of the two different Parties at Court. Those who adhered to the old Religion, and had complied with him in the Matter of the Divorce, and the Supremacy, though the latter was contrary to their Conscience, were for humouring him, for fear he should go farther Lengths. These were chiefly the Duke of *Norfolk*, *Gardiner* Bishop of *Winchester*, *Longland* Bishop of *Lincoln*, and almost all the Clergy. Those who were for a farther Reformation in the Church, endeavoured, by complying with his Humour, to make him their Friend, in Hopes that some Time or other he would favour the new Opinions. The principal Persons of this Party, were Queen *Anne Boleyn* herself, Archbishop *Cranmer*, and *Thomas Cromwell*, who, though only a *Blacksmith's* Son at *Putney*, had been one of *Wolsey's* Domesticks, and was now in great Credit with the King. But *Henry*, though he had quite thrown off the Pope, yet stiffly adhered to the old Popish Religion all the Days of his Life. At the same Time he was exceeding jealous of his Supremacy, and an Enemy to the Papal Authority. He therefore made several of both Parties feel the terrible Effects of the arbitrary Power he had acquired. He got what Laws he

pleased  
 delivering over his soul to the Devil, & his dominions to the first  
 under." *Memoirs of Hist. Eng. i. 346.* — See much curious matter concerning this affair  
*Stow's Chronicle, 578-9.*

1535 pleased made against them, and put them in Execution without Mercy. Many of both Religions were put to Death. *Papists* and *Protestants* were hanged or burnt together, at the same Time and Place; the former for denying the King's Supremacy, and the latter for what was called *Heresy*; the King ever making his own Belief the Standard for that of his Subjects. Among the rest, Bishop *Fisher* and Sir *Thomas More* were beheaded for refusing to take the Oath of Supremacy; and *Barnes*, *Lambert*\*, *Anne Askew*, and several others, were cruelly burnt for professing the Protestant Doctrine. All this was the Effect of that absolute Power, which the Heads of both Parties, by their Compliances, had for different Views given the King. Add to this, that *Gardiner*, and the rest of the Temporizers of the Popish Party, made use of all their Credit with the King to turn him against the Protestants.

However, besides casting off the Pope's Authority, he did another Thing which helped forward the Reformation afterwards, tho' *Henry* had other Views in it. The Monks being strongly attached to the Pope, were very open in their Investives against the King, and shewed themselves utter Enemies to his Supremacy and all the late Statutes made against the Pope's Authority. For this some of them were executed, and at last *Henry* resolved upon a total Suppression of the Monasteries. To pave the Way to it, and prepossess the People in favour of his Design, he, in 1535, ordered a general Visitation of the Religious Houses, and appointed *Cromwell*, *Visitor-General*. He with other Commissioners made a strict Inquiry into the Lives and Manners of the Monks and Nuns, and discovered the most horrid Scenes of Lewd-

ness, Debauchery, and Impiety. Their Reports were published, and a great many Abbots and Priors with their Monks, being threatened with the Rigour of the Law, and advised, in order to prevent it, to surrender their Houses to the King, did it accordingly. The next Thing was an Act of Parliament, in 1536 for suppressing the lesser Monasteries, to the Number of 376, and giving their Estates and Effects to the King. Shortly after *Cromwell* was made the King's Viceregent in all Ecclesiastical Affairs; and these Houses were actually suppressed in *August*. There were no less than three Rebellions raised in the *North*, by the Monks and their Devotees; but they were happily quelled by the King's Forces, and several of the Ringleaders executed. The King resolved, notwithstanding, to proceed to the Suppression of all the other Monasteries, and ordered a strict Visitation to prepare the Way. What set the People most against them, and made the Work the easier for the King, was the Discovery that was made of the abominable Frauds of the Monks with regard to Relicks and Images. As to the latter, the same Machinery that is used in Puppet-Shews, was made Use of by these holy Fathers, to cause the Images of our Saviour, the Virgin *Mary*, and other Saints, to move, and nod, and turn the Head; which the poor deluded People fancied to be the Effect of a Divine Power. Great Quantities of these Images, together with the pretended Relicks of Saints, were publickly burnt by the King's Order, and among the rest, the Bones of that Arch-Saint *Thomas Becket*, whose costly Shrine was seized for the King's Use. The Number of Monasteries, that were suppressed, from first to last, were 643, together with 90 Colleges.

\* *Sh. a public Disputation Henry is said to have silenced him by an. 2374. 900000, but it was doubtless similar to the King's silencing the last.*



1536.

1539.

2374 *Chantries and Free Chapels*, and 110 *Hospitals*. Their yearly Value, as given in before the Suppression, when the Rents were low, because the Fines upon the Leases were high, was 152,517*l.* 18*s.* 10*d.* But their real Value was supposed to be 1,600,000*l.* an immense Sum in those Days! Besides this, the Plate, Furniture, and other Effects, were of a prodigious Value, which all fell into the King's Hands. King Henry allowed small Pensions to several of the Abbots, Monks, and Nuns, sold the Abbey-Lands to his Subjects at easy Rates, and applied Part of the Revenue of these Houses towards the Founding of the new Bishopricks of *Chester, Gloucester, Peterborough, Oxford, Bristol, and Westminster*; which last ceased to be a Bishoprick after its first Bishop. The Order of the Knights of *St. John of Jerusalem*, was soon after entirely suppressed.

The King had been married to *Anne Boleyn* but about three Years, when he began to be jealous of her, which ended in her Ruin. At the same Time he was in Love with *Jane Seymour*, which doubtless made him more willing to entertain disadvantageous Thoughts of the Queen, by whom he had had one Daughter, named *Elizabeth*, whom we shall hereafter see Queen of *England*. Queen *Anne Boleyn* was naturally of a very cheerful and gay Temper, which possibly might lead her into some Indiscretions, without any criminal Intention. And there is good Reason to think, that her Enemies of the Popish Party took Advantage of the Disposition the King was in, to complete her Destruction, because she was a great Favourer of the Reformation. However, she was accused of a criminal Familiarity with her own Brother, the Earl of *Rochford*, and four of her Domesticks, who

were all executed; and, after all, the Queen herself was beheaded on the Green within the Tower, on May 19, 1536. The very next Day the King married *Jane Seymour*, who bore him Prince *Edward*, his Successor. But his Birth cost the Queen his Mother her Life. Queen *Anne's* Marriage was null'd, on Pretence of a Pre-contract with the Lord *Percy*; and her Daughter *Elizabeth*, as well as *Mary* the Daughter of *Catharine*, were illegitimated by Act of Parliament.

In 1539, by the Counsels of *Gardiner* and others of the Popish Party, the Reformers received a terrible Blow, by an Act passed in Parliament, deservedly called *The Bloody Statute*; which made it Burning or Hanging for any one to deny *Transubstantiation*, to maintain the Necessity of Communion in both Kinds, that it was lawful for Priests to marry, that *Vows of Chastity* may be broken, that private *Masses* are unprofitable, or that *Auricular Confession* is not necessary to Salvation.

A Marriage having been concluded between King Henry and *Anne of Cleves*, Sister to the Duke of *Cleves*, and to the Dutchess of *Saxony*, upon her Arrival in *England*, the King went down to see her, and upon the first Sight conceived a Dislike of her Person, and swore they had brought him over a *Flanders Mare*\*. Nevertheless, for political Reasons, he married her in January, 1540. But his Aversion to her continuing, he got himself divorced from her about six Months after. As *Cromwell* had the chief Hand in this Match, the King never forgave him for it, though he afterwards created him Earl of *Essex*. He did not enjoy this new Title long; for the Duke of *Norfolk*, *Gardiner*, and other Chiefs of the Popish Party, taking Advantage of

*their his Story and, with my reach, do not mention this disgusting expression of a terrible wretch, but show that others more offensive. See his Chron. 578-9. But her had quite enough.*

the King's Displeasure on account of the Marriage, found Means to work his Ruin. He was accused of High-Treason by the Duke of *Norfolk*, and attainted in Parliament before the Divorce, and lost his Head on a Scaffold, on the 28th of *July*. The King's being in Love at this Time with *Catharine Howard*, Niece to the Duke of *Norfolk*, helped the more easily to accomplish his Destruction. This was the King's fifth Wife. His Marriage with her was declared on the 8th of *August*. He loved her extremely, but had soon Cause to repent of the Match: For she was accused of Lewdness and Adultery upon much better Evidence than *Anne Boleyn*, was condemned by Act of Parliament, and beheaded on *Tower-Hill*, *February* 12, 1542. The Lady *Rochford*, one of her Complices, who had accused her Husband, the Lord *Rochford*, of a criminal Commerce with his Sister *Anne Boleyn*, was beheaded with her. *Dereham*, *Mannock*, and *Culpeper*, who confessed they had lain with the Queen, were also executed.

The same Year, 1542, *Ireland* was erected into a Kingdom; from which Time, our Kings were stiled *Kings of Ireland*, whereas before they had only the Title of *Lords of Ireland*.

At this Time *Henry* had a Quarrel with *James V.* his Nephew, King of *Scotland*. The Duke of *Norfolk* entered that Country at the Head of 20,000 Men, when the *Scots* Army running away in a Fright, great Numbers were slain in the Pursuit, and taken Prisoners, and among them several general Officers and Persons of Distinction; which Loss so affected *James*, that he soon after died with Grief, leaving only one Daughter, *Mary*, but seven Days old, who succeeded him.

In *July*, 1543, the King took to his sixth Wife the Lady *Catharine Parr*, Relict of *Nevil Lord Latimer*. She was a great Friend to the Reformed, which put the opposite Party upon contriving her Ruin, insomuch that an Order was signed by the King for sending her to the *Tower*, for abetting Heresy: But by her engaging Address she so prevailed on him, that the Order was revoked. Several Plots were also laid by the same Party, to ruin the good Archbishop *Cranmer*; but the deserved Esteem and Affection the King had for him, baffled all their Designs.

King *Henry* having entered into a League with the Emperor against *France*, passed over to *Calais*, and laid Siege to *Boulogne*, which surrendered *September* 14, 1544. This War continued, without much Success on either Side, till 1546, when a Treaty of Peace was concluded on the 7th of *June*.

The King, now grown monstrous fat and unwieldy, did not long survive this Peace: He died in the 56th Year of his Age, on *Jan.* 29, 1547, after a Reign of 37 Years and 9 Months, and lies buried at *Windso*r. Never had any *English* King acquired such an absolute Power over his Subjects as *Henry*. His Parliaments did just what he pleased, and his sole Will was in effect the Law both in Church and State. He was naturally of a stern and haughty Temper, but grew more obstinate and fierce in his latter Years. He built *St. James's* Palace in the 24th Year of his Reign; and some Time before, instituted the *College of Physicians*. A Man was boiled to Death in *Smithfield* for poisoning, that being the Punishment ordained for that Crime by Act of Parliament, which was repealed in the next Reign.





T. Kitchen sc.

## EDWARD VI. 1547—1553.

**E**DWARD, the only Son of Henry VIII. by his Queen, *Jane Seymour*, succeeded his Father at the Age of nine Years and three Months. He was a Prince of such excellent Qualities, that the Nation might have been happy under him, if either he had reigned longer, or those who by Virtue of the late King's Will were intrusted with the Government during his Minority, which was fixed to his 18th Year, which he did not live to reach, had not most of them minded their own private Advantage more than the Good of the State. The young Prince being at *Hertford*, with his Sister *Elizabeth*, when his Father died, the Council sent *Edward Seymour* Earl of *Hertford*, his Uncle, with Sir *Anthony Brown*, to bring him up to *London*. At *Enfield* they acquainted him with the King's Death, and then proceeded with him to *London*, where he was proclaimed the same Day, *January 31, 1547*, by the Name of *Edward VI.*

The first Thing the Council did after this, was to open the late King's Will, who had been empowered by Parliament, not only to settle the Succession, but to appoint the Form of Government till his Successor should be of Age. Here it appeared, that he had named sixteen Persons, some Protestants and some Papists, his Executors, Regents of the Kingdom; and Governors to his Son. The chief of the former were Archbishop *Cramer* and the Earl of *Hertford*; and of the latter, the Lord Chancellor *Wriothesley*, and *Tonstal* Bishop of *Durham*. He also appointed twelve Privy-Counsellors, Assistants to the Regents, who likewise were a Mixture of both Parties. But the Party of the Reformers was the strongest both in the Regency and the Council.

For the more easy Dispatch of Business, the Regents thought fit to chuse one of their Number to be their President, with the Title of

R

Protector

*Protector of the Realm, and Governor to the King*: However, he was to do nothing without the Consent of the Majority of the rest of the Regents. The Choice fell upon the Earl of *Hertford*, the King's Uncle, who was soon after made Duke of *Somerset*. Others of the Regents had also new Titles conferred on them: Chancellor *Wriothesley* was made Earl of *Southampton*: *John Dudley*, Viscount *Lisle*, Son of *Dudley*, who was executed at the Beginning of the last Reign, was advanced to be Earl of *Warwick*: *William Parr*, Earl of *Essex*, Brother to the Queen-Dowager, and one of the Council, was created Marquis of *Northampton*; and Sir *Thomas Seymour*, another of the Council, and younger Uncle to the King, had the Title of Lord *Sudley*. He was soon after made High-Admiral, and his Brother, the Protector, Lord Treasurer and Earl-Marshal. This sudden Advancement of the Family of the *Seymours* was not, to be sure, looked upon by many without Envy.

The King was crowned on the 20th of *February*: And shortly after, the Earl of *Southampton*, who was like to be a dead Weight upon the Reformers, was for some Misdemeanor deprived of the Chancellorship, and confined to his House. And now the Duke of *Somerset* got himself established Protector by Patent under the Great Seal, in such Manner, that he had the sole Government of the King and Kingdom, and the rest of the Regents became no more than Counsellors to him.

Whatever we may think of this Step, it was of great Advantage to the Reformation; for now the Protector found himself at full Liberty, to follow the Advice of *Cranmer* and the other Reformers, whose

Party must needs be stronger than that of their Adversaries, as the King himself was at their Head, who, tho' young, had imbibed the Principles of the Reformation under Dr. *Cox*, his Preceptor, and continued firmly attached to them as long as he lived. It being resolved therefore to make use of this favourable Conjunction, the first Step was to appoint a general Visitation of the Churches, the Visitors being empowered to abolish some gross Abuses in the publick Service, particularly with respect to *Images*. *Bonner* and *Gardiner*, who had outwardly complied with all the Measures of the late King, now thought fit to oppose the Proceedings of the Visitors, whereupon they were committed to Prison. The Princess *Mary* also expressed her Dislike of the new Regulations, and wrote to the Protector to that Purpose; but he knowing his Power, shewed no Regard to it. The Parliament meeting in *November* this Year, confirmed all that the Protector had done, and moreover passed an Act to abolish all private *Masses*, and to restore the *Cup* to the Laity; and another to recognize the King's Supremacy. The Act of the six Articles, or the *Bloody Statute*, and two Acts against the *Lollards*, were likewise repealed by this Parliament.

But before this, the Protector had made a successful Expedition in *Scotland*. There was a Treaty of Marriage concluded in the late Reign between Prince *Edward*, now King, and the young Queen of *Scots*. But a contrary Party now prevailing in *Scotland*, refused to make good this Treaty. The Protector therefore, to compel them to it, entered *Scotland* with 15,000 Foot, and 3000 Horse. With this Army he met the *Scots* near *Mussilburgh*, who were 30,000 strong. Both

Armies



Armies engaging on the 10th of September, 1547, the Scots were entirely routed, 14,000 being killed on the Spot, and 1500 taken Prisoners. This threw the Scots into the utmost Consternation, but the Protector staid not to improve his Victory; an Affair which concerned the Safety of his Person calling him home, after an Absence of but sixteen Days. This was the News of his Brother the High-Admiral's caballing against him at Court. He was proud, haughty and ambitious, had made his Addresses to the Princess *Elizabeth*, and had actually married the Queen-Dowager, *Catharine Parr*, without the Knowledge of his Brother the Protector, whom he envied, and wanted to supplant, in order to put himself in his Place. To this End he endeavoured to form a Party among the Nobility, and used all his Arts to ingratiate himself with the young King; and not without Success. In short, he left no Stone unturned to procure his Brother's Ruin; but he first procured his own, being attainted in Parliament of conspiring against the Government, and beheaded on the 20th of March, 1549.

The Emperor having defeated and taken Prisoner the Elector of Saxony, and having also got the Landgrave of *Hesse* into his Hands, the Protestant Cause in Germany was brought into very discouraging Circumstances. Upon this many learned Reformers took Refuge in England; among others, *Peter Martyr*, *Bucer*, *Ochinus*, and *Fagius*; on whom King Edward bestowed Pensions and Benefices. *Peter Martyr* was Divinity Professor at Oxford, and *Bucer* at Cambridge, where *Fagius* was also Hebrew Professor.

In 1548, several superstitious Practices were abolished by Order of Council, as the carrying of Candles

on *Candlemas-Day*, of *Ashes* on *Ash-Wednesday*, of *Palm* on *Palm-Sunday*; as also the Ceremonies used on *Good-Friday* and *Easter-Day*. And soon after was ordered the total Removal of Images out of Churches. As there were two Parties then in England, some approved of these Changes, and others disliked them; but the Council were resolved to go through with the Work, the Protector had it chiefly at Heart, and it was what was entirely agreeable to the young pious King. The Parliament, which met towards the End of the Year, passed an Act, allowing Priests to marry; and another, confirming the new Liturgy, which Commissioners had been appointed to examine and reform, and which soon after was established in all the Churches.

Whilst the Men in Power were thus throwing off the Fopperies of the old Religion, it is pity they could not see the Absurdity of that which is the worst Part of Popery, namely, Persecution. *Joan Boucher*, commonly called *Joan of Kent*, one of those called Anabaptists, being pronounced a Heretick, was delivered over to the Secular Power, and condemned to be burnt. The King, who, though so young, had a better Way of Thinking than his Bishops or Counsellors, could not be prevailed upon by the Council to sign the Warrant for her Execution, declaring it to be cruel and unjust; till *Cranmer* being employed to use Arguments to persuade him to it, the good young King at last did it with Tears in his Eyes, saying, if he did wrong, *Cranmer* should answer for it before God: And so the poor Woman was delivered to the Flames. Some Time after, *George Van Pare*, a Dutchman, one of a pious and exemplary Life, suffered in the same Manner on the same Account. This was a great Blemish upon the Reformers,

formers, and the Papists too justly said, that they were only against *Burning*, when they were in Fear of it themselves.

The Protector hitherto had pursued his Scheme of Reformation with great Success. But this Year, 1549, he found himself very much embarrassed both at home and abroad. At home there were Com-motions and Insurrections in divers Parts of the Kingdom, partly on Account of Religion, and partly on other Accounts; but all occasioned by some of the late Changes. After the Dissolution of the Monasteries, Abundance of Monks found themselves under a Necessity of working for their Living; which occasioning more Workmen than there was Work to be done, the common People in most Counties were either destitute of Employment, or forced to work for very low Wages. Besides, as the Monasteries used to lett their Lands to the Farmers at low Rents, they could then afford to employ a great many Hands and to give good Wages. But the Case was altered since these Lands were in the Hands of the Nobility and Gentry, who had greatly raised the Rents, and at the same Time neglected Hospitality, though it was on that Condition they held those Lands. And then the Business of Inclosures was reckoned a great Grievance; for the Landlords or their Farmers, finding a better Account in Wool than in Corn, had inclosed great Quantities of Land for the Breeding of Sheep, which inanced the Price of Corn to the great Detriment of the Poor. These and other Causes conspiring, the common People thought they were going to be ruined; and as there were always Persons ready to make a Handle of their Discontents, for restoring the old Superstition, they

rose in Arms in several Counties. The Protector tried all he could to redress their Grievances, but all he got by it was the Ill-will of the Council and the rest of the Nobility and Gentry, with whom he never stood very fair. The most formidable Insurrections were in *Devonshire* and *Norfolk*. In the former the Malcontents were 10,000 strong, headed by one *Arundel*. The Lord *John Russell* was sent against them; but his Forces being inferior to theirs, he kept at some Distance, and desired to know what it was they demanded, that he might lay it before the Council. They sent in their Demands in fifteen Articles, most of which tended to an entire Restoration of the old Religion: Which being rejected, and the Negotiations broke off, the Rebels immediately besieged *Exeter*; where meeting with a brave Resistance from the Inhabitants, they turned the Siege into a Blockade, in Hopes to starve them out. But the Lord *Russel* having received a Reinforcement, came to its Relief, when reduced almost to the last Extremity. He attacked and defeated the Rebels, took *Arundel* and the Mayor of *Bodmyn*, who were hanged with some others. In *Norfolk*, the Rebellion was no less formidable, where the Malcontents got together to the Number of 20,000, being headed by one *Ket* a *Tanner*. But *Dudley* Earl of *Warwick* marching against them with the Army designed for *Scotland*, quickly dispersed them, killing 2000, and taking a great many Prisoners, among whom was *Ket* their Leader, who was hanged at *Norwich*. It was on account of these Insurrections in divers Parts of the Kingdom at once, that the Lords-Lieutenants of Counties were first appointed.

In the midst of these Distractions at home, the War with *Scotland* continued without Success.

The



The Scots had last Year received considerable Succours from *France*, had made an Inroad into *England* as far as *Newcastle*, and carried off great Booty. And now, in 1549, they took *Broughty-Castle* from the *English*; and the Protector not being able to hold *Haddington*, on account of the Troubles in *England*, caused it to be demolished. At the same Time, to compleat the Misfortunes of the *English*, *Henry II.* King of *France*, who succeeded *Francis I.* invaded the Territory of *Boulogne*, though no War had been declared. By the Treaty between *Henry VIII.* and *Francis*, *Boulogne* was to be restored to *France* in eight Years for 2,000,000 of Crowns of Gold: But *Henry II.* had formed a Design of getting it before, without paying the Money. Accordingly, after having taken some Forts in its Territory, he laid Siege to *Boulogne* itself, and after several fruitless Attacks turned it into a Blockade. This War exceedingly disturbed the Protector, insomuch that for the Sake of procuring a Peace, he proposed to the Council the Restitution of *Boulogne*: But this Proposal was rejected with Indignation.

Many of the Regents appointed by *Henry VIII.* could not forgive the Duke of *Somerset* for assuming the whole Government, and reducing them to the State of bare Counsellors. His chief Enemies were *Wriothesley* Earl of *Southampton*, and *Dudley* Earl of *Warwick*. It was principally by their Means, that a strong Faction was now formed against him in the Council. At last, on the 6th of *October*, they with the Lord President *St. John*, and six other Counsellors, separated from the rest, and met at *Ely-House* as the King's Council, and were soon joined by seven more. Here they considered the State of the Nation,

and laid many Things to the Duke's Charge, sending for the Mayor, Aldermen and Common-Council of *London*, and the Lieutenant of the *Tower*, and forbidding them to own him for Protector; which they complied with. The Duke upon the first Notice of what was doing removed the King to *Windsor*, armed his Servants and Friends, and took some other Precautions, which only furnished his Enemies with a fresh Handle against him. At last, five other Counsellors forsook him, finding he was falling, and none remained with him but *Cranmer*, and *Paget*. The Council having thus all, in a Manner, removed to *London*, published a Manifesto against the Duke, and then went in a Body to the King at *Windsor*, who received them graciously; when Articles of Accusation, chiefly turning upon his having assumed the whole Power of the Government, being exhibited against him, he was immediately sent to the *Tower*. Then six Lords were appointed to be Governors to the King, but the Earl of *Warwick* became Prime Minister, to the great Mortification of the Earl of *Southampton*, who shortly after retired from Court and died of Grief. The Popish Party rejoiced at the Duke of *Somerset's* Disgrace, and expected great Things from this Change: But they soon found themselves mistaken. For the Earl of *Warwick*, who was wholly swayed by his Ambition, and was in reality of neither Religion, knowing what was most likely to establish himself in Favour with the King, turned his Back upon the *Romanists*, and declared for the Reformation.

The Duke of *Somerset* having thought it his wisest Course, in order to get out of his Enemies Hands, to subscribe a Confession of the Charges against him, and to throw himself upon the King's

Mercy, who still had a great Affection for him, though at the same Time he protested he never had any ill Design against the King or State, was by Act of Parliament, in *Jan.* 1550, fined in 2000*l.* a Year of Land, and condemned to forfeit all his Goods to the King, and to lose all his Places. His Enemies did not think fit to pursue him any farther, whilst he had any Share in the King's Favour, as it was plain he had at this Time. For on *Feb.* 6, on giving 10,000*l.* Bond for his good Behaviour, he was discharged out of the *Tower*; and not long after, the King pardoned him, and again made him one of his Counsellors. In the mean Time, to frustrate the Hopes that the Enemies of the Reformation might entertain from the Duke of *Somerſet's* Fall, the Parliament passed an Act confirming the new Liturgy, and ordering all Images to be burnt or defaced before the last Day of *June*.

Though the Duke of *Somerſet* was exclaimed against for barely proposing the Restitution of *Boulogne*, yet this Year it was actually delivered up to the *French* for 400,000 Crowns of Gold: The Consequence of which was a Peace with *France*, in which *Scotland* was also included; and King *Edward* desisted from his intended Marriage with the Queen of *Scots*.

The Reformation still went on. In 1551, a Confession of Faith was drawn up, the new Liturgy was corrected, the Crofs in consecrating the Eucharist, Prayers for the Dead, &c. were laid aside. The Princess *Mary* refused to comply with these Changes, and still had *Mass* said in her House. The *Sweating Sickness* raged again in *England* this Year, and continued from *April* to *October*.

The ambitious Earl of *Warwick*, now Duke of *Northumberland*,

thinking his Power could not be fully established, whilst the Duke of *Somerſet* was living, resolved now to remove him out of the Way. Accordingly, having first prepossessed the King against him, he got him accused both of Treason and Felony. He was acquitted of the Treason, but condemned to die for Felony, in designing to seize the Duke of *Northumberland's* Person, with Intent, as it was given out, to have him assassinated. Accordingly he was beheaded on *Jan.* 22, 1552, to the great Grief of the People, by whom he was highly esteemed. Thus fell the Duke of *Somerſet*, the King's Uncle, whose Character is differently represented by the Friends of the two Religions, and there is no Doubt but their Zeal led them both into Extremes, the Papists in blackening him, and the Protestants in commending him, who make whatever Actions of his favour of Ambition, to be purely the Effect of his Zeal for promoting the Reformation. However, it is certain that he had heaped up great Riches, of which *Somerſet-House* in the *Strand*, which he built, and which still bears his Name, is an evident Proof.

The Duke of *Northumberland's* Ambition had for some Time put him upon forming the Project of bringing the Crown into his own Family: And upon the young King's falling into a dangerous Consumption the Beginning of the Year 1553, he began to take Measures for putting it in Execution. To this End he married his fourth Son, the Lord *Guilford Dudley*, with *Jane Grey*, eldest Daughter of the Marquis of *Dorset*, now Duke of *Suffolk*, by *Frances Brandon*, who was, by *Henry* the VIIIth's Will, the next in Succession after the Princess *Elizabeth*, as being the only Daughter of *Mary*, Queen-Dowager of *France*.

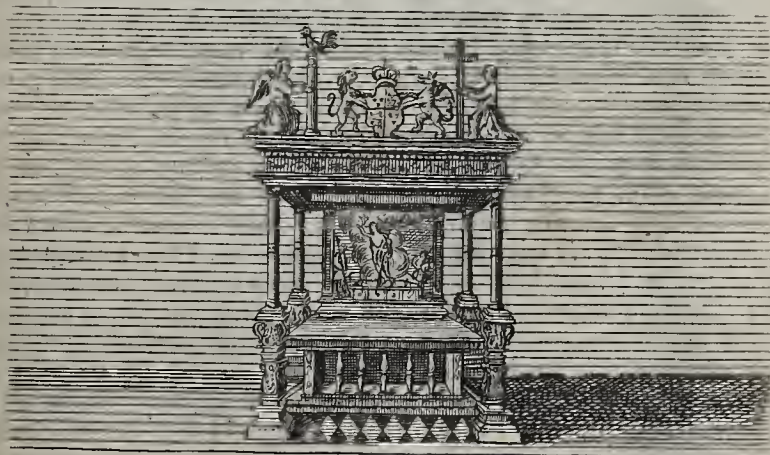


*France*, Daughter to *Henry VII.* by her second Husband, *Charles Brandon Duke of Suffolk.* This Step being taken, *Northumberland* knowing the King's great Concern for the State of Religion under his Sister *Mary*, who was to succeed him, artfully persuaded him, now his Distemper was become desperate, to settle the Crown on his Daughter-in-Law, the Lady *Jane Grey.* The Judges were in a Manner compelled by *Northumberland* to draw up and sign the Settlement; after which it was signed by all the Council.

The King in the mean Time growing worse and worse, the Council dismissed the Physicians, and committed him to the Care of a certain Woman, who undertook to cure him; but instead of that, she only put him to more Pain, which increased the People's Suspicions of some foul Play in the Duke of *Northumberland* to hasten the King's Death. But that is only Conjecture. The Physicians were sent for again, but not being able to do him any Good, the pious King resigned his

Soul to God on the 6th of *July*, 1553, in the sixteenth Year of his Age, having reigned six Years, five Months and nine Days. He was buried in *Westminster-Abbey*, near *Henry VII.* his Grandfather.

King *Edward VI.* was a Prince of such rare Accomplishments for his Years, that he was esteemed the Miracle of his Time. He had an excellent Genius, was Master of the *Latin* and *French*, and pretty well acquainted with the *Greek* and other Tongues. He had made a wonderful Progress in the Sciences, understood Fortification, and knew all the Harbours and Ports in his Dominions. He kept a Journal, in which he regularly entered all the important Transactions of his Reign. Add to this, that he was remarkably pious, and of a sweet and amiable Temper. He confirmed his Father's Grant of *Christ's* and *St. Bartholomew's* Hospitals, and founded *Bridewell* and *St. Thomas's* Hospitals. He also founded several Schools, which were mostly endowed out of the *Chantry Lands.*



*T. Kitchin sc.*



J. Rishin sculp

## M A R Y. 1553 — 1558.

1553.

**M**ARY, Daughter of King Henry VIII. by Catharine of Arragon, was placed the second in Succession in the said King's Will, which he was empowered to make by Act of Parliament, for settling the said Succession; though the Act declaring her illegitimate had never been repealed. When the late King her Brother was near expiring, the Duke of Northumberland got the Council to write to her and her Sister Elizabeth to come and keep him Company in his Illness. But his Design in reality was to get the two Princesses into his Hands. They were actually coming up, and Mary was within half a Day's Journey of London, when she was informed of the King's Death, of the Crown's being assigned to the Lady Jane Grey, and of the Design to secure her Person: Upon which she turned back, and retired to *Kenning-Hall* in *Norfolk*, from whence, on July 9, she wrote a Letter to the Council, asserting

her Right to the Crown, and promising to pardon such as would return to their Duty. Then she repaired to the Castle of *Framlingham* in *Suffolk*, where she took the Title of Queen; and being proclaimed at *Norwich*, she sent circular Letters to all the Nobles, demanding their Assistance in asserting her Right.

In the mean Time, the Duke of *Northumberland*, who bore an absolute Sway in the Council, caused himself to be sent to *Jane*, with the Duke of *Suffolk* her Father, to notify to her her Accession to the Crown, by Virtue of King *Edward's* Assignment. This excellent Lady, who very much resembled that young King in the Endowments of her Mind, the Study of Letters, and Acquirement of useful Knowledge, as she was much of the same Age, being in her sixteenth Year, shewed no Manner of Ambition for the Crown, and was with Difficulty prevailed on to accept it, after the most pressing Arguments of

1553



of her Father and Father-in-Law, and the earnest Solicitations of the Lord *Guilford* her Husband. Having thus yielded with Reluctance to what others would aspire after, the Council withdrew with her to the *Tower*, and the next Day, *July* 10, she was proclaimed in *London* by the Name of Queen *Jane*. But the People were so astonished to see a Queen proclaimed they had never once thought of, that there were none of those Acclamations which are usual on such Occasions : Which was a bad Omen to the Duke of *Northumberland*, whom the People never liked, and they knew that this was all his Contrivance : And a Piece of Severity that was acted on this Occasion, set them still more against him. A *Vintner's* Boy having some Way expressed his Scorn at the Proclamation, was taken up and set on a Pillory, with his Ears nailed to it, and cut off from his Head.

The Duke of *Northumberland* was hated most of all in *Norfolk* and *Suffolk*, on account of the great Slaughter he had made in the late Rebellion, which was on a civil, not a religious Account. These two Counties therefore immediately declared for *Mary*. The *Suffolk* Men were very forward on this Occasion, though they were great Friends to the Reformation, and therefore insisted on her leaving Religion as she found it ; which she readily promised to do. Many Lords also came to *Framlingham* to offer their Service, and raised Forces for her.

Though the Majority of the Council were no Friends to the Duke, and had only through Fear joined in his Measures, they had not yet an Opportunity of acting against him : And therefore upon the News of *Mary's* Proceedings, and the Preparations that were making in her

Favour, they gave Orders for raising Forces, which were to meet those already on Foot at *Newmarket*. But at the same Time, the Earl of *Arundel* politickly contrived it so, that the Duke of *Northumberland* should go and take the Command of these Forces ; that in his Absence they might have the better Opportunity of shaking off his Yoke, and declaring against him. He accordingly marched out of *London* with 2000 Horse and 6000 Foot, and with them went and headed 6000 more, already assembled at *Newmarket*. At his leaving *London*, though great Crowds came out to see him pass by, yet none wished him Success, which shewed how ill they were affected to him. The Duke marched to *Cambridge*, and from thence advanced towards *St. Edmundsbury* ; whilst several Circumstances concurred to throw him into great Perplexity. His Army daily diminished by Desertions : *Mary* made a great Progress in *Norfolk* and *Suffolk* : Six Men of War, sent to the Coast of *Suffolk* to prevent her escaping abroad, declared for her : And Sir *Edward Hastings*, who had been sent by the Council to levy Troops in *Buckinghamshire*, having raised 4000 Men, instead of joining *Northumberland*, declared for Queen *Mary*, and proclaimed her at *Buckingham*. These Things made the Duke turn back to *Cambridge*, from whence he writ to the Council for speedy Succours, but to no Purpose ; for the Council having found Means to get out of the *Tower*, from the Duke of *Suffolk*, who was left there to direct them in *Northumberland's* Absence, immediately declared for *Mary*, and sending for the Lord-Mayor and Aldermen, went together and proclaimed her in several Parts of the City. Which done, they sent to the Duke of *Suffolk* to deliver up the

*Tower,*

*Tower*, which Order he immediately obeyed; and to his Daughter *Jane*, to desist from the Title of Queen, and lay down her new Dignity, which she did with more Pleasure than she had taken it up but nine Days before. Then the Council sent Orders to the Duke of *Northumberland* to disband his Troops and submit to Queen *Mary*: But he having heard before of what had passed, prevented their Orders, and proclaimed her at *Cambridge*, throwing up his Hat, and crying *God save Queen Mary*. Notwithstanding which, he was arrested the next Day by the Earl of *Arundel*; when this haughty Man, who had been so insolent in his Prosperity, fell in the most abject Manner at the Earl's Feet, to beg his Favour, and shewed other Signs of Terror, Dejection and Meanness of Spirit. Three of his Sons, and some others, were seized at the same Time, and sent with him to the *Tower*; whither also were sent or detained there, the Lady *Jane* and her Husband, the Duke of *Suffolk*, the Marquis of *Norhampton*, Bishop *Ridley*, and others. But three Days after, the Queen, to make some Shew of Clemency, set the Duke of *Suffolk* at Liberty. And now the whole Kingdom declared for *Mary*, who entered *London* on the 3d of *August*, with her Sister *Elizabeth*, who had met her with 2000 Horse; and going to the *Tower*, she immediately released *Gardiner* and *Bonner*, with the Duke of *Norfolk*, who had been sent a Prisoner there at the End of *Henry* the VIIIth's Reign, and some others. Thus Queen *Mary* saw herself established on the Throne without any Effusion of Blood; which was owing more to the Hatred of all Ranks of People against the Duke of *Northumberland*, than to their Love to *Mary*, who had no hearty Friends but the Papists, then

by much the smallest Party in the Kingdom.

The new Queen, who was a thorough Bigot to Popery, thought of nothing but restoring it, and would immediately have sent for Cardinal *Pole*, as Legate, to reconcile the Nation to the Pope: But the politick *Gardiner*, whom she made her Chancellor, and who had now the chief Sway, fearing that *Pole's* Arrival might detriment him in the Queen's Favour, proposed the restoring of the old Religion by Degree, and so managed Matters with the Emperor, that he wrote to *Mary* to follow the Bishop's Measures, to which she at length consented, and *Pole's* Coming was suspended.

The Queen had promised the *Suffolk* Men, that she would leave Religion as she found it at *Edward's* Death; but it soon appeared that she designed not to be as good as her Word, when she declared in Council, that she would not force Men's Consciences in Matters of Religion; and yet this Declaration, as well as the other, she soon contradicted by her Actions. The Papists were so sure of her Intention to restore their Religion, that they began openly to inveigh against the Protestant Religion, though it still had the Laws on its Side; and a Proclamation published shortly after, though artfully worded, too plainly discovered her Design: For therein she declared, that she would use no Force, till all was regulated by Authority of Parliament. By the same Proclamation all Preaching was forbid, without an express Licence; and several other Orders were contained in it, very unfavourable to the Protestants.

On the 22d of *Aug.* the Duke of *Northumberland* was beheaded for High-Treason. And Sir *John Gates*, and Sir *Thomas Palmer*, two  
of



of his Associates, were executed at the same Time. The Duke fell unlamented by all. He declared that he died a *Roman* Catholick, and had been always such in his Heart : And indeed it plainly appeared, that his favouring the Reformation under *Edward*, was only to serve his own politick Views. Nor was his setting up *Jane* out of any Love to Religion, but purely the Effect of Ambition to advance his own Family to the Crown.

The People of *Suffolk* were some of the first that fell under the Displeasure of the Court for transgressing the Orders in the Proclamation. They therefore sent Deputies to the Queen, humbly to put her in Mind of her Promise. But they were received very roughly, and told, that it was not for the Members to rule the Head, but the Head the Members. And one of them, who used more Freedom than the rest, was set in the Pillory.

Shortly after, *Bradford* and *Rogers*, two eminent Protestant Preachers, were committed to Prison. The Popish Bishops who had been deposed in the last Reign, were restored, and those who had been put in their Room, turned out; some of whom were sent to Prison on various Pretences, as was shortly after the good Archbishop *Cranmer*. And now the *Roman* Catholicks, seeing how the Tide ran, began openly to set up their Worship, before it was restored by Authority ; in which they were countenanced by the Court.

The Queen was crowned on the 1st of *October*. And the Parliament, which the Court had taken care, by all Manner of Artifices and even Violence in managing the Elections and Returns, to have entirely at their Devotion, met on the 10th. As to the Lords, though they had been almost all Protestants, at least

outwardly, in the Reign of King *Edward*, they turned, almost wholly, zealous Catholicks, under Queen *Mary*. This Parliament immediately repealed the Divorce of the Queen's Mother, by which they a second Time declared the Princess *Elizabeth* illegitimate. Then they made void all the Laws of King *Edward* concerning Religion, restored the Mass, and brought all Things back to the State they were in at the latter End of *Henry* the VIIIth's Reign ; *Gardiner* not thinking it advisable as yet to proceed any farther. But the Queen was impatient to go through with the Work, to have the Pope's Power fully restored, and the Nation reunited to the Holy See. *Gardiner* was desirous of the same, but he did not think it yet a proper Time. Or, it may be, he was for putting it off, because in order to this there would be a Necessity of Cardinal *Pole*'s coming to *England*, of whom he was jealous, because the Queen had an extraordinary Respect for him, insomuch that it was believed she would have been glad of a Dispensation to marry him. But now a Marriage was projecting by the Emperor, with *Gardiner* in the Secret, if he was not the first Mover of it, for his Son *Philip* of *Spain*, with Queen *Mary*. The Nation was very averse to this Match, and even the House of Commons, packed as it was, addressed the Queen against it ; at which being offended, she dissolved the Parliament.

In the mean Time, *Jane Grey*, and *Guilford Dudley* her Husband, were tried, and condemned to die as Traitors ; as was also Archbishop *Cranmer*, though he appealed to the Judges, with what Reluctance he signed the Instrument for the Queen's Exclusion. However, the Queen affected to forgive him for the Treason, designing at the same Time

Time to have him put to Death as an Heretick ; though he had been the Means of saving her Life, when her Father would have put her to Death, for her Adherence to her Mother's Interests.

Whilst the Parliament was sitting, the Convocation decided in favour of *Transubstantiation*, after a sham Disputation between the Protestant and Popish Clergy ; in which the former, who were but six in the House, were run down with Numbers and Noise, for Want of Arguments.

The Treaty of Marriage between *Philip* and *Mary* was signed Jan. 12, 1554, in which *Gardiner* took care to have such Conditions inserted as might make it go down with the Parliament, and might seem to secure *England* from coming under the Dominion of *Spain*. Notwithstanding which, as soon as it was published, Murmurs and Complaints were every where heard against it ; and an Insurrection soon broke out, of which the Marriage was either the real or pretended Cause. It was concerted between the Duke of *Suffolk*, Sir *Thomas Wyatt*, and Sir *Peter Carew*. This last was endeavouring to raise *Cornwall* ; but he had taken his Measures so ill, that they were presently disconcerted ; whereupon he fled into *France*. The Duke of *Suffolk* behaved not much better in *Warwickshire*, and his Design being discovered by Means of an intercepted Letter from *Wyat*, before he had well begun to act, he was seized by the Earl of *Huntingdon*, and conveyed to the *Tower*. *Wyat*, who was not a Protestant, but a Roman Catholick, proceeded with greater Expedition in *Kent*. He marched towards *London*, at the Head of 4000 Men, which were soon increased to 6000. He advanced to *Southwark*, and finding the Bridge

well secured, he marched up to *Kingston*, and crossing the *Thames*, proceeded towards *London*, designing to enter the City by *Ludgate*, foolishly presuming the *Londoners* would declare in his Favour. When he came, he unluckily found the Gate shut against him, and as Care had been taken to block up his Way behind, finding his Case desperate, he surrendered, and was conveyed to Prison. With so much Ease was this Rebellion crushed, which, if it had been managed by abler Heads, might have staggered the Court, but now, by its ill Success, tended only to increase their Power.

This Conspiracy, and the Duke of *Suffolk's* having a Hand in it, hastened the Catastrophe of his innocent Daughter, the Lady *Jane Grey*, and her Husband ; though, in all likelihood, as she was so firmly attached to the Reformation, she would some Time or other have fallen a Sacrifice, if this Affair had not happened. This pious Lady, with the utmost Resignation and Fortitude, submitted her Neck to the Block on Feb. 12, after she had seen the headless Body of her Husband carried along by her from the same Execution. And nine Days after, the Duke of *Suffolk* her Father underwent the same Fate.

In the mean Time *Bret*, one of *Wyat's* Captains, was hanged, with fifty-eight more of his Men. After which, 600 Prisoners were brought before the Queen with Ropes about their Necks, and received their Pardon. *Wyat*, on his Trial, in hopes of saving his Life, accused the Princess *Elizabeth* as an Accomplice in his Conspiracy ; but finding he must die, he cleared her of all on his second Examination, as also at the Place of Execution. However, his Accusation occasioned the Princess to be sent to the *Tower*, where she endured



endured a long and severe Confinement, and was afterwards removed a Prisoner to *Woodstock*. *Gardiner*, and perhaps the Queen too, would have been glad to have had her put to Death, and Schemes were even laid for that Purpose; but she happily escaped them all.

A Parliament was now to be procured, which should approve of the Queen's intended Marriage, and restore the Pope's Authority: Both of which the major Part of the Nation was against, and a great many even of those, who were for the old Religion, thought that the Pope's Authority was by no means necessary to the Church. But the Court was resolved to have it fully restored, and in order to this the Marriage was thought necessary, that they might have the Assistance of *Spain* in Case the Nation should prove too refractory. However, by the Influence of *Spanish* Gold, and the Promise of Pensions from the Emperor and the Queen, added to former Arts, the Court got or modelled a Parliament to their Mind. But before it met, the Queen did several Things, by Virtue of her Supremacy, though she abhorred that Doctrine in her Heart. She ordered *Gardiner* to purge the Church of all married Bishops and Priests, and appointed him, and five other Bishops, Commissioners for depriving four Bishops who had Wives; which was done accordingly.

The Parliament meeting on *April* 2, approved the Treaty of Marriage between the Queen and *Philip*. And nothing now standing in the Way, that Prince arrived at *Southampton* on *July* 19. The Queen met him at *Winchester*, and they were married by *Gardiner* on the 25th; *Philip* being twenty-nine Years old, but *Mary* thirty-eight. The same Day they were proclaimed King and Queen of *Eng-*

*land*, *France*, *Naples*, and *Jerusalem*, with many other Titles. To these was afterwards added, that of King and Queen of *Spain*, upon the Emperor *Charles* V. resigning those Dominions to his Son *Philip*, as he soon after resigned the Empire to his Brother *Ferdinand*. Care was taken, by the Articles of Marriage, that *Philip* should have no Share in the Government of *England*, though doubtless he hoped to be able to break through those Restrictions in Time. The *Spanish* Gravity in *Philip* was by no Means agreeable to the *English*, but he did some Things which gained him a Degree of Esteem. He procured the Enlargement of several State-Prisoners, and particularly of the Princess *Elizabeth*, who, whether from Motives of Policy or otherwise, found in him a Protector during the rest of this Reign.

Whilst the Parliament was sitting, a new Conference was held at *Oxford*, about the *Eucharist*. Archbishop *Cranmer*, and the Bishops *Ridley* and *Latimer*, all Prisoners in the *Tower*, were pitched upon to dispute with the Popish Clergy on that Subject. It was resolved beforehand to confound them with Noise and Clamour, as in the former Dispute; after which they were required to abjure their pretended Errors, and upon their refusing to do it, excommunicated.

The Parliament meeting again on the 11th of *November*, *Pole* was at last sent for over in Quality of the Pope's Legate, and arrived on the 24th. He opened his Legation before the King, Queen, and both Houses of Parliament, telling them that the Design of it was to bring back the straying Sheep to the Fold of Christ. At which the Queen was so transported with Joy, that she fancied she felt a Child stir in her Womb. This mightily raised the

Hopes

Hopes of the Popish Party, and *Te Deum* was sung by Order of Council on the Occasion : But all came to nothing in the End.

On the 29th of *November*, the grand Work of reconciling the Kingdom to the Pope was effected. The two Houses petitioned the King and Queen to intercede for them with the Legate for that Purpose. Hereupon *Pole* came to the Parliament, and after a Speech on the Occasion, he enjoined for Penance the Repeal of all the Laws made against the Pope's Authority ; which the two Houses promising, they received Absolution from the Legate on their Knees, and were released from all the Papal Censures. The Act of Repeal passed the Beginning of *January*, 1555, by which the Papal Authority was restored as it stood before the 20th of *Henry VIII.* What had like to have been the greatest Obstacle to this whole Affair, was the Business of the Abbey-Lands. But rather than hinder the so-much-desired reunion, the Pope used great Artifice in seeming to connive at the present Possessors, though the Powers he gave the Legate bore a double Meaning ; and the Legate, though he consented to the Alienations, denounced God's Judgments against all those who with-held any of the Goods of the Church ; and the Queen, in her great Zeal, made Restitution of all that was in her Hands.

Popery being now fully re-established, the Spirit of it soon appeared in the most violent and bloody Persecution against the Protestants. *Pole* was for reducing them by gentle Methods, without any Force or corporal Punishments ; but *Gardiner's* violent Counsels were most agreeable to the Court, and the rest of the Bishops. It was therefore resolved to put them in Practice, and

to leave to him the Business of extirpating Heresy, which he afterwards transferred to *Bonner*, Bishop of *London*, who was, if possible, more furious and bloody than himself. To prepare the Way, the Parliament revived the ancient Statutes that had been made against Heretics. The first Sacrifices to Popish Zeal and Bigotry were *Hooper*, who had been Bishop of *Gloucester*, and the three famous Protestant Preachers, *Rogers*, *Saunders*, and *Taylor* ; who were all burnt at the Stake the Beginning of *February*, 1555 ; and on *March 30*, *Ferrar* Bishop of *St. David's* was burnt at *Caermarthen*. The People in general murmured at these Cruelties, which occasioned some Stop to the Persecution, whilst the Court and Bishops, both equally guilty, endeavoured to cast the Blame upon one another : But it was soon renewed with double Fury ; when among those who suffered Death in the Flames, were the famous *Bradford* before mentioned, *Philpot* Archdeacon of *Winchester*, and the two venerable Bishops, *Ridley* of *London*, and *Latimer* of *Worcester*, who were both burnt at *Oxford*, and suffered with a Constancy equal to that of the primitive Martyrs. In short, no less than 67 Persons were burnt before the End of this Year.

In the Midst of this bloody Zeal, the Court and the whole Popish Party met with a considerable Disappointment, when the so-much-expected Deliverance of the Queen proved only a false Conception, after they had been so much elated as to give out that she was actually delivered of a Prince. And King *Philip* now despairing of Issue by the Queen, whereby he hoped to have united the Monarchies of *Spain* and *England*, and growing weary of her, as she was neither young nor handsome, left *England* on the



the 4th of September, to the no small Mortification of the Queen. Soon after, the Popish Champion, *Gardiner* Bishop of *Winchester*, a Man of Learning and Abilities, but who would sacrifice every Thing to his private Interest, Ambition and Revenge, was suddenly seized with a Disorder, a Suppression of Urine, which carried him off in a few Days.

The Fury of the Persecution notwithstanding, which at length laid hold on the learned and pious Archbishop *Cranmer*. After suffering a scornful Degradation from the Hands of *Bonner* and *Thirleby*, he was burnt at the Stake, on March 21, 1556. He had been prevailed on, by the Hopes of saving his Life, to sign an Abjuration of his Opinion; but when he found that he was notwithstanding to die, he repented of what he had done, and suffered with great Resolution, holding out, as it is said, the Hand that had signed the Abjuration, till it dropped off in the Flames, and crying out, as he was burning, *That unworthy Hand!* All the rest of the Year was one continued Persecution of the Protestants, in which 85 perished in the Flames under *Bonner's* Management, who discovered on these Occasions a more than brutal Cruelty. *Pole* succeeded *Cranmer* in the Archbishoprick of *Canterbury*.

The following Year 79 Protestants underwent the same fiery Trial; and the Effects of Popish Malice appeared against the Dead as well as against the Living. The Bones of *Fagius* and *Bucer*, two German Divines, were dug up and burnt at *Cambridge*, after they had been ridiculously cited before the Commissioners to give an Account of their Faith. *Peter Martyr* fled out of the Kingdom before the Persecution began; but his Wife, who

had been interred at *Oxford*, was dug out of her Grave, and buried in a Dunghill. The Magistrates growing quite averse to the Persecution, Commissioners were appointed for that Purpose; who proceeded in their bloody Work with such Dispatch as the Court and Clergy desired.

Whilst the Queen and Court were wholly intent upon these violent Methods for extirpating Heresy, they suffered themselves to be seduced by *Spanish* Counsels into a Rupture with *France*. And though in this War the *Spaniards* and *English* gained a great Victory over the *French* in the Battle of *St. Quintin*, yet it ended to the eternal Disgrace and Misfortune of *England*, in the Loss of *Calais*, which this Nation had been possessed of ever since the Reign of *Edward III.* and which, through the inexcusable Neglect of the *English* Ministry, the Duke of *Guise* made himself Master of, the Beginning of the Year 1558, as also of *Guise*, and the Castle of *Hames*, which were the only Remains of the *English* Conquests in *France*.

The Loss of *Calais* occasioned great Uneasiness and Murmurs among the People, and the Queen herself was so sensibly touched at this Misfortune, that it was thought to be one Means of shortening her Days: Her Grief was so excessive, that she told those about her, she should die, and if they would know the Cause, they must dissect her after her Death, and they should find *Calais* at her Heart. At the same Time *Philip's* Aversion gave her great Uneasiness, and, with her other Vexations, increased her natural Melancholy; whilst her Health was sensibly declining by a Dropsy, which grew every Day worse and worse. In this State of Body and Mind it was visible she had not long to live: And yet this did not abate,

but

1538.

but rather heighten her Fury and that of her Ministers against the Protestants. Thirty-nine were burnt in a short Time in this last Year of her Reign, four of them at *Canterbury*, but about a Week before she died. Near three hundred perished in the Flames in the four Years whilst this Persecution raged, *viz.* one Archbishop, four Bishops, twenty-one Divines, eight Gentlemen, eighty-four Artificers, an hundred Husbandmen, Servants, and Labourers, twenty-six Wives, twenty Widows, nine Virgins, two Boys, and two Infants : Besides which, several died in Prison, and many were whipped, or otherwise cruelly treated. These Barbarities had doubtless continued longer, if the Queen's Death had not put a Stop to them, which happened in *November 17, 1558*, in the forty-third Year of her Age, when she had reigned five Years, four Months and eleven Days. Cardinal *Pole* survived her but sixteen Hours, who, though he was zealously attached to the Papal Authority, yet was of a mild and sweet Disposition, and averse to the Cruelties practised in this Reign, being rather for reforming the Clergy than for burning Hereticks. After this was known, he was not consulted in the

Proceedings upon Religion, though in other Things he was in great Confidence with the Queen. But his Moderation was quite disagreeable to her, as well as to the Pope and Bishops ; and he was even suspected of leaning a little to the Protestant Religion. He was buried at *Canterbury*, and Queen *Mary* in *Henry VIIIth's Chapel* in *Westminster-Abbey*.

This Queen was educated under her Mother in the most superstitious Attachment to the Papal Authority and Religion, in which she continued all her Life. She was either naturally of a gloomy Temper, or her Religion made her so ; and this Disposition grew more and more upon her, from the many Mortifications and Disappointments she met with. An excessive Bigotry was her distinguishing Characteristick, which made her resolve either to reduce her Subjects to Popery, or to destroy them ; and in the Midst of this fiery Zeal, a Spirit of Revenge often shewed itself under the Cloak of a Concern for Holy Church. In short, Queen *Mary* must be said to have been a bad Queen, but what chiefly contributed to the making her so, was the Badness of her Religion.







ing her having been declared illegitimate, as well as her Sister *Mary*, who succeeded by Virtue of the same Will. Upon this Foot then there could be no Dispute: And as *Mary* Queen of *Scots* was married to the Dauphin of *France*, the Parliament might well fear that the Consequence of her succeeding to the Crown of *England*, would be its becoming a Province to *France*. Besides, she was as bigotted a Papist as the late Queen *Mary* of *England*; and the Parliament as well as the Nation in general were grown pretty sick of the late Cruelties on account of Religion, and might justly fear the Return of those Barbarities, in case the Queen of *Scotland* should become Queen of *England*. Add to this, that the Majority of the Lords, if not of the Commons, seem to have wished well to the Reformation, though they dissembled in the Reign of *Mary*; and perhaps were afraid, if Popery should continue, that they should be obliged, one Time or other, to restore the rich Abbey-Lands they were possessed of: And those who were real Friends to the Papal Religion might hope, that *Elizabeth* would, at least, favour them, as she thought fit, if we may believe *Cambden*, to be a Conformist during her Sister's Reign. Be this as it will, the House of Lords first, and then the Commons, unanimously declared for *Elizabeth*, who was thereupon proclaimed Queen of *England*, *France*, and *Ireland*. She was then at *Hatfield*, and upon her receiving the agreeable News, she came up to *London*, attended by a numerous Train of Lords and Ladies, and was received every where with the loud and joyful Acclamations of infinite Crowds of People.

Queen *Elizabeth* began her Reign at 25 Years of Age, and in the Course of it shewed the most consummate Policy and Skill in Govern-

ment, acquiring, upon the Whole, the Character of a great and glorious Queen. As to her Person, she was tolerably handsome, her Mien grand, noble and majestick. But what she is most to be admired for, are the Endowments of her Mind, her solid Judgment, her great Capacity, her deep Penetration; all which she discovered in the Choice of her Ministers, in the prudent and frugal Management of her Revenues, in a thorough Knowledge of the Interests, Views, and Intrigues of foreign States, and taking her Measures accordingly, for her own Safety and the Peace and Prosperity of her People; and, above all, in taking care, by her affable and engaging Deportment, to reign in the Hearts of her Subjects, and preserve their Affection, as she knew that to be the best Means of preserving her Crown, and making it sit easy upon her Head. After all, it must be allowed, that Queen *Elizabeth* had some Faults, and was guilty of some Severities which can hardly be excused, unless she thought them necessary to the Safety of her Person, and the Peace of her Kingdoms; wherein too she might possibly be mistaken. However, these Faults were greatly outweighed by her Virtues. And if we consider, that she had for Enemies, *France* and *Spain*, the Pope, and all the Catholick Powers, who denied her Title; that the Queen of *Scotland* was supported by all those Powers, in her Pretensions to her Crown; that her own Roman Catholick Subjects wished to have her dethroned, and were often in Plots for that Purpose, in which they were encouraged by foreign Powers; that the *Irish*, who were strongly attached to the Pope, were rebellious, and occasioned many intestine Commotions in that Kingdom: And yet that in the midst of all she, without any Allies, supported herself through a long



long and glorious Reign; defeated all the Projects of her Enemies, and kept the Crown unshaken on her Head to the last, purely by her good Policy, and the Affection, Zeal and Loyalty of her faithful Subjects, whom by her wise Behaviour she attached firmly to her Interest: I say, if we consider all these Things, her vast and surprizing Abilities will evidently appear. After these general Reflections I shall now proceed to give some Account of the chief Transactions and Occurrences in the long Reign of this renowned Queen.

After dispatching Ambassadors to foreign Courts to notify her Accession, the Queen formed her Council, in which she continued 13 that had been Counsellors to the late Queen, all Roman Catholics. To these she added eight more, who were all as zealous Protestants: Among whom were *Francis Russel* Earl of *Bedford*, *Sir William Cecil*, and *Sir Nicholas Bacon*, who was made Keeper of the Great Seal. With these and some others of the Protestant Counsellors she held secret Consultations, how to restore the Reformed Religion in *England*. Before this was done, King *Philip* of *Spain* offered her Marriage, which though she was resolved against, as being his Sister-in-Law, as well as on other Accounts, yet she would not give a peremptory Denial, but kept him in Suspence, because it was not her Interest to break with him at present. But when once she had established the Reformation, there was an End of the Affair, and *Philip*, of her Friend, became her Enemy.

What made the Restoring of the Reformation the easier was this, that though the Kingdom appeared wholly Popish, it was not really so; but the Majority had been compelled to put on the outward Profession by the Severity of the Laws, which they would be glad to quit when they could do it with Safety. The Me-

thods taken for this Purpose were, to remove all the zealous Catholics from the Council, and from all Posts of Authority, and to turn out the Popish Magistrates of Counties and Corporations, and put Protestants in their Room, in order to have such Members chosen and returned to serve in Parliament, as should favour the Reformation. And before they met, the Queen shewed her Intentions, by publishing a Proclamation, allowing Divine Service to be performed, and the Holy Scriptures to be read, in the vulgar Tongue.

The Queen was crowned on the 15th of *January*, 1559, by *Oglethorpe* Bishop of *Carlisle*, all the rest of the Bishops refusing to be concerned in the Office, because they already saw *Elizabeth's* Aversion to the Church of *Rome*. About ten Days after, the Parliament met, who restored the *First Fruits* and *Tenths* to the Crown, appointed publick Worship to be performed in the vulgar Tongue, and restored the Queen to her Right of Supremacy in all Causes Ecclesiastical as well as Civil, empowering her to put the Exercise of it into what Hands she pleased; which gave Rise to a new Court, called the *High-Commission Court*, in which several Commissioners had the same Power that *Cromwell* had as *Viceroy* in the Reign of *Henry VIII.* They also renewed and confirmed all the Acts of *Edward VI.* concerning Religion, passed the famous Act of Uniformity, and by another Act suppressed all the Religious Houses which *Mary* had founded, and gave their Lands and Revenues to the Crown. To finish at once, what I would say on this Subject, I shall add, that in 1563, an Act passed against holding and maintaining the Authority of the Bishop of *Rome*, and another to establish and confirm the Queen's Supremacy in Ecclesiastical Affairs:

And the Articles of the Church of *England*, as they stand at this Day, were settled by the Convocation. Thus the Reformation, which, with several Interruptions, had been carrying on above 30 Years, was at last firmly established: But the Act of Uniformity, and the Subscriptions that were required, occasioned Divisions among the Protestants themselves, which in Time produced fatal Consequences; those who were afterwards called *Puritans*, contending for a further Reformation, whilst the others were as stiffly against it; though the former seemed to be as much for Uniformity and Subscriptions in their own Way, as their Antagonists were in theirs. And from the Mischiefs that these Contentions produced, we may see the Reasonableness and Necessity of a general Toleration. It is observed, that of 9400 beneficed Clergymen in *England*, only 14 Bishops, 12 Archdeacons, 15 Heads of Colleges, and about 80 of the Parochial Clergy, refused to comply with the Reformation, who were turned out, and their Places filled by Protestants.

What tended very much to the Safety of Queen *Elizabeth* and her Government, and secured her from the Attempts of foreign Powers, was their having their Hands full with the intestine Broils of their own Subjects. These Troubles she politically promoted as much as she could, and made her Advantage of them. As they were chiefly on account of Religion, she assisted the Protestants in *Scotland*, *France*, and the *Low-Countries*, against their respective Sovereigns, or the governing Party, by whom they had been cruelly oppressed and persecuted. The Reformation had prevailed greatly in *Scotland*, and the Protestants there had entered into an Association, with *James Stuart*, Prior of *St. Andrew's*, their Queen's

Bastard Brother, at their Head, to stand up in their own Defence against the Roman Catholics, who had the Government in their Hands, and were supported by *France*. The Queen of *Scots* and the Dauphin her Husband had, by Order of *Henry II.* of *France*, taken the Arms of *England*, with the Title of Sovereigns of that Kingdom, and continued to do so, after the Dauphin, by the Death of his Father, became King of *France*, by the Name of *Francis II.* when the Duke of *Guise* and Cardinal of *Lorraine*, the Queen's Uncles, governed all in *France*. This raised the Jealousy of Queen *Elizabeth*, who from that Time looked upon *Mary*, Queen of *Scotland*, as a dangerous Rival, especially as she was supported by the *French*, who had sent Forces into *Scotland*, in order to subdue the Protestant Party, and then to turn their Arms against *England*, to dethrone *Elizabeth*, and set up *Mary* in her Room. This induced Queen *Elizabeth*, in 1560, to enter into a Treaty with the *Scotch* Malcontents, in pursuance of which she sent an Army into *Scotland*, in order to break the Measures of her Enemies; which had the desired Success. For the same Purpose she some Time after assisted the *Huguenots* in *France*, (as the Protestants were there called) against their Enemies the Papists, who by the Instigation of the *Guises* had commenced a violent Persecution against them, and brought them to the Necessity of taking Arms. By these Means Queen *Elizabeth* kept both *France* and *Scotland* so employed, that they could find no Opportunity to put their Schemes of dethroning her in Execution.

*Robert Dudley*, Son to the late Duke of *Northumberland*, was now a great Favourite at Court. The Queen some Time after made him Earl



Earl of *Leicester*; though he had so little Merit, that it was hard to account for the Ascendant he had over her. At the same Time Sir *William Cecil*, Secretary of State, a Man of vast Abilities, of great Integrity and deep Penetration, was First-Minister for the Affairs of the Government. The Queen afterwards created him Lord *Burleigh*, and made him Lord High-Treasurer, and he continued a faithful Servant to her Majesty till his Death, which happened not till many Years after.

*Mary*, upon the Death of her Husband *Francis II.* who was succeeded by his Brother *Charles IX.* left *France*, and arrived in *Scotland* in 1561. She now, by the Advice of the *Guises* her Uncles, till they should have a better Opportunity to act in her Favour, quitted the Title and Arms of Queen of *England*; but this did not satisfy *Elizabeth*, who insisted upon her declaring she had no Right ever to take them, and upon her ratifying the Treaty of *Edinburgh*, whereby she was to promise never to resume them: Which *Mary* refused to do, and this was the Source of a perpetual Difference and Animosity between the two Queens. Before *Mary's* Arrival, the States of *Scotland*, who met by Virtue of a Patent from her to *James Stuart*, soon after made Earl of *Murray*, had established the Protestant Religion in that Kingdom; after which, by their Order, the Monasteries were all demolished.

The Pope, not yet quite out of Hopes of reclaiming *Elizabeth*, was desirous, about this Time, to send a Nuncio into *England*. He was actually arrived in *Flanders*, and demanded Permission to continue his Journey to *England*, but could never obtain it; the Queen saying, she had nothing to do with the Pope, who had no more Authority than other

Bishops. After this, being well assured that the Pope would spare no Pains to give her Disturbance from all Quarters, both at home and abroad, she took the wisest Precautions for her Safety, keeping a good Fleet always in Readiness against any Invasion, and securing more and more the Affections of her Subjects; which she looked upon as her only Support.

In 1563, the Queen of *Scots* had the Satisfaction of being delivered from one Rival, by the Death of *Frances Brandon*, Duchess of *Suffolk*, Grand-daughter to *Henry VII.* who, as has been said, was placed next after *Elizabeth* in *Henry VIII's* Will.

The Year following, Queen *Elizabeth* visited the University of *Cambridge*, where she was very magnificently received, and expressed her Satisfaction in an elegant *Latin* Speech, of which Tongue she was perfect Mistress. Shortly after, she visited the University of *Oxford*, was received in the same Manner, and made the same Return.

In 1565, the Queen of *Scotland* married *Henry Stuart*, Lord *Darnley*, Son to the Countess of *Lennox*, Daughter of *Margaret* Queen of *Scotland* by her second Husband the Earl of *Angus*; by which Means she united the Title of that Family to the Crown of *England* with her own. After this Marriage there was nothing but Confusion in *Scotland*. *Darnley* was a Catholick, and *Murray* and several other Lords were against the Match, as fearing it would endanger the Reformation, as well as on their own private Accounts. The Queen about this Time was more than ordinarily attached to one *David Rizzo*, Son to a Musician of *Turin*, who had so insinuated himself into her Favour, as to become, in a Manner, Prime-Minister; and, if we believe *Buchanan*, she was guilty of scandalous Familiarities

with him. However that be, the King her Husband grew jealous of him. This Jealousy was increased by the Averſion the Queen, on all Occaſions, ſhewed him, ſoon after the Marriage; and the Sway *Rizzo* bore in her Affection, filled ſeveral of the Nobles with Indignation. This ended in the Murder of *Rizzo* by Order of the King, in 1566. The Lord *Ruthven*, *Douglas* and others, ruſhing into the Queen's Chamber, fell upon him and killed him in her Preſence, when ſhe was five Months gone with Child. She was kept under a Guard for ſome Time, but put on ſuch an artful Fondneſs for her Husband, that ſhe found Means to regain her Freedom and reſume her Authority; after which ſhe expreſſed a greater Antipathy to the King her Husband than before, and took all Occaſions to mortify him. She could not bear the Sight of him, and fled from his Company; ſo much had *Rizzo's* Murder increased her Averſion. And now the Earl of *Bothwell* began to have the ſame Place in her Heart that *Rizzo* had before, and became as great a Favourite, and as abſolute at Court; whiſt the King was entirely neglected, and once had Poiſon given him, which however had not the Effect his Enemies deſired: But ſoon after, at the Beginning of the Year 1567, he was murdered in his Bed by *Bothwell's* Procurement, the Queen alſo herſelf being ſtrongly ſuſpected to be privy to the Crime; and what ſtrengthened this Suſpicion, was her marrying *Bothwell* in a ſhort Time after, whom all the World charged with this Murder.

I ſhall juſt obſerve, that between the Murder of *Rizzo* and that of the King, June 15, 1566, Queen *Mary* was brought to-bed of a Prince, named *James*, who was afterwards our King *James I.* when

he had been for many Years King of *Scotland*.

Plots had been continually carrying on in *England* in Favour of *Mary*, which had even infected the two Houſes of Parliament, who ſtrongly preſſed Queen *Elizabeth* either to marry, or to name her Succeſſor, having a View to the Queen of *Scots*, though they did not ſpeak out. But ſhe would do neither the one nor the other. It ſeems ſhe was always reſolved not to marry, though ſhe was courted by almoſt all the young Princes in *Europe*, and fed them with Hopes, only to make her own Advantage whiſt ſuch Negotiations were on foot. And ſhe would never make the Queen of *Scots* her Heir, leſt her Party in *England*, which was already ſtrong, ſhould become ſtronger, and ſhe ſhould be expoſed to the Mortification of ſeeing her Subjects adore the Riſing-Sun. This Affair, however, might have given her great Uneaſineſs, if the Queen of *Scots* had not loſt herſelf by her late ſhameful Conduct, and evidently leſſened her Party in *England*.

The Murder of the King, and the Queen's Marriage with *Bothwell*, produced great Alterations in *Scotland*. The Earls of *Argyll*, *Morton*, *Marr*, *Athol*, *Glencairn*, and others, entered into a Confederacy to bring the Murderers to Juſtice, and diſſolve the Queen's Marriage. They raiſed Forces, and *Edinburgh* declared for them. The Queen and *Bothwell* retired to *Dunbar*, and levied ſome Troops, in order to oppoſe the Confederates. But they not appearing hearty, and many deſerting, the Queen had no other Way, than to capitulate with the confederate Lords, and put herſelf into their Hands, who conducted her to *Edinburgh*, and ſet a Guard over her: And upon diſcovering that



that she still kept a Correspondence with *Bothwell* by Letters, they confined her in *Locheven-Castle*. *Bothwell*, after this, finding there was no Safety for him in *Scotland*, retired to the *Orkneys* and turned Pirate, and afterwards escaped to *Denmark*, where he was imprisoned, and lived in great Misery for some Years, which at length turned his Brains.

Soon after the Queen's Imprisonment, the Confederates obliged her to resign her Crown to her Son, who was but about a Year old, and the Earl of *Murray* was appointed Regent. But quickly a strong Party was formed against him, in order to restore the Queen, who had escaped from her Confinement. Forces were raised on both Sides; but the Regent, with a much inferior Number, in 1568, defeated the Queen's in the Battle of *Glasgow*, and forced her to fly into *England*, where Queen *Elizabeth* kept her a Prisoner many Years, and from whence she never returned. The Troubles in *Scotland* still continued, of which I shall say no more, but that the politick Queen of *England* availed herself of them all: And after *Murray's* Murder, when her Enemies there attempted a Union among the *Scots*, in order to act against her with the Assistance of foreign Forces, she artfully fomented their Differences, and so broke all their Measures. Though afterwards, when *Mary's* Party was sufficiently weakened, and *France* was endeavouring to keep up the Differences in *Scotland*, *Elizabeth* thought it her Interest to compose them; in which she happily succeeded.

The Persecution of the Protestants in the *Low-Countries* under the Duke of *Alva*, whom the King of *Spain* had sent with an Army against them, occasioned several *Flemish* Families to fly for Refuge to *England*. Queen

*Elizabeth* settled them at *Norwich*, *Colchester*, *Sandwich*, and several other Places; which turned greatly to the Advantage of the Nation, they being the first who brought hither the Art of making *Bays* and *Says*, and other Linen and Woollen Cloths of the like Sort. At the same Time the Persecution was re-kindled against the *Huguenots* in *France*, the two Courts of *France* and *Spain* having agreed, at the famous Interview of *Bayonne*, to use their joint Endeavours to extirpate Hereticks. Queen *Elizabeth*, not doubting but when they had accomplished their Ends in their own Dominions, they would turn their Arms against her, assisted the *Huguenots* again, as she had done before. And how she assisted the *Hollanders* in throwing off the *Spanish* Yoke, will be seen in its proper Place.

At the Beginning of the Year 1569, several great Men, of the Queen's Council, who were Friends to the Queen of *Scots*, and wanted either to have her on the Throne, or declared *Elizabeth's* presumptive Heir, conspired to get Secretary *Cecil* removed, whom they knew to be an Enemy to all such Designs, and to be heartily in his Mistress's Interest. But *Elizabeth* knowing the Fidelity of her Minister, silenced his Enemies, and effectually discouraged their Attempts. Soon after, the Duke of *Norfolk*, who had been in great Favour with the Queen, but was one of those concerned in the Plot against *Cecil*, fell under her Displeasure, and was sent to the *Tower*, for having carried on an Intrigue for marrying the Queen of *Scots*. This Project was favoured by all the Malcontents, Sticklers for that Queen, who certainly carried their Views farther than the Duke of *Norfolk*, who was a professed Protestant, might at first intend; though afterwards, it is probable,

he gave them Hopes of complying with their whole Design, which was to set the Queen of Scots on the Throne of England, and to restore the Popish Religion. This appears by the Rebellion, which broke out about the same Time in the North, under the Earls of Northumberland and Westmoreland, and Dacres a Northern Gentleman; who among other Things in their *Manifesto* say, that their Design in taking Arms was to restore the Religion of their Forefathers. Besides, they burnt the English Bibles and Common-Prayer Books, and said Mass publickly. Queen Elizabeth, by her good Policy and timely Preparations, suppressed this Rebellion, having before, for the greater Security, removed the Queen of Scots from Tutbury-Castle, in Staffordshire, to Coventry. Several of the Rebels were hanged, some out-lawed, and the rest pardoned. The Earl of Westmoreland and Dacres escaped into Flanders, and the Earl of Northumberland, after having concealed himself for some Time in Scotland, was first seized and imprisoned by the Earl of Murray, and afterwards delivered to Queen Elizabeth by the Earl of Morton, and beheaded. The Duke of Norfolk had been released out of the Tower, upon his promising to think no more of marrying the Queen of Scots. But some Time after, having resumed that Project, and engaged deeper in the Plot against Elizabeth, and her Government, having held a Correspondence not only with the Scotch Queen, but with the Bishop of Ross her Ambassador, the French and Spanish Ambassadors, and even with Ridolpho, who was privately the Pope's Agent in England, for raising a Rebellion against the Queen, he was ag in apprehended, and re-committed to the Tower, and lost his Head on a Scaffold in 1572.

These and many other Plots, for which the Queen of Scots and the freeing her from her Confinement was made a Handle, and which she herself encouraged as much as she could, furnished Queen Elizabeth with farther Reasons for detaining her still a Prisoner. For if she could give her so much Trouble in her present Situation, she was likely to occasion more if she were at Liberty, and at the Head of her Party in Scotland and England. The many Conspiracies against the Queen, occasioned the Parliament to pass some severe Acts against the Catholics, for the Safety of the Queen's Person, the Defence of her Title, and the Security of the Protestant Religion.

The Year 1571 passed chiefly in Negotiations for a Marriage between Queen Elizabeth and the Duke of Anjou, second Son to Catherine de Medicis, and Brother to Charles IX. King of France. Both Charles and Elizabeth found their Account in this Negotiation, though neither of them intended it should take Effect. Charles's Design was to amuse Elizabeth and all the Protestants, particularly the Huguenots, with whom he had made a perfidious Peace till he had drawn them into the Snare, in order to destroy them by Treachery, when he found it difficult to do it by open Force; which accordingly happened the next Year in the Massacre of St. Bartholomew, in which Admiral Chatillon, and all those Huguenots who had been drawn to Court under Pretence of celebrating the Nuptials of the King of Navarre with Charles's Sister, were inhumanly butchered; though there were still enough left to occasion him further Trouble. Queen Elizabeth entered into the Negotiation of the Match to please her Ministers, who were continually pressing her to marry,



in order to cut off all Hopes from the Queen of *Scots* : Besides, whilst her Enemies believed the Marriage was going to be concluded, they would of Course be disheartened. And she disssembled so well in this Affair, that even *Cecil* himself, who was now Lord *Burleigh*, thought for some Time she was in earnest. But it was at last broke off on account of Religion, which was always *Elizabeth's* last Resort for breaking off Treaties of this Kind. However, this did not hinder a defensive League being concluded between the two Crowns, from which *Elizabeth* hoped to draw some Advantage for her own Safety, though the perfidious Court of *France* intended no such Thing, but only farther to amuse the *Huguenots* ; for it was soon after the Conclusion of this Alliance that the barbarous Massacre above mentioned happened. Nevertheless, even after this, the highest Protestations of Friendship passed between the two Courts, *Charles* being afraid of the Queen of *England's* assisting the *Huguenots*; and she being willing to gain Time, that she might penetrate farther into the Designs of her Enemies ; so that the *Huguenots* could not tell what to make of their good Protectress, who had even gone so far as to stand Godmother to *Charles's* new-born Daughter, after the Massacre of *St. Bartholomew* ; which might make one believe, that her Zeal for the Protestant Religion was always subordinate to her private Interest. Though this must be observed, that she ordered her Ambassador, who was to represent her not to be present at the *Mass* in her Ceremony of the Christening ; and if it should be insisted on, to get the Queen of *Navarre* to stand in his Room. And though she did not openly assist the *Huguenots* in *Rochelle*, yet she connived at her Sub-

jects doing it at their own Expence. She knew there was no Sincerity in *Charles's* Pretensions of Friendship ; but to keep him at Bay, she resolved to match him in Dissimulation, and at the same Time made all the necessary Preparations for her Defence. *Charles* died soon after, and was succeeded by his Brother the Duke of *Anjou*, by the Name of *Henry III.* who also carried on Hostilities against the *Huguenots*, at the same Time that he pressed Queen *Elizabeth* to renew the League between the two Crowns ; which she did, but underhand supplied the Prince of *Condé* with Money for the *Huguenots*. Some Time after, another Negotiation was carried on for a Marriage between her and the Duke of *Alençon*, now Duke of *Anjou*, *Henry's* Brother, which went much farther than the former, even to the Signing of the Marriage-Articles, and the Duke came over in Person, and was received by her in such a Manner, that every body thought the Match as good as concluded ; but by-and-by it was all broke off on a sudden, as the other had been. Her Conduct in this Affair was somewhat unaccountable. It is most likely it was purely the Effect of her Policy ; though one *Stubbs* had his Right Hand cut off on a Scaffold for writing against the Marriage ; when he pulled off his Hat with his Left, and cried, *God save the Queen !*

The Oppressions of the *Spaniards* in the *Low-Countries*, had for some Time occasioned great Confusions there. *Philip* was not only bent upon extirpating the Protestants in those Parts, but upon suppressing all the ancient Rights and Privileges of those Provinces, and governing them by his own absolute Will and Pleasure. The Duke of *Alva* with his Army of *Spaniards*

*Spaniards* committed excessive Cruelties, and had introduced the Inquisition, so odious to all the Inhabitants, Papists as well as Protestants. This forced them at last to enter into a Confederacy, and take Arms for the Defence of their Liberties; and Queen *Elizabeth* thought it good Policy to assist them both with Men and Money, since it was well known, that when once those Provinces were reduced to Obedience, and the Reformation there entirely suppressed, the Design was to invade *England*, dethrone the Queen, and restore the Popish Religion. She began therefore to aid the oppressed States in 1577, when she lent them 100,000*l.* Sterling to enable them to carry on the War. Next Year several Companies of Volunteers were formed in *England*, who went over to serve the States with the Queen's Approbation. Some Years after, she sent over a good Body of *English* Forces under the Earl of *Leicester*; but he making a bad Use of the Power the States had intrusted him with, and soon discovering his Ambition to set himself up as Sovereign of the *Low-Countries*, gave great Offence to the States. Upon which the Queen recalled him, and appointed the Lord *Willoughby* General of the *English* Forces in his Room. In short, from Maxims of Policy, she continued to support them to the last; and this War, chiefly under the Conduct of the brave Princes of *Orange*, ended in a total Revolt of seven of these Provinces from the Dominion of *Spain*; which now make the most considerable Republick in the World: And to this Queen *Elizabeth*, by her Assistance, contributed not a little.

Things were come to that Pass in *France*, that it became agreeable to Queen *Elizabeth's* Policy, openly to assist the *Huguenots* again. A League

had been formed against them by the Catholics in the Reign of *Henry III.* who himself had approved of it, and swore to do his utmost to extirpate them. But he being a weak and indolent Prince, and having no Child, the Duke of *Guise*, who was at the Head of the Catholics, formed a powerful Party in order to raise himself to the Throne, either before or after *Henry's* Death. He assumed such an exorbitant Power, that *Henry* was no more than the Shadow of a King, who therefore hated him, and made use of *Henry* of *Bourbon*, King of *Navarre*, first Prince of the Blood of *France*, who was at the Head of the *Huguenots*, and whose Title to the Crown he supported, to oppose the Duke's Measures, who had made a League with *Spain*, and brought the *Spaniards* into *France*, to support him against the *Huguenots*, and assist him to mount the Throne. *Henry III.* got him and his Brother assassinated upon which the League and the City of *Paris* declared against him; and whilst he was besieging that Place, he was killed by one *Clement* a *Jacobine* Friar, who stabbed him in the Belly. The King of *Navarre* succeeded him, by the Name of *Henry IV.* *Elizabeth* assisted him and the *Huguenots*, both before and after his Accession to the Crown of *France*; but finding the Priests and Monks and all the *Roman-Catholics* so strong a Party against him, he thought fit to change his Religion, in order to preserve his Crown. Upon which Queen *Elizabeth* remonstrated to him, in a very pathetic Letter she wrote him on that Occasion.

It was not without Reason, that Queen *Elizabeth* assisted the Protestants in *France* and the *Netherlands*, as she thereby kept her Enemies employed, and hindered them from



from executing their Projects against *England*. The Pope had excommunicated her, and absolved her Subjects from their Allegiance. The King of *Spain* and the Duke of *Guise* were in a League with the Pope, to invade *England*, dethrone the Queen, and set up the Queen of *Scots* in her Room. In the mean Time, many Plots were set on foot by the Popish Emissaries, to take away her Life; for which several Priests, Jesuits, and others, were executed. A Body of *Spaniards* and *Italians* were landed in *Ireland*, to drive the *English* out of that Kingdom; but this had no Effect, through the Vigilance of the Earl of *Ormond*. The Queen being thus threatened from all Quarters, a general Association was formed in *England*, to prosecute to Death such as should attempt any Thing against her Person and Government. The Parliament approved and confirmed this Association, and passed a severe Act against Popish Priests and Jesuits, whereby they were required to depart the Kingdom, and if any returned, they were to be guilty of High-Treason, and those who harboured them, of Felony. A little after, the Queen made an Alliance with the King of *Scotland*, for their mutual Defence, and the Security of the Protestant Religion.

To be beforehand with the King of *Spain*, Queen *Elizabeth* resolved to carry War into *America*. Accordingly, in 1585, she sent thither a Fleet under Sir *Francis Drake*, (who some Time before had made a Voyage round the World) with a Body of Land-Forces under *Christopher Carlisle*. They took *St. Jago*, one of the *Cape de Verde Islands*, *St. Domingo* and *Carthagena*, burnt *St. Antonio* and *St. Helena* in *Florida*, and returned home with a large Booty. *Ralph Lane*, whom Sir *Walter Raleigh* had left in *Virginia*,

came home with this Fleet, and was the first that brought Tobacco into *England*. This Year died the learned and ingenious Sir *Philip Sidney*, of a Wound he received in a Battle in the *Low-Countries*.

The Queen of *Scots* was the Occasion of continual Uneasiness to *Elizabeth*. Her pretended Title to the Crown was always made a Handle of by *Elizabeth's* Enemies both at home and abroad, for all their Plots and Conspiracies, to destroy her, in order to set *Mary* on the Throne; but their principal View in this, was by her Means to restore the Roman-Catholick Religion, both in *England* and *Scotland*. It is no Wonder therefore, since *Mary's* Advancement to the Throne could not be brought about but by the Destruction of *Elizabeth*, that she should resolve at last to sacrifice her to her own Safety, and should be glad of some plausible Pretence for that Purpose. This *Mary* herself, by her Indiscretion, and the Zeal and Officiousness of her Friends, furnished her with. That both she and her Friends should be still contriving Means for her Liberty, was not strange; but they always joined with this, not only the restoring her to the Throne of *Scotland*, but placing her on that of *England*, to which they pretended she had a better Right than *Elizabeth*. This was the Pretence for all the Plots against her, by the Pope, the King of *Spain*, the House of *Guise*, and the *Irish*, *Scotch*, and *English* Catholics; in which *Mary* had too plainly shewed herself to be an Accomplice. This was particularly the Case of the Plot in 1586, called *Babington's* Conspiracy, because he, with several Popish Priests from the Seminaries abroad, and others, was the chief Instrument in it. It was laid for a foreign Invasion, to kill

kill the Queen, free the Queen of *Scots*, and set her on the Throne ; and was timely discovered by the Vigilance and Dexterity of Secretary *Walsingham*, who had continually his Spies amongst them, to give him an Account of their Proceedings. At last the Conspirators, to the Number of fourteen, were all apprehended together, and after impeaching one another, and discovering the whole Matter, were arraigned, condemned, and executed.

As the Queen of *Scots* appeared, by Letters and otherwise, to have a Hand in this Conspiracy, it was resolved now to prosecute her on an Act of Parliament made the preceding Year (and very probably with a View to her) whereby the Person for whom or by whom any Thing should be attempted against the Queen was made liable to Death. Commissioners were accordingly sent down to try her at *Fotheringham-Castle* in *Northamptonshire*, where she was then in Custody ; who in the End passed Sentence upon her on the 25th of *October*. Four Days after, it was approved and confirmed by Parliament. On *December* 6, it was proclaimed in *London*, and then throughout the Kingdom : And on *February* 7, following, the Sentence was executed upon her in the Hall of the said Castle, by severing her Head from her Body, which she suffered with great Calmness and Resolution. Queen *Elizabeth's* Policy appeared through this whole Transaction. She pretended all along to be in Suspense ; and to remove the Blame from herself, it was so managed, that the Parliament should press her to put the Sentence in Execution. She still seemed under great Perplexity ; but at last, upon some Rumours of Plots and Invasions (which perhaps were artfully raised by the Court) she signed a Warrant for the Execution, ordering

Secretary *Davison* to keep it privately by him. But being, from her whole Behaviour, in some Doubt about her Intention, he shewed it to some of the Council, and they to the rest, who thought fit to hasten the Execution : After which the Queen put on a great Shew of Concern and Sorrow, drove her Privy-Counsellors from her Presence, and ordered them to be examined in the *Star-Chamber*. But none suffered but *Davison*, who was fined 10,000*l.* and imprisoned during the Queen's Pleasure. Notwithstanding all this, it is most probable that the Execution was not without her Approbation, though she endeavoured to make the World believe otherwise. However, this tragical Death of the Queen of *Scots* has served for abundant Matter of Reflection to Queen *Elizabeth's* Enemies. It must be confessed there were some Things very irregular in the Proceedings against her ; and *Elizabeth* is no otherwise to be justified, but upon the Principle of Self-Preservation ; which may also serve to justify in some Measure the Council and the Parliament, since they were persuaded, that neither the Queen, nor themselves, nor the Protestant Religion, could be safe without the Death of *Mary* ; and it was certainly no more reconcileable to the Principles of strict Justice, to murder *Elizabeth* in order to restore Popery, than to put *Mary* to Death in order to keep it out ; and it is natural for those who are in Possession, to take Care to secure themselves.

The next Year, 1588, is memorable for the mighty Attempt against the Queen and the Protestant Religion, made by *Philip* King of *Spain* ; to which he was encouraged by the Pope, *Sixtus V.* who on this Occasion again thundered out the *Anathemas* of the Church against *Elizabeth*. *Philip* had been long making



making vast Preparations, in all his Ports, for an Expedition against *England*; which was to have been executed last Year, but was retarded by the Queen's sending *Drake* to the Coast of *Spain*, (who burnt a great Number of Ships laden with Provisions and Stores, together with two large Galleons, and afterwards took a rich Carack coming from the *East-Indies*;) as also by that great Statesman *Walsingham's* getting all the *Spanish* Bills, which were to supply King *Philip* with Money, protested at *Genoa*. In the mean Time, the Queen made all the necessary Preparations for opposing this formidable Invasion. Twenty thousand Men were disposed along the *Southern* Coasts; an Army of 22,000 Foot and 1000 Horse, was encamped at *Tilbury*, where the Queen reviewed them, and made them a very engaging Speech: And there was another Army of 34,000 Foot and 2000 Horse, to guard the Queen's Person: Her Subjects shewed the utmost Readiness to stand up in her Defence: And she fitted out a considerable Fleet, under the most experienced Commanders, the Lord *Howard of Effingham*, as Admiral, and *Drake*, *Hawkins* and *Forbisher*, Vice Admirals; and sent *Seymour*, with forty *English* and *Dutch* Ships, to the Coast of *Flanders*, to hinder the Prince of *Parma* from joining the *Spanish* Fleet, which they already called the *Invincible Armada*. It consisted of 130 great Ships, 20 *Caravels*, and 10 *Salves*, having above 20,000 Soldiers on board, with Seamen, Ammunition and Provisions in Proportion. This formidable Fleet, commanded by the Duke of *Medina Celi*, put to Sea from the Coast of *Portugal*, then under the Dominion of *Spain*, about the Beginning of *June*; but being dispersed by a Storm, it was the 19th of *July* be-

fore they entered the *Channel*; where the *English* Fleet kept close to them, and soon took some of their Ships. On *July* 24, there was a pretty smart Engagement, not at all to the Advantage of the *Spaniards*, whose Ships were too unwieldy, whilst those of the *English* could easily stand off or on, as there was Occasion. On the 27th, the *Spanish* Fleet came to an Anchor off *Calais*, expecting, in vain, the Duke of *Parma* to put to Sea with his Army, and make a Descent on *England*, as it had been agreed. They were followed by the *English* Fleet, which was now strengthened by the Addition of a good Number of Ships, not only of the Queen's, but of private Persons, who had fitted out several at their own Charge; so that the Fleet now consisted of 149 Ships of War, not so large indeed as the *Spanish* ones, but more easy to be managed. Whilst the *Spanish* Fleet lay off *Calais*, the *English* Admiral in the Night sent in amongst them eight Fire-Ships, which so terrified them, that they cut their Cables and put to Sea in the utmost Confusion; when the *English* took the Admiral Galleon after a sharp Engagement, and *Hugo de Moncada*, who commanded it, was slain. In short, the whole Fleet was now dispersed, and the *Spaniards* seeing their Design frustrated, resolved to make the best of their Way home, by sailing round *Scotland* and *Ireland*, where several of their Ships were lost. In the *Channel*, the *English* took and destroyed of this mighty Fleet, 15 great Ships, and 4791 Men; and afterwards, on the Coast of *Ireland*, 17 Ships, and 5394 Men. Others were lost by Storms; and of this prodigious Armament, only 60 Ships returned to *Spain*, and those too in a very shattered Condition. The *Spaniards* suffered so much in this Expedition,

dition, and some others in this Reign, equally disastrous, that they have not recovered themselves to this Day. Queen *Elizabeth* appointed a publick Thanksgiving in all the Churches for this remarkable Deliverance, and went herself to *St. Paul's*, in great State on the Occasion.

The Earl of *Leicester*, the Queen's Favourite, died this Year; and *John Fox*, the famous Martyrologist, the Year before.

In 1590, Sir *Francis Walsingham*, an able and faithful Minister of the Queen's, and Secretary of State, famous for his Policy and good Intelligence, departed this Life. He died so poor, that he was buried privately to save Charges: So remarkable was the Frugality and Oeconomy of this Reign: Sir *Robert Cecil*, Son to the Lord Treasurer *Burleigh*, succeeded him as Secretary of State.

In 1592, Sir *Walter Raleigh*, with fifteen Sail, undertook an Expedition against the *Spanish* Settlements in *America*; and though he was hindered by contrary Winds from putting his Project in Execution, to make him some Amends, he met with a very large and rich *Spanish* Carack near the *Azores*, which he made himself Master of, with little Difficulty.

Not long after, *Roderigo Lopez*, a Jew, who was the Queen's Physician, two *Portuguese*, and *Patrick Cullen*, an *Irishman*, were bribed by the *Spanish* Governors of the *Netherlands* to make her away by Poison or otherwise; but the Plot being discovered, the Conspirators were seized, and executed: As were *Edmund York*, and *Richard Williams*, the next Year, 1595, for having undertaken to commit the same Crime, on the Promise of 40,000 Florins from the said *Spanish* Governors. The same Year, Sir *Walter*

*Raleigh* made a second Expedition to *America* at his own Expence, which was attended with no great Success: As neither was that of *Drake* and *Hawkins*, who were sent thither by the Queen with 26 Ships, and both died in the Expedition.

But the Fleet and Army, which the Queen sent the next Year to the Coast of *Spain*, under *Howard*, the Earl of *Essex*, Sir *Walter Raleigh*, and other brave Men, were attended with all the Success that could be desired; for after a long and obstinate Engagement, the *Spaniards* were defeated, their Admiral Ship, the *St. Philip*, and two others near her, were burnt to Ashes, two more were taken, and most of the other Ships in the Harbour of *Cadiz* run ashore. In the mean Time the Land-Forces under the Earl of *Essex*, took and plundered *Cadiz*, and carried off a very rich Booty; whilst Sir *Walter Raleigh* burnt the Merchant Ships lying at *Port Real*. In short, the *Spaniards* lost by this Expedition, besides the Merchant-Men, two Galleons, 13 Men of War, 11 Ships laden for the *Indies*, and 13 others, besides the Provisions for another Expedition against *England*. This did not hinder *Philip* from drawing all the Ships in his other Ports together, and attempting a second Invasion of this Nation; but it came to nothing, his Fleet being dispersed by a violent Storm in their Voyage, and many Ships lost. He however made another Attempt the next Year, 1597; but with no better Success, and from the same Cause.

Soon after, in 1598, *Henry IV.* of *France* made a separate Peace with the King of *Spain*, without his Allies, the Queen of *England*, and the *States*. They both loudly complained of it, but *Henry* pleaded the Necessity of his Affairs. And now the Queen and *States* agree to carry



carry on the War against *Spain* by themselves ; for which Purpose a new Treaty was made between them, in which Queen *Elizabeth* had the Address to turn all to her own Advantage. The same Year King *Philip* of *Spain*, so famous for his Projects against *England* and the Protestant Religion, died, and was succeeded by his Son *Philip* III. *William Cecil*, Baron of *Burleigh*, Lord-Treasurer, and the Queen's Prime-Minister, and faithful Counsellor, died also at this Time, very old, and was succeeded, as Treasurer, by the Lord *Buckhurst*. *Spenser* the Poet deceased too this Year ; and *Hooker*, Author of the *Ecclesiastical Polity*, the Year following.

*Robert Devereux*, Earl of *Effex*, a young Nobleman of lively Wit and Parts, had been for some Time in great Favour with the Queen ; in Consequence of which she had raised him to several great Posts and Commands ; which he ascribing to his own Merit, became proud, vain and presumptuous, imagined he could govern the Queen herself, and often disobeyed her express Orders : Yet her Affection for him still continued, though she would often severely reprove him for his haughty and obstinate Behaviour. At length he carried his Insolence so far, in maintaining his Opinion on a certain Affair contrary to that of the Queen's, as to turn his Back upon her with an Air of Contempt ; at which she was so provoked, that she gave him a Box on the Ear. He instantly clapt his Hand on his Sword, protesting with an Oath, that he neither could nor would put up such an Affront, and if *Henry VIII.* were alive, he could not not have taken it from him ; and so withdrew from Court. Yet after this, upon his making his Submission, the Queen pardoned him ; tho'

it is very probable, that from this Time his Mind was wholly set upon Revenge ; and to that End he strove to make himself popular to such a Degree, that he was in a Manner adored by the People.

The Earl of *Tyrone* having raised a Rebellion in *Ireland*, encouraged thereto by the Promise of Assistance from *Spain*, the Earl of *Effex* was sent over with an Army, in 1599, to stop his Progress. But here he acted in such an unaccountable Manner, contrary to his own Advice in Council, and to the Queen's Orders, that she suspected him of some ill Design ; and when she wrote to him about it, to add to his other Acts of Disobedience, he came over, without Leave, to justify himself. But she ordered him to keep to his Chamber, and he was soon after put under Arrest, and confined at the Lord Keeper's House. Upon his humbling himself, the Queen permitted him to retire to his own House, but forbade him to come to Court. Here he soon fell into violent Courses, and his own Rashness, and the preposterous Zeal of his numerous Friends, put him upon dangerous Projects against the Government, and even upon conspiring to seize the Queen's Person, under Pretence of revenging himself on his Enemies ; though it was thought he had farther Designs, and that he even aspired to the Crown. And now his House was open to all Malcontents, Papists as well as Puritans ; he entertained the Swordsmen in and about *London*, and established a Council, to consult what was to be done in his Favour ; whilst his Enemies at Court took care to have Spies about him, to inform them of what passed, which they did not fail representing to the Queen as much to his Disadvantage as possible. The Queen sent some of her Counsellors to know

know the Reason of so great a Concourse at his House; but they were made Prisoners, and immediately the Earl marched out with his Company, and depending on the Affections of the People, endeavoured to raise the City of *London*; but he was disappointed, they were so wise, that not one appeared in his Favour. In the mean Time, the Court had taken all necessary Precautions, and he was proclaimed a *Traitor* in several Parts of the City. Upon this, he with much Difficulty got back to his House in the *Strand*, which was presently invested by the Lord Admiral; and the Earl and his Associates being at last obliged to surrender, were sent, some to the *Tower*, and some to other Prisons. These Things were transacted in the Year 1600, and the Beginning of 1601.

*Lee*, the Earl's Creature, and an intimate Friend of the Earl of *Tyrone*, was the first that was executed; by whose Confession it appeared, that *Essex* was in Confederacy with that Rebel against the Queen. On *February* 19, 1601, the Earls of *Essex* and *Southampton* were both tried, and condemned to die. *Southampton* had his Life given him, but was kept in Prison. *Essex* was beheaded on the 25th of the same Month. He made an ample Confession, and expressed great Sorrow for his rash Conduct. The Queen shewed some Irresolution, when the fatal Day came, which has furnished some Writers with Matter for Plays and Romances, in which she is represented as tossed between the Passions of Love and Rage. But as she was then in her 68th Year, one would think there could be no great Reason for such an Imagination. Some other of the Earl's Accomplices were afterwards executed, and the rest fined or imprisoned.

Towards the End of the Year the Queen did a very popular Act. Complaints having been brought before the *Commons*, of certain *Monopolies* authorized by her Letters Patent, she no sooner understood that the Parliament deemed them so many Infringements of the People's Privileges, but, without staying to be addressed, she annulled most of them, and left the rest to the Laws. The *Commons* hereupon deputed a great Number of their Members to wait upon her with their Thanks; to whom she made a most affectionate and obliging Speech, calling the Monopolists *Harpies* and *Horse-Leeches*, and telling them, that her granting them the Patents was an Error that proceeded from her Ignorance, not her Will.

The *Irish* War was carried on with such Success this Year, by the Lord *Montjoy*, the Queen's Deputy, that though the *Spanish* Succours arrived and made themselves Masters of *Kinsale*, they were soon besieged and forced to capitulate; and *Tyrone* coming to raise the Siege, was totally routed: After this, he was drove from Place to Place, and defeated wherever he came, till, at last, he was obliged to cast himself upon the Queen's Mercy. *Levison* and *Mounson* being sent with some Ships to the Coast of *Spain*, took a large Carack just come from the *East Indies*, though guarded by eleven Gallies; which Ship was valued at a Million of Crowns.

Queen *Elizabeth* having got the better of all her Enemies, and governed the Nation so long in Peace, notwithstanding all their repeated Efforts to disturb her Reign, fell sick at the Beginning of the Year 1603; and being now old, and her Illness increasing every Day, she grew somewhat melancholy, especially when she observed that most of her Courtiers neglected her, and began

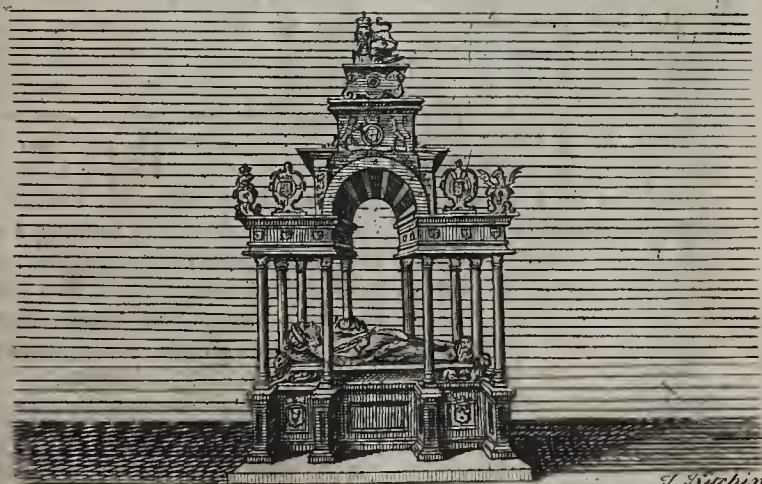


began to make their Court to the King of *Scots*, her presumptive Heir. When she was near her End, the Council sent some of their Body to desire her to name her Successor. She answered at first somewhat obscurely; but being pressed to explain herself, she at last named the King of *Scots*, and soon after expired with great Signs of Devotion, on the 24th of *March*, in the seventieth Year of her Age, after a glorious Reign of forty-four Years, four Months and eight Days. She was buried in *Westminster-Abbey*.

This illustrious Queen had many Virtues and excellent Qualities, and but few Faults. She had great Abilities, and understood the Art of Governing perfectly well. To make herself beloved of her Subjects, to be frugal of her Revenue, and to keep up Dissentions amongst her Enemies, were the Maxims by which she steered her Course, and kept herself and People in Peace. Her Dissimulation had generally a right Turn, which was to preserve her own Dominions, and not to incroach on those of her Neighbours. She put some Papists to Death, but none pure-

ly on Account of Religion, but for plotting against her and the State; or attempting to destroy the Protestant Religion by violent Methods. Some *Puritans* also suffered Death in her Reign, for writing what were called seditious Books, chiefly against the supposed Errors in the Church Establishment. The severe Statute made against them for debarring them of Liberty of Conscience cannot be justified. Perhaps they were a little too obstinate, but certainly their Enemies were too uncharitable. As to the rest, she caused Justice to be duly administered, and Trade and Commerce to flourish, of her great Regard to which there are many Instances; and *England* under her enjoyed a State of Felicity, unknown in the Reigns of most of her Predecessors.

The present Method of maintaining the Poor, and chusing Overseers in every Parish, was established in this Reign. The famous Bourse in *Cornhill*, for the Conveniency of Merchants, was built by Sir *Thomas Gresham*; to which Queen *Elizabeth* gave the Name of the *Royal-Exchange*.



*J. Kitchin sc.*

*J. Kitchin sculp*

## JAMES I. 1603-1625.

1603.

**U**PON the Death of Queen *Elizabeth*, *James VI.* of *Scotland* succeeded to the *English* Throne, by the Name of *James I.* He was the first of the *Stuarts* who reigned in *England*, being now in the 37th Year of his Age, and having been King of *Scotland* ever since he was a Year old, upon the Deposition of Queen *Mary* his Mother, who was the Daughter of *James V.* Son of *James IV.* by *Margaret*, eldest Daughter of our King *Henry VII.* so that *James* was the nearest in Blood to *Elizabeth*, by his Descent from *Margaret* her Aunt, though she did not think fit to declare him her Successor till she was near her End, that by keeping him in Suspense, she might have him the more dependent upon her. But being nominated by her, just before she died, to succeed her, he was, immediately upon her Demise, proclaimed King of *England*, &c.

There were two Factions at Court

towards the End of the last Reign, the one consisting of the Friends of the Earl of *Essex*, who had held a secret Correspondence with King *James*, in order to promote his Interest in *England*; and therefore he considered the Friends of that Nobleman as his own: The other consisting of *Essex's* Enemies, whom the King hated, among whom was Sir *Walter Raleigh*, and Secretary *Cecil*. But this latter, foreseeing how Things would go after the Queen's Death, politickly took care beforehand to make his Peace with the King of *Scots*, by holding a private Correspondence with him, and acquainting him with all that passed at Court; by which Means he was the only one of his Party, who got into the new King's Favour.

The Council having sent to give the King Notice of his Accession, and of their having proclaimed him, he set out from *Edinburgh* on the 5th of *April*, attended by several  
*Scotch*



*Scotch* Lords and others, and no sooner set Foot in *England*, but Multitudes of People came out to welcome him, with loud Acclamations; and in every Town he passed through, he was entertained in a most magnificent Manner, receiving every where the Praises and good Wishes of his new Subjects. So extravagant were the Expressions of Joy in the Multitude on this Occasion, that an honest blunt *Scotchman* in the Company said, *This People will spile a good King*: And, what might be thought impolitick in a new Sovereign, the King issued a Proclamation to restrain the People from flocking to him in such vast Numbers. When he arrived at *York*, most of the *English* Noblemen came and made their Obeisance to him: Among the rest, Secretary *Cecil*, who, contrary to every one's Expectation, was received with more than ordinary Tokens of Respect. Being come to *Newark*, he gave a Sort of Prefage of the arbitrary Power he intended to assume, in causing a Cut-Purse to be hanged by his sole Warrant, without any Trial; which was contrary to the Laws of *England*. On the 4th of *May* he came to *Theobald's*, Secretary *Cecil's* House, which the King afterwards purchased, giving in Exchange for it *Hatfield-House*, now the Seat of the Earl of *Salisbury*. Here the Council waited upon him in a Body, and he added several *Scotch* and *English* to their Number, and shewed great Marks of Respect to the Brother and Son of the late Duke of *Norfolk*, and the rest of the *Howard* Family, who had been great Sufferers for his Mother; and soon after bestowed many Titles of Honour upon them. On the 7th of *May* he arrived at *London*, having in his Journey made about 200 Knights, and soon after his Arrival he made many more: For

as Queen *Elizabeth* was wisely sparing in conferring Honours, King *James* was on the contrary most profuse in bestowing them, and made so many Knights, Barons, Earls, &c. that a Pasquil was posted up in *St. Paul's*, waggishly pretending to an *Art to help weak Memories to retain the Names of the Nobility*. Of the many who were created about this Time, I shall only mention *Thomas Sackville*, Lord *Buckhurst*, and High-Treasurer, who was made Earl of *Dorset*; Sir *Robert Cecil* Secretary of State, who was made Baron of *Effington*, and afterwards Viscount *Cranburne*, and Earl of *Salisbury*; and *Philip Herbert*, Brother to the Earl of *Pembroke*, who was made Earl of *Montgomery*. Before he came to *London*, he restored the Earl of *Southampton*, and the Earl of *Essex's* Son, to their Titles and Estates; but the Lords *Grey* and *Cobham*, Sir *Walter Raleigh*, and others who had been Enemies to *Essex*, met with a very cold Reception.

The King, soon after his Arrival, sent a splendid Train of Lords and Ladies into *Scotland*, to bring up his Queen and Children. His Queen was *Anne* Sister to the King of *Denmark*: And he had three Children by her, *Henry* now nine Years old, *Elizabeth* and *Charles*. The two former came up with the Queen their Mother; but the last, being indisposed, was left in *Scotland* some Time longer.

Before the King and Queen were crowned, which Solemnity was performed on *July 25*, being *St. James's Day*, a Conspiracy was discovered, for setting *Arabella Stuart*, the King's Cousin-German, on the Throne. The Authors were the Lords *Grey* and *Cobham*, Sir *Walter Raleigh*, Sir *Griffith Markham*, *George Brook*, two Priests, *Watson* and *Clarke*, and some others.

It was thought that Count *Aremberg*, Ambassador from the Archduke and the Infanta *Isabella*, was the first Encourager of this Plot, on purpose to ruin *Raleigh*, whom the *Spaniards* most dreaded, and that he afterwards gave Information of it to the King. Others have looked upon it as a State-Trick to weaken a Party, who were for having the King tied to Articles upon his Accession; and that it was *Cecil's* Contrivance to ruin those, who might otherwise ruin him. However, they were condemned to die, and *Raleigh* in particular upon the written Evidence of one single Witness, the Lord *Cobham*, without being confronted as the Law required. Only the two Priests, and *Brook*, were executed, the rest being sent back to Prison, but soon after released, except Sir *Walter Raleigh*, who continued twelve Years in the *Tower*, where he wrote his *History of the World*. Those also who were released, being deprived of their Estates, lived in great Want and Misery.

King *James* was often thought to be a Favourer of the *Catholicks* in *Scotland*, and therefore the *Papists* in *England* flattered themselves with Hopes, that their Religion would at least be fully tolerated under him. But though he had no Aversion to the *Popish* Religion, he hated the Doctrine of the *Jesuits* and Priests concerning the Power of the Pope to depose Kings and absolve their Subjects from their Allegiance; and he found it was not in his Power to grant a full Toleration to the other *Catholicks*, how much soever he desired it. And so they received no other Answer to their Petition on this Occasion, than that he thought himself obliged to maintain what he found settled in the Kingdom at his Accession.

The *Puritans* were even more disappointed than the *Papists*. They thought that a King educated in their Religion, and who had professed it for so many Years, would be very favourable to them. But though *James* had sworn to the Religion of the *Kirk*, he all along hated it in his Heart; and after his coming into *England*, took the first Opportunity to mortify the *Presbyterians*. But to do it with the better Grace, when they presented their Petition, not only for a Toleration, but for reforming certain Things in the Doctrine, Discipline, and Worship of the Church of *England*, and which the Bishops strenuously opposed, he appointed a Conference between the Divines of both Parties, which was held at *Hampton-Court* in *January*, 1604. But the King himself undertook the Cause of the *Episcopalians*, and answered the *Presbyterian* Ministers Arguments, sometimes with Reasons, and sometimes with Authority and Menaces; which was so agreeable to the Bishops, that *Whitgift*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, said, *he verily believed the King spoke by the Spirit of God*. The Result was, that the *Puritans* were deemed obstinate, and threatened with the Rigour of the Laws, unless they conformed: And *Bancroft*, who succeeded *Whitgift*, being a Man of a violent Temper, held so hard an Hand over them, that many were forced to leave their native Country, and seek Refuge in foreign Parts; and Multitudes prepared to transport themselves and Families to the new Settlements in *America*.

King *James* had much higher Notions of the Prerogative Royal than was consistent with the *English* Constitution. He thought the Power of Kings was above Controul, and that Parliaments, and the People's Privileges, were so many In-

croachments



encroachments upon the Sovereigns, or at best but Concessions made by them, which they might revoke at Pleasure. He was strongly possessed with the Notion of his hereditary Right, though *Henry VII.* from whom he descended, had, of all our Kings, the least Pretension to that Right. In Consequence of these high Maxims, King *James*, through his whole Reign, endeavoured to encroach upon the Privileges of Parliament, and to set himself above the Laws. In these Principles and Practices he was flattered and encouraged by his Ministers, and by the Bishops and Clergy; but the Consequences were, a weak Government at home, and Contempt of the Nation abroad, Dissensions and Disputes between the King and his Parliaments, and Uneasiness and Murmuring among the People: All which, together with the constant Inclination he shewed to favour the Catholics, and his Severity towards the Protestant Non-conformists, laid the Foundation of the Miseries that followed in his Son's Reign.

A Proclamation was published on *February 22*, commanding all Jesuits and Popish Priests to depart the Kingdom: In which the King took care to shew, that he did not banish them out of any Hatred to the Catholic Religion, but only for their holding the Doctrine of the Pope's Power over Kings; and intimated that, as to the rest, he would have Regard to the tender Consciences of the moderate Catholics. It was not so with his Proclamation, which came out some Days after, against the *Puritans*: Here was no Indulgence shewn to tender Consciences, but they were all, as obstinate People, to be compelled to Conformity.

King *James's* first Parliament met on the 19th of *March*, to whom

he made a very long, tedious and intricate Speech. However, he took care to mention his hereditary Right to the Crown, and to let them know, that he was their undoubted King by his Birth. He bore very hard upon the *Puritans*, representing them as a Sect not to be suffered in a well-regulated State; but spoke more favourably of the *Papists*, expressing his Desire of tolerating them, and even of meeting them half Way, if they would but lay aside their Tenets of the Pope's Power to depose Kings, and the Lawfulness of killing them, when so deposed; but so long as the Popish Clergy maintained and taught these Doctrines; he thought they were not to be suffered in the Kingdom. But the main Business of his Speech was to recommend the Uniting of the two Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland*, that as there was but one Head, there might be but one Body. This was a Point he had very much at Heart, and to pave the Way to it, he ordered himself to be proclaimed King of *Great-Britain*. The Parliament appointed Commissioners to consider of the Affair: But the King's Partiality to his *Scotch* Courtiers in loading them with Wealth and Honours, so raised the Jealousy of the *English*, that the Union he so earnestly desired came to nothing.

The Commons, on the 6th of *June*, presented an Address to the King, complaining of certain Grievances, and representing their Privileges, which they supposed him not thoroughly acquainted with, because he had interfered in their Debates about the controverted Elections, which they claimed the sole Privilege of determining. But this Address he took so ill, that soon after he prorogued the Parliament to *February*. In the mean Time he concluded a Peace with

*Spain*, not much, as it is said, to the Honour or Advantage of the Nation.

The thorough Papists, who held the unlimited Power of the Pope, finding there was no Likelihood that any Indulgence would be granted to them, formed a hellish Conspiracy against the King and the Estates of the Realm, called the *Gunpowder Plot*. The Design was to blow up the Parliament-House, whilst the King was delivering his Speech to the Lords and Commons; and so at once to destroy both King and Parliament. The chief Conspirators were *Catesby*, *Percy*, *Grant*, *Rookwood*, *Wright*, *Tresham*, *Digby*, *Robert* and *Thomas Winter*, and *Guy Fawkes*. One of them hired a Cellar under the Lords House, as if for his own private Conveniency; and thither they conveyed by Night thirty-six Barrels of Gunpowder, covering them with great Quantities of Coals, Billets, and Faggots. The Parliament was to have met in *February*, 1605, but was farther prorogued to *October*, and then to the Fifth of *November*. Then it was that this devilish Project was to be put in Execution. But a few Days before, it was happily discovered, by Means of a Letter, as has been commonly thought, which one of the Conspirators sent to the Lord *Monteagle*, without Name or Date, advising him not to go to the Parliament on that Day, for that *they should receive a terrible Blow, and yet not see who hurt them*; which the King interpreted to be a Blow with Gunpowder. This Letter has since been thought to be an Artifice of the Earl of *Salisbury*, for that the King had received Intimation of the Plot before, from *Henry IV.* of *France*. However, a Search being ordered to be made under the Parliament-House, *Guy Fawkes*, who was to set Fire to the Train, was first discovered in a Cloak and Boots, with a

Dark-lantern, Tinder-box, and Matches in his Pocket: Then removing the Coals and Wood, they found the thirty-six Barrels of Gunpowder. *Fawkes* continued obstinate for some Time, and expressed his Concern that the Thing had miscarried: But being shewn the Rack, he discovered his Accomplices; of whom seven, together with himself, were executed in *January* following; as were, not long after, *Oldcorn* and *Garnet*, two Jesuits, for concealing and abetting the Plot. Besides those who were executed, *Catesby* and *Percy* were killed as they were endeavouring to make their Escape from a House in the Country, which the Sheriff had invested. The Parliament appointed the *Fifth of November* to be annually observed as a Day of Thanksgiving for this great Deliverance.

In 1607, the Archduke and the Infanta his Spouse sent to propose a Peace with the *States of the United Provinces*, who refused to treat, unless they were owned for a free and independent State. This the Archduke agreed to, but the *States* insisted on the Ratification of the King of *Spain*; which he granted, but in such equivocal and ambiguous Expressions, that it was not satisfactory to the States. However, the Negotiation went on, under the Mediation of *Henry IV.* of *France*, and King *James*; though the latter is said to have made no great Figure in it, and to have acted not altogether with Sincerity. At length, in 1609, a Treaty was concluded, in which the *United Provinces* were acknowledged for a free and independent State, after a brave Struggle of above forty Years in Defence of their Liberties: And thus they continue to this Day.

In 1608, *George Jervis* a Seminary Priest of *Rheims*, and *Thomas Garnet* a Jesuit, were executed at *Tyburn*.

The



The same Year *Thomas Sackville* Earl of *Dorset*, Lord-Treasurer, died suddenly at the Council Table; and *Robert Cecil* Earl of *Salisbury* succeeded him in that high Post.

A new Translation of the Bible, viz. that now in Use, was begun in 1607, and published in 1611.

Matters did not go very smooth between the King and Parliament in 1610. The Commons began to complain of several Grievances, such as the King's Profusenefs in enriching his Courtiers, especially the *Scots*, his Regard to the *Roman* Catholics, the Multitude of Proclamations, several concerning Matters that used to be referred to the Consideration of Parliament, and particularly the rigorous Proceedings of the *High Commission* Court against the *Puritans*, or those whom the Court had a Mind to brand with that Character, because not complaisant enough to its high and arbitrary Pretensions. The King sent for both Houses, and endeavoured to vindicate himself in a Speech; in which however he used such extravagant Expressions concerning the kingly Power, as were more agreeable to an absolute Monarchy than the *English* Constitution. The Parliament, aware of his Designs, resolved to guard against them; but not thinking it proper to carry the Matter any farther at this Time, they granted him a Subsidy, and then were prorogued, and not long after dissolved by Proclamation, after having continued seven Years. No other Parliament was called till 1614, and in the mean Time the Ministers endeavoured to supply the King's Wants by Ways and Means not very agreeable to the People. During this Session, *Henry* the King's eldest Son, a most hopeful Prince, was created Prince of *Wales*; as *Prince Charles* had a good while before been created Duke of *York*.

*Henry IV.* of *France*, though he turned Papist for the Sake of his Crown, was not thought zealous enough of the Popish Cause; the Consequence of which was, that he was this Year stabbed to Death in his Coach in *Paris*, by one *Ravaillac* a Friar, at the Instigation of the Jesuits: The News of which alarming King *James*, he by a fresh Proclamation banished all Jesuits and Priests out of the Kingdom, and forbade all *Recusants*, that is, such as refused to take the new Oath of Allegiance, to come within ten Miles of the Court. *Richard Bancroft* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the great Enemy of the *Puritans*, dying about this Time, *George Abbot* Bishop of *London*, a Man of a much better Spirit, was made Archbishop of *Canterbury* in his Room.

The Earl of *Salisbury*, a Man of great Parts and Abilities, was now Prime Minister, and had been so from the Beginning of this Reign: Though all that while King *James* had, properly speaking, no Favourite, on whom to bestow his intimate Affections. But in 1611, he was captivated by a young *Scotch* Gentleman, of about 20 Years of Age, whose Name was *Robert Carr*. He was a Person of but small Parts and no Learning, but airy and gay, and of a comely and graceful Presence: Qualities that *James* was more taken with, than Virtue and Merit. Of all wise Men, Lord *Clarendon* says, he was the most delighted with handsome Persons and fine Cloaths. The King had no sooner fixed his Eyes upon this Object, but he knighted him, and made him a Gentleman of his Bedchamber, and took the Pains himself to teach him *Latin*. He not long after made him Treasurer of *Scotland*, and the next Year created him Baron of *Branspeth*, and Viscount *Rochester*, making him also a Privy-Counsellor and

1608.

Robert Carr  
Earl of Somerset

and Knight of the Garter. And now nothing was done at Court without the Viscount *Rocheſter*, aſſiſted by the Counſels of Sir *Thomas Overbury*, his Friend, who gave him ſuch good Advice, that he behaved prudently enough, at firſt, in his high Poſt. The King, who was very profuſe to all his Courtiers, was to be ſure much more ſo to his new Favourite *Rocheſter*, which ſat not very eaſy upon the Earl of *Salisbury*, who was obliged to find the King Money. Of this there goes a Story, that the King having ordered *Rocheſter* 5000*l.* (ſome ſay a much larger Sum) out of the Exchequer, the Earl of *Salisbury* uſed this Stratagem to open the King's Eyes. He ordered the Money to be told out in Silver, and laid in Heaps upon Tables in a Room through which his Maſteſty was to paſs; who, being ſurprized at the Sight of ſuch prodigious Heaps, aſked him, Whom all that Money was for? *Salisbury* told him, it was for the Lord *Rocheſter*, according to his Order. The King ſaid it was too much for one Man, and bid *Salisbury* give him leſs than half the Sum. The Earl of *Salisbury* died the next Year, 1613, and was ſucceeded in his Office of High-Treaſurer by the Earl of *Suffolk*.

The latter End of the Year, 1612, *Frederick V.* Eleſtor *Palatine*, came into *England* to marry the Princeſs *Elizabeth*, the King's only Daughter: But the Joy on this Occaſion received a ſudden Damp by the Death of the Prince of *Wales*, the Hope of the Nation, on the 6th of *November*, in the nineteenth Year of his Age. Hiſtorians give Prince *Henry* an extraordinary Character. They aſcribe to him every Virtue and excellent Endowment, and don't ſo much as tax him with one Vice. It is ſaid the King his Father was jealous of his Popularity: That

the Prince was no Friend to the Earl of *Rocheſter*, is certain: And all together occaſioned a Report that he was poiſoned. However, of this there was never any Proof; though the Queen could never endure *Rocheſter* afterward. The Marriage of the Princeſs with the Eleſtor *Palatine* was put off for ſome Time, on Account of Prince *Henry's* Death, but was at laſt ſolemnized on *February* 14, 1613; on which Occaſion there was a continued Courſe of Entertainments, Balls, Maſquerades, and other Diviſions at Court, till *April*, when the illuſtrious Pair ſet out together for *Germany*.

About this Time, a horrid Scene of Iniquity was tranſacting, which proved at laſt the Ruin of the Favourite. This was the Murder of Sir *Thomas Overbury* in the *Tower*. The Occaſion of that unhappy Gentleman's Fate was, in brief, as follows. *Robert Devereux* Earl of *Effex* had been married to *Frances Howard*, Daughter to the Earl of *Suffolk*: But as they were both very young, it was thought proper the Earl ſhould travel before they came together. He returned after four Years Abſence in order to conſummate his Marriage, and found his Counteſs grown the top Beauty of the Court, but at the ſame Time very vain and conceited of her own Merit. He ſoon perceived ſhe had taken an Averſion to him, and though at her Father's Command ſhe went home to her Huſband, yet ſhe uſed all the Arts that a wicked Woman could think of, even to the conſulting of pretended Sorcerers, and uſing certain Drugs to debilitate him, in order to avoid conſummat- ing the Marriage. The true Cauſe of this was her having fallen in Love with the Viſcount *Rocheſter*, who was equally enamoured with her. And when they came to know one another's Paſſion, they took Meaſures in order to get her Marriage with the Earl



Earl of *Essex* annulled ; which was done accordingly, upon her accusing him of Imbecility ; and then *Rocheſter* himſelf married her, having been a little before created Earl of *Somerſet* ; on which Occaſion there were as great Rejoicings at Court, as if one of the King's own Children had been married : But before this was done, the Lover communicated his Deſign to his faithful Friend *Overbury*, who diſſuaded him from it, as highly diſhonourable. The Counſels being informed of this Advice, conceived a mortal Hatred againſt *Overbury*, and failed not to ſtir up her Lover to Revenge. He was ſoon prevailed on to ſacrifice his Friend to the Reſentment of his Miſtreſs ; and from that Time they ceaſed not to contrive his Death. The Favourite artfully prevailed on the King to ſend *Overbury* to the *Tower* for ſome pretended Offence ; and here all the moſt diabolical Methods were uſed to get him diſpatched by Poiſon ; which, after ſeveral Attempts, and his languiſhing under them for ſome Months, was at laſt effected by an impoiſoned Clyſter, a little after the Solemnization of the Marriage. But this ſhocking Tragedy was not diſcovered till ſome Time after, it being at preſent given out that he died of the Pox.

There having been no Parliament theſe four Years, as the King was very deſirous to govern without one, he and his Miniſters were continually inventing new Ways to raiſe Money, as by Monopolies, Benevolences, Loans, and other illegal Methods, which occaſioned great Murmurs and Complaints. Among other Expedients, he ſold the Titles of Baron, Viſcount and Earl at a certain Price ; made a Number of Knights of *Nova Scotia*, each of which paid him ſuch a Sum ; and inſtituted a new Order of Knights Barons, a Sort of middle Nobility, between Barons and

Knights Batchelors, which was to be hereditary ; for which Honour each Perſon paid 1095 Pounds. But all Methods coming ſhort of the Sums the King wanted, a Parliament was reſolved on much againſt his Inclination, which met on *April 16, 1614*. The Commons, inſtead of granting Money firſt, as was expected, fell preſently upon Grievances, ſuch as the ill Uſes made of the Revenue, the Increaſe of Papiſts by the Encouragement of the Court, Monopolies, and levying Money without Conſent of Parliament ; upon which Grievances, they reſolved to preſent an Addreſs : But the King not reſiſting ſuch Proceedings, diſſolved the Parliament the 7th of *June*, without one Statute being enacted ; and committed ſeveral Members to Priſon, who had been the moſt free in their Speeches. And now, to ſupply the King with Money, it was reſolved not only to demand but to extort a *Benevolence* from the People ; which was accordingly put in Praſtice, but met with great Oppoſition.

The Earl of *Somerſet* was ſtill the Favourite, and governed all at Court : But in the Year 1615, his Fall was almoſt as ſudden as had been his Riſe. The firſt Step towards it was the Queen's becoming his Enemy, and privately forming a Party againſt him. The next was the King's being taken with a new Objeſt, *George Villiers*, a handsome, perſonable, well-dreſſed young Gentleman ; which of Courſe cooled his Affection to his old Favourite. And what completed his Ruin, was the Diſcovery of Sir *Thomas Overbury's* Murder. As ſoon as the King heard of this tragical Scene, he ſolemnly conjured the Chief Juſtice *Coke* to ſearch the Affair to the Bottom without Reſpect of Perſons. Preſently Sir *Jervafe Elways*, Lieutenant of the *Tower*, the Apothecary

*George Villiers*  
*Duke of*  
*Buckingham*  
(280)

the Cary who administered the poisoned Clyster, and others who were privy to or had a Hand in this horrid Crime, were apprehended, and towards the End of the Year were tried, condemned and executed. *Somerset* and his Countess were arrested at the same Time with the others, the former at *Royston*, where the King then was on his Progress, by his own Order to *Coke*; and when *Somerset* complained of this Indignity, his Majesty said, *Nay, Man, there's no Remedy; for if Coke sends for me, I must go too.* The Earl and Countess were not tried till May, 1616, when they were both condemned to die, but were reprieved from Time to Time till 1621, when they had Leave to retire and live at a Country Seat; and at length, in 1624, they were pardoned, notwithstanding the King's solemn Imprecations against himself and his Posterity, if he pardoned any that were found guilty. It is remarked, that the Love which had caused these two Persons to commit such detestable Crimes, turned at last to Hatred, so that they lived many Years in the same House as perfect Strangers to each other.

By the Disgrace of *Somerset*, *Villiers* became sole Favourite, and engrossed the King's Affections as much as the former had done. And as he held it longer, he arose to a much higher Degree of Power, which he used well but for a short Time, whilst he followed the Advice of wife and grave Men; and afterwards discovered extreme Vanity, Avarice, Ambition, and Ingratitude to his Friends, who were the first Means of his Rise, in order to ruin *Somerset*. The King soon created him Lord *Whaddon*, Viscount *Villiers*, and Earl of *Buckingham*. From this Time he ruled with an absolute Sway, and disposed of all Places and Preferments both in Church and State, be-

flowing nothing, as some say, without Money or an annual Pension. He took Care to raise and enrich his Relations, who now flocked to Court. His elder Brother was made Viscount *Purbeck*, and his younger Earl of *Anglesea*: His Mother, though a *Papist*, was created Countess of *Buckingham*; and she governing her Son, as he governed the King, the *Papists* met with great Encouragement, and began to swarm in the Kingdom. He was soon after made Marquess of *Buckingham*, and Lord High-Admiral, though he had never been at Sea but between *Dover* and *Calais*. The King having the most extravagant Notions of his Prerogative, and being wholly influenced by this vain, unexperienced and presumptuous young Man, it is no Wonder that the rest of this Reign, as the former Part of it had too much been, was one continued Series of Misgovernment, bad Politicks, and arbitrary Measures. By this Means, two Parties were formed in the Nation, one for the Court, and the other for the People, which produced terrible Effects in the following Reign.

Prince *Charles* now the King's only Son, was created Prince of *Wales* in 1616. The King was desirous of marrying him, but thought it beneath him to match him to any but the Daughter of a King. This led him easily into a Negotiation for a Marriage between the Prince and the Infanta *Maria*, Daughter of *Philip III.* King of *Spain*, an avowed Enemy to the Protestant Religion. This Negotiation, by the Artifices of *Spain*, was drawn out for several Years; during all which Time, King *James's* extreme Desire of the Match, made him a Dupe to that Court, and *Gondemar*, the *Spanish* Ambassador in *England*, ruled him just as he pleased, and influenced all his Measures, both at home and abroad,



abroad, to the Detriment of the Protestant Cause, and Contempt of him and his Government.

Though the Favourite and Ministers rolled in Riches, the King was always in Want, because he was never giving them more than he could afford. The *States of the United Provinces* being apprized of this, made their Advantage of the King's Necessities, by artfully managing it so, that he delivered up to them the Cautionary Towns, *Brill, Rammekins, and Flushing*, which were put into *Queen Elizabeth's* Hands as a Security for the Repayment of the Expences she should be at, for 2,728,000 *Florins*, in lieu of a Debt of 8,000,000 which they were obliged to pay the said Queen, or her Successors, besides eighteen Years Interest for the same. The Earl of *Suffolk* was soon after not only removed from being Treasurer, but fined 30,000*l.* for Mismanagement in his Office, and applying the publick Money to his own Use. *Buckingham* was glad to ruin him, as he was Father-in-Law to the Earl of *Somerset*.

King *James* hated the *Puritans*, because he thought their Notions of Church Government made them Enemies to Monarchy in the State. This made him endeavour to reduce the Church of *Scotland*, which was *Presbyterian*, to a Conformity with the Church of *England*. With this View, in 1617, he took a Journey into *Scotland*, under Pretence of visiting his native Country. When he was there, he required the *Scots* to admit of certain Articles, which were designed to pave the Way to their further Conformity, and make them at last wholly *Episcopal*. He met with great Opposition from the *Ministers*, as well as the People; and though they were so intimidated by his Presence and Threats as to give way a little,

yet this Affair laid the Foundation of that ill Blood which afterwards produced fatal Consequences. In his Return from *Scotland*, in Opposition to the Puritannical Scruple upon that Head, he published what is called the *Book of Sports*, allowing *Dancing, Playing, Church-Ales*, and other Recreations, on a *Sunday* after Divine Service. This gave Offence to others besides Puritans, especially as it was enjoined to be read in all Churches, and those who refused it were punished by the *High Commission*. Archbishop *Abbot*, being then at *Croydon*, expressly forbade it to be read there; which Disobedience, however, the King thought fit to connive at.

Sir *Walter Raleigh*, after a twelve Years Imprisonment in the *Tower*, had his Liberty granted him, but without a Pardon. His Estate being all forfeited and given to the Earl of *Somerset*, he was at a great Loss what to do: which put him upon a Project, after he had been two Years released, of seeking his Fortune in distant Countries. And so having found Means to acquaint his Majesty, that he knew of a rich Gold-Mine in *Guiana* in *America*, he obtained a Commission to go in Quest of it. The King, no doubt, was tempted with the Hopes of great Gain from this Project. And so *Raleigh* having engaged several in the Design, and being supplied with Money, set Sail with twelve Ships in *August* 1617. But this Expedition proving unsuccessful, the Sailors, vexed at their Disappointment, compelled him to return to *England*, where he was immediately arrested by the King's Order and sent to the *Tower*. As *Guiana* belonged to the *Spaniards*, *Gondemar* ceased not to stir up the King against *Raleigh*, and demanded that he should be punished, otherwise the Treaty

Treaty for the Marriage of his Son with the Infanta would be broke off. This induced the King to sacrifice *Raleigh* to the *Spaniards* Resentment; and so that brave Man, who had deserved well of his Country, was beheaded in *October*, 1618, in the 77th Year of his Age, by Virtue of the Sentence passed upon him fifteen Years before, notwithstanding his pleading that the King's Commission was equivalent to a Pardon. What Opinion Prince *Henry* had of him, appears by his saying, *That no King but his Father would keep such a Bird in a Cage*, meaning the *Tower*. The next Year, 1619, *Queen Anne*, the King's Consort, died of a Dropsy, in the forty-sixth Year of her Age. She kept her Court at *Somerset-House*, which during her Life-Time only was called *Denmark-House*.

An Affair happened abroad, about this Time, in which King *James* could not avoid being concerned; but he took such Measures in Relation to it, as lost him more and more the Affection and Esteem of his People, and brought him into great Contempt among Foreigners. The Rights and Privileges of the Protestants in *Germany* and *Bohemia* had for some Time been incroached upon by the Emperor *Matthias*, who by indirect Practices had caused his Cousin *Ferdinand* of *Austria* to be crowned King of *Bohemia*. Upon *Matthias's* Death, *Ferdinand* was elected Emperor: But the States of *Bohemia*, who were mostly Protestants, refused to own him as their Sovereign, and on the 5th of *September*, 1619, chose *Frederick* Elector *Palatine*, Son-in-Law to King *James*, for their King, who was crowned on the 4th of *November* following. A War of Necessity ensued, in which *Frederick*, against whom the Imperial Ban was published, had his Allies as well as *Ferdinand*; but King *James*, who disapproved of the *Palatinate's* accept-

ing the Crown of *Bohemia*, stood neuter, in vain endeavouring to accommodate Matters by Negotiations, till in the Battle of *Prague*, *November* 7, 1620, *Frederick* was totally routed by the Imperial and *Bavarian* Troops, and forced to fly with his Queen and Children into *Holland*; leaving his Baggage and Money behind him. The next Year the *Upper Palatinate* was conquered by the Duke of *Bavaria*, and the *Lower* by the *Spaniards*. Thus by King *James's* Indolence, his Son-in-Law was stript of his Crown, and deprived of his hereditary Dominions, and the Protestant Religion ruined in *Bohemia*; whereas, if he had acted with Vigour, all might have been preserved. But he contented himself with sending Ambassador after Ambassador, which had no Manner of Effect; and was no more active in recovering the *Palatinate*, than in preserving it from being lost. The Cause of all this Infatuation was the *Spanish* Match, which furnished the King of *Spain* with Means of amusing him, and keeping him in a peaceable Disposition, whilst he got all possible Advantages for the House of *Austria*, of which he was a Branch, and for the *Catholic* Religion. *Gondemar* was the prime Instrument in this Infatuation, who by his artful Address had got such an Ascendant over his Majesty, that he made him believe what he pleased, and by his Bribes and Pensions had attached to his Interest the Favourite, and all who had the King's Ear, whilst the Dispensation that was to be obtained of the Pope for the Marriage, furnished the *Spanish* Court with Pretextes for spinning out the Negotiation as long as they pleased, for the Sake of which King *James* was quite insensible to the Voice of his People, the Condition of his Children, and the State of the Protestant Religion, both at home and abroad. He was indeed



indeed with much Difficulty prevailed on to suffer a Regiment of 2400 Men to be raised for the Defence of the *Palatinate*, chiefly at the Charge of some Lords; and this was all he did. The best Thing that can be said in his Excuse is, that he had a natural Aversion to War.

The Murmurs of the People about the *Palatinate*, occasioned the Calling of a Parliament, which met *January 30, 1621*. The King, in order to get Money, made as if he would have Recourse to Arms, if other Methods failed; and the Commons, that they might not seem to be wanting in their Zeal for what they so much desired, granted him two Subsidies. But afterwards, when they saw no Preparations making for the War, and yet more Money was demanded, instead of readily granting it, they drew up a *Remonstrance* about the Increase of Popery at home, the State of the Protestant Religion abroad by the Neglect of vigorously interposing in the Defence of the *Palatinate*, and against the *Spanish Match*. But the King wrote to the Speaker to forbid the presenting it, and to signify his Pleasure to the House, that none of them presume to meddle with any Thing concerning his Government, or deep Matters of State. Upon this the Commons drew up a *Petition*, and presented it with the *Remonstrance*. The former he received, but rejected the latter, and sent them a long and angry Answer to their Petition, charging them with usurping on his Prerogative Royal, and meddling with Things far above their Reach; and in the End objects to their calling their Privileges their ancient and undoubted Right and Inheritance, and wishes they had rather acknowledged them, as derived from the Grace and Permission of his Ancestors and himself. This the Commons would by no Means admit, and

therefore knowing the Parliament was going to be dissolved or prorogued, drew up a *Protestation* concerning their Privileges, maintaining them to be their undoubted Birth-Right. The King hereupon sent for the Clerk of the House of Commons, and commanded him to produce the *Journal Book*; which he having done accordingly, the King with his own Hand, in full Council, took the said *Protestation* out of the Journal, declaring it to be invalid, null, void, and of no Effect. Soon after, he dissolved the Parliament by Proclamation, and committed to Prison several of the Members, as *Sir Edward Coke*, *Sir Robert Philips*, *Mr. Selden*, *Mr. Pym*, *Mr. Mallery* who appeared the most zealous in maintaining their Privileges. This open Opposition between the King and Parliament, produced the two Parties before mentioned, who in after Times came to be distinguished by the Names of *Tories* and *Whigs*. The State *Puritans* now joined with the Church *Puritans*, with whom they agreed only in opposing the Maxims of the Court, and both together formed a powerful Party; whilst the *Arminians* and Papists, and most of the Clergy, sided with the Royalists. The *Arminians* were before hated by the Court, King James being a great Calvinist, and having vigorously opposed the *Arminians* in *Holland*; but upon their taking Advantage of the Divisions in the Nation to join with the Court, were mightily carested: And by this Means *Mr. William Laud*, an *Arminian*, came to be made Bishop of *St. David's*, by *Buckingham's* Interest; though it was with Difficulty that the King was prevailed on to agree to it, as he thought him to be a Man of a haughty and turbulent Spirit.

During the Session of Parliament, *Sir Francis Bacon*, the Lord Chancellor,

cellor, who had been created Lord *Verulam* and Viscount *St. Alban's*, was, for Bribery and Corruption in his Office, or for conniving at it in his Servants, adjudged by the Lords not only unworthy of the Chancellorship, but of a Place in the House of Peers, and his whole Estate forfeited. He was a great Genius, and a very learned Man, as appears by his Writings, but a servile Court Flatterer, haughty in Prosperity, and cringing when Fortune frowned. Dr. *Williams* was made Lord Keeper in his Room, and soon after Bishop of *Lincoln*.

King *James*, ever intent on the *Spanish Match*, in 1622 sent Sir *John Digby*, whom he made Earl of *Bristol*, into *Spain*, to conclude the Marriage-Treaty. At the same Time he sent *Gage* to *Rome* to forward the Dispensation; and to let the Pope see that he was not unworthy of it, he at once released all the Popish Recusants then in Prison. He even made a Merit with the King of *Spain* of his Inaction in the Affair of the *Palatinate*, and was still willing to hope that the Restitution of it would follow the Conclusion of the Marriage; however, he resolved at all Adventures to accomplish that favourite Project. *Philip III.* had all along made use of this tedious Negotiation only to amuse King *James*, and his Son *Philip IV.* continued it with no other View, till all on a sudden, about the End of the Year 1622, he grew serious in the Affair, and was resolved to conclude it for the Benefit of the Catholick Religion, King *James* shewing himself ready to do whatever the Pope or King of *Spain* demanded in favour of it, even to the granting a full Toleration to the Papists for the future. And now all Parties being agreed, the Marquess of *Buckingham's* Project spoiled all again. He suddenly, for what Rea-

son is unknown, took it into his Head to carry the Prince into *Spain* to fetch home his Mistress. The King was very much against this rash Step, but the Prince's Importunity, and *Buckingham's* Impetuosity, extorted his Consent. He being arrived in *Spain* with the Prince, took the whole Business upon himself, and left the Earl of *Bristol* little Share in it. Things seemed to go smoothly at first, and the King was so glad of the Affair being concluded between him and *Spain*, that he sent the Marquess a Patent, creating him Duke of *Buckingham*. The Prince being now in *Spain*, the Pope took Advantage of that Circumstance, to add new Conditions to the Dispensation in Favour of the Catholicks; and the King agreed to every Thing. But *Gregory XV.* dying, a new Dispensation must be had from the new Pope *Urban VIII.* who delayed it, in Hopes the Prince would turn *Catholick*, which the Court of *Spain* was labouring by all their Arts to bring about. The Dispensation, however, was to come by such a Day; but in the mean Time *Buckingham*, from what Motive is uncertain, doubtless on some selfish View, for he was far from being an Enemy to the Papists, prevailed upon the Prince to break off the Match and return home; where they even compelled the King to agree to their Measures; who from this Time ruled no more, but was wholly under the Direction of the Prince and *Buckingham*, who kept him in a State of servile Subjection, and made him do and say just what they pleased. *Buckingham* was now certainly out of Favour, but the King was so timorous, from an Apprehension of his Union with the Prince, that he durst not discard him. Whilst these Things were transacting, in 1623, the Emperor invested the Duke of *Bavaria* with the Electoral Dignity,



nity, and the *Upper Palatinate*. Such were the Effects of King *James's* Negotiations for his Son-in-Law, who was thus deprived both of his Dominions and Dignities.

As a War with *Spain* must be the Consequence of breaking off the Match, and as Money must be had for that Purpose, the Prince and Duke persuaded the King to call a Parliament. And as the Match was disagreeable to every true *Englishman*, the Duke did not doubt but he should be applauded for being the Means of breaking it off, especially as the King of *Spain's* Unwillingness to have the *Palatinate* restored was made the Pretence. Now *Buckingham* affected the Patriot, strove to be popular, and even caressed both the Church and State *Puritans*. The Parliament met on *February* 19, 1624, and the King made a Speech just as the Prince and Duke would have him, contrary to his own Maxims and Principles. They unanimously advised him to break off the Match, though the Business had been done before, and gave largely for the War.

The Commons soon after presented a Petition for banishing all Jesuits and Seminary Priests, and that the King would order it so, that no future Marriage-Treaty might have any Influence for suspending or relaxing the Laws against Popish Recusants. The King returned a favourable Answer, and there was seemingly a great Harmony between him and his Parliament. Yet about the same Time, a Treaty of Marriage was set on foot between the Prince and *Henrietta-Maria* of *France*, Daughter to *Henry* IV. and Sister to *Lewis* XIII. in which, much the same Advantages were stipulated for

Catholicks in *England*, as by the *Spanish* Treaty. The Articles were signed on *November* 10, 1624. But the King died at *Theobald's* before the Marriage was consummated, *March* 27, 1625, in the 59th Year of his Age, after a Reign of two-and-twenty Years in *England*. *Buckingham* was suspected of having hastened his Death by foul Play.

1625.

King *James* is represented by some as a very learned Prince; others represent him as a mere Pedant. Some call him the *Solomon of the Age* for his Wisdom; others reckon him of a very mean Capacity. It is certain, that the Court of *England* in his Time was the most impolitic then in *Europe*; very different from what it had been in *Queen Elizabeth's* Reign. The Nation bore but a very contemptible Figure abroad, which was imputed to the Weakness of the King. He had a high Notion of his own Maxims of Government, though they brought great Inconveniencies upon him. He valued himself upon his peaceable Reign; but the Peace in his Time was the Effect of his Fear, Indolence, and excessive Love of Ease. His Dissimulation was too gross and obvious, and not the Effect of refined Policy. And of his Religion it may be said, that he was neither a sound Protestant, nor a good Catholick.

A new Officer, called *Master of the Ceremonies*, was instituted in the Beginning of his Reign, for the more solemn Reception of Ambassadors. It was also in his Reign, that *Mr. Hugh Middleton* projected the Cutting of a Channel from *Hertfordshire* to the Parts near *London*, for conveying Water into the City, by Means of Pipes; which is called the *New-River*.



CHARLES I. 1625-1648-9.

1625.

**T**HE bad Policy of King *James* appeared in nothing more than in his falling out with his Parliaments. This was principally owing to his extravagant Notions of the Regal Power, which he carried higher than most of his Predecessors, and so far as was inconsistent with a limited Monarchy, such as is the wise and happy Constitution of *England*. This brought many and great Inconveniencies upon him; and happy had it been, if his only surviving Son and Successor, *Charles I.* who was now in the 25th Year of his Age, had taken Warning by the imprudent Management of his Father; for then he might have avoided the Rock, on which he unhappily split. But being brought up in the same high Notions of Prerogative, he trod in the same Steps, nay, took larger Strides towards arbitrary Power, than even his Father had done. By this Means the Party which sided with the People against the Court grew every

Day more formidable, Men's Passions on both Sides were heated, mutual Distrust and Jealousy took place; and Religion also mixing in the Quarrel, the Patrons of Civil Liberty made their Advantage of it, till Enthusiasm, which gathered Strength from the arbitrary Proceedings of the Court, and the Severity of the Hierarchy, grew rampant in its Turn, and overturned not only the Hierarchy, but the Monarchy too.

The Duke of *Buckingham*, who had been King *James's* Favourite, was in a yet higher Degree the Favourite of his Son King *Charles*, who of Course continued the same Council, the same Ministers and Officers at Court and in the Country, who were all *Buckingham's* Creatures. The Duke had indeed artfully gained the Esteem and Approbation of the last Parliament, by giving a false Account of his Conduct, with regard to the *Spanish* Affair. But when that Affair was

more



more maturely considered, and his artful Misrepresentations discovered, and that he had drawn the Nation into an ill-timed War for his own private Views, he became, more than ever, odious to the People, and to the Parliaments that met in the Beginning of this Reign, who impeached him of high Crimes and Misdemeanors, and used all their Efforts to remove him from the King's Presence and Councils; whilst the King remained resolutely bent to stand by him, and quarrelled with every one of these Parliaments, rather than part with his Favourite: Which was the chief Cause of the Animosity between him and his People in the Beginning of his Reign.

The King's Marriage with *Henrietta-Maria* of *France* was solemnized by Proxy at *Paris*, on the 11th of *May*, 1625, about six Weeks after the late King's Death; and about the Middle of *June*, the new Queen arrived in *England*. This Marriage proved very unhappy to the Nation, gave great Encouragement to the Papists, and was one main Source of the Misfortunes of this Reign.

The first Parliament met on the 18th of *June*, and the King in his Speech exhorted them to proceed in what the last Parliament advised his Father to, namely, the endeavouring to recover the *Palatinate* by Force of Arms; for which he demanded a Supply. After some Complaints and Debates about Grievances, the Commons gave the King two Subsidies; but at the same Time, both Houses joined in a Petition against Recusants, setting forth the great Dangers from the Increase of Popery, the Causes of this Increase, and the Remedies for preventing this Evil for the future; to which the King at first gave a general, and

afterwards a particular Answer, very much to the Satisfaction of the Parliament, if his Actions had been agreeable to it. On the 11th of *July* the Parliament was adjourned, by the King's Order, to the 1st of *August*, when they met at *Oxford* by reason of the Plague, which raged now in *London*, as it had done in the first Year of King *James*. In the Interval of this Adjournment, an Affair happened which heightened the Discontent of the Commons, and of the People in general. King *James* having promised to lend some Ships to the *French* King, which, it was pretended at least, were to serve against the *Genoise*, or some of the Allies of *Spain*, Admiral *Pennington* was now sent to *Dieppe* with the *Vanguard* Man of War and seven stout Merchant Ships. It soon appeared that the *French* King designed to make use of them against his Protestant Subjects in *Rochel*; upon which the Crews deserted to a Man, rather than fight against their fellow Protestants; and yet *Pennington* was ordered by the Court to put these Ships into the Hands of the *French*, to be employed as they thought fit. This occasioned a Distrust of the King, a Jealousy of the Queen, and a general Odium against the Duke of *Buckingham*. Before the Parliament had sat a Fortnight at *Oxford*, the King perceiving that the Commons would grant no farther Supply, which he earnestly pressed, till Grievances were redressed, and that they were beginning to fall on the Conduct of the Duke of *Buckingham*, in a hasty Manner dissolved them by Commission on the 12th of *August*: But wanting Money for the Expedition against *Spain*, he raised it by a forced Loan from his Subjects, by Letters under his Privy-Seal, which increased the popular Discontents. The Fleet sailed in *October*, but re-

turned without doing any Thing, which proved a new Subject of Complaint. The Duke of *Buckingham* did not fail shewing his Resentment against some that had expressed their Dislike of him in the last Parliament. And Bishop *Williams* was sequestered from the Council-Table, the Great-Seal, and the King's Presence, for having joined with his Opposers. About the End of *October*, the Seal was given to Sir *Thomas Coventry*.

The King was crowned on *February* 2, 1626; before which, as he was still in want of Money for carrying on the War, he had resolved to call a new Parliament, Care being taken to have the Leading-Members against the Court in the last Parliament made Sheriffs, that they might not be chosen for this. The new Parliament met on *February* 6, and was opened by a Speech from the Lord-Keeper *Coventry*. This Parliament was no more favourable to the King's Designs than the former. Nay, they made greater Complaints against the publick Grievances, of evil Counsellors about the King, the Encouragement given to Papists, Plurality of Offices in one Hand, the Sale of Honours and Places of Judicature, the Mis-carriage of the Fleet, and Misemployment of the Publick Revenue. The King sent a Message to the House to hasten the Supply, but the Commons thought the Redress of Grievances should go before it; and so they proceeded to examine them, particularly those relating to Religion, and appeared very warm against the great Power of the Duke of *Buckingham*. Upon which the King sent them another Message, and among other Things, said, *I must let you know, that I will not allow any of my Servants to be questioned amongst you, much less such as are*

*of eminent Place, and near unto me.* This did not hinder the Commons from examining the Conduct of the Duke, and resolving to impeach him in Form: In order to which, a Question was moved and carried, *That common Fame was a good Ground of Proceeding for the House.* Nevertheless, to shew they were not unwilling to supply the King's Wants, provided their Grievances were first redressed, they voted three Subsidies and three Fifteenths, and soon after, a fourth Subsidy. But their Design was, that this Vote should not pass into an Act, till they had received Satisfaction in the Point of Grievances. Upon this, the King sent for both Houses to *Whitehall*, and severely reprimanded the Commons, both by himself, and the Lord Keeper, complaining of their Animosity against the Duke, of the Scantiness of the Supply, and the Manner of granting it; and in the End said, *Remember that Parliaments are altogether in my Power, for their Calling, Sitting, and Dissolution; therefore as I find the Fruits of them good or evil, they are to continue, or not to be.* This did not intimidate the Commons, who, being returned to their House, drew up a Remonstrance, and presented it to the King, to justify their Proceedings; and then went on with their Articles of Accusation against the Duke.

About the same Time an Affair happened in the House of Lords, which gave the Court no small Disturbance. The Earl of *Bristol*, who ever since his Return from *Spain* had been under Confinement by *Buckingham's* Influence, in order to hinder him from giving a true Account of the Transactions in *Spain* relating to the Marriage, and had hitherto no Writ of Summons to Parliament, took the Advantage of the Disposition the Commons were in,



to petition the Lords to intercede with his Majesty, that he might have his Summons, according to his Privilege as a Peer. The King; hereupon, sent him a Summons, but with it a Letter, ordering him not to make use of it, but forbear his personal Attendance in Parliament. The Earl in a second Petition acquainted the House of Lords with this his Case, and desired them to permit him to bring his Accusation against the Duke, who had not only wronged him in his Narrative of the Proceedings in relation to the Match, but also imposed upon the late King, his present Majesty, the State, and the Parliament. The King, who was resolved to stand by the Duke, was so offended at this Proceeding of the Earl of *Brisfol*, that he ordered the Attorney-General to exhibit to the House a Charge of High-Treason against him; who defended himself so well, and gave, from authentick Letters and Papers, such an Account of the whole *Spanish* Affair, directly contrary to what the Duke had given, as justified his Conduct in the Eye of the World, and shewed the Duke's Relation to be nothing but downright Forgery and Prevarication.

Soon after the Earl had given in his Answer, and exhibited his Charge against the Duke of *Buckingham*, the Commons brought up to the Lords their Declaration and Impeachment against the said Duke, containing 13 Articles of Misdemeanors, Mistrifions, Offences and Crimes. Sir *Dudley Diggs* opened the Charge, six other Commoners spoke to the Articles, and Sir *John Elliot* concluded. *Diggs* and *Elliot* were presently after, by Order of the King, sent to the *Tower*; and within a Day or two the King went to the House of Lords, on Purpose to vindicate the Duke, telling them, he

himself could be a Witness to clear him of every Thing that was laid to his Charge. No sooner was the King gone, but the Commons sent a Message to the Lords, desiring that the Duke might be taken into Custody; but the Lords did not care to do that, for fear of incurring the King's Displeasure. The Commons also made such a Stir about their imprisoned Members, that the King thought fit to release them.

Whilst the Duke was under the Impeachment, he procured himself to be chosen Chancellor of *Cambridge*, notwithstanding one of the Articles against him was his engrossing a Plurality of Offices. The Commons took great Offence at this, but the King supported his Election. A few Days after, the Duke gave in his Answer to the Impeachment of the Commons, who desired a Copy of it, in order to make good their Charge: But the King, with a View to interrupt these Proceedings, sent a Message to the Commons to dispatch the Supply by such a Day. Notwithstanding, the House proceeding still in their own Way, presented a Petition to the King against Popish Recusants, and gave a List of 59 Papists, who were in Places of Trust and Authority, though the King had promised the last Parliament to see this Grievance redressed. They then waited on him in a Body, with an Answer to his last Message, justifying their Conduct, and desiring that the Duke might be forbid all farther Access to his Person; with which he was so offended, that he determined to dissolve the Parliament, though the Lords besought him not to do it. The Commons having Intimation of this Resolution, made haste to draw up a Remonstrance against the Duke, as the principal Cause of all the Grievances in the

Kingdom, and against *Tonnage* and *Poundage*, which had been levied by the King ever since his Accession, though it was never understood to be payable without a special Act of Parliament in every new Reign. But the Parliament was dissolved by Commission, *June 15*, before this Remonstrance could be presented, and the King ordered all such as had Copies of it to burn the same. And now various illegal Methods were again used to raise Money, besides *Tonnage* and *Poundage*; such as Loans, Benevolences, Compounding with Popish Recusants, &c. Besides a Loan of a certain Sum from every Peer, a general Loan from the Subject was resolved on, and Commissioners were appointed in the several Counties, with Instructions for that Purpose. Persons of Rank, who refused to lend the King Money, were imprisoned and otherwise oppressed; and the meaner Sort sent for Soldiers, or to serve on board the Fleet. Soldiers were also billeted on private Houses, to frighten Persons into the Loan: And Dr. *Sibthorp* and Dr. *Manwaring* were employed to preach up, as Scripture-Doctrine, the most slavish Notions of Passive-Obedience, and to threaten People with Damnation, if they did not submit to Loans and other Taxes imposed by the sole Will of the King. Archbishop *Abbot* was suspended, for refusing to license *Sibthorp's* Sermon: And *Manwaring*, though fined and imprisoned by the next Parliament, and declared incapable of any Ecclesiastical Dignity, was nevertheless afterwards advanced to a good Bishoprick. So very unpopular were the Measures of the Court, whilst *Buckingham* ruled all, and *Laud* was the King's Favourite-Counsellor for the Affairs of the Church.

It is very strange, that in the Circumstances the King was in, having a War with the House of *Austria* on his Hands, having quarrelled with his Parliament, and being in continual Want of Money, after all the extraordinary Expedients for raising it, he should take it in his Head to declare War against *France*. But it seems this was for the Interest of the Favourite and Ministers, who fearing lest the King, being tired out with the fruitless Attempts to recover the *Palatinate* by Arms, might make Peace with *Spain*, put him upon this Measure, that he might still be under a Necessity of raising Money by extraordinary Methods, and so the Misunderstanding between him and his People might be kept up, as his coming to an Agreement with them would be infallibly the Ruin of *Buckingham* and his Creatures. Various Pretences were alledged for this War, and chiefly that of assisting the *Huguenots*; though, as they were Presbyterians, considering the opposite Notions of the King, and his Ministers, some of the chief of whom were Catholics, and that *Buckingham* was of no Religion at all, one can hardly think this should be the true Reason of the War. Some, with as little Probability, ascribe it to *Buckingham's* Amour with *Anne* of *Austria*, Wife of *Lewis XIII.* when he was at *Paris* to fetch home the Queen, and upon the Court of *France's* being exceedingly enraged at his Insolence, swore he would see her again in spite of them; and to that End, as is pretended, drew his Master into this War; which, as it was very unreasonable for the King, was rendered yet more unpopular, by his leaving the whole Management of it to the Duke, who was made Admiral of the Fleet, consisting of above 100 Ships, and



and Commander in Chief of the Land-Forces, to the Number of 7000. With this Fleet and Army he sailed from *Portsmouth*, June 27, 1627, and appeared before *Rochel*, on the 20th of July, under Colour of relieving of that Place, which was threatened with a Siege. The *Rochellers*, knowing nothing of the Matter, scrupled to receive them, and shut their Gates for fear of a Surprize; upon which the Duke sailed to the *Isle of Rhe*, where he landed his Troops, but managed Matters so badly, and was so dilatory in his Proceedings, that being, at last, pressed upon by the *French*, he with Difficulty re-imbarked, and returned home from this inglorious Expedition, with the Loss of some Thousands of his Men.

The ill Success of this Expedition filled People's Mouths with fresh Complaints against the Duke of *Buckingham*, and increased the Disaffection to the King, who intrusted the whole Conduct of it to a Person so much disliked by the Nation, and unexperienced in military Affairs. But the King was resolved to go on as he had began; and the *Rochellers* having sent their Deputies to implore Assistance, he determined to equip another Fleet, and to send it under the same Commander. In the mean Time, he was greatly distressed for Want of Money, that from the Loan coming in but slowly, as it every where met with great Opposition, notwithstanding all the Artifices and oppressive Measures used to enforce it. In this Difficulty the King took the Advice of Sir *Robert Cotton*, to call a Parliament, and to order it so for the Sake of the Duke, that he might be the first who should propose it in full Council. To prepare the Way for their Meeting, some popular Things

were done: The Gentlemen, who had been imprisoned on Account of the Loan, were released; Archbishop *Abbot*, the Bishop of *Lincoln*, and the Earl of *Bristol*, who were under the Displeasure of the Court, had their Writs of Summons sent them.

The Parliament met on March 17, 1628. The King pressed them to a speedy Supply, and told them, if they did not their Duty herein, he must use those other Means which God had put into his Hands. Then the Lord Keeper magnified the Dangers from abroad, from *France*, and the two Branches of the House of *Austria*, viz. the Emperor and the King of *Spain*, to induce the Commons to grant an immediate Supply; and said, though Parliaments were the fittest, they were not the only Way: bidding them remember his Majesty's Admonition. So loth was the King to seem beholden to his Parliament, which was no very proper Way to gain the Commons Affection; who, being in a different Way of thinking from his Majesty and his Ministers, instead of going upon the Supply, entered immediately on the Consideration of the Grievances of the Nation, such as Billetting of Soldiers upon private Houses, Loans by Benevolence and Privy-Seals, the Imprisonment of those who refused to lend, or Imprisonment without Cause shewn, and denying them the Benefit of an *Habeas Corpus*, as also Commissions for trying Persons by Martial-Law. Then they came to several Resolutions concerning the Liberty and Property of the Subject; and though the Courtiers still pressed the Supply in the first Place, the Commons were not to be diverted from giving the Precedence to the Liberties of the Nation and the Redress of Grievances, accord-

ing to antient Custom. However, at length they voted a Supply in general, and upon a Message from the King to hasten it, promising that he would agree to any Expedient for securing their Persons and Properties, by Way of Bill or otherwise, they unanimously voted five Subsidies; but at the same Time resolved that Grievances and Supply should go Hand in Hand; at which the King shewed his Displeasure in a Sort of threatening Message to the House. The Commons, by this and all the Speeches of the Courtiers, thinking the King had a Mind to elude the Grievances, grew more intent on having them redressed, before they turned their Votes of Supply into a Bill. And all their Proceedings, after this, tended to the preparing the famous Act, called the *Petition of Right*, whereby the Grievances above-mentioned were declared to be illegal, and the Rights of the Subject established; particularly, ‘That no Man hereafter be compelled to make or yield any Gift, Loan, Benevolence, Tax, or such like Charge, without common Consent by Act of Parliament.’ The King used all Manner of Arts to hinder this Petition, or Bill, from being presented to him, and would have had them rest solely on his Royal Word, or some general Promises; but this made the Commons the more resolute to stick to the Method they had chosen; and so, after they had, with some Difficulty, got the Consent of the Lords, the King, on *June 2*, came to the Parliament and gave an Answer to their Petition, which however was not satisfactory: But the Commons did not desist, till his Majesty, on *June 7*, came again to the House of Peers, and returned such a plain and direct Answer, as gave entire Satisfaction;

after which the Subsidy Bill was passed by the Commons. But many Grievances remaining still undressed, they drew up a Remonstrance, and presented it to the King, complaining of the Encouragement and Growth of Popery, and of *Arminianism*, and naming *Neale*, Bishop of *Winchester*, and *Laud*, lately translated to *Bath and Wells*, as its principal Encouragers and Promoters. The *Arminians* being then in Favour at Court, laboured under the same popular Odium as the Papists; though between *Arminianism* and Popery there is properly no Connection. They also complained of the Decay of Trade, the Loss of Ships and Mariners, by not guarding the Narrow-Seas, the ill Conduct and bad Success of the *Isle of Rhe* Expedition, and in general of the Neglect of the Honour and Safety of the Nation; and concluded thus, ‘of all which Evils and Dangers, the principal Cause is the Duke of *Buckingham’s* excessive Power, and Abuse of that Power.’ The same Day the Remonstrance was presented, the Commons sent up the Subsidy Bill to the Lords, for their Concurrence, and then fell immediately on the *Bill of Tonnage and Poundage*; but finding they should not have Time to perfect it, a Committee was appointed to draw up a Remonstrance of the undue Taking of Tonnage and Poundage, without an Act of Parliament. The King, to hinder the presenting of any such Remonstrance, came in Haste to the Parliament, on *June 26*, and after a Speech, which shewed his Resentment, and passing the Subsidy-Bill, prorogued it to the 20th of *October*. After which, Sir *Richard Weston*, a known Papist, was made Lord Treasurer, as also Earl of *Portland*, and Bishop *Laud* was translated



translated from the See of *Bath* and *Wells* to that of *London*.

The King had prepared a Fleet to relieve *Rochel*; and when the Duke of *Buckingham* was at *Portsmouth*, ready to embark, he was assassinated by one *John Felton*, formerly a Lieutenant in a Regiment of Foot, who stabbed him to the Heart, so that he instantly fell down dead. It did not appear that *Felton* had any Accomplice, and he confessed, that what moved him to it, was his being persuaded, from the Commons late Remonstrance, that the Duke was an Enemy to his Country. He did not endeavour to make his Escape, and so being taken and brought up to *London*, was executed at *Tyburn*, and carried down to *Portsmouth*, and there hanged in Chains. The King was sensibly affected with this tragical End of his Favourite, and to shew his Affection to his Memory, continued all his Creatures in their Posts. The Fleet however failed for *Rochel*, but could not come near the Town, by reason of the strong Barricado which Cardinal *Richelieu* had caused to be made. So the poor Inhabitants having no Hopes of Relief, surrendered to their King's Mercy, in Presence of the *English* Fleet, who had then nothing to do but to make the best of their Way home. Soon after, in 1629, a Peace was concluded between the two Crowns; which was followed by a Peace with *Spain*, the next Year: And so these impolitick, sham Wars ended, for the Sake of which, the King had so earnestly demanded Supplies of his Parliament, and which also was the Pretence for so many illegal Exactions on his Subjects.

Before the Meeting of the Parliament, which had been farther prorogued to *January* 20, three Merchants of *London*, one of them a

Member of the House, had their Goods seized for refusing to pay Tonnage and Poundage, which gave the Commons fresh Occasion of Complaint at the Beginning of the Session. The King earnestly pressed them to dispatch the Bill of Tonnage and Poundage, which, he said, might include his past Actions, and prevent all Disputes for the future. But the Commons entered warmly upon the Consideration of Religion, alledging that that claimed the first Regard in their Deliberations; and in the Midst of these Debates, the Warehouse of Mr. *Rolls*, one of the three Merchants above mentioned, and a Member of the House, was locked up by a Pursuivant, and himself served with a Subpœna; which put the House into a Flame: And when the Speaker, Sir *John Finch*, was ordered to put the Question, That Mr. *Rolls* ought to have had Privilege of Person and Goods, he refused, declaring, that his Majesty had commanded him not to put any such Question. Upon which the House adjourned, in a Heat, to *February* 25, and were farther adjourned, by the King's Order, to *March* 2. Then they required him to put the same Question, but he said he had the King's Order to adjourn the House to the 10th, and then offered to leave the Chair; but was forcibly kept in it by some of the Members, till Sir *John Elliot* had drawn up the following Protestation, which was tumultuously agreed to by the House, viz.

1. Whosoever shall bring in Innovation of Religion, or by Favour or Countenance seem to extend or introduce *Papery* or *Arminianism*, or other Opinion disagreeing from the true and orthodox Church, shall be reputed a capital Enemy to this Kingdom and Commonwealth.

U 4

2. Who-

2. Whosoever shall counsel or advise the Taking and Levying of the Subsidies of Tonnage and Poundage, not being granted by Parliament, or shall be an Actor or Instrument therein, shall be reputed an Innovator in the Government, and a capital Enemy to the Kingdom and Commonwealth.

3. If any Merchant or Person whatsoever, shall voluntarily yield and pay the said Subsidies of Tonnage and Poundage, not being granted by Parliament, he shall likewise be reputed a Betrayer of the Liberties of *England*, and an Enemy to the same.

The next Day, *Sir Miles Hobart*, *Sir John Elliot*, *Denzil Hollis*, and *John Selden*, Esqrs. and five other Members, were cited before the Council. Four of them appeared, and refusing to answer, out of Parliament, for what was said and done in Parliament, were committed to the *Tower*; and Proclamations were issued for apprehending the rest. On *March 10*, the King came to the House of Peers, and without sending for the Commons, though several of them went up, made a Speech to the Lords, thanking them for their dutiful Behaviour; and reflecting on the Commons, gave those who had been most zealous against Tonnage and Poundage, the opprobrious Name of *Vipers*; and then dissolved the Parliament. After which, several of the Members in Custody were fined in the *King's Bench*, and adjudged to be imprisoned during the King's Pleasure; and *Sir John Elliot*, in this, or the following Year, actually died in Prison.

Thus ended King *Charles's* third Parliament. But as the Plea of the War continued still for some Time, and as the Ministers never

wanted some Pretence or other to raise Money, so they were very fruitful in illegal Schemes for that Purpose, during the eleven succeeding Years that the Nation was without a Parliament. Monopolies were set up, from whence the King was to have an annual Revenue: These increased to that Degree, that the Sale of almost all Commodities was by this Means ingrossed by some Company or other, even down to old Rags. A Commission was erected for compounding with those worth 40%. a Year or upwards, who had neglected to receive Knighthood at the King's Coronation. Fines were imposed in the *Star-Chamber*, and other Courts, by virtue of obsolete Laws, and for not complying with some new and extraordinary Proclamations. Commissioners were appointed to compound for defective Titles, with such as held Lands of the Crown. These, and many other Projects for raising Money, were set on foot in these Times, and Tonnage and Poundage continued to be exacted all the while with the utmost Rigour. But nothing was more odious to the Nation, or met with greater Obloquy, than the Affair of Ship-Money, or requiring the Subjects, at their own Expence, to furnish such a Number of Ships with Men, Ammunition, and Provisions. This was at first imposed only on the Sea-Ports and Places of Merchandize, but afterwards on the whole Nation; and every one was obliged to contribute his Quota to this Tax, according as he was assessed. The King got the Opinion of the Judges in favour of this Imposition, and published it in 1636. And the next Year, *John Hampden*, Esq; of *Buckinghamshire*, made that famous Stand against Ship Money, by which he gained the



the Reputation of a great Patriot. He refused to pay his Quota, and the Cause was argued in the *Exchequer*, from *November 6*, to *December 18*, when, though he was cast, neither the King nor the Judges gained any Credit by it.

At the same Time, the Hierarchy exercised great Severity against such as did not punctually conform to its Ceremonies, to which *Laud* and others had added many new ones, pretty much resembling those of the Papists; which made his Enemies reproach him with a Design to introduce Popery: Though that Charge seems not to be well-grounded. His Intention seems only to have been, to make the Church of *England* vye with that of *Rome* in outward Pomp and Splendor, and to vex and harass the Puritans or Presbyterians, to whom he was a sworn Enemy. The High-Commission-Court, where *Laud* presided and directed every Thing, was extremely rigid against this Sort of People, which only served to increase their Numbers; and those who opposed the arbitrary Measures of the Government, joined with these in order to strengthen their Party. Archbishop *Abbot*, a Prelate of a mild Disposition, and an Enemy to the illegal Proceedings of the Court, and therefore branded with Puritanism, dying in 1633, *Laud* was immediately raised to the Archiepiscopal Dignity; when his Severity increased with his Power, and not content with forcing the *English* Presbyterians to Conformity, which made many remove with their Families to the *American* Plantations, he sent out his Injunctions to the *Dutch* and *Walloon* Churches, who had been long settled in the Nation, to compel them to the same Conformity, to the great Detriment of Trade, which had been much im-

proved by the Coming-in of these People.

Soon after the Dissolution of the Parliament, Sir *Thomas Wentworth*, a zealous and able Declaimer against Grievances, not only in that, but the two preceding Parliaments, was brought over to the Court, and, with Archbishop *Laud*, became the King's chief Confident and Counsellor. He was made Lord *Wentworth*, Deputy of *Ireland*, President of the Council in the *North* (a Court held at *York*, much like the *Star-Chamber* at *Westminster*) and at last Earl of *Strafford*. Prince *Charles*, afterwards *Charles II.* was born, *May 29*, 1630; and Prince *James*, in 1633, who was immediately created Duke of *York*, and was afterwards King *James II.*

*Frederick*, the unfortunate Elector *Palatine*, and King of *Bohemia*, the King's Brother-in-Law, died in 1632. Endeavours had been used to restore him to his hereditary Dominions, by Means of *Gustavus-Adolphus*, King of *Sweden*, who, to deliver *Germany* from the Tyranny of the House of *Austria*, had invaded that Country with most surprising Success. But that Prince being slain in the Battle of *Lutzen*, all his grand Projects sunk with him, and the Restoration of the *Palatinate* came to nothing; as, indeed, the King of *Sweden* never appeared very sincere in the Affair, though King *Charles* had sent him a Body of 6000 Men. Prince *Charles*, the Elector's eldest Son, succeeded to his Father's Rights, and shortly after came over, with his Brother Prince *Rupert*, to his Uncle's Court in *England*.

In *May*, 1633, the King thought fit to take a Journey into *Scotland*, where being arrived, he was crowned at *Edinburgh*, held a Parliament, which gave him a large Subsidy, and took some Steps towards his  
and

and *Laud's* favourite Project of establishing Episcopacy in *Scotland*, and introducing the *English* Ceremonies there. He returned in *July*, and about the same Time, in Opposition to the Puritans, supported Wakes and Revels on *Sundays*, and renewed and confirmed his Father's Proclamation, allowing Diversions and Recreations on a *Sunday*, after Divine Service.

- In 1634, *Prynne*, for writing his *Histriomastix* against Stage-Plays, reflecting on the Court and Bishops, was sentenced, in the *Star-Chamber*, to be set in the Pillory, to have his Ears cut off, to be imprisoned during Pleasure, and fined 5000*l.* Two or three Years after, *Bastwick* and *Burton*, and the same *Prynne*, for writing Books against the Hierarchy, and to the Scandal of the Government, were sentenced to be pilloried, to lose their Ears, and *Prynne* the Remainder of his Ears, and to pay a Fine of 5000*l.* each; after which, they were sent separately to remote Prisons, and there kept till the Times turned. However bold these Men were in their Writings, these Severities did the Court no Good, but opened the People's Mouths the more against them. Bishop *Williams*, about the same Time, fell under the Resentment of the Court, being exorbitantly fined, suspended from his Bishoprick, and imprisoned in the *Tower* during the King's Pleasure.

In 1635, died *Thomas Parr*, aged 152, born at *Drayton* in *Shropshire* the last Year of King *Edward IV.* and brought up to Court as a Rarity, in this Reign; so that he had lived in the Reigns of ten Kings and Queens of *England*.

From what King *Charles* did in *Scotland*, in the Year 1637, we may date the Beginning of his Ruin. This was his attempting to im-

pose on the *Scotch* Nation Episcopal Government, and the Discipline, Ceremonies and Service of the Church of *England*. He first sent down a *Book of Canons*, and then the *Liturgy* or *Service-Book*, ordering it to be read on such a Day. But when the Dean began to read it in *St. Giles's* Church, at *Edinburgh*, there was such a Tumult, Noise and Clamour among the People, that not a Word could be heard; and when the Bishop of *Edinburgh*, who was to preach, stepped into the Pulpit, in order to appease the Populace, he was treated in the same Manner, and moreover had a Stool flung at his Head. At last, when the Magistrates of *Edinburgh* had with much Difficulty got the Rioters out of the Church, the Dean went on, but was continually interrupted by the Multitude without, knocking at the Doors, throwing Stones at the Windows, and making bitter Exclamations against the *Service-Book*, as if it was designed to introduce Popery amongst them. There were, at the same Time, the like Tumults in the other Churches of *Edinburgh*; and afterwards, other Tumults, on the same Account, more formidable than the first. The Malcontents seemed at first to be only the meaner Sort of People, but they were soon openly abetted by great Numbers of the Nobility and Gentry. The King sent down his Proclamations to pacify them, but they protested against them, as designed only to ensnare them. At last, in 1638, they erected Tables, or Committees, at *Edinburgh*, to manage their Affairs; one of the Nobility, another of the Gentry, a third of the Burghers, and a fourth of the Ministers; as also a general Table, consisting of Commissioners from the other four. From these Tables proceeded



proceeded their famous *Solemn League and Covenant*, for the Maintenance of their Religion from all Innovations, subscribed by almost the whole *Scotch* Nation. The Marquess of *Hamilton* was sent High-Commissioner, who endeavoured by various Artifices to break their Measures. But nothing would satisfy them but a General Assembly and a Parliament. A General Assembly accordingly met at *Glasgow*, November 21, which the *Tables* had taken care to have composed of such as were wholly devoted to them. The High Commissioner finding them not likely to be managed, dissolved the Assembly in the King's Name, on the 28th. Nevertheless they continued sitting by their own Authority, passed several Acts against the Innovations, and declared Episcopacy to be abolished by the Confession of 1580.

The Courtiers and rigid Episcopals in *England*, deemed these Proceedings of the *Scots*, no better than Rebellion; but the Puritans, among whom we must now reckon all who were dissatisfied with the Government, who were by far the most numerous, looked on the *Scots* as their Friends, and thought they had Reason for what they did, from the arbitrary Measures of the Court to alter their Kirk-Establishment. However, as soon as ever the King heard that the Assembly continued sitting by their own Authority, he resolved on raising an Army in *England* to reduce them to Obedience. He summoned the Nobility to attend him at *York*, April 1, 1639, and to bring what Forces they could raise; and each County was likewise obliged to raise such a Number of Troops. So the King coming to *York*, found himself at the Head of above 20,000 Men. The *Scots*

in the mean Time, prepared for their Defence, but relied more on their Friends in *England*, and even at Court and in the King's Army, than on their own Preparations. They acted with great Policy and Caution, and punctually observed the King's Proclamation, not to approach within ten Miles of the Borders, thereby shewing that the War was not offensive on their Part; till the King ordered the Earl of *Holland* to March into *Scotland* by the Way of *Kells*, with 3000 Foot and 1000 Horse. Then *Lesley*, the *Scotch* General, sent a Body of Forces to oppose his March; upon which he halted, and thought fit at last to retire. The *Scots* now thought they should be justified in approaching the Borders, and so *Lesley* marched towards *Kells* with 12,000 Men. Then the King saw his Mistake, in thinking their Obedience to his Proclamation was the Effect of their Fear. And he had still a farther Reason to dislike his present Expedition, when his Generals advised him, upon the Approach of the *Scots*, not to give Battle, though he was superior to them in Number; by which he saw they were not very willing to venture their Lives in this Quarrel. The two Armies therefore being alike resolved to keep upon the Defensive, the *Scots*, at length, sent an humble Petition to the King, beseeching him to appoint Commissioners to treat of a Peace; which his Majesty having consented to, the Articles of Pacification were agreed on, June 17. But this was a very precarious, unsettled and uncertain Peace; and as it seemed to be consented to in Haste, by both Parties, for gaining Time, a second Rupture might be soon naturally expected; which, indeed, happened in the next Year, 1640. For when  
the

the King saw that the *Scotch* Parliament was fully bent, utterly to abolish Episcopacy, he prorogued it in such a Manner, as gave an universal Discontent; and soon after it was resolved in Council to reduce the *Scots* to their Duty by Force of Arms. Accordingly his Majesty raised a numerous Army, appointing the Earl of *Northumberland* General, and the Earl of *Strafford* Lieutenant-General: But as he was in Want of Money, and this was not a Time to increase the People's Discontent, by pursuing the late illegal Methods of raising it, his secret Council thought proper to advise him to call a Parliament.

This Parliament meeting, *April* 13, 1640, seemed not at all inclined to meddle with the *Scotch* Affair, but instead of that, took into immediate Consideration the many Petitions presented them from several Counties against the Grievances of Ship-Money, Monopolies, the *Star-Chamber*, *High Commission Court*, &c. Upon this, both Houses were commanded to attend the King at *Whitehall*, where the Lord-Keeper *Finch* reminded them of his Majesty's Desire of granting him an immediate Supply for the *Scotch* War; but this making no Impression upon them, they still proceeded with the Grievances. Then the Lords, by the King's Desire, demanded a Conference with the Commons, at which they endeavoured to shew, that the Supply, in the present Exigency, should go before the Grievances. But this, contrary to Expectation, only retarded the King's Affairs: For the Commons voted the Lords meddling with the Supply, to be a Breach of Privilege; and the Contest between the two Houses took up several Days. At last, on the 4th of *May*, the King sent Sir *Henry Vane*,

Secretary of State, to tell the Commons, that if they would immediately grant him 12 Subsidies, he would consent to the entire Abolishing of Ship-Money. Great Debates ensued on this, many thinking the Demand exorbitant; however, the Commons seemed now inclined to give the King some Satisfaction: But Sir *Henry Vane*, who is said to have dealt treacherously in this Affair, declaring that less would not be accepted, whereas it is affirmed that he had Orders to descend to 8, or even to 6 Subsidies, if 12 would not go down, this spoiled all. However, the Commons deferred their Resolution to the next Day; and in the mean Time, it is said, *Vane* and the Solicitor *Herbert* went and gave a worse Account to his Majesty, of the Temper of the House, than it deserved; and told him, that they designed on the Morrow to vote against the *Scotch* War; which Misrepresentation was thought to be with a Design to ruin *Strafford*, who was most zealous for that War. However, the King believing what they said, hastily dissolved the Parliament, after it had sat but about three Weeks; and, as was usual with him, sent some of the Members to Prison. He was soon afterwards sensible of his Error, and was sorry for what he had done; and, the very next Day, consulted, whether he might recall them by his Proclamation to sit again. But this being impracticable, all the Methods before used, and others as odious, were put in Practice, to raise Money for paying the Army against the *Scots*.

The *Scots*, knowing what was designed against them, were not behind in their Preparations. General *Lesley* passed the *Tweed*, *August* 20, with the *Scots* Army, consisting



of 22,000 Men ; and the same Day the King set out from *London* for *York*, where the greatest Part of his Army lay encamped : But the Lord *Conway*, General of the Horse, was advanced to *Newcastle*, with 3000 Foot, and 1500 Horse. *Lesley* forced the Passage of the *Tine* at *Newburn*, *Conway* endeavouring in vain to oppose him, being obliged to retreat, with the Loss of some Hundreds of his Men ; and quitting *Newcastle*, in Consternation, with the Royal Troops, the *Scots* immediately entered it, and became Masters of the Town. They used this Advantage with great Prudence, to let the *English* see they had no Design against them. They dispersed two Manifestoes ; one entitled, *Six Considerations of the Lawfulness of their Expedition* ; the other, *Intentions of the Scots and their Army manifested to their Brethren of England*: In which they endeavoured to shew, that what moved them to arm and enter *England*, was no Quarrel they had with the *English* Nation, but only to defend themselves against some evil Ministers, naming, in particular, *Land* and *Strafford*, who were the chief of the King's secret Council. In short, they used all their Art to recommend themselves to the *English*, who were indeed generally averse to this *Scotch* War, which the King had rashly undertaken. In order to this, they failed not to shew their extreme Desire of Peace, and sent an humble Petition to the King, that he would be graciously pleased to redress their Grievances, by the Advice of the *English* Parliament.

The King, now in the utmost Perplexity, summoned a Great Council of the Peers to meet him at *York*, in order to have their Advice. In the mean Time, the

City of *London*, and the Gentry of *Yorkshire*, petitioned him to call a Parliament, as the only Means to redress their Grievances, and remove the Dangers that threatened both him and the State : And a Petition to the same Purpose was presented by twelve Peers, in behalf of themselves and divers others. The King's Necessities were now so urgent that he was forced to comply ; and so he told the great Council, when they met, *September* 24, that he had resolved to summon a Parliament, for the 3d of *November*. The Result of their Deliberations was, that 16 of their Number should be sent as Commissioners to treat with the *Scots* about a Peace ; and that 200,000*l.* should be borrowed of the City of *London*, for maintaining the Army till the Parliament should grant the Supplies ; each of the Peers offering to become bound for the Repayment of the said Sum. The King appointing Commissioners according to the Advice of the Lords, the Treaty with the *Scots* began at *Rippon*, *October* 1, and was afterwards removed to *London*, to their very great Advantage, where they were sure of having a good Number of Friends, both in the City and in the Parliament.

The famous Parliament met on *November* 3, 1740. The King made them a mild and soft Speech, very different from most of his former Speeches to his Parliaments ; and, among other Things, particularly desired them to find Means for driving the *Scots* out of the Kingdom : After which, the Commons returning to their House, chose for their Speaker, *William Lenthall*, a Benchet of *Lincoln's Inn*. One of the first Things they did, was to appoint a select Committee, to draw up a Remonstrance of all the Grievances of the Nation : But  
the

the King shewing great Compliance in giving his Assent to all their Bills, the Remonstrance was laid aside for the present, and not presented till a Year after, when a Misunderstanding between the King and Parliament began to break out.

After many warm Speeches upon Grievances at the Beginning of their Meeting, those Members who in any Respect were concerned in Monopolies, were expelled the House. Petitions were received from *Prynne*, *Bastwick*, *Burton*, and others, complaining of their severe and cruel Sentences in the *Star-Chamber*: The House ordered them to be brought up from their remote Imprisonments, and the Members of the *Star-Chamber* were afterwards made to pay all the Costs and Damages of the Parties. And as the Sufferings of particular Persons met with Regard from the Commons, so they applied themselves in earnest to redress all the publick Grievances; in which they were very successful, by reason of the King's present Situation, with an Army of *Scots* in the Nation. They voted Ship-Money illegal, and condemned the new Canons and Oath enjoined by the last Convocation, when the King continued them sitting under the Name of a Synod, after the Dissolution of the Parliament.

At the same Time they proceeded vigorously against the Authors of the Grievances. The Earl of *Strafford* was impeached of High-Treason, and taken into Custody, *November 11*, and committed to the *Tower* some Days after. Secretary *Windebank* was the next that was attacked, upon which he fled into *France*. A Committee was appointed to draw up a Charge against Archbishop *Laud*, as having a principal Hand in the Design of sub-

verting the Laws and Constitution of the Realm: The *Scots* Commissioners exhibited to the Lords a long Charge of his being the Author of all their Troubles; and he was voted a Traitor by the Commons, *Nem. Con.* who sent up to the Lords to accuse him of High-Treason; upon which he was taken into Custody, and afterwards committed to the *Tower*. The Lord-Keeper *Finch* was next voted a Traitor, and fled into *Holland*; but that did not hinder the Commons from impeaching him of High-Treason in the House of Lords. He was particularly charged with making the Judges declare in favour of Ship-Money. Judge *Berkeley*, for giving his Opinion for the said Imposition, being also impeached of High-Treason, was taken off the Bench whilst the Court was sitting; and other Judges were proceeded against, on the same Account.

About the same Time, the King acquainted the Parliament with the Marriage of the Princess *Mary*, his eldest Daughter, with the Prince of *Orange*. She was Mother to King-*William III.*

A Bill of four Subsidies, for the Army and the Relief of the *Northern Parts*, was passed, *February 15, 1640-1*. And at the same Time was also passed the Bill for Triennial Parliaments, ordaining that Parliaments should be held at least once in three Years. <sup>a different thing from a new Parliament every 3<sup>rd</sup> year</sup>

The famous Trial of the Earl of *Strafford* began on *May 1, 1641*, which the Commons afterwards turned into a Bill of Attainder, passed it, and sent it up to the Lords; where it hung for some Days, and it was thought they would have rejected it. But Mr. *Pym*, about this Time, informed the House of Commons of Plots against the Parliament, that the Army



Army was practised upon to bring them up and over-awe their Proceedings, that there was a Design upon the *Tower*, and that Endeavours were used for the Earl's Escape. Great Multitudes also came to *Westminster*, apprehensive of Designs against the Parliament, and demanding speedy Justice against the Earl of *Strafford*. They also presented a Petition against him to the Lords, subscribed by above 20,000 Inhabitants of *London*, calling him the grand Incendiary. And soon after, the Lords passed the Bill of Attainder against the Earl. The King was all this while in great Perplexity : He made a Speech to the Lords in favour of the Earl, and told them he could not in his Conscience condemn him of Treason, though he thought his Misdemeanors were such, that he was not fit for the future to serve him or the Commonwealth in any Office, no not so much as that of a Constable ; and therefore he hoped they would find some Way to satisfy Justice and their own Fears, without pressing on his Conscience. After both Houses had passed the Bill, and he was pressed to give his Assent, he advised with his Counsellors, some Lawyers and Bishops, who persuaded him to it for the publick Safety ; and so, with much Reluctance he passed it, by Commission, and after that interceded for him, in a Letter to the Lords, which he sent by his eldest Son, Prince *Charles* : But all not availing, the Earl was beheaded on the 22d of *May*, and died with great Constancy and Resolution.

The Plot above-mentioned is represented as all a Chimera by the Friends of the King ; and yet it appears by several Circumstances, that there was a Design to engage the Army to serve the King against

the Parliament, and that the King approved of it ; which lost him the Confidence of the House : Though the Thing, probably, was much aggravated, and this particular Time chosen for the Information, for the Sake of gaining the Point against the Earl of *Strafford*. The Result of this Discovery also was, that the Commons unanimously entered into a solemn Protestation to stand by the Religion, Laws, and Liberties of the Kingdom ; in which, the Lords also joined some Time after, and then it was imposed on the whole Nation. It also gave Rise to the Bill for the Continuance of the Parliament, whereby this Parliament was not to be dissolved but by an Act of Parliament, nor prorogued nor adjourned, but by their own Consent ; which, though of so great Importance, as quite altering the Constitution, the King passed without any Concern, at the same Time that he passed that against the Earl of *Strafford*.

On *June* 22, his Majesty passed a Temporary Bill of *Tonnage and Poundage* : The Preamble to which declared, that the Crown had no Right to take it, without Consent of Parliament.

Not long after, an Act was passed, for taking away the *Star-Chamber*, and *High-Commission-Courts*, which, by their cruel and arbitrary Sentences, were become universally odious to the Nation. The Court at *York*, which was much like the *Star-Chamber*, was also abolished about the same Time.

On the 10th of *August*, his Majesty set out for *Scotland*, after having passed the Act of *Pacification between the two Nations*, and an Act for the total Abolition of *Ship-Money*. Soon after, the two Armies, that had been such a Burden to the Nation, were disbanded ; the Parlia-

ment

ment having given the *Scots* 300,000*l.* It is more than probable, that they were invited to come into *England* by some who were afterwards the chief Leaders in Parliament, and that they were kept here so long, on purpose to give the Parliament an Advantage over the King, and lay a Sort of Necessity upon him to pass the Acts they had prepared for redressing the Grievances ; for a *Scots* Army in the Kingdom must certainly lay him under great Restraint. The Parliament were not pleased with the King's going at this Time to *Scotland* ; and though, whilst he was there, he passed all the Acts that the Parliament of *Scotland* desired, yet his Stay there did but increase the Jealousies of the *English* ; and some Things happened in his Absence, which turned very much to his Disadvantage.

The King had not been long in *Scotland*, before the Parliament was alarmed with the News of a Plot in that Kingdom ; and fearing it might extend itself into *England* ; they thought fit to take to themselves a Guard, under the Earl of *Essex*, whom the King had left General on the *South* Side of the *Trent*.

But what made the greatest Impression on Men's Minds, was the Rebellion and Massacre in *Ireland*, which broke out, on *October* 23, whilst the King was yet in *Scotland* ; when the old Natives or *Irish* rose in all Parts of the Kingdom, and on that, and the following Days, most inhumanly butchered and murdered above 40,000 *English* Protestants that were settled there, Men, Women and Children, without Distinction of Age, Sex, or Condition. Only the Project of seizing the City of *Dublin*, where was a great Quantity of Provisions and

warlike Stores, was happily discovered and prevented the Night before. The *Irish*, unluckily for the King, pretended they had his Authority for what they did, called themselves the Queen's Army, gave out that their Design was to oppose the Proceedings of the Puritanical Parliament in *England*, and dispersed through the Kingdom Copies of a pretended Commission to them under the Great-Seal. This Commission, it is said, they forged, and affixed to it an Impression of the Great-Seal, taken off from some old Grant or Patent. However this be, these Things made an ill Impression on the Minds of those already disaffected to the King. The most considerate, indeed, did not think it at all likely, that the King should be willing his Protestant Subjects should be massacred : But they suspected he might have stirred up the Rebellion, on Purpose to find the Parliament Work, to divert them from the Project they had now formed of divesting him of great Part of his Power, and free himself from the Subjection he was under to them ; and that, having once raised the Rebellion, he could not stop the Fury of the *Irish*. Though the Parliament did not much regard the Calumny against the King, they were, however filled with Distrust, and possibly the Leaders might feign a greater Distrust than they really had, on purpose to increase the Fears of those Members who were, as yet, but half persuaded to join them in their Scheme of diminishing the Kingly Power.

The King returned from *Scotland*, the latter End of *November*, and was no sooner arrived at *Whitehall*, but he dismissed the Guards which had been attending on the two Houses. Eight Days

after



after, viz. *December 1*, the Commons presented to him their famous Petition and Remonstrance, reciting all the Grievances of the Kingdom from the Beginning of his Reign to the present Time, attributing all to evil Counsellors, and a malignant Party about the King. Many thought this unnecessary and unreasonable, as most of the Grievances had been redressed by the Acts his Majesty had passed in this Parliament. But as the House of Commons in general were from the Beginning very hearty in proceeding against the Grievances, so there was a strong Party amongst them, who were for going farther, and putting it out of the King's Power ever to govern again in the same arbitrary Manner he had done for 15 Years together. To this Party were joined the Presbyterians, who seem even at this Time to have a farther Design in View; namely, to alter the Government of the Church, which could not be brought about, without putting it out of the King's Power to oppose it. The Leaders of the Party, who were for retrenching the Royal Authority, were Men of great Abilities, and used all their Arts to bring others over to their Sentiments; to which the general Jealousy and Distrust the People had of the King (which he had given but too much Occasion for) did not a little contribute. The Remonstrance, therefore, was, as it were, the Test to shew which Party should prevail. A very strong Opposition was made to it, and the Debates lasted near twenty Hours together; till at last it was carried for the Remonstrance by nine Voices only. It was not only presented to his Majesty, but, contrary to his express Desire, printed and published, before he had given his Answer to it. The Breach between the

King and Parliament may be dated from this Time.

In the House of Lords, the Commons met with frequent Obstacles to their Designs, by reason of the Bishops and Popish Lords sitting there; of which they made great Complaints, and passed a Bill for taking away the Bishops Votes in Parliament, but it could not pass the Lords whilst they sat there. After the presenting of the Remonstrance, great Multitudes flocked about the Parliament-House, crying out, *No Bishops, no Bishops*. And, besides other Inhabitants, the Apprentices of *London* came in a Body to *Westminster*, and presented a Petition to the King, Lords, and Commons, against Papists, Jesuits, and Prelates, complaining of Plots and Conspiracies against the Parliament. These Tumults continuing for several Days (which seemed no ways disagreeable to the Commons) many Officers of the late Army, and others, offered their Service as a Guard to his Majesty. Several Skirmishes happened between them and the Multitude, in which some Citizens were wounded, which heightened the Animosity between the two Parties. These Tumults rendering it unsafe for the Bishops to attend their Seats in Parliament, twelve of them met, and drew up a Protestation against all Laws, Orders, Votes and Determinations, as null and void, that had passed since *December 27*, or should hereafter pass, during their forced Absence from the House. The Commons were so offended at this, that they impeached the Bishops of High-Treason, and sent them to the *Tower*. Then the Lords passed the Bill for taking away their Votes, which the King gave his Assent to in *February*. *The Bishops Votes in Parliament absolutely taken away*

The King, if he had had a Mind to break entirely with his Parliament, could not have chosen a more effectual Method for that Purpose, than the impolitick and unprecedented Step he now took. On *January 3, 1641-2*, he sent his Attorney-General to the House of Peers, to accuse, in his Name, of High-Treason, the Lord *Kimbolton* of that House, and five Members of the House of Commons, *viz.* Sir *Arthur Haslerig*, *Denzil Hollis*, *John Pym*, *John Hamden*, and *William Strode*; and to deliver Articles of Impeachment against them. At the same Time, Persons were sent to seal up their Doors, Trunks, and Papers: But the Commons sent the Serjeant at Arms to break open the Seals, and apprehend those that put them on; and made an Order, forbidding the Seizing of any of their Members, without Leave of the House, authorizing such Members to stand upon their Guard, and all Constables, and other Officers, to assist them. The Commons represented all this, in a Conference with the Lords, and moreover, that the King had set a Guard in a warlike Manner at *Whitehall*; and therefore desired that the Parliament might have such a Guard, as should be approved of by both Houses, or else adjourn to some Place of Safety.

The King having sent a Serjeant at Arms to the House of Commons, to demand the five Members, without any Effect, the next Day, *January 4*, came himself to the House, attended by a Number of armed Men, as if with a Design to seize them. Leaving his Guard at the Door, he entered the House, and taking the Speaker's Chair, made a Speech to them, on what he was come about; but looking round, and finding the accused Persons not there (for they had slipped away

but just before) he told the House he expected they should send them to him, as soon as they returned; and then departed, the Members crying out, *Privilege! Privilege!* And immediately the House adjourned to the next Day; when being met, they voted that the King had violated the Privileges of Parliament, and adjourned to the 11th, having appointed a Committee to sit in the mean Time at *Guildhall*; from whence, on the said Day, they were conducted to *Westminster*, as it were in Triumph, attended with numerous Guards from the City, both by Land and Water. The Day before, the King not caring to run the Risk of any Affront from the Populace, removed with his Family from *Whitehall* to *Hampton-Court*, from thence to *Windsor*, and at last to *York*.

Two Days after his Departure, he sent a Message to both Houses, telling them he would waive his Proceedings against the six Members, and be as careful of their Privileges, as of his own Life and Crown. Two Days after that, he sent another, to the same Effect; and on *February 2*, offered a general Pardon; but all was to no Purpose, the Wound was too deep to be healed; the Commons made a large Declaration against the late Action, impeached the Attorney-General for what he had done, and committed him to Prison. Moreover, they set a Guard about the Tower, sent Sir *John Hotbom* to take Possession of *Hull*, where was a great Magazine of Arms and Ammunition, and ordered him to keep it for the Parliament, understanding that the King had a Design to secure it for himself. And then, upon the King's sending a Message with some Propositions, which seemed only designed to amuse



amuse them, and gain Time, they returned for Answer, that, to enable them to do what his Majesty desired, it was necessary, that the Militia should be put into the Hands of the Parliament. Both Houses, soon after, presented a Petition to the same Purpose; and the Debates about the Militia between the King and Parliament, in Petitions, Messages, Answers and Replies, continued from *January* till the End of *May*: the Parliament being resolved to divest him of it, not thinking it safe to trust to his Promises, whilst, by his having the Command of the Militia, it was in his Power to break them; and the King being as resolutely bent not to deliver it up. At last, the Parliament resolved to settle the Militia without him, published their Ordinance for that Purpose, and commanded all Persons to be obedient to it. The King, on *May* 27, issued a Proclamation to forbid the putting the Ordinance of Parliament in Execution; and the Parliament, in their Turn, published a Declaration, forbidding all Persons to obey the King's Proclamation.

Whilst the Affair of the Militia was in Agitation, the King took several Steps which increased the Parliament's Distrust and Suspicion. In *February*, he sent the Queen over to *Holland*, to buy up Arms and Ammunition, putting the Crown-Jewels into her Hands for that Purpose. On *April* 23, 1642, he appeared before *Hull* with 300 Horse, in order to take it out of the Hands of the Parliament; but had the Mortification to find the Gates shut against him. Sir *John Hotham* was summoned several Times to open them, but he peremptorily refused: Upon which the King caused him to be proclaimed a Traitor by two Heralds, and departed. On *May*

12, he summoned the Gentry of *Yorkshire* to appear before him, and told them he was resolved to have a Guard. The Guard was raised accordingly, and the Command given to the Prince of *Wales*. Upon this, the Lords and Commons published a Declaration, that it was against the Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom for any of the Subjects to be commanded by the King to attend him at his Pleasure; and that whosoever, on Pretence of his Majesty's Command, shall take Arms, shall be esteemed Disturbers of the publick Peace.

The next Day, *May* 20, the Commons voted, 1. That it appeared, that the King, seduced by wicked Counsels, intends to make War against the Parliament. 2. That whensoever the King makes War upon the Parliament, it is a Breach of the Trust reposed in him by his People, contrary to his Oath, and tending to the Dissolution of the Government. 3. That whosoever shall serve or assist him in such Wars, are Traitors by the fundamental Laws of the Kingdom. Thus the Breach between the King and Parliament grew every Day wider, and the mutual Distrust became incurable, whilst by the numerous Papers that passed between them, they sought only to amuse each other, for the sake of gaining Time, to be the better prepared for countermining each other's Designs.

Though a War was already resolved on by both Sides, yet each thought fit to use some Ceremony, in order to cast the Blame upon the other in the Eye of the People. It was with this View only, that the Parliament, on *June* 2, sent 19 Propositions to the King, as the Means of restoring a good Understanding between him and his Parliament.

liament. But they were of such a Nature, that they could not think the King would agree to them; and accordingly he rejected them with Scorn. And now most of the King's Friends in both Houses, seeing a War unavoidable, left the Parliament, and attended on the King at *York*; and among them, the Lord-Keeper *Littleton* with the Great Seal.

Both Sides now prepared openly for War. On *June 10*, the two Houses published Proposals for borrowing Money and Plate for the Defence of the Kingdom. On the 15th, the King granted several Commissions of Array for levying Troops, and the Parliament drew up a Declaration against them. On the 12th of *July*, the Commons voted, and with them the Lords agreed, that an Army should be raised, and the Command thereof given to *Robert Devereux* Earl of *Essex*. And on *August 22*, the King, in a solemn Manner, set up his Standard at *Nottingham*, having before, by Proclamation, commanded all Men, who could bear Arms, to repair to it on the said Day.

Notwithstanding the King's Proclamation, the People did not come in as was expected, and he was yet but very badly provided for the War. In this Condition he sent a Message to the two Houses, *August 25*, with some Overtures towards a Treaty, but offered nothing new; and Messages, Answers and Replies, between his Majesty and the Parliament, continued for some Weeks, without any Effect, whilst both Sides were carrying on their Preparations for War.

On *September 9*, the Earl of *Essex* set out from *London*, to put himself at the Head of the Parliament's Forces, that were assembled at *Northampton*, to the Number of about

16,000. The King, not being safe at *Nottingham*, marched towards the Borders of *Wales*, and being received at *Shrewsbury*, where the Inhabitants declared for him, his Army soon increased to 14,000. At all the considerable Places through which he passed, upon the Resort of the Gentry and People, he made a solemn Protestation of the Sincerity of his Intentions for the Good of the Publick.

The first Encounter in this War was at *Powick-Bridge*, near *Worcester*, between Prince *Rupert*, the King's Nephew, who was detached to guard a Convoy of Money and Plate from *Oxford*, and Colonel *Sandys*, who was sent by the Earl of *Essex*, with a Party of the Parliament's Forces, to take Possession of *Worcester*. The Prince fell suddenly upon them and defeated them, killing Colonel *Sandys* and several of his Men, and then attended the Convoy safe to *Shrewsbury*. The Earl of *Essex* came the next Day, and took Possession of *Worcester*, and soon after secured *Gloucester* and *Bristol* for the Parliament.

On *October 23*, a great Battle was fought between the two Armies, at *Keynton*, or *Edge-Hill*, in *Warwickshire*. The King's Troops at first had the Advantage; but Prince *Rupert* pursuing *Essex's* routed Cavalry too far, the Foot of the Royal Army was so pressed by the Parliamentarians, that they were in Danger of being totally defeated. Both Sides claimed the Victory, tho', in Truth, it seemed to be no more than a drawn Battle; but this is certain, that both Sides sustained very great Loss, the Number of the Slain on the Field of Battle being about 5000. The next Day they faced one another from Morning till Evening, without either desiring to renew the Fight. The King took *Banbury-Castle* two or three



three Days after, and then retired to *Oxford*. The Day before the Battle the Parliament published their Declaration of the Grounds and Causes of their taking Arms, reflecting severely on the King's Conduct, as insincere.

Whilst People's Minds were full of Terror on account of the late Battle, the King's Friends in the City and Parliament (for he had still some there to promote his Interest) took the Advantage to press for a Peace. The Parliament could not avoid seeming to comply, and accordingly sent to his Majesty; to desire a safe Conduct, for a Committee of Lords and Commons, to attend him with a Petition for a Treaty; which the King granted. In the mean Time, being encouraged, as it is thought, by his Friends in the Parliament and City, he began to march towards *London*, whether with a Design to surprize the City, or to raise such Commotions there, as might turn to his Advantage. The Earl of *Effex*, having Notice of the King's March, followed him, and arrived with his Army near *London*, about the same Time that the King arrived at *Colnbrook*, where he received the Parliament's Petition, to which he returned a gracious Answer; so that they sent Orders to their Forces to forbear all Acts of Hostility. But in a few Hours after the Departure of the Committee from his Majesty, he began to march towards *Brentford*, where some of the Parliament's Troops were quartered. As soon as he arrived, *November 12*, he attacked the Town, and, after a sharp Fight, wherein many of the Parliament's Men were slain, and others drove into the River, became Master of the Place. The Earl of *Effex* was sitting in the House of Lords at that Time, and immediately posted

to his Army, which the Parliament took such expeditious Measures to strengthen, by ordering the Lord-Mayor to send out the City Trained-Bands, that the King, thinking not fit to hazard a Battle, which *Effex* was making the necessary Preparations for, withdrew to *Kingston*, and from thence again to *Oxford*. This Action, whilst a Treaty was depending, proved of no Service to his Majesty's Reputation.

Several pretty smart Skirmishes and Assaults soon happened in different Parts of the Nation; particularly between the Earl of *Newcastle*, who had raised a considerable Army for the King in the *North*, and *Ferdinando* Lord *Fairfax*, who commanded for the Parliament in those Parts. Sometimes one Side got the better, and sometimes the other, though these Actions were in themselves of no great Importance: The chief were at *Piercebrig*, *Tadcaster*, and *Gisborough*. Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, Lord *Fairfax's* Son, attacked the Town of *Leeds*, and took it by Storm. At the same Time, Sir *William Waller* was very active for the Parliament in the *South*: He took *Farnham-Castle*, and made the Garrison Prisoners of War; and shortly after, *Winchester* and *Chichester*. *Marlborough* was taken by Storm, plundered and burnt, by some of the King's Forces; and *Cirencester* was taken by Prince *Rupert*. *Litchfield* was taken for the Parliament, by a Party under the Lord *Brooke*, but he lost his Life in the Action.

On *March 19*, 1642-3, there was a sharp Fight at *Salt-brid* near *Stafford*, which lasted four Hours, till, the Earl of *Northampton* being slain, the Parliament's Troops got the Victory. The same Day Sir *William Waller* fought upon

upon the Lord *Herbert*, as he was besieging *Gloucester*, killed 500 of his Men, and took 1000 Prisoners. And about the same Time, Sir *Ralph Hopton* defeated a Party of Parliamentarians at *Braddock-Down* in *Cornwall*, slew Abundance of them, and took 1200 Prisoners. But it is needless to mention all the little Encounters, Skirmishes, and Sieges, that happened during this bloody Civil War.

The Year 1643 began with a Treaty for Peace, which was held at *Oxford*, between the King and Commissioners from the Parliament. The Conferences were frequent, and sometimes held till late at Night; and in one of them, when the Commissioners pressed the King upon a very material Point, he promised at last to give them a satisfactory Answer in Writing, the next Morning; but having, in the mean Time, consulted with some that were about him, they prevailed on him (as *Whitelock* says) to alter his Mind, so that he gave the Commissioners an Answer quite contrary to what he had promised; the Consequence of which was, that the Treaty broke off, on April 15, without Success. Presently after, *Reading* was besieged and taken by the Earl of *Essex*; as *Birmingham* and *Litchfield* were by Prince *Rupert*, and *Hereford* by Sir *William Waller*, whilst the Treaty was on foot.

On May 26, the Earl of *Stamford*, the Parliament's General in the West, was defeated by Sir *Ralph Hopton*, in the Battle of *Stratton*.

On June 18, there was a Fight in *Chalgrave-Field*, in which the famous Mr. *Hampden*, a great Leader in the Parliament, was slain. His Death was soon followed by that of Mr. *Pym*, a Person of great Abilities, and the most leading Man amongst them. About this

Time, also, several deserted the Parliament and went over to the King; but some of them afterwards came back again. Among those who turned against the Parliament, were Sir *John Hotham*, and his Son, who had opposed the King at *Hull*. They had formed a Design, at last, to deliver up *Hull* to the King; but the Plot being discovered just before it was to have been executed, they were both seized, and sent up to *London*, where they were tried by a Court-Martial, condemned, and beheaded on *Tower-Hill*.

A Plot was also discovered, of still more Importance, which was to seize on some of the leading Members, surprize the City, and bring the King up to dissolve the Parliament. The chief Conspirators were Mr. *Edmund Waller*, *Tompkins* and *Chaloner*. The two last were hanged; but Mr. *Waller* was reprieved, and, after a Year's Imprisonment, purchased his Life for 10,000*l*. This was the famous Poet, whose Pieces we have now extant.

The Queen having landed at *Burlington*, and staid some Time at *York*, at length joined her Royal Consort at *Oxford*, with a good Body of Troops, and a considerable Quantity of Artillery and Ammunition, which she brought over from *Holland*.

On July 5, was fought the Battle of *Lancdown*, in which, though the Marquess of *Hertford*, who commanded for the King, lost almost all his Horse, yet Sir *William Waller* was at last compelled to quit the Field. But Sir *William* met with a worse Fate on the 13th, when, at *Roundway-Down* in *Wiltshire*, he was entirely defeated, 5 or 6000 of his Men being killed, and 900 made Prisoners.

Another Addition to the King's Strength,



Strength, was the concluding, by his Order, a Cessation of Arms with the *Irish*, that he might have the Assistance of the Forces employed there, against the Parliament in *England*. But this Measure was represented so odious and so popish, that it did more Mischief to the King's Character, than it added Strength to his Party.

On *July 22*, Prince *Rupert* took *Bristol* from the Parliament. And on *August 10*, the King laid Siege to *Gloucester*, but the Earl of *Essex* approaching with his Army, he thought fit to raise it, after he had sat down before the Place almost a Month, during all which Time the Besieged made a brave and vigorous Defence. The Earl, in his Departure from *Gloucester*, made himself Master of *Cirencester*.

On *September 20*, a long and bloody Battle was fought at *Newbury*. It continued from Morning until late at Night, when the King retired with his Army, having lost above 20 Officers of Note; as also the Lord *Falkland*, Secretary of State. He was dissuaded by his Friends from going into the Fight, which he need not have done, as being no military Officer: But he said, *he was weary of the Times, and foresaw much Misery to his Country, and hoped he should be out of it ere Night*; and so rushing into the Battle, he was slain, in the 34th Year of his Age. On the 25th, Prince *Maurice*, Brother to Prince *Rupert*, took *Exeter* for the King.

This Year, *Oliver Cromwell*, Member for the Town of *Cambridge*, who from the Beginning of the War had been very active and vigilant for the Parliament, began as (*Whitelock* expresses it) to appear to the World, and to be more than ordinarily taken Notice of, for his military Skill and Courage. He did good Service for the

Parliament, when he was only a Captain, which soon raised him to the Degree of Colonel, when his Services increased with his Advancement; and now he was made Lieutenant-General to the Earl of *Manchester*, [Lord *Kimbleton*] the Parliament's General for *Essex*, and the adjoining Counties. About the End of *July*, the Earl of *Newcastle*, designing to besiege *Gainsborough*, sent a large Detachment of Horse and Dragoons, under his Brother, Lieutenant-General *Cavendish*, to summon the Town, whilst himself marched after with the Foot. *Oliver Cromwell* arriving at the same Time, to supply the Place with Provisions, though greatly inferior in Number, fell resolutely upon this Detachment, and entirely defeated them, killing many of their Officers, and among them *Cavendish* himself. After which he retreated in good Order, being not in a Condition to face *Newcastle's* whole Army; who soon after took Possession both of *Gainsborough* and *Lincoln*.

After this, the Earl of *Newcastle* besieged *Hull* for several Weeks; but on *October 11*, the Garrison made such a vigorous Sally as forced him to raise the Siege. The same Day, a strong Party of Horse and Dragoons, commanded by the Lord *Widdrington*, was defeated, near *Horn-Castle*, by the Earl of *Manchester's* Troops, chiefly by the Bravery of *Cromwell*, though he was in great Danger in the Action, having his Horse killed under him, and being again knocked down as he was rising. About 1500 of the Royalists were killed in this Engagement, among whom were the Lord *Widdrington*, Sir *Ingram Hopton*, and other Persons of Quality. In pursuance of this Victory, the Earl of *Manchester* marched

marched directly to *Lincoln*, and took it by Storm.

Not long after, the King thought fit, by Proclamation, to summon such Lords and Commons as had deserted the Parliament at *Westminster*, to meet as a Parliament at *Oxford*. Accordingly they assembled on *January* 22, 1643-4, and sat until *April* the 16th following, when they were prorogued to *October*, but never met again. They did little of Moment, except helping the King to Money, which was the chief End for which they were called together.

The King visibly gained Ground of the Parliament last Year, and therefore the two Houses thought it necessary to call the *Scots* to their Aid. This was what the Presbyterians, who now prevailed in the Parliament, wanted; for the *Scots* would not give their Assistance to the Parliament of *England*, but on Condition of their bringing the Church of *England* to a Conformity with that of *Scotland*. And therefore, the first Article in the Treaty, that was made on this Occasion, was, that the *Solemn League and Covenant* should be sworn to and subscribed by both Kingdoms; whereby, among other Things, they engaged to endeavour the Extirpation of Prelacy, (or the Government of the Church by Bishops) and the Establishment of Presbyterianism in its Room. The Covenant was accordingly sent into *England*, and taken by all the Members of Parliament, and by the Assembly of Divines, then sitting at *Westminster* to consider of a Reformation in the Church.

In pursuance of the Treaty above mentioned, the *Scots* Army entered *England*, about the Time that the *Oxford* Parliament met: It consisted of 18,000 Foot, and 3000 Horse, under the Command

of the Earl of *Lewern*, and passed the *Tine* on *February* 28, at some Distance from *Newcastle*. The Earl (now Marquess) of *Newcastle* marched from *York* to oppose or retard, their Passage; leaving Colonel *Bellasis* to command in that City, with a good Body of Troops. The Lord *Fairfax*, upon this, advanced towards *York*, and wrote to his Son to meet him at such a Place. To hinder their Junction, *Bellasis* marched from *York*, and posted himself at *Selby*. Here, being joined, *April* 11, 1644, they entirely defeated *Bellasis*, took him Prisoner, with 1600 Men, and killed not a few. And now the Marquess of *Newcastle*, apprehensive of being hemmed in between the *Scotch* Army, and that of the *Fairfaxes*, made all the Haste he could back to *York*, and shut himself up in that City. He had not been long there, before the two Armies, being joined, came and sat down before it; and shortly after, the Earl of *Manchester*, with *Cromwell*, advanced to strengthen the Siege: But upon the News of Prince *Rupert's* Approach with a numerous Army, they raised the Siege on *June* 30, and went and posted themselves at *Marston-Moor*. Here the Prince, not satisfied with his having relieved *York*, resolved to fight them, contrary to the Marquess of *Newcastle's* Opinion, whom he treated very haughtily. The Armies faced one another two Hours, (a deep Ditch being between them) waiting who should begin. At length, between six and seven in the Evening, *July* 2, the Parliament Generals gave the Signal, and both Armies were engaged. The Battle was obstinate and bloody, and fought some Time with doubtful Success: But at last, Prince *Rupert* was entirely routed, and the Parliamentarians got a complete



complete Victory, which was owing, in great Measure, to *Cromwell's* Valour and good Conduct. The Marquess of *Newcastle*, presently after, left the Kingdom, and returned no more until after the Restoration; and Prince *Rupert*, abandoning *York*, marched towards *Chester*, with the Remains of his Army. *York* was now surrendered to the Parliament Generals, upon honourable Terms, by Sir *Thomas Glenham*, who had been left Governor of it; and the *Scotch* Army, marching northward, took *Newcastle* by Storm, on *October 19*.

Let us now take a short View of the chief Actions in other Parts of the Kingdom this Year.

*March 29*, Sir *William Waller* defeated the Lord *Hopton*, on *Che-riton-Down*, near *Alresford*; having before recovered *Arundel-Castle*, in which the famous Mr. *Chillingworth* was made a Prisoner, and died soon after.

The Earl of *Essex* and *Waller*, after this, marched to besiege *Oxford*; but the King having found Means to withdraw from that City, with Part of his Army, they laid by their Design; *Essex* marching into the *West*, and *Waller* following the King, who was retired to *Worcester*. The Queen, upon *Essex's* Approach, left *Exeter*, where she had been lately delivered of the Princess *Henrietta*, and withdrew into *France*.

On *June 29*, there was a Fight at *Cropedy-Bridge*, between the King and *Waller*, wherein the latter was worsted.

The King then followed *Essex* into the *West*, where he penned him up in *Cornwall*, and reduced him to such Extremity, that having luckily found Means to save his Cavalry, he withdrew by Ship to *Plymouth*, leaving his Foot with Ma-

jor-General *Skippon*, who capitulated for them with the King, and they were permitted to retire, leaving their Arms behind them.

The King, upon this Advantage, thought of marching directly to *London*; but altering his Resolution, upon the Vigilance of the Parliament in recruiting their Armies, and the People not coming in to him, at the Places through which he passed, as he expected, he determined to retire to his old Quarters at *Oxford*. But first he had a Mind to take *Dennington Castle*, and so marched to *Newbury*, which is about a Mile from it. Upon this, the three Armies of the Parliament, under *Essex*, *Manchester*, and *Waller*, being joined, advanced thither also. And here a second Battle was fought, on *October 27*, as obstinate as the former, each Side repulsing the other by Turns. The King in the End had the worst of it, though he was far from being entirely routed. He drew off in the Night, leaving his Cannon and Baggage in *Dennington-Castle*. He might have come worse off, if there had not been a Dissention among the Parliament Generals; which he being apprized of, returned a few Days after with his Army, and took away what he had left in the Castle in Sight of the Enemy, without their offering to engage him. The Earl of *Essex* had quitted the Army, some Days before the Battle; and *Cromwell* afterwards accused the Earl of *Manchester* of not having done his Duty in it, insinuating, that he was afraid of putting too speedy an End to the War; which, according to the Parliament, could not be safely done, without sufficiently humbling the King.

*Charles Lewis*, the Elector Palatine, Brother to Prince *Rupert*, ~~Brother in~~ Law it is presumed. + camp

came to *London* this Year, to reside there under the Protection of the Parliament, who allowed him an honourable Pension.

On *January 4, 1644-5*, the Lords passed the Ordinance for laying aside the Book of *Common-Prayer*, and establishing the *Directory*, which had been drawn up by the Assembly of Divines. And thus the Presbyterian Worship was appointed in the Church of *England*, to the great Joy of the *Scots*, and many of the principal Members of both Houses. A Bill of Attainder against Archbishop *Laud* having passed both Houses, he was beheaded on the 10th of the same Month.

On the 30th, a Treaty began at *Uxbridge*, between Commissioners from the King and Parliament, in order to a Peace; but it had no better Success than that at *Oxford*. Both Sides was desirous of a Peace, but it was in their own Way, otherwise both chose to continue the War; the King, rather than part with his Prerogative; and the Parliament, rather than leave it in his Power to govern as formerly: So that, though there was no Likelihood of these Treaties coming to any Thing, yet both Sides were willing to shew a Desire of Peace, if it was only to amuse the People, and take Advantage of one another.

A Party, about this Time, sprang up, that in the End got the better both of the King and Parliament. These were the Independants, so called from their being against the Dependency of Churches, and consequently against all national Churches, as well Presbyterian as Episcopal. They were at first united with the Presbyterians in Parliament, and went Hand in Hand with them, until they had got the King in their Power, and then they began to act more openly.

*Oliver Cromwell*, a Person of uncommon Valour, great Parts, and profound Dissimulation, was their chief Patron; he made use of them to pull down the Power of the Presbyterians, who at this Time bore all the Sway, and were as rigid against all who conformed not to their new Hierarchy, as ever the Bishops had been. To the Independants were joined other religious Sects, equally Enemies to the Presbyterians, as also the Republicans of all Sorts, who were Enemies to Monarchy; but all usually confounded, by our Historians, under the general Name of Independants. The first Thing was to get the Army on their Side, in order to which, it was necessary to have it new modelled. This was artfully brought about, chiefly by *Cromwell's* Means, on Pretence of putting a more speedy End to the War. At the same Time, he and his Associates took Advantage of the Complaints against the Partiality of the Parliament, in engrossing all Places of Trust and Profit to themselves, to get an Ordinance passed for excluding all Members of Parliament from all Offices Civil and Military; which was called the *Self-denying Ordinance*. By Virtue of this Ordinance, the Earl of *Essex*, the Earl of *Manchester*, Sir *William Waller*, Major-General *Massey*, and others, generally Favourers of the Presbyterian Party, were, in 1645, removed from their Commands in the Army; and those put in their Room, who were Friends to the Independants. Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, who was commissioned General of the new-modelled Army, was indeed a Presbyterian, and *Cromwell* himself still pretended to be so, the better to carry on his secret Designs in the Parliament, and with the new General, over whom he had



had such an Influence, that he made him do just as he pleased.

Whilst the General was at *Wind-  
sor*, forming his Army upon the  
new Model, he was ordered by  
the Committee of both Kingdoms,  
to send a Party of Horse to lie be-  
tween *Oxford* and *Worcester*, to in-  
tercept some Troops that were  
marching to join the King; and  
they recommended *Cromwell* for that  
service; who, about the End of  
*April*, met with a Brigade of the  
King's Horse, consisting of four  
Regiments, at *Islip-Bridge*, and en-  
tirely defeated them.

The King took the Field on *May*  
*7*, and, on the *30th*, took *Leice-  
ster* by Storm. Upon this, *Fair-  
fax* was ordered to raise the Siege  
of *Oxford*, which he had just be-  
gun, and to keep close to the King.  
He marched therefore on *June 7*,  
and being apprehensive a Battle  
would soon ensue, wrote to the  
Parliament to dispense with *Crom-  
well's* Absence from the House, and  
appoint him Lieutenant-General  
of the Horse; which was done ac-  
cordingly, and he was the only  
Member of Parliament, who kept  
his Post in the Army, after the  
*Self-denying Ordinance*, of which he  
himself had been the chief Pro-  
moter. If this was owing to his  
Intrigues, it must be equally ow-  
ing to the Opinion the Parliament  
had of his Ability and rare Talents  
for War.

*Cromwell* having accordingly  
joined *Fairfax*, on *June 14*, was  
fought the famous Battle of *Naseby*  
in *Northamptonshire*, which decided  
the Quarrel between the King and  
the Parliament. Prince *Rupert*,  
who commanded the King's Right  
Wing, gave the first Charge, and  
engaged the Parliament's Left Wing,  
commanded by Colonel *Ireton*, with  
such Resolution, that he soon put

them to Flight. But whilst he  
pursued the flying Troops too far,  
*Cromwell*, who commanded the  
Parliament's Right Wing, charged  
so furiously on the King's Left  
Wing, commanded by Sir *Marma-  
duke Longdale*, that he forced them  
from their Body, and quite broke  
them and their Reserve. After  
which, joining with *Fairfax*, he  
charged the King's Foot, who had  
beaten the Parliament's, and thought  
themselves sure of the Victory;  
but being now in Confusion, and  
having no Horse to support them,  
they were easily routed by *Fairfax*  
and *Cromwell*. Prince *Rupert* at  
last came back and joined the King,  
but not being able to rally their bro-  
ken Troops, they were forced to  
quit the Field, leaving a compleat  
Victory to the Parliament's Forces.  
Above 150 of the King's Officers  
and Gentlemen of Quality were  
slain, most of his Foot were made  
Prisoners, all his Cannon and Bag-  
gage taken, with 8000 Arms, and  
other rich Booty; among which was  
also the King's Cabinet, with his  
most secret Papers, and Letters be-  
tween him and his Queen; which  
shewed how contrary his Counsels  
with her were to those he declared to  
the Kingdom.

After this signal Victory, nothing  
could stand before the Parliament's  
Forces. *Leicester* was retaken four  
Days after; and then *Fairfax*  
marching into the *West*, relieved  
*Taunton*, and defeated General *Goring*  
at *Langport*. This was soon followed  
by the Taking of *Bridgewater*, *Bath*,  
and *Sherburn*; whilst *Cromwell* made  
himself Master of the Castle of the  
*Devizes*, of *Winchester* City and  
Castle, and took *Basing-House* by  
Storm. *Bristol* was surrendered by  
Prince *Rupert*, *September 10*. And  
the King, marching to the Relief of  
*Chester*, was defeated near that City  
by.

by the Parliament's Forces, *September 24*. He narrowly escaped into *Wales*, and from thence retired to *Oxford*, *November 6*. From whence he sent Message after Message to the two Houses for a Personal Treaty, but all to no Purpose. The total Abolition of Episcopacy, in particular, which the Parliament insisted upon, he would never consent to. In the *North*, the *Scots Army* took *Carlisle* in *June*, and *Pomfret* and *Scarborough Castles* surrendered to the Parliament in *July*.

*January 18*, 1645-6, *Fairfax* took *Dartmouth* by Storm, and defeated the Lord *Hopton* at *Torrington*, *February 18*. After this, he pursued him into *Cornwall*, and so pent him up, that on *March 14*, he capitulated, his whole Army to be disbanded in six Days, and all the Horses and Arms to be delivered up to *Fairfax*, who, by the Surrender of *Exeter*, *April 6*, 1646, compleated the Reduction of the *West* to the Power of the Parliament.

After this, it was resolved to lay Siege to *Oxford*, where the King was: But upon *Fairfax's* Approach, his Majesty made his Escape, and went and threw himself into the Hands of the *Scots Army*, then lying before *Newark*. He arrived there on *May 6*, 1646, and presently after, ordered *Newark* to be surrendered to them. Then they marched to *Newcastle*, carrying the King with them; from whence he sent more Messages to the Parliament, and they sent him their Propositions, which he did not think fit to agree to. *Oxford* surrendered *June 22*, and the few remaining Garrisons soon after. And thus the whole Kingdom was subjected to the Obedience of the two Houses.

And now the Parliament consulted how to get the King out of the

Hands of the *Scots*, and to send them back into their own Country. At last, it was agreed, that they should have 400,000 *l.* for the Arrears due to them, one Moiety to be paid before their going home and the other at stated Times. And so after several Debates about the Disposal of the King's Person, the *Scots* having received the 200,000 *l.* on *January 30*, 1646-7, delivered him up to the Commissioners of the Parliament of *England*, who were sent down to *Newcastle* to receive him. The same Day their Army began to march for *Scotland*, and the King was conducted to *Helmsley House* in *Northamptonshire*; where he arrived, *February 16*.

The King being subdued, the Conquerors began now to fall out among themselves. This was occasioned by the different Views of the Presbyterians and Independants: The former were for grasping at the whole Power, and suppressing all who would not conform to their Establishment, whom they branded with the Name of *Sectaries*. The Independants were sworn Enemies to their Hierarchy, and were for such a Settlement, wherein Liberty of Conscience might be secured, as well against Presbytery as Episcopacy. The Parliament and the City of *London* were mostly Presbyterians, and the Army almost wholly Independants. The Parliament therefore, in order to crush the Independants, were presently for breaking the Army, by sending some into *Ireland*, and disbanding the rest. But the Army resolved not to disband or separate, till such a Settlement was made as they desired. Thus the Independants were determined to ruin the Presbyterians, to prevent their own Destruction. In order to this, *Cromwell*, whilst he seemed to go with the Parliament, artfully promoted



promoted a Spirit of Discontent and Opposition in the Army. He had several Officers, who acted by his Direction, as *Ireton, Rainborough, Fleetwood, Lambert, Harrifon, &c.* who appeared openly in the Business, whilst he acted more secretly and underhand. And the Death of the Earl of *Essex*, which happened September 26, 1646, made it easier for him to carry on his Designs. To strengthen themselves the more against the Designs of the Presbyterians in Parliament, the common Soldiers, no doubt at the Instigation of some of their Leaders, formed a new Council, called the *Council of Agitators*, by chusing Deputies out of each Regiment, few above the Degree of Corporals and Serjeants, to manage their Affairs, and debate about Matters to be brought to the General's Council of Officers. The Animosities increasing more and more, it was feared the Parliament, the better to subdue the Army, would close with the King almost on any Terms. Wherefore the Agitators, being instigated, as it is thought, by *Cromwell*, sent Cornet *Joyce*, one of their Body, with a Detachment of 50 Horse, to take the King from the Parliament's Commissioners at *Holmby*, and bring him away to the Army; which he boldly and resolutely effected, on June 4, 1647. Thus the Army, being Masters of the King's Person, in a little Time became Masters of the Parliament too, and managed every Thing just as they pleased; agreeably to what *Cromwell* is reported to have said to his intimate Friends, *That now he had got the King into his Hands, he had the Parliament in his Pocket.*

On June 16, the Army drew up a Charge of Treason against 11 Members of the House of Commons, the Chiefs of the Presbyte-

rian Party, for betraying the Cause of the Parliament, endeavouring to break and destroy the Army, &c. These were *Hollis, Stapleton, Clotworthy, Glyn, Nichols, Long, Lewis, Harley, Waller, Maffey, and Maynard*: Nor would they be satisfied till they withdrew from the House; which was all the Army wanted.

The Parliament had settled the Militia of *London*, according to the Desire of the Citizens, in the Hands of the Presbyterians; but being over-awed by the Army, they revoked their Ordinance, and settled it as it was before. Upon this the Common-Council petitioned to have it again settled in their own Way: And at the same Time, July 26, a great Multitude of Citizens, young Men and Apprentices, stirred up, no doubt, by the leading Presbyterians in the City, came in a tumultuous Manner to the Parliament-House, and compelled them by Threats and Violence to do it, and also to vote that the King should come to *London*. Then they adjourned for some Days; and in the mean Time, the two Speakers, and a great many Members of both Houses, fled to the Army for Protection. When the Remnant of the Parliament met, they chose them new Speakers, and passed several Votes, disagreeable to the Army. Upon this the Army marched to *London*, where the Citizens were raising Forces, restored the two Speakers and the Members to their Seats, on August 6, and made the Parliament revoke all that had been done since July 26. And from this Time, the two Houses were wholly governed by the Army.

As to the King, he was obliged to attend all the Motions of the Army since his late Seizure, till, upon their Approach to *London*, he was conducted to *Hampton-Court*,  
August

August 24. He was treated with great Respect and Civility, by the Heads of the Army, and had all due Honours paid him, though, in Reality, he was no better than their Prisoner. *Cromwell* was actually in Treaty with him to restore him, and it is very likely, he was sincere in it. Nay, even the Agitators of the Army were once for restoring him, and Proposals were drawn up for his Assent; but upon his Majesty's rejecting them, they turned as violently against him, imagining that he was more inclined to the *Scots* and *Presbyterians* than to them. And now they were very much enraged against *Cromwell*, as supposing him to be still carrying on some private Treaty with the King, so that he was under a Necessity, in order to preserve himself, to reconcile himself to them, and wholly to abandon the King's Interest. Others suppose the Reason to be, his having discovered, by intercepted Letters to the Queen, that the King did not deal sincerely with him; upon which he complained that the King could not be trusted. Others will have *Cromwell's* whole Conduct towards the King to be nothing but Hypocrisy and Dissimulation. However it be, the whole Army was at last united against the King. Some Time before *Cromwell's* Reconciliation with the Agitators, they were so furious, that they threatened to seize on the Person of the King; and upon *Cromwell's* advertising him of the Danger he was in, his Majesty escaped in the Night from *Hampton-Court*, and, on November 13, went over to the *Isle of Wight*, to Colonel *Hammond* the Governor, who lodged him in *Carisbrook-Castle*, where he was as much a Prisoner as he was before. But some think, that his Majesty's

going thither was purely the Effect of *Cromwell's* Artifice, that he might have the more Leisure to pursue the Projects he had formed. However this be, (for this is a very dark and obscure Period, where the Politicks of Men and Parties were laid very deep,) upon the King's rejecting the four Bills the Parliament sent him, as Preliminaries to a Personal Treaty, one of which was for investing the Militia in the two Houses, there were many bitter Speeches made against him in the House of Commons, particularly by *Cromwell* and *Ireton*; and, at last, the House resolved, January 3, 1647-8, (being still under the Influence of the Army, That no more Addresses should be made to the King, nor Messages received from him; and to this the Lords some Days after agreed. The Army now promising to adhere to the Parliament against the King, on whom *Hammond* was ordered to have a stricter Guard than before, upon Information that Endeavours had been used to rescue him. The King had concluded a private Treaty with the *Scots* Commissioners, a little before he rejected the Parliament's four Bills.

The King being reduced to this melancholy Condition, by Means of the Army, his Friends, who ever since the Beginning of the War were called *Cavaliers*, (as the opposite Party were called *Roundheads*, from the riotous Apprentices having their Hair cut short and round) began to stir for him in several Parts of the Kingdom, in which they were joined by the *Presbyterians*, from their Hatred to the Independants. Even the Parliament, who were still mostly *Presbyterians*, though they had lost their Leaders, had not gone such



such Lengths against the King, if they had not been over-awed by the Army. What much encouraged the Insurrections in *England*, was the Prospect of a powerful Assistance from *Scotland*: For the *Scots*, not being consulted in the last Propositions to the King, were offended; and it was known, that, pursuant to the Treaty between the King and them, they were to invade *England* with a great Army, which the Duke of *Hamilton*, who made use of the *Covenant* only as a Pretence, had found Means to raise, and of which he was declared General, contrary to the Sentiments of the *Kirk Commissioners*, and the zealous *Covenanters*, headed by the Marquess of *Argyle*.

These Troubles broke out pretty early in the Year 1648. The first who took Arms were the *Welsh*, under Major-General *Langborn*, and the Colonels *Poyer* and *Powel*, all three formerly zealous for the Parliament. They had seized several Places, and were near 8000 strong. They were first defeated by Colonel *Horton*, sent before by *Cromwell*; who arriving soon after, and having taken some Places in his March, by the Surrender of *Pembroke-Castle* upon Articles, after a Siege of above a Month, put an entire End to the Commotions in *Wales*. *Langborn*, *Poyer*, and *Powel*, who surrendered Prisoners at Discretion, being condemned, some Time after, by a Court-Martial, only one of them was to die, for which they were to draw Lots; which falling on *Poyer*, he was accordingly shot to Death.

In the mean Time General *Fairfax* (now a Lord by the Death of his Father) successfully opposed the Malcontents in *Kent*, under *Goring*, who had been made Earl of *Norwich*. He defeated him at *Maidstone*, and

drove him with his Men into *Essex*, where several had rose for the King, under Lord *Capel*, Sir *Charles Lucas*, and Sir *George Lisle*. He forced them to shut themselves up in *Colchester*, where they endured a long Siege, and at last were compelled to surrender. *Lucas* and *Lisle* were shot to Death; and *Goring*, and *Capel*, were sent Prisoners to *Windsor-Castle*. Some Time before the Earl of *Holland*, *Villiers* Duke of *Buckingham*, and his Brother *Francis*, were defeated at *Kingston upon Thames*, by Colonel *Livesey*. The Earl was taken Prisoner, the Duke fled into *France*, and the Lord *Francis* was slain.

The *Scots* Army under Duke *Hamilton*, amounting to near 20,000, entered *England* in *July*, and were joined by about 5000 *English*, under Sir *Marmaduke Langdale*. *Cromwell*, after he had finished his Work in *Wales*, marched with all Expedition to join *Lambert* in the North; and *August* 17, near *Preston* in *Lancashire*, totally routed and dispersed this great Army, the Duke in his Flight being taken Prisoner. *Cromwell* then marched directly into *Scotland*, and arriving at *Edinburgh*, divested the *Hamiltonian* Party of their Authority; and after having been greatly caressed and magnificently treated, returned in Triumph to *England*.

At the Beginning of these Troubles, the Presbyterian Party, in the House, in the City, and other Places, began to resume their Courage. Several Petitions were presented for a Personal Treaty with the King; and when the Army was removed from *London* into different Parts of the Nation, the secluded Members and others who had absented themselves having returned to their Seats, the Votes of no more Addresses were repealed, and it was resolved by both

both Houses, to enter into a Personal Treaty with the King, that *Newport* in the *Isle of Wight* should be the Place of Treaty, and that his Majesty should be there with Honour, Freedom, and Safety; and five Lords, and ten Commoners, were nominated Commissioners for this Treaty. But the Debates were so artfully spun out by the Independants in the House, especially *Sir Henry Vane*, who seemed to consent to the Treaty on purpose to delay it by starting new Difficulties, that it was not agreed upon, till *Cromwell* had finished Matters in *Wales*, and was marched towards the *North*. And *Vane* being named one of the Commissioners, used the same Arts to delay Matters afterwards, so that the Treaty did not begin till the 18th of *September*, a Month after *Cromwell* had defeated the *Scots*, and the Army had been every where victorious. By the same Means the Treaty itself was prolonged, till *Cromwell* had sent Part of his Troops to reinforce *Fairfax*, who then had his Head-Quarters at *Windfor*. And now the Army was resolved to break off the Treaty by Force. Accordingly Colonel *Ewer*, on *November* 18, presented to the Commons a Remonstrance from the Army, wherein they desired, That the Treaty might be laid aside, and that the King might come no more to Government, but be brought to Justice, as the capital Cause of all the Evils in the Kingdom, and of so much Blood being shed. This was in Pursuance of Petitions against the Treaty, and for Justice on the King, presented to the General from the several Regiments, particularly from those under *Cromwell*, whilst he was yet in the *North*, on his Return from *Scotland*.

And now the Fate of the unhappy King came on apace. On *No-*

*vember* 21, the General recalled Colonel *Hammond* from the *Isle of Wight*, and sent Colonel *Ewer* to take Charge of the King's Person, who kept him in strict Custody. On the 30th, his Majesty was brought over to *Hurst-Castle* in *Hampshire*; and the Army marched towards *London*, and published a Declaration of the Reasons of their taking this Step. Two Days after, the General and other Officers, with several Regiments, came and quartered at *Whitehall*, *St. James's*, the *Meuse*, and other Places thereabouts. Notwithstanding this, the Commons, on *Monday, December* 4, resumed the Debates on the King's Concessions, which continuing all Day and Night till Five in the Morning, they at last voted, That the said Concessions were sufficient Grounds for settling the Peace of the Kingdom; and then adjourned to *Wednesday*. On which Day, some Regiments of Horse and Foot, having possessed themselves of all the Avenues to the Parliament-House, seized on one-and-forty Members as they offered to go in, and the next Day denied Entrance to near an Hundred more. Thus the Presbyterians being excluded, the House of Commons from this Time consisted wholly of Independants and their Friends, who were disposed to comply with whatever the Army dictated. *Cromwell* arrived in Town the Night between these two Interruptions, and the next Day received the Thanks of the House for his great Services.

On *December* 23, the Commons appointed a Committee to draw up a Charge against the King, who about the same Time was brought from *Hurst-Castle* to *Windfor*, where the Council of War ordered all the usual Ceremonies, such as serving him upon the Knee, to be laid aside.



aside. Soon after, the Committee reported an Ordinance for impeaching *Charles Stuart*, King of *England*, of High-Treason; which being agreed to by the House, *January 2, 1648-9*, was carried up to the Lords for their Concurrence; and upon their rejecting it, the Commons voted, 1. *That the People are, under God, the Original of all just Power.* 2. *That the Commons of England, chosen by, and representing the People, are the supreme Power of the Nation.* 3. *That whatsoever is enacted or declared for Law, by the Commons assembled in Parliament, hath the Force of a Law, though the Consent of the King and House of Peers be not thereto.* At the same Time they made an Ordinance for erecting a *High-Court of Justice*, for trying the King, who was brought from *Windſor* to *St. James's* on the 19th. The next Day this unprecedented Trial began, the Court sitting in *Westminster-Hall*, having chosen *Serjeant Bradshaw* for their President. The Substance of the Charge was, That the King had endeavoured to set up a tyrannical Power, and to that End had raised and maintained a cruel War against the Parliament. The King behaved with Dignity, making no other Answer, but denying the Authority of the Court. The same he did on the 22d, and 23d. At last, being brought before them a fourth Time, on *January 27*, he earnestly desired, before Sentence, to be heard before the Lords and Commons (intending, as it is thought, to resign his Crown to his eldest Son;) but his Request was not granted. And so, still persisting in dis-

owning the Jurisdiction of the Court, and consequently in his Refusal to answer to the Charge, his Silence was taken for a Confession, and Sentence of Death was passed upon him: Pursuant to which, he was, on *January 30*, beheaded on a Scaffold erected in the Street near the Windows of the *Banqueting-House* at *Whitehall*, shewing as great a Firmness, Resolution, and Resignation to the last, as he had done in all his Sufferings. The Day before his Execution, he was permitted to see his Children, the Princess *Elizabeth* and the Duke of *Gloucester*, the only ones then in *England*; which was, perhaps, as tender a Scene as is to be met with in History.

King *Charles* was certainly a Man of great Abilities, and many excellent Qualities. He was strictly sober, chaste, temperate, and constant in his Devotions, both publick and private. Happy had it been for himself, and the Nation, if he had been as good a King, as he was a Man. His aiming at more Power than the Constitution allowed, was the first Cause of his Misfortunes: The false Steps afterwards committed, the Ascendant the Queen, and those he trusted, had over him, increased the Distempers of his Reign: And his losing entirely the Confidence of his People, with the clashing Interests of Parties, violent and furious in their Opposition to each other, at last compleated his Ruin, after a troublesome Reign of 23 Years, 10 Months, and 3 Days. His Corpse was carried to *Windſor*, and privately interred in *St. George's* Chapel.

## The COMMONWEALTH of ENGLAND.

1648-9. AFTER the Death of King Charles I. there was an *Interregnum* of eleven Years and four Months, during which Time there was a total Eclipse of the Royal Family, and the Government of *England* underwent various Forms and Shapes. The first was that of a pure *Democracy* or Commonwealth; for the King was no sooner dead, but the Remnant of the House of Commons, called afterwards the *Rump*, scarce above eighty in Number, but many of them Men of a surprizing Genius and an uncommon Capacity, assuming to themselves the Name of Parliament, passed an Act, forbidding the Proclaiming of *Charles Stuart*, eldest Son of the late King, or any other Person, upon Pain of High-Treason. Then they resolved, that those who had assented to the Vote, that the late King's Concessions were a Ground to proceed to a Settlement, should not be re-admitted to sit as Members; who were therefore commonly called the *secluded Members*. On *February 5*, they voted that the House of Peers was useless and dangerous; and accordingly passed an Act for abolishing it. The Lords had only the Liberty allowed them, of being elected Members of Parliament, in common with other Subjects; which some few of them accepted, as the Earls of *Pembroke* and *Salisbury*, and the Lord *Edward Howard*; but the greatest Part rejected it. Then, to compleat the Work, they resolved and declared, that as the Office of King in this Nation had been found to be unnecessary, burthensome, and dangerous to the Liberties of the People, it should therefore be ut-

terly abolished; and that the Nation should be governed by the Representatives of the People under the Form of a Commonwealth. A new Oath, called *the Engagement*, was enjoined, to be true and faithful to the Government established without King or House of Peers. A new Great-Seal was prepared, which was committed to certain Persons, under the Title of the *Keepers of the Liberty of England by the Authority of Parliament*; and all Writs and publick Orders were to run in their Name. And finally, a Council of State was appointed, consisting of 39 Persons, for the Administration of publick Affairs under the Parliament; whose Powers were to continue for one whole Year, and then a new Council of State to be chosen. And thus the Commonwealth Government was fully established.

In *March*, a new High-Court of Justice was erected, of which *Bradshaw* was again President, for the Trial of Duke *Hamilton*, (as Earl of *Cambridge*) the Earls of *Holland* and *Norwich*, the Lord *Capel*, and Sir *John Owen*, for being concerned in the late Invasion and Insurrections. They were all condemned to die: But upon their petitioning the Parliament, their Pardon or Execution was to be determined by the Votes of the House; when Duke *Hamilton* and Lord *Capel* were cast, and Sir *John Owen* saved, by a considerable Majority. The House being equally divided as to the Earls of *Holland* and *Norwich*, the former was cast, and the latter saved by the single Vote of the Speaker. Accordingly *Hamilton*, *Holland*, and *Capel*,



*Capel*, were soon after beheaded on a Scaffold before *Westminster-Hull*.

It was now thought fit to abolish the Council of Agitators, who were said at first to have been set up by *Cromwell* and his Associates, to oppose the Presbyterians Project of disbanning the Army, in order to ruin the Independants. They had now done their Master's Work, and had been the chief Instruments in all the late Transactions. And, lest they should take it in their Heads to carry Matters farther than the present Rulers (between whom and the Officers of the Army there was now a perfect Harmony) cared they should, those who at first set them up, judged it expedient to put them down; which was at length effected by *Fairfax* and *Cromwell*, though not without much Difficulty from the Opposition they made, and some Effusion of Blood.

The Parliament (as the Remnant of the House of Commons was now called) had not been long in Possession of the supreme Authority, before they found it necessary to turn their Thoughts towards *Ireland*. After the Marquess of *Ormond* had made a Treaty with the *Irish*, and, in Consequence of that Treaty, the *English* Forces were called home, to assist the King against the Parliament, the *Irish* treacherously broke the Articles, and joining against the Marquess, would have surprized him, if he had not escaped to *Dublin*; but being in no Condition to keep it for the King, rather than deliver it up to the *Irish*, he gave it up to the *English* sent over by the Parliament, (who made Colonel *Jones* Governor of it) and came over to *England* some Time before the King's Death, from whence he afterwards repaired to the Prince. And now the *Irish* solicited his

Return, promising hereafter to submit to him as the King's Lieutenant. He therefore went back, and put himself at the Head of the *Irish* Army; and having taken several Places, was preparing to besiege *Dublin*. In this Exigency, the Governors of the new Commonwealth thought fit to send over a good Body of Forces for the Relief of *Ireland*. *Oli-ver Cromwell* was appointed General for this Expedition, and Lord Governor of that Island, both for Civil and Military Affairs, for three Years. He lost no Time in making all the necessary Preparations for his Departure, and, in the mean Time, sent over considerable Succours, beforehand, to Colonel *Jones*; by the Help of which, he made such a vigorous and successful Sally in the Night, that he not only forced the Marquess to raise the Siege of *Dublin*, before it was well formed, but put his whole Army to the Rout. This was in the Beginning of *August*, 1649; and a few Days after, *Cromwell* set Sail from *Milford-Haven*, and arrived safe at *Dublin*, with his whole Army, to the inexpressible Joy of the People, who already looked upon him as their Saviour and Deliverer. *Cromwell* having refreshed his Men, entered immediately on the great Work he came about. His first Attempt was upon *Drogheda*, a strong Town, and well garrisoned with the Flower of *Ormond's* Army, under the Command of Sir *Arthur Aston*. He resolutely took it by Storm, and put all that were in Arms to the Sword, which much facilitated his future Conquests; and indeed, after this, many Places submitted to him, without striking a Stroke. In *October*, he took *Wexford* by Storm, much in the same Manner,

and with the like Effect, as *Drogheda* had been taken before. After this, he with Ease reduced *Ross*; and *Kinsale*, and *Cork*, and other Places, voluntarily submitted to him. His Army having been some Time in Winter-Quarters, in *February* he took the Field again, and after having reduced some Places of lesser Note, about the End of *March*, he laid Siege to *Kilkenny*, (which had been the Nursery of the late Rebellion, and the Residence of the supreme Council of the *Irish*;) and became Master of it in less than a Week. He then besieged *Clonmell*, and took it by Storm, though the Besieged made a most obstinate and gallant Defence. In short, *Cromwell* carried on his Conquests in *Ireland* with such amazing Rapidity, that in about nine Months Time, he almost completed the Reduction of the whole Island; when, about the Middle of *May*, 1650, he was recalled by the Parliament, in order to enter upon a new Scene of Action in another Place. And so leaving his Son-in-Law *Ireton* his Deputy, to finish what remained, he embarked for *England*, and having landed at *Bristol*, proceeded, as it were in Triumph, to *London*, where he arrived amidst the loud Acclamations of the People, and had all Honour and Respect paid him by the Members of Parliament, Officers of the Army, the Lord-Mayor and Aldermen, and other Persons of Distinction.

*Scotland* was the next Country, where *Cromwell* was to make himself famous. *Charles*, Prince of *Wales*, no sooner heard of the King his Father's tragical Death, but he took the Title of King, being then at the *Hague*, and about eighteen Years old. After the late Change brought about by *Cromwell* in *Scotland*, the *Scots* were united

with *England*, so long as the *English* Parliament continued Presbyterian. But when the Independants got uppermost, whom the *Scots* hated as much as they did the Royalists, they began to shew that the Parliament's Proceedings were disagreeable to them, and sent Commissioners to present a Memorial against their trying the King, and against the *sinful and ungodly Toleration* that was going to be introduced. And when, notwithstanding, the Parliament persisted in their Measures, the *Scots* Commissioners gave in their Protestation against them, in the Name of the Parliament and People of *Scotland*, and departed. After the King's Death, they resolved to acknowledge and proclaim his Son, King *Charles II.* and sent Deputies to him, to invite him over, but on the express Condition of his consenting to maintain Presbyterianism and the Covenant. The King by no means liked these Terms; and as the Marquess of *Montrose*, who had done great Service in *Scotland* for the King his Father, but was afterwards forced to fly, and was excommunicated by the Kirk, and degraded by the *Scots* Parliament, happened to wait on him a little after the Arrival of the *Scots* Deputies, he gave him a Commission to raise Forces in *Germany*, and make a Descent upon *Scotland*, chusing rather to come in by Force of Arms, than upon such Conditions. *Montrose* accordingly landed in the North of *Scotland* with a small Force, hoping he should be soon strengthened by Numbers coming in to him. But herein he was disappointed, and the *Scots* Parliament took such Measures, that he was soon defeated, and fell into their Hands, who condemned him to be hanged on a Gallows thirty Feet high, his Head afterwards



to be fet upon the *Tolbooth* at *Edinburgh*, his Arms and Legs at four feveral Places, and his Body to be buried under the Gallows; which fevere and ignominious Sentence was accordingly executed. *Montrous's* Expedition gave the *Scots* no very favourable Opinion of the King; and yet they proceeded to treat with him, but in fuch a Manner, that not the leaft Alteration was to be made in the Conditions they at firft propofed; and he had no Way left, but to accept or refufe. Necessity, at laft, made him comply; and fo he embarked for *Scotland*, where he arrived in *June*, 1650, but was not permitted to land, till he had taken the Covenant.

The Rulers in *England* were not ignorant of all thefe Proceedings, and forefeeing that the King would accept of the Crown of *Scotland*, on any Terms, in order to employ the Forces of that Kingdom for invading *England*, they refolved to be beforehand with them, and carry the War into *Scotland*. The Lord *Fairfax* was civilly asked, whether he would be willing to take on him the Conduct of this War; but as he was much inclined to the Prefbyterians, notwithstanding the late Services which, by *Cromwell's* Management, he had done the Independants, it was thought his Refufal would not be very difagreeable to the prefent Powers; which he either perceiving, or really fcrupling the Lawfulnefs of the defigned Invaſion of *Scotland*, laid down his Commiſſion; and immediately thereupon, *Oli-ver Cromwell* was appointed General and Commander in Chief of all the Armies of the Commonwealth.

The *Scots* in the mean Time, being informed of the Preparations in *England*, levied an Army, and gave the Command of it to General *Leſley*; not caring to truſt the King

with it, as they perceived he did not very well reliſh the Severities of their Kirk Diſcipline. *Leſley* encamped near *Edinburgh*, and, on *July 22*, *Cromwell* entered *Scotland* at the Head of near 20,000 Men. As he marched along, he found the Country deſerted by its Inhabitants, and every Thing carried away, that might ſerve to ſubſiſt his Army; ſo that he could have no Proviſions, but what were ſent to him by Shipping from *England*. It was therefore neceſſary for him to come to an Engagement as ſoon as poſſible. To this End he advanced directly up to the Enemy, but found them ſo ſtrongly intrenched, that there was no attacking them without the utmoſt Hazard. He uſed all the Arts known in War to draw them out of their Intrenchments, and provoke them to come to a Battle: But the wary *Scotch* General avoided the Snare, hoping to ſpin out Time, till the Inclemency of the Season, and the Want of Proviſions, ſhould conſume the *Engliſh*, or force them to return to their own Country. *Cromwell* marched up in Sight of the *Scots* Army, and did all he could to provoke them; then marched back to *Dunbar* for Supplies; then advanced towards them again; till, after the Armies had ſpent ſome Weeks, facing each other, and *Cromwell's* Army was greatly diminished by Sickneſs and other Accidents, he retreated again to *Dunbar*. And now the *Scots*, thinking the *Engliſh* ſufficiently weakened, followed them cloſe, and encamped on a Hill about a Mile from *Dunbar*, reſolving now at laſt to fall upon them, and to that End began to march down the Hill. But *Cromwell*, in this Extremity, calling a Council of War in the Night, it was reſolved to prevent them, by attacking them firſt, an Hour before Day, being the third of *September*; which he did with ſuch

desperate Fury and Resolution, that he soon put the whole *Scots* Army, twice as numerous as his own, in Confusion, and entirely defeated them, killing several Thousands, and taking near 10,000 Prisoners. The *Scots* immediately, in Consternation, quitted *Edinburgh* and *Leith*, and *Cromwell* took Possession of them; and then laid Siege to *Edinburgh-Castle*, which he became Master of about the End of *December*.

The King was crowned at *Scone*, *January 1, 1650-1*, when he again took the Covenant, being obliged to dissemble his Dislike of it. And now the *Scots* were wholly intent upon raising another Army, into which it was thought fit to admit the *Hamiltonians*, as well as to Posts in the Government, upon their making a Declaration of their Repentance. This was against the Sense of the Bulk of the *Scotch* Nation, who well knew, that such Declaration was not sincere. This divided them into two Parties, the *Resolutioners*, so called on account of their carrying it in Parliament, to admit the *Hamiltonians*, and the *Protestors*, who being great Zealots for the Covenant, were against such Admission. From these sprang another Party, called *Remonstrators*, which prevailed chiefly in the *Western* Counties, where an Association was formed, as well against the King and the Defection of the *Kirk* Party, as against the Army of *Sectaries*, as *Cromwell's* Army was called in *Scotland*. However, such an Army as has been mentioned was raised, consisting of all Parties who were willing to serve in this War. The King commanded it in Person: He had *Lesley* for his Lieutenant-General, and went and encamped at *Torwood*, between *Edinburgh* and *Stirling*. Here they were entrenched much in the same Manner as before the Battle of *Dunbar*, and *Cromwell*

used the same Arts to draw them to an Engagement, but in vain; they continued safe in their Intrenchments, and were well supplied with Provisions from the County of *Fife*. This made the *English* General, at last, resolve to cut off all Communication with those Parts. And so having sent over a good Body of Troops into *Fife*, under *Lambert* and *Overton*, who totally routed a strong Party of the King's, which was sent against them, he quickly after transported thither his whole Army, and marching farther *North*, made himself Master of *Perth* or *St. John's Town*. Thus *Cromwell* got behind the King; who being now under a Necessity, if he staid in *Scotland*, either of fighting him, or starving in his Camp, took a sudden Resolution to march his Army into *England*, not doubting but he should be joined by great Numbers of his Friends, especially in the *Northern* Counties.

Accordingly the King entered *England* by the Way of *Carlisle*, on *August 6, 1651*, and presently caused himself to be proclaimed at the Head of his Army, as he did at all the Market-Towns through which he passed. The Parliament at *Westminster* were startled at this sudden Invasion, and began to think *Cromwell* had made a false Step. But he wrote to them, telling them he would overtake the Enemy, and doubted not but he should give a good Account of them. The Parliament exerted themselves to the utmost on this Occasion. They not only published an Act, strictly forbidding the abetting or assisting *Charles Stuart*, or any of his Adherents, on Pain of High-Treason, but ordered the Militia of the several Counties to be drawn out, to obstruct his March; and the Lord *Fairfax* now also took the Field with a considerable Body for the same Purpose. General *Cromwell*,



*Cromwell*, to lose no Time, immediately sent *Lambert* and *Harrison*, with Part of his Army, to molest the King's March as much as possible, who soon found his Friends did not come in to him as he expected, being hindered by the Forces of the Commonwealth, who spread themselves over the Nation. The King therefore, instead of marching to *London*, as it was thought he designed, with Difficulty got to *Worcester*, *August* 23, and there encamped, fortifying himself as well as he could against any Attack. The Earl of *Derby* was the only Person who made any considerable Attempt to serve the King. He got together about 1500 Horse; but, before he could join the King, he was set upon by Colonel *Lilburn*, and entirely defeated, himself with Difficulty escaping to the King at *Worcester*.

In the mean Time, *Cromwell*, having settled Matters in *Scotland*, and left Lieutenant-General *George Monk*, with a sufficient Force, to command there in his Absence, marched in all Haste with the rest of his Army after the King. His Forces daily increased as he passed along, by Parties from all Quarters, and at *Keinton* he joined the rest of the Parliament's Forces under *Fleetwood*, *Desborough*, Lord *Grey of Groby*, *Lambert*, and *Harrison*; so that his Army was now double in Number to that of the King. He arrived at *Worcester*, *September* 1, and on the 3d, being that Day Twelvemonth that the Battle of *Dunbar* was fought, *Cromwell* charged the King's Army so vigorously, that, after some Hours Dispute, they were driven back on both Sides the *Severn*, and retiring into the Town in the utmost Confusion, were followed by *Cromwell's* Men, who made a dreadful Slaughter of the Royal Troops, and obtained a compleat Victory, taking many Thousands Prisoners. Among those

of Quality, was the Earl of *Derby*, who was afterwards beheaded at *Bolton*. The King narrowly escaped, and after wandering about in a Peasant's Habit, with a faithful Guide, stooping to the meanest Offices to conceal himself the better, and undergoing numberless Fatigues and Dangers, for the Space of several Weeks, got safe over into *France*. During these Adventures, he hid himself a whole Day in a tufted Oak, in the Midst of a thick Wood. *Cromwell*, after the Battle, having ordered the Walls of *Worcester* to be levelled with the Ground, returned in Triumph to *London*; and *Monk*, in a short Time, completed the Reduction of *Scotland*, which was afterwards united with *England* in one Commonwealth.

Between the Battles of *Dunbar* and *Worcester*, it was discovered that some Presbyterians were carrying on a Plot against the Government, by corresponding with their Brethren the *Scots*, in order to promote the King's Interest in *Scotland*, and in *England*, looking upon him now as a good Presbyterian King, since his having taken the Covenant. Four eminent Presbyterian Divines were concerned in this Plot, one of whom, Mr. *Love*, was executed on *Tower-Hill*, on *August* 22.

The Commonwealth was at the Height of its Glory, and enjoyed a profound Tranquillity, after the Success at *Worcester*; when a War broke out between it and the Republick of *Holland*. The Parliament had early sent Ambassadors to the *States* to propose a strict Union with them, or such a Coalition as should make them, as it were, one Republick with *England*. But the *Dutch* thought this so injurious to their Commerce, that they not only refused to come into it, but the *English* Ambassadors were very much affronted by the Populace. And now, since the Par-

liament could not bring them to their Terms, they had a mind to break with them, and to that End passed an Act, forbidding all Commodities, that were not of the Growth and Manufacture of the Country from whence they came; to be brought into *England* in any other than *English* Bottoms; which put an End to the Commerce between *England* and *Holland*. And when the States sent Ambassadors to desire the Repeal of this Act, they were so far from doing it, that they insisted on Satisfaction for some old Injuries the *Dutch* had done to the *English*. A War, therefore, necessarily ensued, in which were fought several of the most terrible and bloody Sea-Fights, that ever had been known, between the *Dutch* under the famous *Van Trump*, and the *English* under the renowned *Blake*. The *Dutch* were generally worsted in these Engagements, though the *English* also suffered great Loss. The fifth, which was fought in *February*, 1652-3, lasted three Days. The *Dutch* at last sued for Peace, but before it was concluded, a new Revolution happened in *England*.

*Cromwell's* Reputation and Glory were arrived to such a Height, after the Victories at *Dunbar* and *Worcester*, that, as many envied his Greatness, the Parliament grew jealous of his Power, and now he had done their Work for them, would have been glad to have ruined him. The General was aware of this, and was resolved to prevent it; which it was not very difficult for him to do, as he had secured the Esteem and Af-

fection of the Officers and Soldiers, and as the Parliament, after so long a Continuance, began to be disagreeable to the People. Things being in this State, the General and his Officers made loud Complaints against the Grievances of this long Parliament, and gave out, that they intended to perpetuate themselves in Power. It is not unlikely indeed, that *Cromwell's* Ambition might at the same Time inspire him with Thoughts of setting up himself; as appears pretty plain, from some Conferences he had with his Friends, soon after the Battle of *Worcester*. However it be, the Parliament, instead of dissolving themselves, to make Way for a new Representative, as the Army insisted they should, fell to preparing an Act for filling up their House, and to declare it High-Treason, for any one to propose or contrive the Alteration of the present Government. Upon this, *Cromwell*, on *April* 20, 1653, took a Party of Soldiers, and went to the House; and having sat and heard their Debates for some Time, when the Question was going to be put, for passing the Act, which would continue them above a Year and a half longer, he stood up all on a sudden, and bade the Speaker leave the Chair; and then stamping with his Feet, and telling them they were no longer a Parliament, upon this Signal the Soldiers entered, who, by his Orders, saw the House cleared of the Members, being about an Hundred, who all quietly departed; and then, having caused the Doors to be locked, he went away to *Whitehall*.





J. Ketchum scul.

## OLIVER CROMWELL. 1653-1658.

**T**HE General having thus by Force turned out his Masters, became himself, of Course, Master of the Commonwealth ; for though he did not assume the Title of *Protector* till towards the End of the Year, yet his Power was in effect the same, from the very Moment that he succeeded in this bold Undertaking. He immediately consulted with his Council of Officers at *Whitehall*, how to carry on the Government, and by their Advice published a Declaration of the Grounds and Reasons of his dissolving the late Parliament, promising to put the Government into the Hands of *Persons of approved Fidelity and Honesty* ; signed by the Lord General and his Council of Officers, *April 22, 1653*. This met with a good Reception, and was answered by Addresses from the Fleet, the Army, and People, approving of the late Action, and promising to stand by the General and

his Council of Officers. This Declaration was followed by another, *April 30*, signed *O. Cromwell*, giving Notice, that till the Persons above mentioned should meet, a *Council of State* was appointed for the better carrying on the Affairs of the Commonwealth.

On *June 2*, there was another terrible Sea-Fight between the *English* under *Blake, Monk, and Dean*, and the *Dutch* under *Van Trump* and *De Ruyter* ; in which the *English*, to *Oliver's* great Satisfaction, got the Victory, sinking six of the Enemy's best Ships, blowing up two others, and taking eleven : But they had the Misfortune to lose Admiral *Dean*, who was killed by a Cannon-Ball at the Beginning of the Engagement.

It having been resolved by the General and his Council of Officers, according to their first Declaration, to summon select Persons, to be nominated by themselves, out of every County, who should be  
a Re-

a Representative of the whole Nation ; and the Persons having been agreed upon, in Number 144, *Cromwell*, on *June 8*, sent his Summons to each of them to appear in the Council-Chamber at *Whiteball*, on *July 4* ; using this authoritative Stile, after the Preamble, *I Oliver Cromwell*, Captain-General and Commander in Chief of all the Armies and Forces raised, and to be raised, within this Commonwealth, do hereby summon and require you, &c. Several other Acts of Authority were performed by the General before the Meeting of this Convention.

The Persons summoned met on the Day appointed, when the General, attended by his Officers, made a Speech to them ; and then, by an Instrument under his Hand and Seal, he constituted them, or any 40 of them, the supreme Authority of the Nation ; to sit no longer than the 3d of *November, 1654*, and three Months before, to make Choice of other Persons to succeed them, who were not to sit above a Year, and to provide for a like Succession in the Government. Then they adjourned to the next Day, when they met in the Parliament-House, and at once voted themselves the Parliament of the Commonwealth of *England*. But it seems, by the Characters of the Persons who composed this Assembly, that *Oliver* did not intend Things should continue long in this Way, for, though there were among them several Men of Fortune and Capacity, yet the major Part were either rank Enthusiasts, or Persons of obscure Birth, and small Parts and Abilities : And though they made some good Orders in lesser Matters, yet in Things of greater Concernment their Counsels were full of Perplexity and Confusion. One *Praise-God Barebone*, a Leather-

Seller in *Fleet-Street*, was a busy Man in this Assembly, from whom it was called in Derision *Barebone's Parliament*.

In *August*, there was another Bloody Sea-Engagement between the two contending States, in which Admiral *Van Trump*, the Glory of the *Dutch Nation*, was slain. The *Dutch* then applied to the Parliament for a Peace, but in vain ; upon which they addressed themselves to *Cromwell*, promising, if he would depose the present Powers, and assume the Government to himself, they would enter into such a defensive Alliance with him, as should secure him against all his Enemies, foreign and domestick. This he was now resolved to do, for which the Confusion of their Debates afforded him a Handle. And so the Matter having been concerted with *Rouse* the Speaker, and the General's select Friends in the House, they met early in the Morning, *December 12*, before the other Members, who were not in the Secret, had taken their Seats ; and voted, That, as it was not for the publick Good, that the Parliament should sit any longer, it was fit they should resign up their Powers to the Lord-General ; which the Speaker and Members, going with the Mace to *Whiteball*, did accordingly, by a Writing under their Hands. And by this Means, the politick *Cromwell*, with his Council of Officers, was again in Possession of the supreme Power, which he had before delegated to this Assembly.

This done, he advised with his Council of Officers, and other Persons of Interest in the Nation, how the Government should be carried on ; and these immediately resolved, That *Oliver Cromwell* should be Lord Protector of the Commonwealth of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*,



*Ireland*, and constituted him such, by a large Instrument, called the *Instrument of Government*, consisting of forty-two Articles. By this Instrument, the supreme Legislative Authority was to be in the Lord Protector and the People in Parliament; and the executive Power in the Protector, with the Advice of his Council. The Parliament was to be chosen in such Manner as to be a more equal Representative, the Members for the Counties, and some large Cities, to be increased, and those for the lesser Boroughs to be either reduced, or wholly omitted. There were to be 400 for *England*, 30 for *Scotland*, and the same Number for *Ireland*, all three being joined in one Commonwealth. Colonel *Montague*, afterwards Earl of *Sandwich*, and Sir *Anthony Ashley Cooper*, afterwards Earl of *Shaftesbury*, were of the Protector's first Council. On December 16, his Highness was solemnly installed, and then proclaimed, first in and about *London*, and afterwards throughout *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*. Thus did this great Man, who was hardly known in the former Part of his Life, mount himself into the Throne of three Kingdoms, and, though he had not the Title of King, ruled with more Power than most preceding Kings. He applied himself closely to Business, and was indefatigable in the Management of publick Affairs, and on all Occasions maintained the Part of a great Prince, as much as if he had been so born and bred. And now congratulatory Addresses were presented to him from all the Parts of the three Nations, and the greatest foreign States courted his Friendship and Alliance.

It is surprising how he managed the several opposite Parties then in

the Nation, all mortal Enemies to each other, so as to make them contribute to his own Security, though most of them hated him in their Hearts. He kept a strict Eye upon the *Cavaliers*, and, for the most Part terrified them into Submission. He caressed the *Presbyterians* to keep them in good Humour, and when they began to take too much upon them, he played the *Independants* and other Sects against them, in order to humble them, and keep them within due Bounds. The *Republicans* of all Sorts were his greatest Enemies, because he had overturned their beloved Scheme of Government; and these he took care to divide, by setting the *Enthusiasts*, and *Fifth-Monarchy* Men, against the *State-Republicans*, who hated him most of all. The former he would cajole, by talking to them in their own Way, entering into his old Familiarities with them, and ending the Discourse commonly with a long Prayer; but the latter, who were said to be *Deists*, and whom he used to call *Heathens*, he could not so easily manage. However, he with wonderful Art and Dexterity carried Things farther with all Parties, than was thought possible: And though this did not hinder frequent Plots and Conspiracies against him, he had his Spies in every Corner, and by his early Intelligence crushed them before they could be put in Execution.

On April 5, 1654, the Lord-Protector concluded a Peace with the *Dutch*, upon very advantageous Terms. Among the rest, he obliged them to pay 300,000*l.* for the Damage done to the *English* at *Amboyna*, &c. many Years before, for which the two last Kings could obtain no Satisfaction.

*Cromwell's* good Policy appeared in nothing more than in advancing

to the several Posts in the Government, Men that were best qualified for them. The famous *Matthew Hale* was one of his Judges, and in general he supplied the Benches with the ablest Lawyers. *Thurloe*, a very able Minister, a second *Walsingham* for Intelligence, was made Secretary of State. When the *Dutch War* was over, he sent *Monk* back into *Scotland*, to keep that Country in Order; and two or three Years after, made his younger Son *Henry*, a Person of excellent Parts and Abilities, Lord-Lieutenant of *Ireland*. *Ludlow* had been intrusted with the Government of that Island, after *Ireton*, who died at the Siege of *Limerick*, in 1651; and *Fleetwood*, who married *Ireton's* Widow, one of the Protector's Daughters, had succeeded *Ludlow*.

The Protector had not long enjoyed his new Dignity, before a Conspiracy against him was discovered, for which *Gerard* and *Vorwel* were executed, on *July 10, 1654*. And the same Day, *Don Pantaleon Sa*, the *Portugal* Ambassador's Brother, was beheaded for a Riot and Murder. This was thought very extraordinary, but the Protector said *Justice must be done*.

His Highness, pursuant to the *Instrument of Government*, ordered Writs to be issued for chusing Members to serve in Parliament. This Parliament met on *September 3*, and the Protector went in great State, and opened it with a Speech: But it soon appeared, that they were not for his Purpose; for they immediately fell to debating his *Instrument of Government*, and first, that fundamental Article of the supreme Legislative Power being in a single Person and a Parliament, against which several warm Speeches were made. The Protector, upon this, ordered them to attend him in the *Painted Chamber*, where he

shewed his Displeasure in a Speech, and, moreover, appointed them a *Test or Recognition* of the Government, as it had been established; and none were permitted to enter the House, but such as would subscribe it. About 300 did so, and took their Places; and though they declared, that *Oliver Cromwell* should be Protector during Life, yet they took such Liberties with the other Articles of Government, spending several Months in nothing else but debating on them, that the Protector was highly offended. And besides, he had received Intelligence of a Plot for an Insurrection, contrived chiefly by the *Cavaliers*, to which many of the Members were privy, and gave Encouragement, by protracting Time in long and fruitless Debates. He therefore ordered the Parliament to attend him in the *Painted Chamber*, *January 22, 1654-5*, and after a very long and intricate Speech, giving them to understand, that he knew their Designs, in great Displeasure dissolved them.

Two Days after the Dissolution, Major *Wildman*, a noted Republican, one of those who had been excluded for refusing to sign the *Recognition*, was seized with a Paper about him, being a Declaration shewing why the People should rise in Arms against the Tyrant *Oliver Cromwell*. He was kept some Time in Prison, and then, contrary to Expectation, discharged.

The *Cavaliers* had designed two Insurrections, one in the *North*, and another in the *West*. The former, which was to have been headed by *Wilmot* Earl of *Rockester*, was wholly laid aside, before it was well begun. But in the *West* some faint Attempt was made: Sir *Joseph Wagstaff*, Col. *Penruddock*, *Grove*, and *Jones*, entered *Salisbury* with about 200 Horse,



Horse, at the Time of the Assizes, seized the Judges and the Sheriff, and proclaimed the King. But finding the People not in a Disposition to join them, they marched farther *Westward*; and being pursued by a Troop of Horse that lay in the Neighbourhood, they were defeated, and most of them taken Prisoners. *Penruddock* and *Grove* were beheaded at *Exeter*, and several were tryed and hanged both there and at *Salisbury*. But *Wagstaff* luckily made his Escape. These Conspiracies and Insurrections gave a Handle to the Protector to divide *England* into certain Districts, and to appoint Officers severally in each, under the Title of *Major-Generals*, the better to keep the Royalists and Republicans in Awe, and to levy the Taxes imposed on them. These *Major-Generals* became so many Tyrants, and so oppressed the People, that *Cromwell* thought it necessary first to restrain them, and, at last, totally to abolish them.

*France* and *Spain* were now at War, and each strove to gain the Protector. He was for some Time in Suspence which to join with, but at last resolved it should be *France*, where Cardinal *Mazarine* was Prime-Minister, in the Minority of *Lewis XIV.* Being thus determined, he equipped a Fleet, and sent it under the Command of *Penn*, with some Land-Forces under *Venables*, to attack the *Spanish* Settlement of *St. Domingo* in *Hispaniola*. They arrived there in *April*, 1655, but by some Misconduct in landing the Forces, the Design miscarried, and they were repulsed to their Ships with great Loss. To make some Amends, they sailed for *Jamaica*, and took it on *May 17*; which profitable Island the *English* have held ever since. Upon their Return, *Venables*

was committed to the Tower, but soon released.

In the mean Time, *Blake* performed Wonders in the *Mediterranean*. He was sent first to chastize the Corsairs of *Barbary*, and to demand ample Satisfaction of all the States, who had in any Manner molested the *English*; both which he did with glorious Success. After this, in *September 1656*, he attacked, sunk and burnt the whole *Spanish* Plate-Fleet, except two of the Ships which he took, whose valuable Treasure being landed at *Portsmouth*, was conveyed, as it were in Triumph, to *London*. In fine, this brave Admiral, the Glory of the *English* Nation, in *April*, the following Year, burnt six large *Spanish* Galeons at the *Canaries* (whilst Captain *Stayner* destroyed ten smaller Vessels) and died on Shipboard, in his Return home. The Protector, to shew his Esteem for his Memory, gave him a pompous Interment in *Henry VIIIth's Chapel*.

Some Time before, the *Fifth-Monarchy Men*, or *Anabaptists*, as some call them, among whom was *Major-General Harrison*, entered into an enthusiastick Plot against *Cromwell*; but it was timely discovered and prevented by the Vigilance of the Protector's Spies; As was also another Conspiracy formed against his Life, by one *Miles Sindercombe*, a *Leveller*.

The Protector had thought fit to summon a new Parliament, which met on *September 17*, 1656. The Members were to be approved by his Highness's Council, before they should have Leave to sit; and by this Means near an Hundred were excluded, who published a severe Remonstrance against this Violence. And now the sitting Members proceeded just as *Oliver* would have them. They passed an Act for

renouncing the pretended Title (as they called it) of *Charles Stuart*, and another, declaring it High-Treason to attempt any Thing against the Protector's Life. They approved of the War with *Spain*, and granted large Sums of Money for carrying it on. And after they had set some Months, it was carried in the House, though the Army Party mostly opposed it, to offer *Cromwell* the Title of *King*; which they actually did on *April 4, 1657*. It appeared plain enough, that he did not dislike the Offer; but as he knew it was against the Sense of the Army, he demurred upon it, and a Committee was appointed to satisfy him, and to persuade him to accept it. All this was only to gain Time, in order to bring the Army to approve of the Design: Which *Oliver* finding he could not do, and that his Brother-in-Law, *Desborough*, and his Son-in-Law, *Fleetwood*, were particularly averse to it; he with great Shew of Humility, on the 8th of *May*, told the Parliament, that he could not undertake the Government with the Title of *King*. However, they confirmed to him his Dignity of *Protector*, by an Act called, *The Humble Petition and Advice of the Parliament to his Highness*; whereby he was also empowered to name his Successor, and to call Parliaments consisting of two Houses; the Persons legally chosen not to be excluded but by Consent of the House of which they were Members. The Protector gave his Assent to this Act, which consisted of eighteen Articles, on *May 25*; and on *June 26*, was inaugurated in *Westminster-Hall*, with the like Pomp and Magnificence as at a Coronation.

*Cromwell*, pursuant to his Treaty with *France*, sent over 6000 Men to join the *French Army* against the

*Spaniards*, and *Mardike* and *Dunkirk* were to be put into the Hands of the *English*, as soon as taken; as the former was in *October* this Year.

King *Charles* having been obliged to leave *France*, upon *Cromwell's* entering into an Alliance with that Crown, retired to *Cologne*, and resided there above two Years: And now, having concluded a Treaty with the Catholick King, he this Year repaired to *Bruges* in *Flanders*. About the same Time, a Plot was laid for an Insurrection in *England* in his Favour, and the Marquess of *Ormond* came over to *London*, to forward the Design. *Cromwell*, having Notice of it by his Spies, published a Proclamation for apprehending the Conspirators before they could get into a Body. The Marquess narrowly escaped. But *Dr. Hewet*, *Sir Henry Slingby*, *Mr. Mordaunt*, and several others, were seized; and the two former, being tryed by a High Court of Justice, were condemned and executed.

The Parliament met again, on *January 20, 1657-8*, to which Time they had adjourned. It now consisted of two Houses, the new one being called *The Other House*, to answer to the House of Peers. They were constituted by the Protector's Writs of Summons, and many of them were called up from the Lower House. This, and the Admission of the Members, who had been excluded in the first Session, made such an Alteration in that Assembly, that they seemed disposed to undo all that had been done. They called the Authority of the *Other House* in Question, and disputed the Validity of the *Humble Petition and Advice*. But the Protector thought fit to put a Stop to these Proceedings by a sudden Dissolution of the Parliament,



ment, on *February 4*. And it was some Time after this, that the Conspirators above-mentioned were executed.

On *June 25, 1658*, *Dunkirk* was taken from the *Spaniards*, by the *English* and *French* Forces, and immediately, according to Treaty, surrendered up to the Lord Protector of *England*. But it cost the Confederates a Battle, before they could obtain it, with the *Spanish* Generals and the Dukes of *York* and *Gloucester*, who advanced with 15,000 Men to relieve the Place; but were entirely defeated, chiefly by the Bravery of the *English* under *Lockhart* and *Morgan*. *Cromwell* placed a strong Garrison in *Dunkirk*, and made *Lockhart* Governor.

The Protector did not long survive this glorious Success of his Arms. He was taken ill in *August*, and died on his beloved and victorious Day, the third of *September*, in the 60th Year of his Age, having, as it is said, named his Son *Richard* to succeed him, just before he expired. He had a most pompous Funeral bestowed on him, and his Body was in Appearance buried in *Westminster-Abbey*. But some say it was wrapt in Lead, and sunk below Bridge in the *Thames*: And others affirm it to have been buried in *Naseby-Field*. He was born at *Huntington*, of a good Family, of *Welsh* Extraction, the Name being originally *Williams*; but one of the Family marrying the Sister of the famous *Thomas Cromwell*, Earl of *Essex*, in *Henry VIIIth's* Reign, a Son by that Marriage took that Name, and transmitted it to his Posterity. *Oliver* made no Figure in the World, till a little before the Breaking-out of the Civil War; and we have seen by what Steps and Accidents he mounted to Power afterwards; which he could not have

done, if he had not been endowed with a most extraordinary Genius and Capacity. After he rose to Sovereignty, under the Name of Protector, though his Government was arbitrary, and supported only by the Army, he did many Things worthy of Praise. He encouraged Trade and Commerce, maintained the Honour of the Nation, and in many Instances effectually interposed in favour of the Protestants abroad, chiefly by Means of the Influence he had over Cardinal *Mazarine*; who fearing, if he should displease him, that he would break with *France*, durst deny him nothing. The Nation, certainly, never made a greater Figure abroad, since the Days of Queen *Elizabeth*, than it did under *Cromwell*. Indeed, I have often thought his Government, in many Respects, resembled hers, especially in the Choice of fit Ministers for the several Parts of the Administration. But the fundamental Difference was this, that, whereas she supported herself by the Affections of the People, *Oliver*, for Want of that, which he would have been very glad to have had, supported himself by a standing Army; though he had many secret Enemies in it, and it was with great Skill and Dexterity, that he kept all Things quiet there. In one Thing, indeed, they were too much alike; for if *Oliver* sacrificed King *Charles I.* to his own Safety, Queen *Elizabeth* did the same by the Queen of *Scots*. In short, his greatest Enemies acknowledge he was not unworthy of the Government, if his Way to it had been just and innocent: And how far the Circumstances and Necessities of the Times may excuse him, is not my Business to say.

Besides his two Sons, *Richard* and *Henry*, he had four Daughters, all Women

Women of great Sense and Virtue. *Bridget* was Wife to *Henry Ireton*, and afterwards to Lieutenant-General *Fleetwood*. *Elizabeth* was married to Mr. *John Cleypole*, and died a little before her Father. *Mary*, his third Daughter, to the Lord Viscount *Falconbridge*, afterwards made an Earl by King *William*; and *Frances*, the youngest Daughter, first to *Robert Rich*, Esq; Grandson and Heir to the Earl of *Warwick*, and after-

wards to Sir *John Russel* of *Chippingham* in *Cambridgeshire*.

Among the eminent Persons who died under *Oliver's* Protectorship, were the famous Mr. *John Selden*; the venerable Archbishop *Usher*, who came over to *England* a little before the Breaking-out of the *Irish* Massacre; and Dr. *Harvey*, the celebrated Discoverer of the Circulation of the Blood.

RICHARD CROMWELL: *With the VARIOUS GOVERNMENTS till the Restoration.* 1658—1659.

1658.

FROM the Death of *Oliver* to the *Restoration*, which was but about a Year and three Quarters, there were in *England* no less than five or six Forms of Government, if they may be so called, when the whole was little better than a State of Anarchy and Confusion. *Richard Cromwell* was peaceably proclaimed Protector upon the Death of his Father, and was congratulated thereupon by Addresses from all Parts. But he wanted his Father's Spirit and Parts to support himself, especially against the Intrigues of the Army, which were beginning to work in *Oliver's* Time, for which Major-General *Lambert* had been discharged; and if he had lived, it is likely he would have cashiered other Officers, and put such in their Room, as would have secured the Army still in Obedience. But this was above *Richard's* Capacity. He wanted to become Master of the Army, as his Father had been; but the Officers resolved he should not: And his Brother-in-Law *Fleetwood*, and Uncle *Desborough*, were foremost in the Opposition, and used all their Arts to undermine him. However *Richard*, in order to sup-

port himself the better, by the Advice of his Council, called a Parliament, which met on *January 27*, 1658-9. And though there were a great many Republicans in the House of Commons, who held long Debates about the Authority of the *Other House*, and other Points in the *Humble Petition and Advice*, yet *Richard's* Friends at last prevailed, and he was recognized Protector by the Parliament. But before it met, his secret Enemies in the Army, under a Shew of Friendship, had advised him to call up to *London* as many Officers as could be spared from the Regiments quartered in different Parts of the Country, for the better supporting him in his Authority, if the Parliament should not prove favourable to him. *Richard* thinking this Advice was sincere, complied, not suspecting, that it was designed only to strengthen the Combination against him. And now the Officers formed a Council at *London*, which they called the *Great Council of the Army*, restored *Lambert* to his Post, and presented a Petition to the Protector, demanding *Fleetwood* for their General. *Richard*, now perceiving their



their Design was to make themselves independent of him, rejected the Petition: And the Commons voted, that there should be no Council of Officers whilst the Parliament was sitting. Upon this the Officers resolved to compel *Richard* to part with his Parliament. They brought up their Forces to *Whitehall*, seized all the Avenues, and *Desborough*, attended by a strong Guard, demanded an Audience of the Protector, and required him, in the Name of all the Officers, to dissolve the Parliament. He at first refused, but upon *Desborough's* threatening him, and telling him, they were resolved to have what they demanded, by fair Means or foul, he complied; and the Parliament having adjourned for three Days, he immediately published a Proclamation, April 22, 1659, declaring them dissolved; though *Ingoldsby*, *Howard*, afterwards Earl of *Carlisle*, and some other Officers, had dissuaded him from it, at the Beginning of the Design, for which they were afterwards cashiered.

The Officers then seized the Government, taking no farther Notice of *Richard*. But Things could not remain long in this State of Anarchy; and so they resolved to restore the Members of the long Parliament, whom *Oliver* had turned out in 1653; which they did on the 7th of May, declaring for the Good old Cause, a Commonwealth, without a single Person or House of Peers. But they had first chosen *Fleetwood* for their General. The Rump Parliament, thus restored, gave *Richard* 2000*l.* for paying his private Debts, and ordered him to quit *Whitehall*; which Order he quietly obeyed, and returned again to a private Life. They also recalled his Brother *Henry Cromwell* from *Ireland*, who complied with their Orders, though, if he had refused, he might have given them

some Trouble, as he was exceedingly beloved by the Soldiery, as well as by the *English* Inhabitants. There being a great Number of Republicans in the Army, and among the inferior Officers, and both *Fleetwood* and *Lambert* having been disappointed in their Expectation of succeeding *Oliver*, will account for the strong and early Combination against *Richard*. *Lambert* was ambitious of being a second *Cromwell*, but as he could not compass his End, whilst *Fleetwood* was General, he complied with the rest in restoring the Rump, in hopes he should be able to manage *Fleetwood*, as *Oliver* had managed *Fairfax*.

The Parliament had not sat long, before Differences began to arise, as usual, between them and the principal Officers. The Parliament wanted to have the Army in Dependence, and for that End caressed the inferior Officers, that they might make use of them to get rid of their Commanders; who, being aware of the Parliament's Designs, bent their whole Study to preserve their Posts and Authority. But before the Animosity rose to any great Height, they had Information of Plots forming by the Royalists in divers Parts of the Nation; with whom the Presbyterians, from this Time, seem to have joined, in Hopes of freeing themselves from the Restraints the Independants kept them under. The Design was timely frustrated in most Places, by Means of *Thurloe's* Intelligence from Sir *Richard Willis*, who being, as it were, at the Head of the King's Party, had been long bribed by *Oliver* to betray them. The only Rising was in *Cheshire*, where Sir *George Booth* having got together about 500 Men, seized *Chester*, and published a Manifesto against the Parliament. *Lambert* was sent against him about the Beginning of *August*, defeated him, and

Z

retook

retook *Chester*. Sir *George* escaped for that Time, but was taken soon after, and committed to the *Tower*.

The Conteſts between the Parliament and Officers ſtill continued, in which *Lambert*, though abſent, had a great Share. Things were at laſt come to that Paſs, that the Officers ſaw they muſt either quit their Authority, and tamely ſubmit to the Parliament, or once more turn them out: For which Purpoſe *Lambert* drew his Forces near *London*, and came thither himſelf, to aſſiſt at the Conſultations of his Friends. And yet the Parliament, being encouraged by *Monk's* promiſing to ſtand by them, ventured to caſhier *Lambert*, *Deſborough*, and ſome other principal Officers, vacated *Fleetwood's* Commiſſion, and named Commiſſioners to govern the Army. Upon this, *Lambert* drawing ſome Regiments into the City, ſecured all the Avenues to *Weſtminſter-Hall*, and ſtopped the Speaker and Members, as they were going to the Houſe. A ſtrong Guard was afterwards placed at the Parliament Doors, to hinder their Meeting for the future.

Thus the Rump Parliament was again depoſed by the Army; on October 13, five Months after they had been reſtored. And now there was a ſecond Anarchy of a few Days, which was rendered tolerable, by the Army's being kept in exact Diſcipline, and by the Officers appointing a *Council of Ten* out of their own Body to take Care of ſuch Affairs as were moſt preſſing. Then they declared *Fleetwood* their General, *Lambert* their Lieutenant-General, and *Deſborough* Commiſſary-General of the Horſe. At laſt, on October 26, they eſtabliſhed a *Committee of Safety*, conſiſting of 23, and entruſted to them the Government, who were to conſider farther of a Settlement, without a King, ſingle Perſon, or Houſe of Peers.

Whilſt theſe Things were doing, and *Lambert* governed the Army in the Name of *Fleetwood*, *Monk*, who hated *Lambert*, reſolved to march out of *Scotland* with the beſt of his Troops, and reſtore the Rump Parliament. As to any other Deſign, he all along uſed the moſt profound Diſſimulation, and opened himſelf only as Circumſtances offered. But as it was known he was preparing to march into *England*, to re-eſtabliſh the Parliament, the Members were no leſs buſy in endeavouring to reſtore themſelves. In the mean Time, the Fleet, the Governor of *Portsmouth*, and great Part of the Army, deſerting their Officers, declared for the Parliament. Now the *Committee of Safety*, *Fleetwood* and his Associates at *London*, were forced to give Way, reſign their Authority, and conſent to the Meeting of the Parliament; who accordingly met on December 26. *Lambert* was gone into the *North* to oppoſe *Monk*; but when his Troops heard that the Parliament was reſtored, they put him under Arreſt, and he was brought up to *London*, and impriſoned in the *Tower*.

The Reſtoration of the Rump ſeemed to extinguiſh the Hopes of the King's Friends. But what was ſoon after done by the Interpoſition of *Monk*, raiſed them again. He entered *England* with his Army on January 2, 1659-60. The Rump, now ſuſpecting he had ſomething farther in View than reſtoring them, had rather he had ſtaid where he was; but he found Pretences to continue his March, ſtill profeſſing it was purely for the Service of the Parliament. At *Leiceſter*, he was met by Deputies from *London*, with an Address, praying the Reſtoration of the Members, who had been excluded in 1648, when the Army put a Force upon the Parliament, in order to accompliſh their Deſigns againſt



against the late King. And at several Places, as he marched along, he received Addresses to the same Purpose, to which he gave uncertain Answers, the better to conceal his Design, which some thought was to set up himself, like *Cromwell*, and others, to restore the King. In these Addresses, the Presbyterians seemed to have joined with the Royalists, as those secluded Members were mostly of the Presbyterian Stamp. They were desirous now to rescue themselves out of the Hands of the Independants at any Rate. *Oliver* had indeed suffered their Church-Government to continue, but with a full Liberty to the other Sects, which was their great Grievance.

Both the Parliament and Army were uneasy at *Monk's* Proceedings; but the Parliament was more jealous of their own Army, than of *Monk's*; and this hindered them from uniting, which would effectually have ruined his Scheme: Instead of this, upon *Monk's* Approach, the Parliament, at his Desire, ordered the Regiments quartered about London to retire at a Distance, to make Room for his Troops. *Lambert* was now in the Tower; and *Fleetwood*, and the rest, lost their Courage, as doubting whether they should be able to preserve their Command over their inferior Officers; and so they tamely submitted to this Order of the Parliament.

*Monk* entered London, February 4, and the next Day going to the Parliament, received the Thanks of the House. A few Days after, the City of London, refusing to pay any more Taxes, till the Parliament was filled, *Monk* was ordered to march into the City and chastise them, by taking away their Gates, Portcullises, Posts, and Chains, and arresting eleven of the Common-Council: Which he, thinking it expedient, as yet, to keep fair with the Parlia-

ment, punctually executed; at which the City was greatly enraged against him; but he soon made them easy again, by returning with his Forces, reconciling himself to the Magistrates and Citizens, and promising to restore the secluded Members; which occasioned great Rejoicings, Ringing of Bells, and Bonfires, at which a great many *Rumps* were roasted, in Derision of the sitting Members.

In short, on February 12, *Monk* put his grand Design in Execution. The secluded Members attended him in a Body at *Whitehall*, from whence, after receiving their Promise to call a free Parliament, and then dissolve themselves, he gave them a Guard to the Parliament-House, where they took their Seats; upon which, the Leaders of the Independant and Republican Party, surprized at this sudden Appearance of the secluded Members amongst them, withdrew from the House.

The Parliament thus altered repealed the Oath for abjuring *Charles Stuart*, as also the Engagement to be faithful to the Commonwealth without a King, or House of Peers, and passed several other Votes in favour of the King's Restoration; and then having issued out Writs for calling a free Parliament, and appointed a new Council of State, they dissolved themselves on the 16th of March.

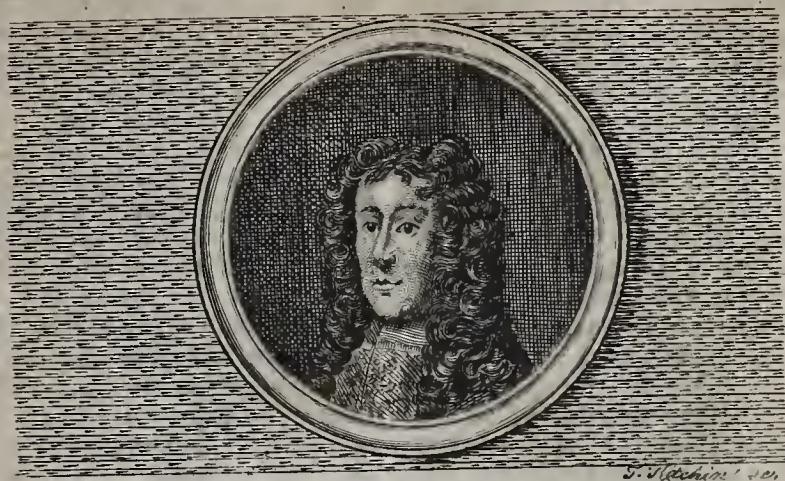
Before the new Parliament met, *Lambert* having escaped out of the Tower, put himself at the Head of some discontented Troops in *Northamptonshire*: But *Ingoldshy*, being immediately sent against them by *Monk*, came unawares upon them, April 22, dispersed them, and took *Lambert* Prisoner, who was again sent to the Tower.

The Parliament met in two Houses, Lords and Commons, on April 25, 1660, and it soon appeared, that many Royalists had been elected.

electd. The King's Letters to the Lords, and Commons, from *Breda*, (whither his Majesty removed by General *Monk's* Advice) were severally read in both Houses, together with his gracious Declaration to all his loving Subjects, 'Granting a free and general Pardon, which he would be ready on Demand, to pass under the Great Seal of *England*, to all that should lay hold of it within forty Days, excepting only such Persons as should hereafter be excepted by Parliament; and a Liberty to tender Consciences, so that none should be questioned for Difference of Opinion in Matters of Religion, which did not disturb the Peace of the Kingdom, &c.' Immediately upon this, both Houses voted, That by the fundamental Laws of the Kingdom, the Government is, and ought to be, by *King, Lords, and Commons*. Then the Commons voted a Present of 50,000*l.* to the King, 10,000*l.* to the Duke of *York*, and 5000*l.* to the Duke of *Gloucester*. On *May* 8, his Majesty was proclaimed, and three Days after, Commissioners from the Parliament and City set out, to wait on him in *Holland*; with whom went also some Presbyterian Ministers. On the 23d, the King embarked, and two Days after having landed at *Dover*, on the 29th arrived at *Whitehall*, amidst numberless Crowds of People, congratulating him, on his being restored, with the loudest Acclamations of Joy. Thus was this great Revolution effected without any Effusion

of Blood: But what is more to be wondered at, is, that whereas so much Blood had been spilt to compel *Charles* I. to come to Terms with his People, towards which, it is certain, he at last made large Concessions, *Charles* II. should be received without any Conditions at all. Upon this Bishop *Burnet*, in the *History of his own Times*, tells us, That *Hale*, afterwards Lord Chief-Justice, did move, that a Committee might be appointed to look into the Propositions that had been made, and the Concessions that had been offered by the late King, and from thence digest such Propositions as they should think fit to be sent over to the King. This was seconded, but by whom the Bishop had forgot. As such a Motion was foreseen, *Monk* was instructed how to answer it: He told the House, that he had Information of such Numbers of Incendiaries still in the Kingdom, that if any Delay was put to the sending for the King, he could not answer for the Peace, either of the Nation or Army: And, as the King was to bring neither Army nor Treasure with him, either to fright or corrupt them, Propositions might be as well offered to him when he should come over; so moved for sending Commissioners immediately. This was echoed with such a Shout over the House, that *Hale's* Motion was no more insisted on. To the King's Coming-in without Conditions may well be imputed, says the Bishop, all the Errors of his Reign.





C H A R L E S II. 1660-1685.

**S**UCH a Tide of extravagant Joy overspread the Nation, upon the King's Arrival, as, in the End, very much hurt the Morals of the People, and introduced an almost universal Dissoluteness of Manners, which was encouraged and propagated by the ill Example of the King and the Court; so that from Enthusiasm and Fanaticism, the prevailing Spirit of the late Times, the *English* fell into the opposite Extreme of Licentiousness and Immorality; as one or the other of these Extremes will always be the Consequence of Men's not governing themselves by Reason.

The Confidence the People had in the King, from the extraordinary good Opinion they had been prepossessed with in his Favour, and their Transports of Joy at being delivered from the late Confusions and Distractions, by Means of his Restoration, will account for the excessive

Complaisance that was shewn to the Court at the Beginning of this great Event, so that the Parliament could scarce deny the King any Thing; and the ill Use that was made of this Confidence was the chief Cause of the Opposition that was made to the Court afterwards.

Not only the Character of King *Charles II.* but that of the Duke of *York*, who bore the chief Sway in the Counsels of the King his Brother, is to be considered, if we would know the Source of the principal Events of this Reign. King *Charles* was endowed with many engaging Qualities, and excellent Talents, which might have made his Reign glorious, if he had made a better Use of them. He was affable and good-natured, had a surprizing ready Wit, a solid Judgment, and a deep Penetration. But what spoiled all, was his excessive Indolence, and Love of Ease and Pleasure, to

which he was so immoderately addicted; that he would sacrifice any Thing to it, even the Good and Welfare of his Kingdoms, which might sink or swim, so that he could but gratify his Inclinations. He had abundance of Mistresses, and his whole Time and Treasure were in a Manner devoted to them. Add to this, that though he embraced the Popish Religion abroad, in Hopes of having the Aid of the Catholick Princes towards his Restoration; yet he was quite indifferent to all Religions, and it was all one to him, whether Popery, or Protestantism, were the Religion of *England*, so that he could but enjoy his beloved Ease and Pleasure. But here we must take in the Character of the Duke of *York*, who was of an active, violent, and vindictive Temper, and such a thorough Bigot to Popery, that he would stick at nothing to have it established; and in order to that, laboured to extend the Prerogative, and to establish an arbitrary Government. This then, joined with the Indolence of the King, of which the Duke of *York* made his Advantage, to pursue the Schemes he had formed, was the chief Occasion of the Distractions and Animosities in the latter End of this Reign: For it was some Time after the Restoration, and as it were by insensible Degrees, that these Designs discovered themselves. After these Remarks, it will be sufficient to give a brief Narration of the principal Transactions and Events in the Reign of King *Charles II.*

The King, in forming his Council, took in some, that had been deeply enough engaged against his Father and himself, but afterwards promoted his Restoration; as, *Denzil-Hollis*, afterwards Lord *Hollis*, the Earl of *Manchester*, Sir *Anthony*

*Ashley Cooper*, and others, who had been Presbyterians. And to humour that Party for the present, Mr. *Baxter*, and Mr. *Calamy*, were appointed his Chaplains in Ordinary. Sir *Edward Hyde*, afterwards Earl of *Clarendon*, a great Enemy to these People, who had constantly attended the King in his Exile, was his Lord Chancellor and Prime Minister; the Earl of *Southampton*, Lord Treasurer; *Edward Montague* (afterwards Earl of *Sandwich*) who had been one of *Cromwell's* Admirals in Conjunction with *Blake*, was Commander of the Fleet; and *George Monk*, who had been made Knight of the Garter upon the King's Landing, was continued General of all the Forces, and created Duke of *Albemarle*.

The Assembly, which restored the King, had been summoned by a Commonwealth Writ, in the Name of the *Keepers of the Liberties of England*: It was, however, called a Parliament, till his Arrival, but then had only the Name of *Convention*; however, two Days after, the King went to the House, and gave his Assent to an *Act for changing the Convention into a Parliament*.

In *July*, the City of *London* gave a magnificent Entertainment to the King, his two Brothers the Dukes of *York* and *Gloucester*, the great Officers of the Crown, and both Houses of Parliament.

The Act of Indemnity or Oblivion had been depending for some Time, and the King sent a Message to the Commons, and came to the House of Lords, to hasten it, according to his Declaration from *Breda*. At last it passed both Houses, and his Majesty gave his Assent to it on *August 29*. There were excepted out of it, the late King's Judges, and some others, who



who had been deeply concerned in his Death. Twenty-five of those Persons were dead, whose Estates were confiscated; 19 had made their Escapes, of whom *Ludlow* was one, who were afterwards attainted; seven were thought worthy of the King's Mercy, as being less concerned in the Crime, or having joined in promoting the Restoration; and 29 were tried in *October*, and condemned to die: But of these, 19, who had surrendered themselves upon the King's Proclamation, were spared as to Life, but reserved for other Punishments, as Imprisonment, Banishment, and Confiscation of Estate; so that only 10 were executed at this Time, *viz.* Major General *Harrison*, *Carew*, *Cook*, *Scot*, *Clement*, *Scroop*, *Jones*, and *Hugh Peters*, (an incendiary Preacher in those Times) at *Charing-Cross*; and *Hacker*, and *Axtel*, at *Tyburn*; all justifying what they had done to the last, and looking upon themselves as Martyrs. Some Time after, three of those who had made their Escape, *viz.* *Corbet*, *Okey*, and *Barkstead*, were apprehended in *Holland*, brought over to *England*, and executed. Sir *Henry Vane* was likewise tried, condemned, and beheaded on *Tower-Hill*; and *Lambert*, who was tried at the same Time, was reprieved from Death, but imprisoned for Life in the Island of *Guernsey*. The Bodies of *Cromwell*, *Ireton*, *Bradshaw* and *Pride*, were taken up, and hanged for a whole Day at *Tyburn*, and then buried under the Gallows. This may be true as to the three last; but whether the Body taken up for *Cromwell's* was really his, may be doubted, from the Uncertainty of the Place of his Burial, as before related.

At the same Time that the King passed the *Act of Indemnity*, he gave

his Assent to an *Act for a perpetual Anniversary Thanksgiving on the 29th of May*, the Day of his Arrival in *England*. The Commons, soon after, voted 1,200,000*l.* for the ordinary Expences of the Government. There were some Court Sycophants, who undertook to have a perpetual annual Revenue of two Millions settled on the King, which would have set him above Parliaments: But this was honestly opposed and defeated by the Lord *Clarendon*.

In the Midst of the Joy for the Restoration, the King and Nation met with one great Affliction in the Death of *Henry Duke of Gloucester*, his Majesty's youngest Brother, a very hopeful Prince; who died of the Small-Pox, at about 20 Years of Age, on *September 13*. I shall just take Notice here, that the Princess *Elizabeth*, the King's second Sister, died in *Carisbrook-Castle*, during the Usurpation, a few Days after the Battle of *Dunbar*.

The Hierarchy, which had suffered the same Fate with the Monarchy, was now to be re-established with it. The Bishops, who were still living, being nine in Number, were restored; and others were consecrated to fill the vacant Sees. *Reynolds*, *Calamy*, *Baxter*, *Manton*, *Bates*, and *Bowles*, all eminent Presbyterian Ministers, were offered Bishopricks and Deaneries; though none accepted but *Reynolds*, who was made Bishop of *Norwich*.

In *October*, the Princess Dowager of *Orange* came over to *England*, to congratulate the King, her Brother, on his Restoration: And the Queen-Mother arrived in the following Month, bringing with her the Princess *Henrietta*, her youngest Daughter, who, by the King her Brother's Consent, was married to the Duke of *Orleans*. The Duke

of *York*, a little before, married *Anne*, eldest Daughter of Chancellor *Hyde*, Earl of *Clarendon*, to whom he had been contracted at *Breda*. The Queen-Mother was as much displeased with this Marriage, as she was pleased with that of her Daughter. The Princess of *Orange* had been but about two Months in *England*, when she was taken ill of the Small-Pox, and died on *December 24*, leaving only one Son, *William*, Prince of *Orange*, now about ten Years old, and afterwards King of *England*.

The Parliament, after about two Months Recess, having granted Money for disbanding the Army, that great Work was effected in a few Months, all being disbanded except *Monk's* Regiment. But then, the King introduced a new Custom, by forming to himself a Guard of two Regiments, one of Horse, and another of Foot; which filled several with Apprehensions. This Parliament, which the King would have to be called the *Healing Parliament*, was dissolved on *December 29*, after the Passing of several Acts; and among the rest, one for erecting a Post-Office; another for an Impost on Ale, Beer, Cyder, and other Liquors; and a third, for taking away the Court of Wards, and Liveries, together with Tenure in Capite, Knights Service, and Purveyances, and for settling a Revenue upon his Majesty, in Lieu thereof.

The *Royal Society* was founded this Year, 1660, by the King's Letters Patent, for Experiments and Discoveries in Natural Philosophy and Mechanics. Dr. *Henry Hammond*, the famous Divine and Commentator, died the same Year, a little before the Restoration.

On *January 6*, 1660-1, there was a sudden Insurrection of the Fifth-Monarchy Men, who expected the

personal Reign of *Christ* upon Earth. They issued out, well-armed, about sixty in Number, under their Leader *Thomas Venner*, and fought desperately with the City Trained-Bands, and a Party of Horse and Foot that were sent against them. At last they were defeated, after several had been killed on both Sides, and *Venner* with about sixteen of his Accomplices were taken and hanged. This Accident served as a Handle to the Court to suppress the Presbyterians and all other Sects, who now began to be confounded under the general Name of *Dissenters* or *Nonconformists*.

Measures had been taken, last Year, to suppress the Kirk-Party in *Scotland*: And this Year, Episcopacy was restored in that Kingdom, and the Parliament there, wholly devoted to the Court, abrogated the *Solemn League and Covenant*, that Idol of the Majority of the *Scots* Nation, and made several other Acts, in Favour of the King, and against the Presbyterians. Not long after, the Marquess of *Argyle*, the Chief of the Kirk-Party, was beheaded at *Edinburgh*.

On *March 25*, 1661, a Conference was opened at the Bishop of *London's* House in the *Savoy*, between some Bishops and other Clergymen of the Church of *England*, and the same Number of Presbyterian Divines, by Virtue of a Commission from his Majesty, to advise upon and review the Book of *Common-Prayer*, and make such Alterations and Amendments, as should be agreed upon by both Parties. But though some very slight Alterations were made, this Conference had the Fate usual to all Conferences of the like Nature; that is, it came to nothing, both Sides being too rigidly tenacious of



of their own Ways and Opinions: Not to say, that the Party which is uppermost, which soever it be, has seldom a sincere Desire of an Accommodation.

The King was crowned with the usual Solemnity, on *April 23*; on which Occasion, among other Promotions, Sir *George Booth* was created Lord *De-la-mere*; Sir *Anthony Ashley Cooper*, Lord *Ashley of Wimborne*; Sir *Charles Howard*, Earl of *Carlisle*; and *Arthur Lord Capel*, Earl of *Effex*.

A new Parliament met on the 8th of *May*, and how agreeable it was to the Court, appears by its long Continuance, which was almost 18 Years. It was afterwards called the *Pensionary Parliament*, when it was known that many of the Members had Pensions from the King. However, their Eyes were at last opened, and they turned against the Court, as will be seen in its proper Place. The first Thing they did, was to order the *Solemn League and Covenant*, the *Act for trying the late King*, and several other Acts made against the Royal Family, under the Commonwealth and Protectorate of *Oliver*, to be burnt by the Hands of the Common Hangman.

On *July 30*, the King gave his Assent to an *Act for restoring the Bishops to their Seats in the House of Peers*, and to another for declaring the sole Right of the Militia to be in the King; and then permitted the Houses to adjourn to *November 20*, when they met accordingly, and on the 20th of the following Month, the King gave his Assent to the famous *Corporation Act*, which was designed to exclude the Nonconformists from any Share in the Government of Corporations.

*Elizabeth*, Electress *Palatine*, and Queen of *Bohemia*, the King's Aunt,

and Daughter of King *James I.* who arrived in *England* in *May*, 1661, died at *London* on *February 13* following. She had eight Sons, and five Daughters, of whom the youngest surviving, the Princess *Sophia*, Mother of King *George I.* was declared Heir to the Crown of *Great-Britain*, in 1701.

On *May 17*, 1662, an Act passed for a perpetual and annual Tax of two Shillings on every Chimney-Hearth; and an Act for the Uniformity of public Prayers, and the Administration of the Sacraments: In Consequence of which Act, about 2000 Ministers, mostly Presbyterian, but some of other Parties, for refusing to conform, were obliged, on *August 24*, *St. Bartholomew's-Day*, to quit their Livings in the Church. These, and some other Acts, being passed, the Parliament was prorogued to *February 18*.

A Treaty of Marriage having been concluded between his Majesty and *Catharine* Princess of *Portugal*, she landed at *Portsmouth* in *May*, where the King met her, and the Marriage was solemnized. The Queen-Mother, who left *England* the Year before, now came over again, and after three Years Residence here, went back again to *France*.

The Sale of *Dunkirk*, this Year, to the *French King*, for five Millions of *Livres*, made a great Noise in *England*, and was much reflected upon. The King was in great Want of Money, notwithstanding the vast Sums granted him by the Parliament; which seems to have been the Motive to this inglorious Measure, in which the Lord Chancellor *Clarendon* is said to have had the chief Hand.

*William Lenthall*, Speaker of the Long Parliament, died this Year; as did, the Year before, Sir *Arthur Haslerigg*,

*Haslerigg in the Tower, and Dr. Brian Walton, Bishop of Chester, the Compiler of the Polyglot Bible.*

In *January*, 1662-3, the King published a Declaration in Favour of the Presbyterians, to dispense with their Compliance with some Articles in the *Act of Uniformity*. It seems, it was the Design of the Court, in first persecuting the Presbyterians, and then giving them an Indulgence to pacify them, for fear, as was pretended, of Danger to the State, from so numerous a Body firmly united together, to convince the Parliament of the Necessity of granting, at last, a Toleration to all Nonconformists, in which the Papists might be included. So that to procure Advantages for the Papists, and to favour them, under Pretence of favouring the Presbyterians, was the grand Scheme of the King and his Courtiers. But here the Lord *Clarendon* must be excepted, who, as he hated the Presbyterians, was no Friend to the Papists, and therefore, from this Time began to sink in his Credit at Court.

The Parliament meeting on *February* 18, the King, in his Speech, gave them the Reasons which moved him to publish his Declaration concerning the *Act of Uniformity*. The Commons, who sincerely hated the Presbyterians, and at the same Time disliked the Papists, were alarmed at it, and addressed the King against it; and both Houses joined in desiring him to issue out a Proclamation against popish Priests and Jesuits; which he accordingly did, but to as little Effect as those published by his Father and Grandfather. However, as it was not then known, that the King had turned Papist abroad, his Professions of Zeal for the Protestant Religion passed well enough.

The popish Cabal, knowing the Lord *Clarendon* was not a Man for their Purpose, endeavoured by all Means to get rid of him. To this End, *Digby* Earl of *Bristol*, a professed Papist, *July* 10, 1663, impeached him of High-Treason in the House of Lords, and exhibited Articles against him; but they were most of them so very inconsistent and improbable, that the Lords unanimously rejected the Impeachment. On the 27th, the Parliament, after having settled the Revenues of the *Post-Office*, and *Wine-Licences*, on the Duke of *York*, was prorogued to *March* 16.

As there had been before several Rumours of Plots carrying on by the Republicans, so this Year one was discovered, which was said to be for a general Insurrection; but though it was attended with some improbable Circumstances, about twenty Persons were taken up for it and hanged.

Dr. *William Juxon*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, who had been Lord Treasurer to King *Charles* I. and attended him on the Scaffold, died this Year, and was succeeded by Dr. *Gilbert Sheldon*, Bishop of *London*.

When the Parliament met again, on *March* 16, 1663-4, they, at the King's Desire, repealed the *Act for Triennial Parliaments*; and as his Majesty had a Mind to go to War with the *Dutch*, the Parliament was artfully brought into it, and in their next Session, which was in *November*, voted 2,500,000 *l.* for carrying it on. In the mean Time, the Duke of *York*, who was Lord High-Admiral, fell upon the *Dutch Bourdeaux Fleet*, before the War was declared, and took 130 Sail of them, laden with Wine and Brandy. The Injuries and Insults of the *Dutch* upon our Trade, were assigned as the Ground of this



this War ; but by the several Steps taken towards it, by the Court of *England*, it seems, that this was only a Pretence, and that there were other secret Motives to it.

In *May*, this Year, 1664, the famous *Conventicle Act* was passed ; whereby, if any one should repair to Conventicles (as the Meetings of the Nonconformists for religious Worship were called) the first Offence was punishable with 5*l.* or three Months Imprisonment, and 10*l.* for a Peer ; the second Offence with 10*l.* or six Months Imprisonment, and 20*l.* for a Peer : But for the third Offence, after a Trial by a Jury, and the Trial of a Peer, by his Peers, the Party convicted was to be transported to some foreign Plantation, unless he laid down 100*l.*

The Money-Bill being passed in *January*, 1664-5, the King, soon after, declared War against the *States-General*. The Declaration bore Date *February* 22, but was not proclaimed till *March* 2, when the Parliament was prorogued. In this Session, the Clergy gave up their Right of taxing themselves in Convocation, and have ever since been taxed by the Parliament, in common with other Subjects ; which has rendered *Convocations* little more than a Matter of Form, as being less necessary to the Crown. And from this Time, the Clergy have voted at Elections for Members of Parliament.

The Duke of *York* failed in *May*, 1665, with a Fleet of 107 Men of War, and 14 Fire-ships, and having alarmed the Coast of *Holland*, before the *Dutch* were ready, and taken several of their homeward-bound Ships, he returned with the Fleet to *Harwich* ; which gave the Enemy an Opportunity of intercepting the *English* *Hamburg* Fleet. The *Holland*

and *Zealand* Squadrons being joined, composed a Fleet of 120 Men of War, besides Fire-ships, under the Command of the Admiral *Opdam* ; and on *June* 3, there was a remarkable Engagement, wherein the *Dutch* were beaten, having lost a great many of their Ships, though the Number is variously related : According to the lowest Account, there were about 20 ; and it is certain, that *Opdam*, with his Ship and all his Men, were blown up. The *English* lost but four Ships, some say but one, but several Persons of Distinction were killed. The King appointed a Day of Thanksgiving for this Victory, and several Medals were struck in Honour of the Duke of *York*.

The Fleet was next commanded by the Earl of *Sandwich*, who endeavoured to seize the *Dutch* *Smyrna* and *East-India* Fleet, that had retired to *Bergen* in *Norway*, but failed in the Attempt.

In the mean Time, the Plague made terrible Havock in *London*. It began in *May*, and before the End of the Year, when it ceased, swept off 68,596 of the Inhabitants.

The Parliament had been prorogued to *October* 9, when it met at *Oxford*, by reason of the Plague. They gave the King 1,250,000*l.* for the Continuance of the War, and 120,000*l.* to the Duke of *York*, for his late good Service to the Nation. In this Session was likewise passed the famous *Five-Mile Act*, prohibiting all Nonconformist Teachers to dwell, or come, unless upon the Road, within five Miles of any Corporation, or any Place they had preached at, after the Act of Oblivion, under the Penalty of 40*l.* and six Months Imprisonment. Plots and Conspiracies, whether real or pretended, were made a Handle

Handle for these Severities. And at the same Time, no less Rigour was exercised against the Presbyterians in *Scotland*; which occasioned an Insurrection there, shortly after: But the Numbers being but small, about 1500, they were soon defeated, 300 being killed on the Spot, and about 100 taken Prisoners, who were most of them executed.

In *January*, 1665-6, the *French* King declared War against *England*, which by his Conduct appeared to be only a Feint, and not with any real Design to assist the *Dutch*. *Rapin* says, it was only to save the Pensionary *De Wit*, who was entirely attached to his Interest, and could not otherwise support himself.

The *English* Fleet, under the Command of Prince *Rupert* and the Duke of *Albemarle*, put to Sea towards the End of *May*, 1666. The *Dutch* Fleet was now commanded by *De Ruyter*; and there soon followed a most bloody Sea-Fight, which was renewed for four Days successively, the *English* being every Time worsted. They lost 23 capital Ships, besides others of less Note; and the *Dutch* six: Though this Engagement is also variously related. There was another furious Fight in *July*, when the *Dutch* were beaten; but *De Ruyter* made a most gallant Retreat. After this, the *English* insulted the Coast of *Holland*, burnt 100 Merchant-Ships, and two Men of War, who were to be their Convoys.

On *September* 2, about One in the Morning, a most dreadful Fire broke out in the City of *London*, which continuing with merciless Fury for three Days, laid the greatest Part of that famous City in Ashes, consuming 89 Churches, the City Gates, *Guild-Hall*, with many other

publick Structures, and 13,200 Dwelling-Houses. It destroyed 400 Streets, and the Ruins of the City were 436 Acres. Few believed this Fire to be casual; many Circumstances concurred to make them think the contrary. Some would have it, that the Republicans were the Authors of it; but most ascribed it to the Papists, according to the Inscription upon the famous Monument, erected in Memory of this remarkable Conflagration.

The Parliament met on *September* 21, and gave the King 1,800,000*l.* Part of which was to be raised by a Poll-Tax. The King having passed the Bill for this Tax, and the other Money-Bills, as also an Act for rebuilding the City of *London*, prorogued the Parliament to *October* 10.

The King had no sooner received this large Supply for the War, but he began to enter on Measures for bringing about a Peace; and the Conferences between the Plenipotentiaries of *England*, *France* and *Holland*, were opened at *Breda*, in *May*, 1667; but were prolonged by some Punctilios, which King *Charles* insisted on to save Appearances with his People, because, how trifling soever, they were almost the only Things particularly alledged as the Cause of the War. At the same Time concluding, by the Offers of the States, that he could have Peace when he would, he unmanned his Fleet, and laid up his Ships, for the Sake of keeping the Money given him by the Parliament; while the *Dutch*, pretending to Doubt whether the King was sincerely inclined to Peace, continued their Preparations, till at last *De Ruyter* sailed with his Fleet, and entered the Mouth of the *Thames*; when *Van Ghent*,  
with



with some of the lightest Ships, sailed up the *Medway*, made himself Master of *Sheerness*, set Fire to the Magazine, and blew up the Fortifications, and then proceeding as far as *Chatham*, burnt several Ships. This caused a great Consternation in the City, and Complaints against the King, who was in the utmost Perplexity about this Affair. In short, *De Ruyter* sailing out of the *Thames*, kept the Coast of *England* in continual Alarms, till he heard that the Peace was signed, which was on *July 21*, after the King had receded from his former Demands.

Thus after such vast Sums of Money expended in this impolitical Rupture, a Peace was concluded without any Advantage to *England* by the War; which made the People very uneasy, and, with other Parts of the King's Conduct, opened their Mouths against him and his Ministers: But the King thought he should give them some Satisfaction, by sacrificing his faithful Minister, the Earl of *Clarendon*, whom he had disliked for some Time, as he was no Friend to the Manners and Views of the Court. On *August 31*, he deprived him of the Chancellorship, and gave the Great Seal to Sir *Orlando Bridgman*, by the Title of Lord-Keeper. A little before, the King lost another, and his only other faithful Counsellor, an intimate Friend of the Lord *Clarendon's*; namely, the Earl of *Southampton*, Lord Treasurer, who died in *July*; after which, the King put the Treasury into the Hands of Commissioners, one of whom was Sir *Thomas Clifford*, a declared Papist; as Sir *Henry Bennet*, created Lord *Arlington*, was a disguised one, who had been some Time before made Secretary of State.

The grave and severe Manners

of the Earl of *Clarendon* were by no Means agreeable to the libertine Court of King *Charles*: For this Reason he was hated by the King, by his Mistresses and Favourites; and the Popish Party at Court hated him, because they saw he would never be prevailed on to come into their Measures, which the King himself approved. He was therefore, at last, given up by the King, and then the Parliament soon hunted him down: For they were no sooner met, on *October 10*, but the Commons impeached him of High-Treason, and drew up a Charge against him; in which, almost the only Article, that could admit of any Proof, was that of the Sale of *Dunkirk*, which exposed him much to the popular Odium. The Earl, seeing how he was pursued, withdrew into *France*, leaving an Apology behind him, addressed to the Lords; who, on *Dec. 13*, sent down a Bill for banishing him, to the Commons, who passed it the 18th, to which the King gave his Assent. Accordingly, he spent the rest of his Days in Banishment, and died at *Roan*, in 1674. He writ the *History of the late Rebellion and Civil Wars in England*.

In *October*, the King laid the first Stone, of the *Royal Exchange*, which was built in the room of the old one, erected by Sir *Thomas Gresham*. *Abraham Cowley*, the famous Poet, and Dr. *Jeremy Taylor*, Bishop of *Down and Connor*, died this Year.

After the Death of *Southampton*, and the Disgrace of *Clarendon*, the Court was abandoned to Debauchery, without any Check or Restraint. The Duke of *Buckingham*, a Man of dissolute Morals, but a great Genius, and *Wilnot* Earl of *Rocheſter*, a top Wit, but the

the most licentious Poet of the Age, were the King's chief Favourites, and the Ministers of his Pleasures. With these, and his Mistresses, he spent almost his whole Time. In short, none but Papists, and Men of no Religion, had any Credit at Court.

In Jan. 1667-8, was concluded the famous Triple Alliance between *England, Holland, and Sweden*, which was designed to check the Projects of *Lewis XIV. of France*, who had already invaded the *Spanish Netherlands*. This was almost the only Step taken by King *Charles* for the Interest of *England* and of *Europe*, during his whole Reign. But he did not long continue in this good Way. And, indeed, it seems that his Design in it, was only to amuse the Publick, and that there was a secret Understanding between him and *Lewis*, at the same Time.

Sir *William Waller*, the renowned Warrior at the Beginning of the Civil Wars, died in 1668; as did also the famous Poets, *Davenant* and *Denham*.

There was little remarkable in the Year 1669. I shall only take Notice, that the new Theatre at *Oxford*, the noble Donation of Archbishop *Sheldon*, was opened on July 9; and that the King took some Steps towards favouring the Nonconformists, with Design to include the Papists, as he did a Year or two before; but the Parliament always opposed it.

The same Year Queen *Henrietta-Maria*, the King's Mother, died in *France*: And in *England*, the famous *George Monk* Duke of *Albemarle*, of whom so much has been said in this History; as also Mr. *Prynne*, who was so severely handled for writing against the Court in the late Reign; but as he promoted the Restoration, he was received into Favour, and died

a Member of the Parliament now in Being.

In April, 1670, another severe Act was passed against the Nonconformists, importing, That if any Person, above the Age of 16, should be present at any Meeting for religious Exercises, in any other Manner than according to the Liturgy of the Church of *England*, where there were five Persons or more, besides those of the Family, he should pay five Shillings for the first Offence, and ten for the second; the Preachers in such Meetings to forfeit 20*l.* for the first, and 40*l.* for the second Offence; and those who suffered such Conventicles in their Houses, Barns, Yards, &c. to forfeit 20*l.* The Informers being very busy on these Occasions, the Dissenters were exceedingly harrassed; but the King put a Stop to these Severities.

The King (or the Duke of *York* for him) designing to make himself absolute, in order to introduce Popery, established a secret Council, consisting of the five following Persons, *Clifford, Arlington, Buckingham, Ashley-Cooper, and Lauderdale*. This Council was nick-named the CABAL from the initial Letters of these Names; and, indeed, they truly deserved that Title, as they artfully promoted all the King's Measures, how contrary soever to the Interest of *England*, and the general good of all *Europe*. It was plain, the Parliament could never be brought to countenance Popery; therefore it was the Design of these Ministers to enable the King to govern without one. *Charles* had been bribed by *France*, and the first Effect of the Counsels of the Cabal, was an Alliance with that Crown against *Holland*. The War with the *States* was to be renewed upon



upon the slightest Pretences ; but it seems to be truly a Part of the Scheme for overturning the Protestant Religion. The *States* were to be destroyed, to make way for the more easy Introduction of arbitrary Power and Popery in *England*. But this *French* Alliance was to be kept secret, till the King had got what he could of his Parliament, as he did a very large Supply, when they met in *October*, by plausible Pretences of the Necessity of arming for the Security of the Nation against any foreign Attempts, as *France* and *Holland* were both making great Preparations.

The Duchefs of *Orleans* came over from *France*, in *May*, on Pretence of a Visit to the King her Brother, but really to forward the Alliance between the two Crowns. She staid not long, and died soon after her Return, being, as it was suspected, poisoned by her Husband, who grew jealous of her.

Sir *William Temple*, an able and faithful Minister, had been, some Time before, recalled from his Embassy in *Holland*, as being no fit Tool for the Designs of the *Cabal*. And in *September* this Year, the Marshal *De Crequi* invaded *Lorraine*, and took Possession of it for the *French* King.

One *Henry Jenkins*, a poor Fisherman of *Yorkshire*, died this Year, aged 169. He was born in the Reign of *Henry VII.* and exceeded the famous *Thomas Parr* by 17 Years.

In *January* 1670-1, was passed the famous *Conventry Act*, against Maiming or Disfiguring, making it Death. It was occasioned by Sir *John Coventry's* being assaulted by four Persons in the Street, and having his Nose slit. He was a Member of Parliament, and a great Opposer of the Money-Bills, and when

passed, proposed the laying a Tax upon the Playhouses, which were become Nests of Prostitution. He was assaulted at the Instigation of the Court, and made a stout and vigorous Defence.

In *Feb.* the King sent a Message to hasten the Money-Bills. But the Commons, in Conjunction with the Lords, presented to him a solemn Address upon the great and dangerous Growth of Popery, representing the Causes, and the Remedies ; one of which was, that no Papist, or reputed Papist, should be in any Office civil or military. The King, according to Custom, set forth a Proclamation against them, which was only Matter of Form, and without any Manner of Effect ; as was all along the Case, from the Beginning of the Reign of *James I.* to the End of *Charles II.*'s. Lord *Lucas* made a bold Speech in the House of Lords against the Money-Bills, the King being present, as he used often to come to the House without any Formality. A Difference happened, about the same Time, between the two Houses, and many Conferences were held, upon the Lords Right of altering Money-Bills, which the Commons denied, and the Lords as strenuously maintained. In the Midst of this Dispute, the King came to the House of Peers, and prorogued the Parliament ; and it was near two Years before it set again.

The Duchefs of *York*, Daughter of the Earl of *Clarendon*, died on *March* 31, 1671. In the Time of her long Indisposition, she abjured the Protestant Religion ; she left two Daughters, *Mary* and *Anne*, both Afterwards Queens of *England*. The Duke of *York*, who had been a Catholick before the Restoration, soon after the Death of his Duchefs, made a formal Abjuration

Abjuration of the Protestant Religion, and from that Time openly declared himself a Papist.

A very odd Accident happened on May 9. One *Blood*, with two or three Accomplices, found Means to steal the Crown and Globe out of the *Tower* : But being timely pursued, he was taken and brought before the King, where he boldly owned the Fact, and moreover told his Majesty, that he was once engaged in a Design against his Life, and how it was prevented. He said, he was ready to suffer the Death he deserved, but that he had Hundreds of Accomplices, who had all bound themselves by the most dreadful Oaths to revenge the Death of any one of them ; but if he was spared, they might do his Majesty good Service. In short, the King either intimidated, or expecting these Men might be of some Use to him, not only pardoned *Blood*, but settled 500*l.* a Year on him in Land, in *Ireland*, and made him one of his Courtiers.

This Year was remarkable for the Death of two famous Parliament-Generals in the late Civil Wars, the Lord *Fairfax*, and the Earl of *Manchester*, who had both been considerable Instruments in the King's Restoration.

A powerful League was now formed against *Holland*, by *France*, *England*, the Elector of *Cologne*, and the Bishop of *Munster*. The King, though he had lately two Millions and a Half from the Parliament, and 700,000*l.* from the *French* King, was so profuse, that he still wanted Money, which he would fain raise without applying to the Parliament. Upon this, the *Cabal* advised him to shut up the *Exchequer* ; which he actually did, and it continued shut for a Year and some Months, to the

great Distress and Ruin of many Families. Soon after, Sir *Thomas Clifford* was made a Peer and Lord High-Treasurer ; the Lord *Ashley-Cooper*, Earl of *Shaftesbury* and Lord-Chancellor ; the Lord *Arlington* an Earl, and the Earl of *Lauderdale* a Duke. The King had formed the Design of surprizing the *Dutch Smyrna Fleet*, before he declared War, but failed in the Attempt, after an Engagement of three Days ; though the *English* afterwards took four *Dutch East-India* Men. On March 15, the King published his Declaration for *Liberty of Conscience*, suspending the Execution of all penal Laws against the Nonconformists. Father *Orleans* says, the Project of the King and the *Cabal*, was to give Liberty of Conscience to all the Subjects in general, that the *Catholics* might reap the Benefit of it. On the 17th, the King declared War against the *States-General* ; and the *French* King, and the other Allies, soon after.

The King of *France* taking the Field in May, 1672, made himself Master of all *Guelderland* ; and the Towns upon the *Yssel*, and *Utrecht*, sent Deputies to him, with Offers of Submission. The Bishop of *Munster*, at the same Time, laid waste the Province of *Overysse*, and fell upon *Friesland*, and *Groningen* ; so that only *Holland* and *Zealand* remained free. At the same Time, there was a naval Engagement, near *Solebay*, between the combined Fleet of *France* and *England*, the latter under the Duke of *York*, and the *Dutch* Fleet under *De Ruyter*, with equal Success on both Sides. The Earl of *Sandwich's* Ship was blown up, with himself and the whole Crew ; and on the *Dutch* Side, Vice-Admiral *Van Ghent* was killed.

The *Dutch* were now in a most melan-



melancholy Situation. The Province of *Holland*, to stop the Progress of the Conquerors, opened their Sluices, and laid the Country under Water. In this Exigency, the Prince of *Orange*, who had before been appointed Captain-General and Admiral, was now raised to the Dignity of *Stadtholder*, notwithstanding the perpetual Edict to the contrary; and the Pensionary *de Wit* and his Brother were, in the most tragical Manner, torn to pieces by the Populace at the *Hague*, as the Betrayers of their Country. King *Lewis* used all his Arts to corrupt the Prince of *Orange*, then but about 22 Years old; but all in vain: He offered him the Sovereignty of *Holland*, but the Prince rejected the Proposal with Scorn. And when the Duke of *Buckingham* passed through the *Hague*, in his Way to *Utrecht*, where the *French King* then was, and asked the Prince what he meant to do, in the desperate Condition his Country was then in; the Prince bravely and honestly answered, *That he had one Way not to see its Ruin compleated, and that was to lie in the last Dyke.*

Whilst the Nation was generally uneasy at the late Proceedings of the Court, the King's excessive Prodigality having rendered all the Sums he had any Ways received, insufficient for carrying on the War, the *Cabal* found it necessary, at last, to have Recourse to the Parliament; which broke all their Measures. They met on *February 4*, 1672-3, and it soon appeared that the Country-Party, or that of the People, was become more powerful in the House of Commons than the Court-Party. They vigorously addressed the King against his Declaration for *Liberty of Conscience*, as it

was claiming a dispensing Power; and both Houses joined in an Address against the Dangers that threatened the Nation from the daily Increase of Popery. As the Nonconformists were sensible, that the Indulgence granted by the King was not for their Sakes, but with a Design to tolerate and introduce Popery, Alderman *Love*, a City Member, and a leading Dissenter, spoke zealously against the King's Declaration; which induced the Commons to bring in a Bill for the *Ease of Protestant Nonconformists*, but it was lost by the King's first adjourning and then proroguing the Parliament; which shews that the giving Ease to the Presbyterians was not his real Design in his Declaration for *Liberty of Conscience*. However, before the Adjournment, the Commons were so fully bent not to finish the Money Bill, till their Grievances were redressed, the Papists removed from publick Employments, and the Declaration for *Liberty of Conscience* revoked, that the Court was in the utmost Perplexity: The Duke of *York* and most of the *Cabal* advised the King to support his Declaration; but others were for his giving Way, and waiting a more favourable Opportunity. The King was wavering for some Time, but at last complied with the Desire of the Commons, and recalled his Declaration. The *Cabal* and Popish Party were exceedingly disturbed at this Want of Resolution in the King; and the Earl of *Shaftesbury*, soon after, politically deserted the Court, and came over to the Country-Party, and was now the foremost in the House of Lords against Popery, the *Dutch War*, and the Alliance with *France*.

After this, the Commons prepared and passed an Act, which was also passed by the Lords, en-

titled, *An Act to prevent the Dangers which may happen from Popish Recusants*, commonly called the *Test-Act*; whereby all Persons enjoying any Office or Place of Trust or Profit, were required to take the Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy, and also to receive the Communion in some Parish-Church, &c. And it is remarkable, that the Earl of *Bristol*, though a Papist, spoke in favour of it. Then the Commons presented two Petitions concerning Grievances, and the King having promised to redress them, they passed the Money-Bill, without mentioning any thing of the War in it, lest they should seem to approve of it; and moreover a Proviso was tacked to it, That no Papist should be capable of holding any publick Employment. This Bill, and the *Test-Act*, the King passed on *March 29, 1673*, and then adjourned the Parliament to *October*, as before mentioned. The Consequence of the *Test-Act* was, that most of the Popish Officers resigned their Places; and among the rest, the Duke of *York* his Post of Lord High-Admiral, and the Lord *Clifford* his Treasurer's Staff, who died soon after. Sir *Thomas Osborne*, created Earl of *Danby*, succeeded him in the Office of Treasurer. The Lord Chancellor *Shaftesbury* was succeeded by Sir *Heneage Finch*, afterwards Lord *Finch*, who had first the Title of Lord Keeper, and then of Lord Chancellor.

There were three furious Sea-Fights this Year, between the combined Fleets of *England* and *France* (the former under Prince *Rupert*) and the *Dutch* Fleet; wherein the Loss on both Sides was nearly equal, and Victory remained dubious.

The King of *France* took *Maastricht* in *June*. In *September* the

Prince of *Orange* made himself Master of *Naerden*, and in *October* took *Bonne*, the Residence of the Elector of *Cologne*. *Lewis* soon after abandoned all his Conquests in the *United Provinces*; except *Maastricht* and *Grave*, being called off by *Spain's* having declared War against him, as the Emperor and several *German* Princes were upon the Point of doing the same.

The Duke of *York's* Marriage with *Mary*, Sister to the Duke of *Modena*, was consummated on *November 21*, when the said Princess arrived; though it had been much opposed by the Commons. The Parliament met towards the End of *October*, and had a warm Session of only nine Days, when they were again prorogued; the Commons having first voted, That the Alliance with *France* was a Grievance: That the evil Counsellors about the King were a Grievance; and that the Duke of *Lauderdale* was a Grievance, and not fit to be employed in any Office. They met again in *January 1673-4*, and having no Reliances on the King's Promises, went on much in the same Way as the Parliament of 1640. Both Houses addressed for a General Fast to implore the Blessing of God against the dangerous Efforts of Popery; and the Commons voted to have the Grievances redressed, and the Protestant Religion, and their Liberties and Properties, secured, before they would grant any more Money. They also voted, *Nemine Contradicente*, to address the King for the Removal of Duke *Lauderdale* from all his Employments, and from his Majesty's Presence and Councils for ever; examined the Duke of *Buckingham*, putting several Queries to him; passed the same Vote against him as against *Lauderdale*, and im-



impeached the Earl of *Arlington* of High-Treason. A Bill for a general Test to distinguish Papists from Protestants, was likewise prepared, and they went on vigorously in examining the Grievances; but the King put a Stop to these Proceedings by proroguing the Parliament on *February 24*. A separate Peace between *England* and *Holland* was concluded the same Month; and in *October* following, 1674, the Prince of *Orange* took *Grave* from the *French*: In which Year, besides the Lord *Clarendon* before mentioned, there died the celebrated Poet Mr. *John Milton*, the inimitable Author of *Paradise Lost*: He had been blind for some Years, and was *Latin* Secretary to the Long Parliament, and to the Protector *Cromwell*.

The Parliament sat twice in 1675, viz. in *April* and *October*, and proceeded in much the same Manner as before; only there were great Disputes between the two Houses upon the Matter of Privilege, which served as a Pretence to the Court for proroguing them, before some Bills, which the King disliked, were ready; particularly, a second Bill for the Ease of Protestant Dissenters.

Dr. *Lightfoot*, the famous Rabbinical Divine, died this Year; and *Bulstrode Whitelock*, Esq; Author of the *Memorials of the English Affairs*, a Gentleman of great Judgment and Temper, who filled some of the highest Posts under the Usurpation, always humane, candid and ingenuous; and after having been twenty Years upon the publick Stage, passed the last fifteen of his Life in Privacy and Retirement.

Such were the Measures pursued by the Court, it being manifest that Popery and a *French* Interest still prevailed in his Majesty's

Counsels, that Men talked pretty freely against the Government. Wherefore, in the Beginning of the Year 1676, the King thought fit, by Proclamation, to suppress all Coffee-Houses, as being the Places where such Liberties were commonly taken.

The same Year died *George Digby* Earl of *Bristol*, and that just and upright Judge *Sir Matthew Hale*, Lord Chief-Justice of the *King's Bench*.

The Parliament met in *February* 1676-7, when a Question was started concerning its very Being, or whether, by its long Prorogation, it was not *ipso facto* dissolved. The Duke of *Buckingham* endeavoured in a Speech to prove this, and with him agreed the Earls of *Salisbury* and *Shaftesbury*, and the Lord *Wharton*; for which the House of Lords sent them all to the *Tower*.

The Commons addressed the King against the growing Power of *France*, and the great Progress of their Arms in the *Spanish-Netherlands*, signifying their Desire of his joining in a War against that Crown: But the King was too much attached to the *French* Interest to do any such Thing; though he pretended a Willingness in general Terms, on Purpose to draw Money from the Parliament.

On *April 16*, 1677, the King, among other Acts, gave his Assent to one for taking away the *Writ de Hæretico comburendo*; by Virtue of which so many innocent Persons had been burnt to Death for the pretended Crime of Heresy.

The Commons again addressed the King to enter into a League offensive and defensive with the *States* against *France*, in order, by that Means, to procure an advan-

teagueous Peace for all *Europe*. But the King's Conduct in this Affair was so unaccountable, that neither the Parliament nor the Allies knew what to make of it. The Truth was, as afterwards plainly appeared, that whilst *Charles* was Mediator for a general Peace, he was secretly a Pensioner to the *French* King, and did all he could to favour his ambitious Views. He therefore laboured only for a separate Peace, between *France* and *Holland*, in order to divide the Allies, that *Lewis* might the more easily proceed in his Conquests; and indeed the *Dutch*, tired out with the Uncertainty of the Measures of the *English* Court, were at last disposed to make a separate Peace; but the Prince of *Orange* was against it, till he saw there was no Remedy. The King hoped to bring him over to his Views, by Means of the Match which the Prince had solicited for himself with the Princess *Mary*, eldest Daughter of the Duke of *York*. On this Account he came over to *England* the Beginning of *October*, but would not engage in any Discourse about the Peace till the Marriage was concluded; and when solicited to it, he said, *As the Allies were like to have hard Terms, they would be apt to think, he had made his Match at their Cost; and for his Part, he would never sell his Honour for a Wife.* This had like to have broke off the Match; but the King, fearing the Consequences of a Breach with the Prince, at last consented, and the Marriage was consummated on the 4th of *November*, the Prince's Birth-Day; who soon after embarked with the young Princess his Consort for *Holland*.

This Year died Archbishop *Shelden*; the learned Divine and Ma-

thematician Dr. *Isaac Barrow*; and *James Hurrington*, Esq; Author of the *Oceana*.

The Parliament met on *May* 23, 1678; and on *July* 15, among other Acts, was passed that for burying in *Woollen*, for the Benefit of that Manufacture. The Parliament was then prorogued, being determined to grant no more Money, but only a Sum for disbanding the Army, as they saw no Use was like to be made of it against *France*.

After Abundance of Difficulties, and a tedious Negotiation at *Nimeguen*, occasioned chiefly by the Intrigues between *France* and *England*, the separate Peace with *Holland* was signed on *August* 11, which was presently followed by one with *Spain*, and some Months after with the rest of the Allies; and it was purely owing to the Court of *England*, that *Europe* had not a Peace upon more advantageous Terms.

This Year was remarkable for the Discovery of a most horrid and formidable Conspiracy carried on by the Papists, commonly called the *Papish Plot*, which opened a new Scene of Affairs in *England*. The Design was to kill the King, subvert the Government, to extirpate the Protestant Religion, and establish Popery. The Authors and Promoters of it were the Pope and Cardinals, the *Romish*, *French*, *Spanish*, and *English* Jesuits, the seminary Priests in *England*, who were there in great Numbers, several Popish Lords and others of that Party. There are more than presumptive Proofs, that the Duke of *York* was deeply concerned in it, all but that Part relating to killing the King; and, that Point excepted, the King himself was strongly suspected of favouring it. The Article of taking off the King seems



seems to be only the Project of some of the Conspirators, who thought, that the making Way for the Duke of York to ascend the Throne, who was more forward and active, and less fearful, than the King, would bring the grand Design of the Conspiracy, the changing the Government and Religion, to a speedier Conclusion. Some, indeed, will have this whole Plot to be nothing but a Fiction; but though some Circumstances of the Discovery may be liable to Objections, upon the whole there is much more Reason to believe it real than otherwise; those who deny it, advancing a great many Things in Prejudice of the Character and Management of the Witnesses, without any Manner of Authority; whilst they who believe it, bring authentic Proofs of what they say, from positive and direct Evidence. The chief Discoverer of this Conspiracy was *Titus Oates*, who, having been a Clergyman of the Church of *England*, reconciled himself to the Church of *Rome*, or pretended at least to do so, and joined himself to the *English* Seminary at *St. Omer's*: He also went into *Spain*, and was admitted to the Consults of the *Jesuits*; and by these Means, he got acquainted with all the secret Designs that were carrying on in order to establish Popery in this Nation; and then returning to *England*, he digested what he had heard into a Narrative, and by Means of Dr. *Tonge*, a City Divine, got a Copy of it delivered to the King, who referred him to the Lord-Treasurer *Danby*. The King taking little Notice of it at first, they resolved to communicate it to the Parliament; but first *Oates* went and made Oath of the Truth of his Narrative before Sir *Edmundbury Godfrey*, a Justice of the Peace,

and left a Copy of it with him. And now the Affair taking Wind, it was resolved to bring it before the Council, who sat twice a Day for above a Week together to examine into it, and *Tonge* and *Oates* had Lodgings assigned them in *Whitehall*, with a Guard and a Pension to each. Upon their Information, several Persons were apprehended, as *Wakeman* the Queen's Physician, *Coleman* the Duke of York's Secretary, and eight Priests or *Jesuits*. In *Coleman's* House were found several Letters, which very much strengthened *Oates's* Testimony; and the Murder of Sir *Edmundbury Godfrey* soon after, who had sworn *Oates* to his Narrative, and was an active Magistrate against the Papists, confirmed the People, who were before alarmed, in the Belief of the Plot. The Murder was presently ascribed to the Papists, and with Truth, as appeared afterwards by the Evidence of *Bedloe* and *Prance*, the latter of whom deposed, that he, with *Green*, *Berry*, and *Hill*, and some others of the Party, after having dogged him for some Time, got him into *Somerset-House*, and there strangled him with an Handkerchief, and afterwards carried the Body by Night and laid it in a Ditch near *Primrose-Hill*, with his Sword run through him, as if he had killed himself; though when the Body was found, it appeared plainly that he had been strangled. *Green*, *Berry*, and *Hill*, were afterwards condemned and executed for this Murder, but denied the Fact to the last.

The Plot was first discovered in *August*, Sir *Edmundbury Godfrey* was murdered the Beginning of *October*, and the Parliament met on the 21st. The King was unwilling to have the Plot brought before the Parliament, and was for leaving

the Matters relating to it to the ordinary Courts of Justice, which he could better manage. But the Earl of *Danby*, notwithstanding, thought it his Duty to lay *Oates's* Narrative before the Commons, who communicated it to the Lords. *Oates* was soon after examined six or seven Hours in the House of Commons, and both Houses applied themselves indefatigably to this Affair, till at last they resolved, *Nemine Contradicente*, that it was their Opinion, *That there is, and hath been, a damnable and hellish Plot contrived and carried on by Popish Recusants, for assassinating and murdering the King, for subverting the Government, and rooting out and destroying the Protestant Religion.* *Bedloe* appeared afterwards an Evidence for the Plot, and was examined by the Lords. In the mean Time, the Commons ordered several Persons, whom *Oates* had sworn against, to be taken up, and among the rest, these five Popish Lords, *Powis*, *Stafford*, *Arundel of Wardour*, *Petre*, and *Bellasis*, who were sent to the Tower, and impeached of High-Treason. They also began to form the Project of excluding the Duke of *York* from the Succession, as appeared by their permitting a Debate to arise in the House, for an Address to remove the said Duke from his Majesty's Presence and Councils, which was put off to another Day; and in the mean Time the King came to the Parliament, and in a Speech told them, that he would consent to any Bills for their Security in the Reign of his Successor, so that they tended not to impeach the Right of Succession, nor the Descent of the Crown in the true Line. And he stuck to this in all the Attempts that were afterwards made for a Bill of Exclusion.

On Nov. 18, the Commons sent Secretary *Williamson* to the Tower, for countersigning Commissions for Popish Officers: But the King being highly offended at it, released him.

A Bill having now passed both Houses, for disabling Papists from sitting in either House of Parliament, the King gave the Royal Assent to it, on Nov. 30. He did many Things now for Fear of the Parliament, which he would not otherwise have done.

On Nov. 27, *Coleman*, the Duke of *York's* Secretary, was tried, and upon the Evidence of *Oates* and *Bedloe*, and his own Letters, was found guilty of High-Treason, condemned, and executed on Dec. 3. By his Letters it plainly appears, how much the King and Duke were under a French and Popish Influence. Other Persons executed for the Plot the Beginning of the following Year, and the Year after, were *William Ireland*, and *Thomas Pickering*, both Priests: *John Grove*, a Lay-Brother; *Thomas Whitebread*, Provincial of the Jesuits in England; and *Harcourt*, *Fenwick*, *Garwen*, and *Turner*, all Jesuits likewise; and *Langborn*, a Popish Lawyer. As they all made use of the same Kind of Expression in asserting their Innocence, it was thought there was some Equivocation in it. Besides *Oates*, *Bedloe*, and *Prance*, one *Dugdale* was a Witness against some of them; by whose Evidence it appeared, that when they had killed the King, they were to lay it on the Presbyterians. Sir *George Wakeman*, the Queen's Physician, and some others, were afterwards tried and acquitted.

There was another Affair, besides that of the Plot, which gave the King no small Uneasiness, *Mr. Montague*, Ambassador at *Paris*, having



having fallen out with the Earl of *Danby*, Lord Treasurer, who was considered as the King's Prime-Minister, came over and produced two Letters in the House of Commons, which the Earl had written to him at *Paris*, upon the Business of the King's Pension, that was negotiating for him at the *French* Court, in which *Montague* himself had the chief Hand. The Earl writ these Letters by the King's Orders, who declared as much in a Postscript to one of them. As in this Negotiation the Interest of *England* was sacrificed to the Views of *France*, the Commons were so exasperated, that they impeached the Earl of High-Treason, designing thereby to oblige him to plead the King's Orders, who was more struck at in this Proceeding than the Treasurer. He therefore refused to make use of this Plea; and before the Lords could resolve whether to send him to the *Tower*, the King came to the House, on *Dec.* 30, and prorogued the Parliament; which, on *Jan.* 24, was dissolved, after it had sat near 18 Years. *Danby* now resigned his Office of Treasurer, which was afterwards put in Commission.

Mr. *Oldenburgh*, Secretary to the Royal Society, and first Publisher of the *Philosophical Transactions*; and Mr. *Andrew Marvel*, a witty Opposer of the Court, and Author of the *Rehearsal Tranposed*, died in this Year, 1678.

Three Days before the Meeting of the new Parliament, for which the Elections had run generally against the Court, the Duke of *York*, by the King's Advice, left the Kingdom, and retired to *Brussels*. His Majesty also fearing that the Earl of *Danby* would be again attacked, and might be tempted, for his own Safety, to discover Secrets which he would

have concealed, granted him a full Pardon under the Great-Seal.

The Parliament met on *March* 6, 1678-9. The Commons chose *Edward Seymour*, Esq; for their Speaker; but the King knowing him to be a great Enemy to the Earl of *Danby*, refused his Approbation; which occasioned a Dispute between the King and the Commons, and a short Prorogation of two Days; after which they chose Mr. Serjeant *Gregory*. They presently resumed the Affair of the Earl of *Danby*, who chose to abide by his Pardon, and withdraw himself; whereupon they passed a Bill to require him to render himself to Justice, by a certain Day, *April* 23, and in Default thereof to attaint him; which, after several Conferences, was passed by the Lords. The Earl surrendered himself before the Day, and was sent to the *Tower*: A few Days after, he was brought to the Lords Bar, where he produced his Pardon, and was remanded thither again. The Commons declared this Pardon to be illegal and void, and so he remained in the *Tower* till 1683.

This Parliament also, after examining the Witnesses, passed much the same Vote with the last, as to the Reality of the Popish Plot. And on *April* 27, 1679, the Commons resolved, 'That the Duke of *York*'s 'being a Papist, and the Hopes of 'his coming such to the Crown, 'has been the greatest Countenance 'and Encouragement to the present 'Conspiracies and Designs of the 'Papists, against the King and the 'Protestant Religion.' Which Vote was sent to the Lords by the Lord *Ruffel*.

The King, to amuse the Parliament, had formed a new Council, admitting into it several Lords and others of the Country-Party. The Earl of *Shaftesbury* was made Pre-

fident, and the Earls of *Sunderland*, and *Effex*, Lord *Hallifax*, and Sir *William Temple*, had the chief Direction of Affairs.

On *May 15*, a Bill was brought into the House of Commons, to *disable the Duke of York from inheriting the Imperial Crown of England*, commonly called the *Bill of Exclusion*; which was read the second Time on the 21st, and it was resolved by a great Majority, that it should be committed. This brought the King to the House of Lords on the 27th, when, after passing the *Habeas Corpus Act*, he prorogued the Parliament, and soon after dissolved it, contrary to the Advice of the new Council.

Dr. *Sharp*, Archbishop of *St. Andrew's*, was barbarously murdered by some *Scotch Zealots*; soon after which there was an Insurrection of the Kirk-Party in *Scotland*, which was suppressed by the Duke of *Monmouth*, natural Son of the King. *Lauderdale*, supported by the Court, had introduced a perfect Tyranny in that Country.

The Duke of *York* returned in *September*. The Duke of *Monmouth* fell into Disgrace, and was sent over to *Holland*. The Earl of *Shaftesbury* was turned out from being President of the Council: And the Duke shortly after set out for *Scotland*.

Another Parliament was summoned to meet in *October*, but the King, contrary to the Advice of his Council, prorogued it, from Time to Time, for a whole Year. Upon this, the Earl of *Effex* resigned his Place of First Commissioner of the Treasury; and Sir *William Temple*, and some others, retired from Court.

A sham Plot, called the *Meal-Tub-Plot*, from the Plan of it being found hid in a *Meal-Tub*, was about this Time contrived by the

Countess of *Porwis*, the Earl of *Castlemain*, the five Lords in the *Tower*, and other Papists, to bring an Odium on the Presbyterians and the Country-Party. One *Dangerfield* was to be the chief Actor in it: But he being detected in the Fraud, was sent to *Newgate*, and there, before the Lord-Mayor, upon Oath discovered the whole Cheat.

This Year died, aged 91, the famous *Thomas Hobbes* of *Malmesbury*, a learned Man, of a considerable Genius, but a great Patron of Scepticism, as appears by his Works.

Such was the Animosity between the Court and the Country-Parties at this Time, that it looked as if the Year Forty-one was going to be acted over again; which probably had been the Case, if the King's Necessities had occasioned him to make the Parliament perpetual, as his Father had done; if *Scotland* had not been so effectually enslaved, by a Standing Army which the Court kept there, that they had not Power to stir; and if the Bishops and Clergy had been as disagreeable to most of the People as they were at that Time. Besides, all the staunch Episcopalian, fearing the Presbyterians might again subvert the established Church, forgetting the Dangers of Popery, joined themselves so firmly to the Court, as to make it at last formidable to the other Party. During the repeated Prorogations of the present Parliament, Abundance of Addresses were presented from all Parts, to petition for its speedy Sitting; which being highly distasteful to the Court, Means were found to have a Number of Counter-Addresses, expressing the greatest Abhorrence of such Petitions, as an Infringment upon the Prerogative, which they took care, in their Expressions, to advance as high



high as possible. And so the Nation became divided into two Parties, *Addressees* or *Petitioners*, and *Abhorrrers*, soon known by the Names of *Whigs* and *Tories*, which the Parties by Way of Reproach gave each other; *Tory* being the Name for an *Irish* Robber, and *Whig* signifying Sour-Milk, an Appellation first given to the rigid *Scotch* Presbyterians. The King shewed a great Firmness in not regarding the Petitioners, which exceedingly strengthened the Court and Popish Party, by the Accession of all who were now taught to hate the Presbyterians more than the Papists; as the Injuries received from the former were more fresh in their Memories than those they had suffered from the latter.

The King thought fit now to have the Duke of *York* again near his Person. Accordingly he sent for him out of *Scotland*, and he arrived at Court on *February* 24, 1679-80. The *Whigs* with the Earl of *Shaftesbury* at their Head, the more effectually to oppose the Duke, began to spread a Report of the Duke of *Monmouth's* Legitimacy, pretending the King was lawfully married to Mrs *Lucy Walters*, the said Duke's Mother. And though the King solemnly denied this in Council, and published a Declaration to refute the Report, yet *Monmouth* returned to *England* without Leave, in *August* 1680, and without taking any Notice of the Court, endeavoured to strengthen his Party in the Kingdom.

*Bedloe*, one of the Witnesses in the Popish Plot, died about the same Time, having on his Death-Bed signed a Deposition, before the Lord-Chief-Justice *North*, of the Duke of *York's* being as much concerned in the Conspiracy as any one, excepting what related to the Murder of the King.

What gave great Weight to the Country-Party, was the City of *London's* being in their Interest, who this Year chose the Aldermen *Bethel* and *Cornish*, two Presbyterians, for their Sheriffs, to the great Mortification of the Court; who were still farther vexed at the Boldness of the Earl of *Shaftesbury*, when he, with several Lords and Gentlemen, went publicly to *Westminster-Hall*, and, at the *King's Bench* Bar, presented the Duke of *York* as a Popish Recusant; but the Grand-Jury being suddenly dismissed, it had no Effect. However, it was thought proper to send the Duke away again, who departed for *Scotland*, *October* 20, the Day before the Parliament met.

This Parliament proceeded in the same Way with the former, and went even greater Lengths against the Court and the Duke. They examined the Witnesses to the Popish Plot, to whom *Dangerfield* and others were now added. On *October* 26, the Lord *Russel* moved in the House of Commons, That they might in the first Place consider how to suppress Popery, and prevent a Popish Successor; and was seconded by Sir *Henry Capel*, Brother to the Earl of *Essex*, in a long Speech, laying open the Grievances of the Kingdom during this Reign, and ascribing all to the constant Prevalence of Popish Councils. On *November* 2, they passed the same Vote, concerning the Encouragement given to the Designs of the Papists by the Hopes of the Duke of *York's* succeeding to the Crown, that was passed in the last Parliament. Then a Bill to exclude the Duke from the Succession was moved for, and after long Debates, and several eloquent Speeches on both Sides, was brought in, and passed by a great Majority. On *November* 15, it was sent

up to the House of Lords; where, though it was carried for a second Reading by two Voices, it was then thrown out by a Majority of 63 against 30, all the Bishops present voting against it, and the King being also there during the whole Time of the Debate.

On Nov. 30, Viscount *Strafford*, one of the five Popish Lords in the *Tower*, on Account of the Plot, was tried before the Peers in *Westminster-Hall*; and being found guilty and condemned, was beheaded on Dec. 29, protesting his Innocence to the last.

It was now the Business of the Papists to sow Dissensions among the Protestants, and to stir up the Church of *England* against the Nonconformists; which the Commons perceiving, passed a Bill to exempt the Protestant Dissenters from certain Penalties enacted against the Papists; which also passed the House of Lords, but when it should have been offered among other Bills for the Royal Assent, the Clerk of the Crown, by the King's Order, after an unprecedented Manner, secreted it, and so it was lost.

Several Persons of Note died this Year; as, *John Wilmot*, the witty Earl of *Rocheſter*, who, after a debauched Life, in the Time of his lingering Sickness became very penitent, and died in the 32d Year of his Age; *Samuel Butler*, Author of *Hudibras*; *Sir Peter Lely* the famous Painter; and *Harry Marten*, one of the late King's Judges, who was kept a Prisoner in *Chepstow-Castle*.

Among the Resolutions of the Commons against Popery and the Duke of *York*, after the *Exclusion-Bill* was rejected by the Lords, was the following: 'That it is the Opinion of this House, that there is no Security or Safety for the

' Protestant Religion, the King's Life, or Government of this Nation, without passing a Bill for disabling *James Duke of York* to inherit the Imperial Crown of this Realm, &c. And to rely upon any other Means and Remedies, is not only insufficient, but dangerous.' And understanding that the King would prorogue the Parliament on Jan. 10, (1680-1) they met early in the Morning, and resolved, 'That whoever advised his Majesty to prorogue the Parliament, to any other Purpose, than in order to passing a Bill for the Exclusion of the Duke of York, is a Betrayer of the King, the Protestant Religion, and the Kingdom, a Promoter of the French Interest, and a Pensioner of France.' The Parliament was accordingly prorogued on that Day, and soon after dissolved by Proclamation, and another summoned to meet at *Oxford*, March 21, as the City of *London* was in no wise favourable to the Court.

The Parliament met at the Time and Place appointed, and the first Thing the Commons did was to order their Votes to be printed; which Practice they have continued ever since, to the great Profit of the Speaker. A few Days after, they resumed the *Exclusion-Bill*, which was read the first Time, on March 28, (1681) and ordered a second Reading: But the King finding this Parliament in the same Temper with the last, on the same Day came suddenly to the House of Lords and dissolved it, after one short Session of but seven Days.

One *Fitz-Harris*, an *Irish* Papist, had been practised on by some of the Court to write a Libel against the King, in order to stir up the Popish-Plot, and turn it upon the

Whigs



Whigs and Presbyterians. The Design was, to have it dropt in the House of some of the chief of the Party, and then to have them searched and apprehended. The King himself was said to approve of the Project; but it was discovered by Means of one *Everard*, to whom *Fitz-Harris* had communicated it; whereupon he was taken up, and the Commons in the *Oxford* Parliament impeached him in the House of Lords; but they rejected the Impeachment, and ordered him to be prosecuted at Common-Law, which occasioned a Difference between the two Houses. However, *Fitz-Harris*, after the Dissolution of the Parliament, was tried at the *King's Bench* Bar, condemned, and executed. At the same Time was executed *Oliver Plunket*, the Popish titular Primate of *Ireland*, for a Conspiracy with the *French* Court, in order to stir up an Insurrection in that Island.

After the King had dissolved his fifth Parliament, he called no more for the rest of his Reign, during which he governed in an absolute and arbitrary Manner, and grew as cruel in his Temper, as he had before appeared mild and merciful. What contributed to establish this formidable Power in the King, was the extreme Animosity between the two Parties, called *Tories* and *Whigs*, which had been artfully fomented by the Court. The Church and Monarchy were represented to be again in Danger from the Presbyterians. This made almost the whole Church Party join themselves to the Court, in order to oppose the Designs of the *Whigs*, who were all taken for Presbyterians, tho' abundance of moderate Churchmen were amongst them. And now the Clergy every where

preached up Passive-Obedience and Non-Resistance, in the most slavish and absolute Sense, and Multitudes of flattering Addresses were presented from all Parts, advancing the Prerogative of the Crown to the most extravagant Height. Thus the zealous Episcopalians strengthened the Court and Popish Party, and the Church of *England* was no longer in Danger from Popery, but from the Whigs and Presbyterians.

The first Sacrifice to the Resentment of the Court was *Stephen Colledge*, a Joiner of *London*, a Man of Parts and Courage, and very zealous against Popery, and therefore called the *Protestant-Joiner*. He attended the City-Members to *Oxford*, who went thither with a great Retinue, and is said to have spoken Words, and recited Verses, reflecting on the King and Court. For this a Bill of Indictment of High-Treason was exhibited against him, to the Grand-Jury of *London*, but they returned an *Ignoramus* upon it. He was then hurried down to *Oxford*, and Methods taken, which were none of the most justifiable, to have the Bill found there; which being done, he was tried, condemned, and executed, protesting that he knew of no Plot but that of the Papists. By several Circumstances in this whole Affair, it appeared, that the Court was fully bent to have this Man's Life. On the same Day that *Colledge* was executed, Aug. 31, *Titus Oates* was by Order of Council turned out of his Lodgings at *Whitehall*; and Care was now taken to make the whole Popish Plot a Matter of Ridicule.

The King looked upon the Earl of *Shaftesbury* as his greatest Enemy, and was very desirous to be revenged on him. He was sent

to the *Tower* for High-Treason, in *July*, and his Trial was to come on at the *Old Bailey* in *November*; but he luckily escaped by the Grand-Jury's not finding the Bill of Indictment against him: On which Occasion there were Bonfires and great Rejoicings in *London*.

In *Scotland* every Thing went on according to the Desire of the Court. The Duke of *York*, as High-Commissioner, held a Parliament there this Year, which was entirely obsequious to his Will. They enjoined a very extraordinary *Test* or *Oath*, which the Earl of *Argyle* refusing to take but with his own Explanation, was condemned to lose his Head; which he prevented at this Time, by escaping out of the Castle of *Edinburgh*, and retiring into *Holland*.

The King now ordered the Protestant Dissenters to be prosecuted with all the Rigour of the Laws, whilst Zeal against Popery was reckoned Faction and Sedition. Things going on thus, the Duke of *York* returned to Court, where he continued his Presence and Influence to the End of this Reign.

The Beginning of the Year 1682, *Thomas Thynne*, Esq; was assassinated in his Coach in the open Street, at the Instigation of Count *Coningmark*, on a Quarrel about a Lady; for which three Persons, one of them his Footman, were executed.

Numberless Pamphlets were at this Time published by both Parties, *Whigs* and *Tories*, against each other, and Party Rage was carried to the utmost Height. The *Whigs* were as yet superior in the City of *London*, but the Court found Means this Year to get the Lord-Mayor and Sheriffs chosen of the King's Party: Upon which the Earl of *Shaftesbury*, thinking he could be no longer safe, retired to

*Holland*, where he died soon after. Prince *Rupert*, the King's Cousin, so often mentioned in the last Reign, died also this Year; as did likewise the Duke of *Lauderdale*, justly hated, both in *England* and *Scotland*, for his arbitrary Proceedings; and *Heneage Lord Finch*, the Lord-Chancellor, who had been created Earl of *Nottingham*.

Two extraordinary Ambassadors arrived in *England* this Year, one from the Emperor of *Fex* and *Morocco*, and the other from the King of *Bantam* in the *East-Indies*.

In *May*, 1683, several Aldermen and eminent Citizens were tried for a pretended Riot at the last Election of Sheriffs, and condemned in large Fines. A *Quo Warranto* was also brought against the City, to call their Charter in Question, which in the Court of *King's Bench* was adjudged, upon frivolous Pretences, to be forfeited, and the Franchises and Liberties of the City to be seized into the King's Hands. And the Charter was not to be restored, but upon the City's submitting to such Conditions as his Majesty was pleased to prescribe, which quite altered their Constitution. *Quo Warrantos* were afterwards issued out against most of the Corporations in *England*, which being terrified, resigned their Charters, and accepted of new Regulations at the Pleasure of the Court.

What made the most Noise, and was attended with the saddest Consequences this Year, was what is called the *Rye-House Plot*, though the *Whigs* would believe this Protestant Plot no more than the Court Party would believe the Popish Plot. It was first discovered in *June*, by *Josiah* and *John Keeling*, two Brothers; and the Design was said to be, to seize the Guards, to kill the King and Duke near *Rye-House*, about

two



two Miles from *Hodsdon* in *Hertfordshire*, as they were returning from *Newmarket*, and to cause a Rising in *London*, and other Places. Upon the Deposition of the *Keelings*, a Proclamation was issued for apprehending Colonel *Rumsey*, *Rumbold* Master of the *Rye-House*, *Nelthorpe*, *Wade*, *Goodenough*, *Walcot*, *Thompson*, *Burton*, and *Hone*. *Rumsey* surrendered himself, and upon his Confession, which was confirmed by *West* and *Sheppard*, there was another Proclamation for apprehending the Duke of *Monmouth*, the Lord *Grey*, Sir *Thomas Armstrong*, and *Robert Ferguson*. And upon the Lord *Howard* of *Essex*'s coming in, the Earl of *Essex*, the Lord *Russel*, and others, were taken up.

Captain *Walcot* was tried on *July 12*, and brought in guilty of High-Treason. The Lord *Russel*, Son to the Earl of *Bedford*, was tried the next Day; and though the Evidence against him was very slight and imperfect, yet he too was brought in Guilty. His Case was thought very hard, for he was condemned only for Words spoken by others in his Presence. Lord *Howard* was the chief Evidence, who was obliged to swear to save his own Life. Lord *Russel* was exceedingly beloved, and many eminent Persons appeared for him, as the Duke of *Somerset*, the Earl of *Anglesea*, the Lords *Cavendish* and *Clifford*, Dr. *Tillotson*, and Dr. *Burnet*; but all to no Purpose. The Earl of *Essex*, at the very Time of the Trial, was found dead in the *Tower* with his Throat cut from Ear to Ear. The News of this was presently brought to the *Old-Bailey*, and from thence the Judges and Counsel insinuated to the Jury the Reality of the Plot, since the Earl of *Essex*, rather than stand his Trial, had laid violent Hands on himself: And this is

thought to have influenced the Jury not a little, to give their Verdict against Lord *Russel*. But, after all, most People did then suspect, and do still, that the Earl was murdered by other Hands than his own, and that by Order of the King and Duke, who had been in the *Tower* that very Morning, where they had not been for many Years before.

*Walcot*, *Hone*, and *Rouse*, were executed on *July 20*, and the Lord *Russel* the next Day. He was a Person of excellent Virtues and Qualities, and a very powerful Intercession was made for him. His Father the Earl of *Bedford*, it is said, offered 100,000*l.* for his Life: And it is thought the King was inclined to save him; but the Duke could not forgive him for the Zeal he shewed for the *Exclusion-Bill*; and so he was beheaded on a Scaffold in *Lincoln's-Inn-Fields*, whither he was attended by Dr. *Tillotson*, and Dr. *Burnet*, shewing great Firmness and Resignation to the last, and protesting his Ignorance of any Design against the King's Person, or to alter the Government.

Whilst the Trials for the *Rye-House* Plot were depending, the University of *Oxford* presented their famous Decree to his Majesty; a servile Piece of Court Flattery, more suitable to an absolute Monarchy, than to a limited one, such as is that of *England*.

On *July 28*, the Princess *Anne*, younger Daughter to the Duke of *York*, was married to Prince *George*, Brother to the King of *Denmark*.

The King this Year revoked the Conditions accepted by the City of *London*, and seized the Government of it into his own Hands, named a Lord-Mayor and other Officers, to continue during Pleasure.

The Duke of *Monmouth*, the King's beloved natural Son, upon  
writing

writing in a submissive Manner to his Majesty, was pardoned. He was required to sign a Letter owning the Plot in general, and tacitly justifying the Evidence against those who had suffered; but he soon with great Importunity demanded it back, and had it returned to him: Upon which he was banished the Court, and went over to *Holland*; where the King, notwithstanding, corresponded with him by Letters, unknown to the Duke his Brother, and privately made him Remittances of Money.

Colonel *Algernoon Sidney*, Brother to the Earl of *Leicester*, was, in *November*, brought to his Trial for the late Plot. He proved by the Testimony of the Earls of *Clare* and *Anglesea*, Mr. *Philip* and Mr. *Edward Howard*, Dr. *Burnet*, and others, that the Lord *Howard*, the Witness against him, had confessed, *That he could not get his Pardon, till he had done some other Jobs, till he was past the Drudgery of Swearing*; but no Notice was taken of this. What was most urged against him, was a Manuscript found among his Papers on the *Original and Forms of Government*, opposing Sir *Robert Filmer's* Notion of the absolute Power of Kings, and favouring the Republican Scheme. Being condemned, he was beheaded on *December 7*, without discovering the least Weakness or Fear.

There was a remarkable Frost this Year, which setting in about the Beginning of *December*, continued till *February 5*. The *Thames* was so frozen, that Multitudes of Booths were erected, and all Trades exercised on the Ice, so that it appeared like another City. But the Wonder is very much lessened by such another Frost in 1715.

*Tangier*, Part of *Queen Catharine's* Portion, was, by the King's

Order, demolished this Year; which eased him of a considerable yearly Expence to preserve it. This Year was also remarkable for the formidable Siege of *Vienna* by the *Turks*; which was bravely raised, on *September 2*, by the King of *Poland*.

As the late Sheriff *Filkington* had been fined 100,000*l.* to the Duke, for these and other Words, said to be spoken against him, *The Duke of York has fired the City, and is now come to cut our Throats*; and Mr. *Samuel Johnson*, who had been the Lord *Russell's* Chaplain, 500 Marks, for his *Julian the Apostate*, a Book wrote against the high Notions of Passive-Obedience and Non-Resistance, which now prevailed; so the Year 1684 was almost wholly taken up with such Sort of Prosecutions and Penalties. Mr. *Hampden* was fined 40,000*l.* for a Misdemeanor in being concerned in the late Plot, there being but one Witness against him. *John Dutton Colt*, Esq; for using reproachful Words of the Duke, and particularly for saying, *The Duke of York is a Papist, and before any such Papist Dog shall be Successor to the Crown, I will be hanged at my own Door*, was fined 100,000*l.* And *Titus Oates* was fined in the same Sum, for saying the Duke was a *Traitor*. A great many other Persons were tried for speaking ill of the King, the Duke, or the Government, who were fined in large Sums, and some of them pilloried. Sir *George Jeffries*, a Man without Honour or Conscience, had been made Lord Chief-Justice of the *King's Bench*, and other Alterations had been made among the Judges; and the Sheriffs of *London*, being now named by the King, impannelled such Juries as were sure to find for the Crown.

The Earl of *Danby* was now released upon Bail; as were also the  
three



three surviving Popish Lords, the Lord *Petre* dying a little before.

*James Holloway*, taken in the *West-Indies*, and brought over to *London*, was executed for the late Plot in *April*; as was *Sir Thomas Armstrong* in *June*, who had been apprehended in *Holland*.

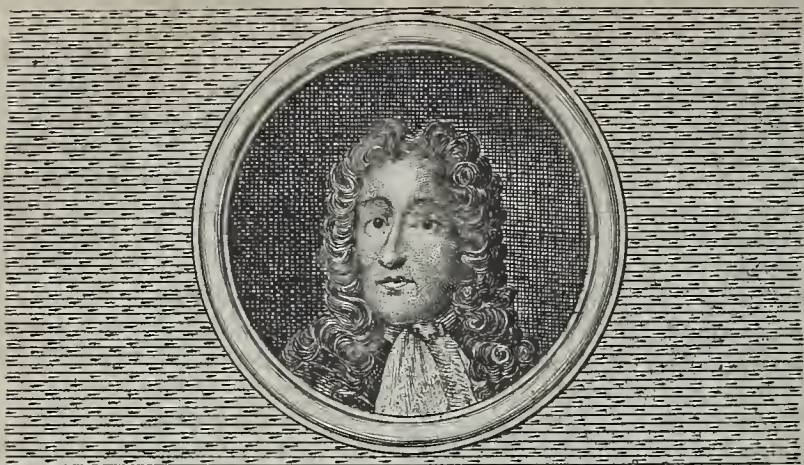
The Project of the surrender of Charters was compleated this Year; and it was generally believed, that all the arbitrary Measures of the Government were owing chiefly to the Counsels of the Duke of *York*. It is said, the King at length saw his Error, and designed to make great Alterations. The Duke of *York* was to be sent beyond Sea, and the Duke of *Monmouth* to be recalled, and a new Parliament was to be summoned. But if he had any such Design, he did not live to execute it: For he died just at this critical Juncture, *Feb. 6, 1684-5*, and with such Circumstances, as gave strong Suspicions of his being poisoned by the Papists; though there could be no certain Proof of

this, and the Duke was never suspected of having any Hand in it.

King *Charles* died in his 55th Year, and near 25 Years after his Restoration. He had no Children by his Queen, but several by his Mistresses. By Mrs. *Lucy Walters* he had *James Duke of Monmouth*: By Mrs. *Killigrew*, created Viscountess *Shannon*, *Charlotte-Femina-Henrietta-Maria*: By Mrs. *Catherine Peg*, *Charles Fitz-Charles Earl of Plymouth*: By Mrs. *Barbara Villiers*, created Lady *Nonfuch*, Countess of *Southampton* and Duchess of *Cleveland*, *Charles Fitz-Roy Duke of Southampton*, *Henry Fitz-Roy Duke of Grafton*, *George Fitz-Roy Duke of Northumberland*, and three Daughters: By Mrs. *Eleanor Gwin*, *Charles Beauclerk Duke of St. Alban's*, and *James Beauclerk*: By *Louise de Querouaille* (a French Lady) Duchess of *Portsmouth*, *Charles Lennox Duke of Richmond*: By Mrs. *Mary Davis*, *Mary Tudor*, married to *Francis Lord Ratcliffe*, Earl of *Derwentwater*.



*J. Kneller.*



*J. H. Smith sc.*

## JAMES II. 1685—1689.

1685. **K**ING Charles having no legitimate Issue, and the so-much-laboured *Bill of Exclusion* coming to nothing, his Brother the Duke of York of Course succeeded to the Crown, and was immediately proclaimed by the Name of *James II.* The Party that was against the *Exclusion-Bill*, had been for some Time triumphant; and so it is no Wonder there was no Motion or Stir at the Accession of this King, whose Enemies were now sufficiently humbled and oppressed. And indeed, if he had been as good as his Word in his first Speech to his Privy-Council, no body would have had any Occasion to be uneasy; for therein he tells them, that he would *make it his Endeavour to preserve the Government both in Church and State, as it was then established by Law*; that he would *never invade any Man's Property*, but would go as *far as any Man in preserving the*

*Nation in all its just Rights and Liberties.* But however this Speech was applauded by the then prevailing Party, King James soon made it appear by his Conduct, that the fulfilling his Promises was the farthest Thing from his Thoughts. And indeed, it was a Kind of Infatuation to suppose, that he, who was so zealous in the Cause of Popery and arbitrary Power when he was only Duke of York, should pursue those Measures less when he came to be King. And therefore his going publickly to Mass the first Sunday after his Accession was no such strange Thing, considering how many Years he had openly professed the Popish Religion. What was more to be wondered at is, that he should, without any Necessity, expose the Insincerity of the King his Brother, in his repeated Assurances of his Regard for the Protestant Religion, by causing it to be published, that he

was



was a Catholick, and died a Catholick ; which can no otherwise be accounted for, but from his excessive Zeal for his Religion. And to confirm it the more, that *Charles II.* was a Papist, a little Chapel was shewn, adjoining to the King's Closter, where he used to go privately to *Majs.* As these Things were enough to shew what was to be expected from King *James* with regard to Religion, so his requiring by Proclamation, that the Customs and Duties, granted to the late King only for his Life, should continue to be levied, shewed what Regard he had to the Liberties of the Nation, since this was a manifest Violation of the Constitution, by which no Money can be levied but by Act of Parliament ; and it was one main Cause of the Troubles in his Father's Reign.

The King and Queen were crowned by Archbishop *Sancroft*, on *St. George's Day, April 23, (1685.)* The King would not receive the Sacrament, but all the rest was done in the Protestant Form ; his Priests, doubtless, dispensing with him in this, as well as in the Coronation-Oath.

King *James* now thought fit to shew his Resentment against the Witnesses for the Popish Plot. The famous *Titus Oates* was, on *May 8 and 9,* tried before the Lord Chief-Justice *Jefferies* for Perjury in relation to two Circumstances of his Evidence. The Witnesses against him were almost all Papists, and seminary Priests and Jesuits from *St. Omer's.* The Passion and Partiality of *Jefferies* and the Counsel were very manifest. Both he and they had formerly supported *Oates's* Evidence in the Popish Plot against these very Witnesses : Which shews that his being cast was more owing to

the Turn of the Times, than to the Merits of the Cause ; and by the Cruelty of his Sentence it appears, that there was more of Revenge than Justice in this whole Affair. Such a Sentence was never heard of before, and it was as rigorously executed. He was to pay 1000 Marks on each Indictment, to be stript of his canonical Habit, to stand twice in the Pillory, and five Times a Year afterwards as long as he lived, to be imprisoned for Life, and to be whipped, first from *Aldgate* to *Newgate*, and the very next Day but one, from *Newgate* to *Tyburn* : Which was executed with the utmost Severity, so that he swooned away several Times, and it was next to a Miracle that he came off with his Life.

*Thomas Dangerfield* was tried soon after, and sentenced to pay 500*l.* to stand twice in the Pillory, and to be whipped in the same Manner as *Oates* ; which was executed, though with less Severity. As he was returning in a Coach from his second Whipping, he was insulted by one *Frances*, to whom he made a proper Reply ; upon which, *Frances* thrust his Cane into the poor Man's Eye with such a Force, that he died in Torment in a very short Time ; for which the Villain *Frances* was deservedly hanged.

*Mr. Baxter*, an eminent Presbyterian Divine, was tried at the same Time, for some Passages in his Writings, as alledged, reflecting on the Prelates of the Church of England. *Jefferies* behaved towards this grave old Man more like a Bully than a Judge. He was fined 500 Marks, and bound to his good Behaviour for seven Years.

The Parliament of Scotland met on the Day of the Coronation,  
B b which,

which, still obsequious to the Court, passed an Act, making it High-Treason to give, take, or defend the *National Covenant*, or the *Solemn League and Covenant*; and another against *House and Field Conventiclers*, (who were the zealous Presbyterians, in the Act called Fanaticks) ordaining, that such as should hereafter preach at such Conventicles, or be present at Field-Conventicles, should be punished with Death.

In *England*, the Parliament (the only one in this Reign) met on *May 19*. It chiefly consisted of such as were called *Tories*, who, tho' they had no Design against the Protestant Religion, yet, relying too much on the King's Promises in his Speech, granted him such a Revenue as he desired, which enabled him afterwards to govern without a Parliament. His Promises, in relation to the Church of *England*, and the Rights and Properties of the Subject, were the same as those made to his Privy-Council, and in the same Words.

The Beginning of King James's Reign was disturbed by two Invasions, one in *Scotland*, the other in *England*; which were both almost as soon defeated as undertaken. The Earl of *Argyle*, with a small Company, but Arms for 5000 Men, sailed from *Holland* the Beginning of *May*, and made a Descent upon *Scotland*. His Friends did not come in to him as he expected; however, he made a shift to get together about 2000 Men; who being soon hotly pursued by the King's Forces, dispersed, and *Argyle* running into a Water up to the Neck to escape his Pursuers, was taken by a Countryman, who ran in after him, and knocked him down. This unfortunate Nobleman (whose Case was to be pitied, considering his former unjust Sen-

tence, which made him fly his Country) being thus seized, was ignominiously brought to *Edinburgh*, where his Head was cut off, and set upon the *Tolbooth* there. *Rumbold*, the old Master of *Rye-House*, who had fled for the late Plot, and some others, were also taken and executed.

The Duke of *Monmouth*, at the Solicitations of the *English* Exiles in *Holland*, had agreed with *Argyle* to invade *England* at the same Time. He accordingly sailed out of the *Texel* on *May 24*, and after having been detained 19 Days at Sea, landed at *Lyme* in *Dorsetshire*, on *June 11*, with about 80 Followers, who by the Coming-in of the People in the *West* were soon increased to an Army of 2000. On the 18th he came to *Taunton*, where he was received with loud Acclamations; and his Forces still considerably increasing, he took on him the Title of King, and was proclaimed at *Taunton*, on the 20th, by the Name of *James II*. The next Day he marched to *Bridgewater*, and was there received and proclaimed as at *Taunton*, his Army now consisting of about 5000; but they were most of them raw and undisciplined Men, and he wanted proper Officers to command them, scarce any but the lower Sort of People having joined him. His pretended Reign was but very short: For engaging the King's Forces at *Sedgemore* near *Bridgewater*, on *July 6*, he was entirely defeated, 300 being killed on the Spot, 1000 in the Pursuit, and as many made Prisoners. The Horse fled at the first Charge, which was thought to be owing to the Inexperience, or Cowardice, or Treachery of the Lord *Grey*, who commanded them, and being taken, readily obtained the King's Pardon. The unfortunate

nate



nate Duke, who had fought stoutly for some Time at the Head of the Foot, was two Days after the Fight found in a Ditch covered with Fern, with some green Pease in his Pocket. Being brought to *London*, he wrote to the King, most humbly imploring his Pardon; and to the Queen-Dowager, to intercede for him: Which she did, and prevailed on the King to see the Duke, not doubting but his Pardon would follow of Course: But it was quite otherwise; for after he had made him sign a Paper, declaring that King *Charles* had told him he was never married to his Mother, he let him know he must prepare to die: And so the Duke finding no Remedy, tho' he had most submissively, not to say abjectly, begged his Life, rose from the King's Feet with an Air of Bravery, and was conducted to the *Tower*; from whence he was brought out and beheaded on *July 15*, receiving five Strokes of the Axe before his Head was severed from his Body.

And now *Jefferies* was sent with a special Commission into the *West*, to try the unhappy Persons who had been any Ways concerned in this rash and ill-concerted Rebellion. Col. *Kirk* attended him with a Body of Troops to keep the People in Awe. They were both of a Disposition equally cruel and bloody, and exhibited such a shocking Scene of Barbarity, as was scarce ever known in *England*. They hanged Men by Scores in the most insulting and inhuman Manner. *Kirk* caused 30 to be hanged at once, in Sight of himself and Officers at Dinner: Ten were turned off with a Health to the King, 10 with a Health to the Queen, and 10 with a Health to *Jefferies*. Mrs. *Lisle*, an antient Gentlewoman, was beheaded for har-

bouring a Presbyterian Minister of *Monmouth's* Party. The Jury, not satisfied with the Evidence, brought her in three Times Not guilty; but *Jefferies*, by his Threats, made them at last find her Guilty. Many other Instances are given of the brutish Cruelty of this Judge, and his military Assistant. In short, some Hundreds were executed, and the *West* became like a Shambles, by their Quarters being fixed up in the Roads and publick Places. *Jefferies* boasted, on this Occasion, that he had hanged more than all the Judges since William the Conqueror; and at his Return from this bloody Work, he was rewarded with the Office of Lord High-Chancellor.

The same Spirit of Revenge shewed itself in *London*, where Mrs. *Gaunt* was burnt for harbouring one of *Monmouth's* Adherents: The Villain himself informed against her for his Pardon, at the Time she was contriving Means for his Escape. Four or five Men were executed at *Tyburn* for the like Crime, or for being concerned in the *Rye-House* Plot. For this latter, Alderman *Cornish* was executed in *Cheapside*, tho' he had scarce been mentioned in that Affair. But any Evidence now served to condemn him, and as he had been very active against the Popish Conspirators when he was Sheriff, he was not now to be forgiven. *Charles Bateman*, a Surgeon, was hanged for the same Crime; tho' it was thought the chief Cause of Resentment against him, was the great Care he took of Dr. *Oates*, in curing his Wounds after his cruel Whipping. His Case was very extraordinary; for losing his Senses in his Confinement, and appearing quite lunatick in Court, his Son was appointed to plead for him.

King *James*, now freed from the  
B b 2 Danger

Danger he was in from *Monmouth's* Rebellion, and being in a State of perfect Tranquillity, began soon to discover his Design of establishing Popery in his Dominions. The Scheme had been formed long before, even whilst he was Duke of *York*; but now first openly attempted. He began in *Ireland*, where he dissolved the Privy-Council, and appointed a new one with several Papists in it, who soon became the Majority. And now Impeachments became frequent against the Protestants, on Pretence, either of the *Rye-House* Plot, or of their having favoured *Monmouth's* Designs. They were likewise every-where disarmed, whilst Means were found of having a standing Army of Papists there. Col. *Richard Talbot*, afterwards Earl of *Tyrconnel*, by cashiering such Officers and Soldiers as he thought fit, and putting others in their Room, of a Protestant Army made it by Degrees a Popish one. And it is remarkable, that *Oates*, in his *Narrative*, mentions him as destined to this very Service.

In *England* the King could not proceed so fast, and yet could not forbear opening his Design in Part to his Parliament, which, after several Adjournments, met on *November* 9. He demanded a Supply for keeping up his Army, which he had increased to 15,000 Men, though the Nation was in perfect Peace; and bade them not take Exceptions, that he had some Officers in his Army not qualified according to the late *Tests*, declaring his Resolution to employ them still. Both Houses and the whole Kingdom were surprized at this Speech, and the Opposers of the late *Bill of Exclusion* began now a little to open their Eyes. The Commons indeed voted him a Supply, but could not relish the King

Popish Officers in the Army, contrary to the known Law of the Land, and addressed the King against it; at which he was greatly offended. And though they offered to indemnify those already employed, and by another Act to qualify a certain Number whom the King should name; yet rather than have his pretended Right of dispensing with the Laws contested, he, on *Nov.* 20, prorogued the Parliament; by which he lost the Supply the Commons had voted: But they had been so liberal to him before, that he did not want it for the standing Army he intended, and did accordingly keep up.

In *December*, *Henry Booth*, Lord *Delamere*, was tried by the Peers for corresponding with *Monmouth*, and acquitted. The Earl of *Stamford* was discharged upon Bail, and afterwards laid hold on the general Pardon.

The Earl of *Arlington* dying this Year, the Earl of *Mulgrave* succeeded him in the Office of Lord-Chamberlain; and the Earl of *Sunderland*, Principal Secretary of State, was made President of the Council, and became in effect Prime-Minister.

All the rest of King *James's* Reign, till he met with a providential Check from the Enterprize of the Prince of *Orange*, was wholly employed in Measures to make himself absolute, and establish Popery. He thought himself sure of *Scotland*, where the Parliament had advanced the Prerogative higher than had ever been known, even to the declaring and recognizing the King's *absolute Power and Authority*. Yet, when in his Letter to them, in *April*, 1686, he desired them to free his *Roman Catholic* Subjects from the Restraints they lay under, they thought fit not to comply. Upon which he



he dissolved them, and did this afterwards by his own sole Authority, and by Virtue of that *absolute Power*, which they had preposterously acknowledged.

In *England*, where the Parliament had not been quite so complaisant, the first Step he took was to get the Judges to declare their Opinion in favour of his dispensing Power. This he did, by sending for them one by one, and talking with them privately in his Closet, whence the odious Term *Closeting* had its Rise; by turning those out whom he found refractory, and filling their Places with others who were more pliable. He also new-modelled his Council, admitting into it the Lord *Arundel* of *Wardour*, and the Lord *Bellasis*, who had both been impeached for the Popish Plot, and the Lord *Dover* and Earl of *Tyrconnel*, both Catholics; the latter of whom he had made Lieutenant-General of the Army in *Ireland*, in order to carry on the Work there.

In Consequence of the Judges Decision, that the King might dispense with the Laws, the Papists began every-where to set up the publick Exercise of their Religion; the Jesuits erected Colleges and Seminaries in all the principal Towns; four Popish Bishops were publickly consecrated in the King's Chapel; Monks appeared in the Habits of their respective Orders, at *Whitehall* and *St. James's*, Numbers of them, as well as of secular Priests, being called over from foreign Parts: And it was not long before there were Popish Lords-Lieutenants of Counties, Popish Justices of the Peace, and other Popish Magistrates all over *England*; and all Places of Honour or Profit were bestowed upon Papists, or Persons popishly affected, the Protestants being removed to

make Way for them. The King's Zeal for establishing his Religion was unbounded, and he was also pushed on by the Queen, as it is said, and his other Popish Counsellors, particularly Father *Peire*, his Confessor, whom he at length admitted into his Privy-Council; but the more considerate Catholics were afraid that he would ruin all by proceeding so fast.

Whilst the Papists had free Liberty to say what they pleased in their Sermons and Writings, an Order came out to prohibit the inferior Clergy's preaching on controverted Points of Religion. But this Order being but little regarded, the Divines of the Church of *England* continued to exert their Talents to the greatest Advantage in Defence of their Religion, against the Errors of Popery. *Tillolson*, *Stillingfleet*, *Tennison*, *Patrick*, *Sharp* and others, to their immortal Honour, shone on this Occasion.

But the better to restrain the Clergy, the King erected a *Commission for Ecclesiastical Affairs*, consisting of the Archbishop of *Canterbury* (who would never act in it) and two other Bishops; the rest being Laymen, and some of them Papists. Three had Power to act, of whom *Jefferies* was always to be one. Before this new Court Dr. *Compton* Bishop of *London* was cited, in Aug. 1686, and suspended from his Episcopal Office, for refusing to suspend Dr. *Sharp*, who had preached against Popery in Vindication of the Church of *England*.

Whilst the King was thus impetuously pursuing his Popish Measures, though the Nation was in a profound Peace, he had an Army of 15,000 Men encamped on *Hounslow-Heath*, under the Earl of *Fewersham*: And in the Camp was a publick Chapel, where Mass

was said every Day. This seemed plainly to indicate, that he intended to make use of Force, if he could not bring his Measures to bear without it : Which put Mr. *Johnson*, mentioned in the last Reign, upon publishing an Address to the Protestant Officers and Soldiers in the Army, exhorting them not to be the Tools of the Court for subverting their Religion and Liberties. For this, after having been solemnly degraded, he stood thrice in the Pillory, was whipped from *Newgate* to *Tyburn*, and fined 500 Marks. But this Writing being dispersed in the Army, made such an Impression, that it was thought it tended not a little to the Defection that happened in it afterwards.

*Miles Prance*, who was a Papist, being brought to his Trial for Perjury in relation to his Depositions about Sir *Edmundbury Godfrey's* Murder, upon his pleading Guilty, had his Sentence greatly mitigated, the Whipping Part being wholly remitted.

Besides the publick Measures the King so vigorously took for the Cause of Popery; his private Endeavours were not wanting to make Profelytes among his Courtiers. The Earl of *Sunderland* was brought over, or at least pretended to be so ; and some have thought he did it, the more effectually to undermine the King's Projects. But the Earls of *Rocheſter* and *Clarendon*, Brothers-in-Law to the King, remained firm ; for which the former lost the Treasurership, which was put in Commission ; and the latter the Privy-Seal, which was given to Lord *Arundel*, a Papist.

The King's Zeal also put him upon sending the Earl of *Castlemain* on a solemn Embassy to the Pope, in order to reconcile the three Nations to the Holy See.

But *Innocent XI.* having more Sense than *James*, seeing the Impracticability of his Undertaking, and having also a Quarrel with the *French King*, who was in close Friendship with the King of *England*, gave the Ambassador a very cold Reception. Whenever he was to have an Audience, the Pope had a Fit of Coughing ready at hand to hinder it ; which was repeated so often, that the Earl threatened to depart. The Pope only sent him Word, that *ſince he had a Mind to go, he would advise him to ſet out early in the Morning, and reſt at Noon, becauſe it was dangerous travelling in that Country in the Heat of the Day.*

In the Beginning of the Year 1687, the King sent his Declaration into *Scotland*, ſuſpending, by Virtue of his ſovereign Authority, Prerogative Royal, and abſolute Power, all Laws againſt the Catholicks ; And, on *April 4*, he published the like Declaration for Liberty of Conſcience in *England*, only not in quite ſo high a Style. It is not ſtrange, that the ſeveral Sects of Proteſtant Diſſenters ſhould at firſt preſent Addreſſes of Thanks for this Indulgence, as they found a preſent Eaſe in it : But afterwards reflecting more maturely upon the King's Deſign, the beſt Part of them ſaw the Snare that was laid for the whole Proteſtant Intereſt in the Kingdom ; and notwithstanding the King's Endeavours to divide them, both Church of *England* and Diſſenters united for their common Safety ; Paſſive-Obedience and Non-Reſiſtance being now once more out of Faſhion, which had been inculcated as an eſſential Doctrinè of the Church.

The King ſent a Mandate to the Univerſity of *Cambridge*, to admit one *Alban Francis*, a *Benedictine*



*dictine* Monk, to the Degree of Master of Arts, without taking the Oaths ; which the *University* refusing to do, the Vice-Chancellor was deprived of his Office by the Ecclesiastical Commissioners.

But the Affair of *Magdalen-College* in *Oxford* made the greatest Noise. The Presidentship of that College being vacant, the King sent his Mandate to the Vice-President and Fellows, to elect one *Anthony Farmer*, a Man of ill Fame, who had promised to declare himself a Catholick, into that Office. The College refused to comply, as being contrary to their Statutes, and chose *Dr. Hough*. Upon this, the Vice-President and Fellows, were summoned before the Ecclesiastical Commissioners, who suspended the Vice-President and one of the Fellows, and deprived the new President : But their Allegations against *Farmer* appearing just, the King sent them a second Mandate to elect *Dr. Parker*, Bishop of *Oxford*, who was a thorough Courtier, and a reputed Papist. The Fellows sticking to their first Choice, would obey this Mandate no more than the former : Which made the King resolve to go to *Oxford* and conquer their Obstinacy by his Presence. But all his passionate Threatnings could not prevail : The Fellows remained firm, for which 25 (all but two of the whole Body) were expelled, and deprived of their Fellowships. *Dr. Hough* refusing to put *Parker* in Possession of his Lodgings, the Doors were broke open ; and the deprived Fellows had their Places supplied by Papists. This *Dr. Hough* was the late venerable Bishop of *Worcester*, who died in 1743.

The King did all he could to gain the Members of Parliament,

and induce them to abolish the Penal Laws and Test, or authorize his dispensing Power. He closeted them, and used Promises and Threats to bring them to a Compliance ; but all proving in vain, he dissolved them on *July 2*. After this he tried all Manner of Ways to get a new Parliament to his Mind, particularly by *Quo Warrantos* and new modelling Corporations. But after all, such was the Disposition of the Generality of the Nation, and such their Aversion to Popery and arbitrary Power, which they saw it was his Design to establish, that he never durst venture to call another Parliament.

On *July 3*, *Ferdinand Dada*, who had been about the King's Person ever since his Accession, being invested with the Character of the Pope's Nuncio in *England*, made his publick Entry at *Windsor*, with all the Formality of a Popish Procession ; though it was High Treason by the Laws for any one to assume that Character.

At the same Time that the King was thus labouring to introduce Popery, he received into his Protection, and very charitably relieved, Multitudes of *French* Protestants, whom Persecution had forced to fly their native Country.

The King had a great Desire to know the Opinion of the Prince and Princess of *Orange* concerning the Penal Laws and Test, not doubting but, if they were for their Repeal, it would have a great Weight with a new Parliament. The Matter was at first managed with great Secrecy by one *Mr. Stuart*, who by the King's private Direction wrote to Pensionary *Fagel* about it. At last some Circumstances occasioned it to be made publick, to the King's great Mortification,

tification, as it let the World know, how contrary the Sentiments of the Prince and Princess were to those of the King their Father: For they directed Pensionary *Fagel* to declare, That though they were for a full Liberty of Conscience, and against any one's being punished or ill used for differing from the established Religion; yet as to the Test, and those other Penal Laws that were made for the Security of the Protestant Religion, they were against their being repealed, since the Papists received no other Prejudice from them, than the being excluded from both Houses of Parliament, and from publick Employments.

This Year put an End to the Life of the famous *George Villiers*, Duke of *Buckingham*. He had of late made but a contemptible Figure, and died obscurely in *Yorkshire*, after having squandered away his Estate by his extravagant Courses.

The Protestants, in the midst of their Danger, were in Hopes that the King being in Years would not live much longer, and that the Accession of the Princess of *Orange*, who was presumptive Heir to the Crown, would set all Things right again. But their Hopes seemed quite extinguished, when a Proclamation was published, on *January 2*, 1687-8, that the Queen was with Child, and ordering a Thanksgiving on that Account. The extravagant Joy of the Papists on this Occasion, the sanguine Hopes of the Jesuits, who gave out that this Conception was miraculous, and the Effect of a Vow to our Lady of *Loretto*, and that the Queen would certainly have a Prince, made the Generality of the Protestants, whose Interest it was to have no such Birth, entertain Suspicions of this Preg-

nancy, and that the Papists were going to impose an Heir on the Nation.

The King seeing no Hopes of having a Parliament at his Devotion, and that nothing would do but Force, began to augment his Army and Fleet, and the new Commissions were almost all bestowed on Popish Officers. He afterwards ordered some entire Regiments from *Ireland*, and filled up the Vacancies in the *English* Regiments with *Irish* and Popish Officers and Soldiers; which gave a general Disgust to the Army, and Lampoons and Ballads were made against the *Irish*, whom the *English* hated ever since the bloody Massacre in 1641.

On *April 27*, 1688, came out a *second Declaration for Liberty of Conscience*, which the Bishops were ordered to see read in all Churches and Chapels. Some few Bishops obeyed, and it was read in a few Churches, when the Congregations generally went out. But *Sancroft* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, *Lloyd* Bishop of *St. Asaph*, *Kenn* of *Bath and Wells*, *Turner* of *Ely*, *Lake* of *Chichester*, *White* of *Peterborough*, and *Trelawny* of *Bristol*, after some Consultation, resolved not to obey the Order, and went and presented a Petition to the King against it. They were upon this, *June 8*, summoned before the Council, and adhering to their Petition, were sent to the *Tower*, privately, as it were by Water; but this did not hinder Multitudes flocking to the Water-Side, desiring their Blessing, and applauding and encouraging their Constancy.

Two Days after, *June 10*, the Queen was said to be delivered of a Prince (the late *Pretender*.) Many believed then, and still believe, that this was a suppositious Child. It is certain, there were a great many mysterious Circumstances in Relation



on to both the Pregnancy and the Lying-in: And though the King and Queen knew the general Suspicions of the People, yet they took no Methods to remove those Suspicions, but by their Management rather increased them. The Princess *Anne* was then at the *Bath*, the Archbishop of *Canterbury* in the *Tower*, and the *Dutch* Ambassador was not called to be a Witness for the Princess of *Orange*. And some Time after, when the King thought fit to have several Witnesses examined in Council, and their Depositions solemnly taken, to prove the Reality of the Birth, the Proofs were of such a Nature as rendered it still more doubtful. However this may be said, that Circumstances, which otherwise would be thought to have little or nothing in them, in case of a general Suspicion, are usually applied to confirm that Suspicion.

The seven Bishops, who, on *June 15*, were discharged from the *Tower* upon their own Recognizance, were on the 29th tried at the *King's Bench* Bar, for a Libel against the King and his Government, as their Petition was called. Two of the Judges, *Wright* and *Alibone*, gave their Opinion that it was a Libel; and the two others, *Holloway* and *Powell*, that it was not. In the End the Jury acquitted them, when *Westminster-Hall* resounded with Shouts of Joy, which presently spread themselves through the Cities of *Westminster* and *London*, and then through the whole Kingdom. As soon as the News reached the Camp on *Hounslow-Heath*, the Soldiers made loud Rejoicings even in the Hearing of the King, who was there at that Time; and to shew how much he resented the Acquittal of the Bishops, he immediately turned *Holloway* and *Powell* out of their Places.

These repeated Mortifications put the King upon making Trial of his Army, on which Occasion he received the greatest Mortification of all: For beginning with the Lord *Litchfield's* Regiment, he ordered them to take their Arms; and immediately commanded such Officers and Soldiers, as would not contribute to the Repeal of the Penal Laws and Test, to lay them down; which they all did except two Captains, and a few Popish Soldiers: At which he was so astonished, that he stood speechless for a while, and then bade them take up their Arms again, adding with a sudden Air, *that he would not hereafter do them the Honour to ask their Advice*. His only Expedient now was to new-model his Forces, which he began to do by cashiering Protestants and putting Papists in their Room; but this only disgusted the whole Army the more. The Fleet was no better disposed to favour the Views of the King; for Vice-Admiral *Strickland* attempting to have Mass said on Board his Ship, it occasioned such a Disturbance among the Sailors, that they were with Difficulty restrained from throwing the Priests over-board.

After the Birth, real or pretended, of a Prince of *Wales*, the best Part of the Nation, Tories as well as Whigs, began in earnest to think of Means for preserving their Religion and Liberties from being utterly destroyed: For now the Danger from Popery and Arbitrary Power was not likely to end with the King's Life, but to be perpetuated by Means of this Birth. In this Situation, a great many Persons of Eminence and Interest in the Kingdom, both Clergy and Laity, began to turn their Eyes towards *Holland*, and to take Measures for inviting over the Prince of *Orange*, in order to put him at the Head of the

the Party against the King, which was indeed the main Body of the Nation. Several of the Nobility and Gentry going abroad on various Pretences, waited on the Prince at the *Hague*; and by this Means such a secret Correspondence was held with the great and leading Men of the Kingdom, as in a short Time produced a wonderful Revolution, and a happy Deliverance for this Protestant Country. And such was the Situation of Affairs in *Europe* at that Time, on Account of the ambitious Views of *France*, which King *James* was sure to favour, that not only the Protestant but *Roman* Catholick Powers desired a Revolution in *England*, and even Pope *Innocent XI.* who was called the *Protestant Pope*, wished well to the Design. Those who went over to *Holland*, and there promoted this Enterprize, among many others, were the following. Mr. *Sidney*, Brother to Colonel *Algernoon Sidney* (beheaded in the late Reign) Sir *Robert Peyton*, Sir *Rowland Gwyn*, Dr. *Burnet*, Lord *Wharton*, Colonel *Sidney*, Uncle to the Earl of *Sunderland*, Lord *Dunblain*, Son to the Earl of *Danby*, the Earls of *Shrewsbury* and *Macclesfield*, Admiral *Herbert*, his Cousin Mr. *Herbert*, Mr. *Russel*, Major *Wildman*, the Lords *Mordaunt* and *Parolet*, and the Earl of *Wiltshire*. The principal Persons with whom they corresponded in *England*, were the Earls of *Danby*, *Devonshire* and *Dorset*, the Lords *Lovelace* and *Delamere*, the Duke of *Norfolk*, the Marquess of *Hallifax*, the Marquess of *Winchester*, the Lord *Willoughby*, Mr. *Lester*, Mr. *Hampden*, Mr. *Porvle*, and others, with several eminent Citizens of *London*. The Bishop of *London*; and a great many others, were likewise hearty in the Design, which was managed with great secrecy at first, both at *London* and the *Hague*; but when it came to be

known, was approved in a Manner by the whole Nation, and I may say by all *Europe*, except *France*.

The States-General having resolved to assist the Prince of *Orange*, great Preparations were made in *Holland* for his Expedition, which were coloured by various Pretences; and King *James* would not believe, for some Time, that the Storm threatened him. However, the King of *France* gave him timely Notice of what was apprehended, and, it is said, offered him 30,000 Men, but that the Offer was rejected by means of the Earl of *Sunderland*, who is said also to have concealed from the King some Letters, which Mr. *Skelton*, Envoy at *Paris*, had sent in relation to the Affair. It is certain, that many suspected him of betraying his Master, and holding a secret Correspondence with the Prince of *Orange*, and that he was soon after turned out of all his Posts. The first certain Advice the King had of the Prince of *Orange's* Design, was towards the End of *September*, when he appeared in the utmost Consternation, consulted immediately with the Bishops then in *London*, abolished the Commission for Ecclesiastical Affairs, took off the Bishop of *London's* Suspension, restored the City to their Charter, removed Popish Magistrates and put Protestants in their Room, and took some other Steps towards the Redress of Grievances; which had not the desired Effect, as they came too late, and were evidently the Result of Necessity, not of Inclination. The Popish Chapels were also now shut up for fear of Insults from the Möb, and many *Romish* Priests and Jesuits began to consult their own Safety, by timely quitting the Kingdom.

In the mean Time the Prince of *Orange* published a Declaration, dated *October 10.* N. S. importing, that the Design of his Undertaking was



to maintain the Protestant Religion, and the Laws and Liberties of these Kingdoms, which had been so openly violated, and, in order to this, to have a *free and lawful Parliament*; to which he had been *solicited by a great many Lords, both Spiritual and Temporal, and by many Gentlemen and other Subjects of all Ranks.*

On October 16, the Prince took a solemn and most affectionate Leave of the States, and on the 19th set sail with a Fleet of about 50 Men of War, 25 Frigates, as many Fire-Ships, and near 400 Victuallers and Transports, having about 14,000 Land-Forces on Board; and accompanied by the *English Nobility* and Gentry already mentioned and others, with Count *Nassau*, Count *de Solmes*, M. *Bentinck*, M. *Overgaerde*, and M. *Zulesteyn*; as also the famous Marshal *Schomberg*, and a great many other *French Officers*, Refugees for their Religion. The Prince carried a Flag with *English Colours*, and their Highnesses Arms, surrounded with this Motto, *The Protestant Religion and Liberties of England.*

This gallant Fleet had not failed a great Way, when the Wind turned westerly, and a violent Storm arose, which drove it back, and so dispersed it, that it was with Difficulty the Ships made some one Port, and some another. King *James* on this News began to recall some of his late *Acts of Grace*, and thereby discovered what was to be expected from him, if once he should be free from all Danger.

The Damage the scattered Fleet sustained was so small, that the Prince was soon in a Condition to put to Sea again; which he did on November 1, and sailing with a favourable Wind, entered the Channel on the 3d, the *English Fleet* under Lord *Dartmouth* lying still,

and letting the *Dutch Fleet* pass by; whether hindered by the Wind, or not inclined to oppose the Prince; who on the 5th happily landed with his whole Army at *Torbay*, without any Opposition. From thence he marched to *Exeter*, and staid there some Days before any Persons of Note came to join him; but at length the Gentry in those Parts waited on him in great Numbers, and drew up an *Association* to stand by him and one another in the Cause they had engaged in, which was afterwards signed by abundance of People of all Ranks all over the Kingdom.

When the King heard of the Prince's Landing, he ordered his Army, under the Earl of *Feverham*, to rendezvous on *Salisbury Plain*. But great Numbers soon deserted and went over to the Prince, and the Lord *Cornbury* in particular carried off with him several Regiments. When the King arrived at *Salisbury*, most of the chief Officers declared, that they could not in Conscience fight against the Prince of *Orange*, and the Lord *Churchill* (afterwards Duke of *Marlborough*) with several others actually went over to him. The King finding he could not rely on his Army, returned to *London*, and on the Way had the Mortification to be left by Prince *George* of *Denmark*, who, with the Duke of *Ormond* and others, went off to the Prince of *Orange*, and was soon followed by his Princess, the Lady *Anne*, to the unspeakable Grief of the King her Father, from whom there was now almost an universal Defection of the Nobility, and all Ranks of People.

The Prince, in the mean Time, advanced to *Sherburn*, and from thence to *Salisbury*, where he made a triumphant Entry; the King's Army having before retired to *Reading*.

ing. His Majesty now thought fit to consult some Protestant Peers; and by their Advice promised to call a free Parliament, and to send Commissioners to treat with the Prince; who by their Hands sent some Proposals, which were so moderate, that the King seemed willing to accept them: But, in the mean Time, consulting with his Popish Friends, to whom the Proposals were by no Means favourable, they advised him to withdraw himself, with his Queen and Son, out of the Kingdom. Accordingly, the Queen with the young Prince, and a few Attendants, went away on *December 9*, in the Night, and embarking at *Gravesend*, arrived safely in *France*; and the King, the next Night, left *Whitehall* in Disguise, in order to follow her thither.

As soon as this was known, the Lords in and about *London* met at *Guildhall*, and, with the Lord-Mayor and Aldermen, resolved to stand by the Prince of *Orange*, which they sent Deputies to acquaint him with; and the Common-Council sent an Address, imploring his Protection, and desiring him to hasten his March to *London*. The Mob now drew together and pulled down the Mass-Houses; and the Houses of some foreign Ambassadors did not escape their Fury. In the midst of these Commotions, Chancellor *Jeffries*, being discovered as he was attempting to escape in Disguise out of the Nation, was very roughly handled by the Mob, and at last sent to the *Tower*, where he soon ended his Days, and so escaped the exemplary Punishment he had so richly deserved.

The Earl of *Feverham*, in pursuance of a Letter he received from the King at his Departure, disbanded his Forces: Upon which, some Outrages committed by the *Irish* Soldiers, occasioned a most terrible

Panick in *London*, which soon spread itself all over the Kingdom, so that every one stood upon his Defence. The Prince and the Peers, to prevent any farther Mischiefs, ordered the disbanded Troops to re-assemble under their respective Colonels and Commanders.

In the mean Time, an accident happened to the King, who having embarked in a small Vessel near *Feverham*, before he could sail, was stopped by a Number of Fishermen and others, who rifled him, and treated him with great Indignity, taking him for a Popish Priest, and Chaplain to Sir *Edward Hales*, who attended him in his Flight. Upon this, many others came on board, and among the rest a Constable, who knowing the King, fell at his Feet, and begged him to forgive the Violence offered to his Person. The King finding he was known, was desirous to be gone; but the People brought him, as it were by Force, to an Inn in the Town, where he sent for the Earl of *Winchelsea*, who prevailed with him, much against his Inclination, to go back to *London*. And the Lords hearing of this Adventure, sent four of their Body to invite him to return to *Whitehall*; where, on *December 16*, he arrived, amidst the loud Acclamations of the People. His only publick Act at this Time, which was the last of his Reign, was the Issuing out an Order against Mobs and Riots, by which the Papists had greatly suffered; and during his short Stay, his Palace was crouded with *Irish* Papists, Priests, and Jesuits.

He had sent an Invitation to the Prince, who was to be at *London* the next Day, to come to *St. James's*; but the Lords, who were with his Highness, did not think it safe for him to be there, unless the King

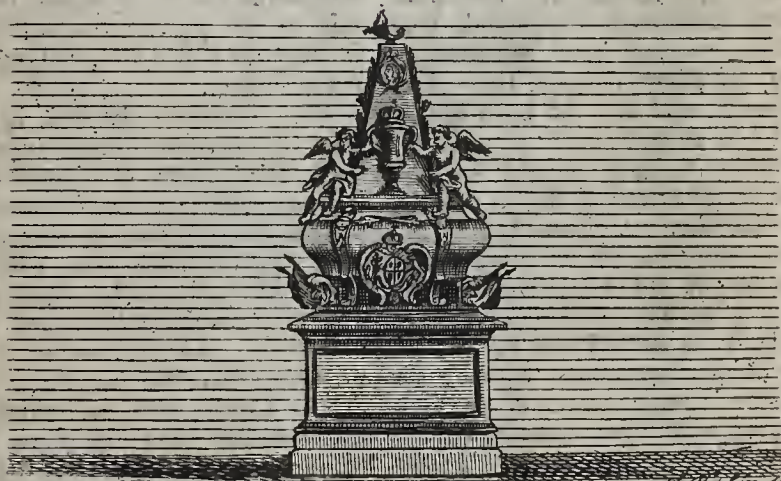
and



and his Popish Guards were at a convenient Distance. And so he sent three Peers to desire him to remove to *Ham* near *Richmond*. In the mean Time, the *Dutch* Guards took Possession of *Whitehall* and *St. James's*. The King, instead of going to *Ham*, desired Leave to go to *Rochester*, which was readily granted, and he set out the next Day about Noon. The same Day, in the Afternoon, the Prince arrived at *St. James's*, amidst the joyful Acclamations of all Ranks of People. On *December 21*, he convened the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, who were in *London*, about 70 in Number, to consider of the best Methods for calling a free Parliament, and pursuing the Ends of his *Declaration*.

As to the King, being arrived at *Rochester*, and dreading the Conse-

quence of a free Parliament, he delayed not to put his former Design in Execution: For privately withdrawing himself about Three in the Morning, *December 23*, with only the Duke of *Berwick* his natural Son, and two others, he embarked, and with a favourable Wind arrived at *Ambleteuse* in *France*; from whence he immediately repaired to *St. Germain's*. To this Flight we may properly fix the Period of this unfortunate Monarch's Reign, after he had swayed the Scepter not quite four Years. He was now in the 56th Year of his Age, and his Reign might have been as happy and glorious as any of his Predecessors, were it not for the violent Counsels of a Popish, Jesuitical Faction, and his own extreme Bigotry to their enslaving Superstition.



## I N T E R R E G N U M.

**A**S soon as King *James* had thus left the Kingdom, the Lords took upon themselves the Government, and meeting in their House, they, on *December 25*, agreed to address the Prince of *Orange* to take upon him the Administration of all publick Affairs, till a Convention should meet, for which they desired him to issue out Letters to the several Counties, Cities and Boroughs, directing them to chuse such a Number of Persons to represent them, as were of Right to be sent to Parliament. They also issued out an Order for all Papists to depart ten Miles from the City of *London*, and not to remove above five Miles from their Habitations in the Country. In order to give a greater Weight to the Proceedings of the Lords, the Prince, on his being informed of the King's Departure, had published an Order, desiring all such Persons as had been Members of any of King *Charles II*'s Parliaments, and also the Lord-Mayor and Aldermen, and 50 of the Common-Council of the City of *London*, to meet him at *St. James's*, on *December 26*; which they accordingly did, (there being about 160 of the old Members) and repairing to the Commons House, resolved to address the Prince, as the Lords had done, to take on him the Administration of the Government, until the Meeting of the intended Convention, on *January 22*. The Prince returned an Answer severally to the Lords and Commons, that he would do as they desired. After which, he immediately ordered *M. Barillon*, the French Ambassador, to depart the Kingdom in 24 Hours. And on

*December 31*, he published a Proclamation, authorizing all Justices of the Peace, and other Officers, not being Papists, to act in their respective Places until the Meeting of the Convention, or Orders to the contrary.

The *Scotch* Peers then in *London*, to the Number of 30, and about 80 Gentlemen, assembled at the Prince's Desire, and presented the like Address to him, with regard to the Administration of all publick Affairs in *Scotland*, as the *English* Lords and Gentlemen had done with respect to *England*, desiring him also to call a General Meeting of the States to be holden on the 14th of *March* following. And the Prince returned them much the same Answer as he had done to the *English*. At the same Time the Prince extending his Care to *Ireland*, summoned the Earl of *Tyrconnel* to submit to the present Administration in *England*: But this had not the desired Effect.

The Forces disbanded by the Earl of *Feverſham* being re-assembled, the Prince discharged their Arrears with 200,000 *l.* advanced in four Days by the City of *London*; after which he made such a Reform in the Army, by cashiering Papists, and filling up the Vacancies with Protestants, as might render it serviceable to the Nation.

The Convention, for which the Elections had been carried on with the utmost Freedom, met on the appointed Day, *January 22*, 1688-9. The Lords chose the Marquess of *Hallifax* for their Speaker, and the Commons *Mr. Powle*. After a Letter from the Prince had been read in both Houses, they jointly presented an Address to him,



him, acknowledging him, under God, the Deliverer of the Nation, approving of his Administration of the Government, and praying him to continue it. They then appointed a general Thanksgiving for the late happy Deliverance, and a particular Prayer was ordered to be inserted for the Prince of Orange.

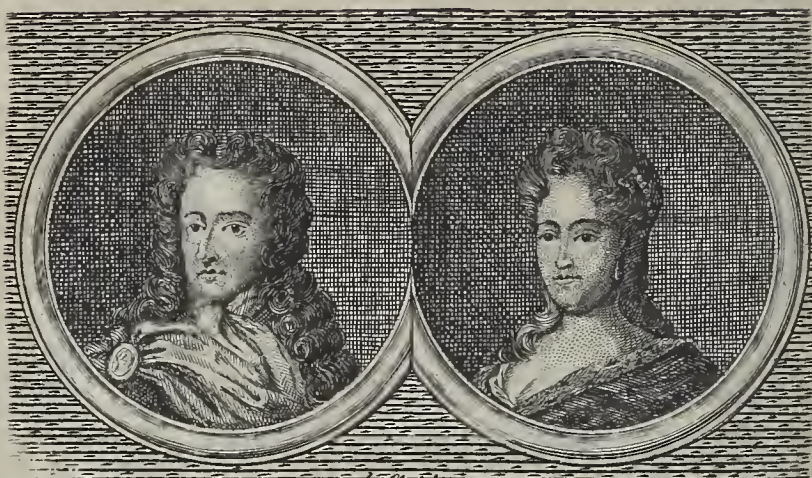
The Commons had not sat long before they pretty readily came to the following remarkable Vote, *That King James II. having endeavoured to subvert the Constitution of the Kingdom, by breaking the Original Contract between King and People; and by the Advice of Jesuits and other wicked Persons, having violated the fundamental Laws, and withdrawn himself out of the Kingdom, hath abdicated the Government, and that the Throne is thereby become vacant.*

In the House of Lords Things did not go on so smoothly. There was a strong Party for a Regency, among whom the Earl of Nottingham was the Chief; and after great Debates, it was carried to put the Word *Deserted* in the Room of *Abdicated*, and to leave out the Clause of the *Vacancy* of the Throne. This occasioned a most memorable Conference between the two Houses, and the Result of it was, that the Lords, at last, departed from their Amendments, and agreed to the Vote of the Commons; after which, both Houses voted, that the Prince and Princess of Orange should be King and Queen.

The Princess arrived from Holland on February 12, and the next Day, both Prince and Princess being seated on two large Chairs under a Canopy of State in the Banqueting-House, both Houses of the Convention waited on them in a Body, and made them a so-

lemn Offer of the Crown, after having caused a *Declaration of their Rights*, which had been violated by King James, to be read; concluding thus: *Having therefore an entire Confidence, that his said Highness, the Prince of Orange, will perfect the Deliverance so far advanced by him, and will still preserve them from the Violation of their Rights, which they have here asserted, and from all other Attempts upon their Religion, Rights and Liberties; the Lords Spiritual and Temporal and Commons, assembled at Westminster, do resolve, That William and Mary, Prince and Princess of Orange, be, and be declared, King and Queen of England, France, and Ireland, and the Dominions thereunto belonging, to hold the Crown and Royal Dignity of the said Kingdoms and Dominions, to them the said Prince and Princess, during their Lives, and the Life of the Survivor of them; and that the sole and full Exercise of the Royal Power be only in, and executed by, the said Prince of Orange, in the Names of the said Prince and Princess, during their joint Lives; and after their Decease, the said Crown and Royal Dignity of the said Kingdoms and Dominions to be to the Heirs of the Body of the said Princess; and for Default of such Issue, to the Princess Anne of Denmark, and the Heirs of her Body; and for Default of such Issue, to the Heirs of the Body of the said Prince of Orange.*

The Prince, in a most agreeable and obliging Answer, accepted of the Crown in the Name of them both; and the same Day they were proclaimed King and Queen by the Names of *William and Mary*, at which a general Joy appeared among the People.



J. Stedman sc.

1689—1694.—1702.

## WILLIAM III. and MARY II.

1689. **T**HE memorable Revolution, which King James's Conduct had made necessary for the Preservation of the Protestant Religion, and the Laws and Liberties of the Kingdom, being thus happily compleated, the first Thing King William did, after he had settled his Privy-Council, was his giving the Royal Assent, on February 23, to a Bill that had passed both Houses, to remove and prevent all Questions and Disputes concerning the Assembling and Sitting of this present Parliament. By which Act the Convention, which had placed the Crown on the Prince and Princess of Orange, was changed into a Parliament.

To shew the Sense of the Nation concerning some of the late sanguinary and arbitrary Proceedings, the Attainers of several Persons, who had suffered capital Punishments, were, by Acts of Parliament, at several Times, annulled and made void ; as those of William Lord Rus-

sel, Algernoon Sidney, Esq; Mrs. Alicia Lisle, and Alderman Cornish. The Judgment against Mr. Samuel Johnson was reversed ; and though there were great and long Debates about Titus Oates, whose Evidence in general concerning the Popish Plot was never called in Question, only some Particulars relating to Time and Place, yet the Parliament addressed the King to take off the remaining Part of his Punishment, namely, his Imprisonment for Life, and annual Pillorying ; which his Majesty readily complied with, and moreover allowed him a yearly Pension. The Judgment upon the Quo Warranto against the City of London was also reversed, and the City restored to its Privileges ; and an Act of Oblivion, at length, passed, out of which were excepted some few of the many late Instruments of Popery and arbitrary Power. The Earl of Sunderland was excepted only for Form's Sake,



Sake, he being at the same Time in Favour with the King.

From the Beginning of the Reign of King *William* and Queen *Mary*, there was a Party in the Nation who disliked the new Settlement, and were in continual Plots to overturn it, and to restore the late King *James*. These were distinguished by the Name of *Jacobites*, as also that of *Nonjurors*, from their refusing to take the Oaths to the present Government. That the Papists should dislike the Revolution, is not at all strange. And to these were joined several Protestants, who either from the strong Impressions of the late Doctrine of Passive-Obedience and Non-Resistance, could not bring themselves to think it lawful to resist King *James*, or who, though they thought the Interposition of the Prince of *Orange* necessary at the Time, yet were against his being made King, and were only for a Regency in the Name of King *James II.* being strongly prepossessed with the Notions of hereditary Right, and direct lineal Succession. Some of these, indeed, afterwards complied with the Times, as the Earl of *Nottingham*, who was made Secretary of State to King *William* and Queen *Mary*, and Dr. *Sherlock*, who, after the Victory at the *Boyne*, acknowledged their Majesties Title, and was made Dean of *St. Paul's*. But many adhered to their old Principles, which had been innocent enough, if they had not carried them into Plots and Conspiracies against the present Government. And the Party was strengthened and kept alive by several Clergymen, who scrupled or refused to take the new Oaths, among whom were some Bishops, as the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and the Bishops of *Ely*, *Bath* and *Wells*, *Peter-*

*borough*, *Norwich*, and *Gloucester*, (of whom the four first had been imprisoned in the *Tower* by King *James*) who after some Time were deprived, and their Sees filled with others; which occasioned what some called a *Schism* in the Church of *England*. Thus the Revolution had many Enemies from the Beginning, tho' the Protestant Religion was preserved by it, and the Liberties of the People better settled than ever, they had been before; and the only Defect in it seems to have been, the not guarding sufficiently against Bribery and Corruption, which was complained of in this Reign, and has been too much practised by Ministers ever since; and may one Time or other be the Ruin of the Nation, which the Revolution was intended to preserve.

The King having acquainted the Parliament, so early as *February 27*, with the News of the late King *James* having sailed from *Brest* with a considerable Body of *French* Troops, in order to land in *Ireland*, both Houses unanimously resolved, *That they would stand by and assist his Majesty with their Lives and Fortunes, in supporting his Alliances abroad, in reducing of Ireland, and in Defence of the Protestant Religion, and Laws of the Kingdom.* Which Resolution they communicated to his Majesty in an Address, to which he returned such an affectionate and obliging Answer, as gave a general Satisfaction.

Not long after, the King, by the Advice of the Commons, and being strongly solicited to it by his Allies, declared War against *France*, who had already begun it against the Emperor and the *Dutch*, exercised all Manner of Hostilities against the *English*, and was now actually assisting the late



King James in his Invasion of Ireland.

The King and Queen were solemnly crowned by the Bishop of London, on April 11, 1689; before which his Majesty had conferred several Titles of Honour: Among the rest, Charles Marquess of Winchester was made Duke of Bolton, William Bentinck, Esq; Earl of Portland, Ralph Lord Montagu Earl of Montagu, and John Lord Churchill Earl of Marlborough. And about the same Time, Dr. Gilbert Burnet, who came over with his Majesty when Prince, was, upon the Death of Dr. Seth Ward, advanced to the Bishoprick of Salisbury.

The Parliament, at the King's Desire, had passed an Act for taking away the Tax called Hearth-Money; which received the Royal Assent, on April 24. As this was an odious and grievous Tax, the Abolishing of it was certainly a very popular Measure, at the Beginning of the new Government.

The Court would have been glad to have found Means for admitting the Protestant Dissenters to a Share in Posts under the Government; but this did not please the Majority of the two Houses. However, they readily passed an Act for exempting their Majesties Protestant Subjects dissenting from the Church of England, from the Penalties of certain Laws; which is commonly called the Act of Toleration. The King gave his Assent to it on May 24; and to this Act they owe the just Liberty they enjoy at this Day.

A little before, the Earl of Danby was created Marquess of Carmarthen, and Marshal Schomberg a Duke; and on June 1, Admiral Herbert was created Earl of Torrington. It may be proper also to take Notice of some of the Ecclesiastical

Promotions, on this remarkable Turn of Affairs, especially in the Room of the deprived Bishops. Dr. Stillingfleet was this Year [1689] promoted to the See of Worcester, Dr. Patrick to the See of Chichester, and Dr. Ironside to that of Bristol. Sir Jonathan Trelawney having been translated to Exeter. And after waiting long to no Purpose, for those Bishops to take the Oaths, who disliked the new Settlement, in the Beginning of the Year 1691, Dr. Tillotson was made Archbishop of Canterbury, in the Room of Archbishop Sancroft; Dr. Patrick was translated to Ely, in the Room of Bishop Turner; Dr. Kidder was made Bishop of Bath and Wells, in the Room of Bishop Ken; Dr. Fowler Bishop of Gloucester, in the Room of Bishop Frampton; Dr. Cumberland Bishop of Peterborough, in the Room of Bishop White; and Dr. Moore Bishop of Norwich, in the Room of Bishop Lloyd. These deprived Bishops generally behaved pretty quietly, at least to Appearance; but it was not so with some others of the Clergy, among whom Dr. Hickes, who was deprived of the Deanery of Worcester, was one of the most violent. We must not forget Dr. Sharp, who was made Archbishop of York upon the Death of Dr. Lamplugh; and Dr. Tennison, who was advanced to the See of Lincoln, upon the Death of Bishop Barlow.

To return to the Year 1689: On July 24, the Princess Anne of Denmark was delivered of a Prince, named William, whom his Majesty created Duke of Gloucester. The Lords had added a Clause to the Bill of Rights and Succession, in favour of the Princess Sophia, which the Commons rejected, and several Conferences passed between the two Houses upon it, but to no Pur-



Purpose; and the Birth of the above-mentioned Prince made it the less requisite to insist upon that Matter for the present. After this, there were Debates in the House of Commons about settling a Revenue on the Princess *Anne*. The Court seemed inclined to have it left to the King's Discretion, but the Princess was for a fixed Settlement, independent of the Court; which was carried in the House. And this Affair is thought by some to have been one Occasion of the Difference between the Queen and the Princess her Sister.

The King passed the *Bill of Rights and Succession*, on December 16, agreeable to the *Declaration of Rights*, when their Majesties accepted the Crown, with the Addition of a remarkable Clause, for excluding Papists, and Persons marrying Papists, for ever, from inheriting the Crown of *England*.

The Revolution in *Scotland* quickly followed that in *England*. The Convention of Estates in that Kingdom met on the Day appointed, March 14, and soon voted, That King *James*, by his assuming an arbitrary and despotick Power, and exercising it to the Subversion of the Protestant Religion, and the Laws and Liberties of the Nation, had forfeited the Right of the Crown, and the Throne was become *vacant*: And an Act was presently passed for settling the Crown upon the King and Queen of *England*; pursuant to which, their Majesties were proclaimed King and Queen of *Scotland*, on April 11, the Day of their Coronation in *England*. Then the Earl of *Argyle* and other Commissioners were sent to make a solemn Tender of the Crown to their Majesties, in the Name of the Estates and Kingdom of *Scotland*; which was done, on May 11, their Majesties being seated

on a Throne under a rich Canopy, in the *Banqueting-House*. It must be observed, that the Bishops had published an Abhorrence of the Prince of *Orange's* Expedition, and the Episcopal Party in general, who had been mere Creatures of the Court, and violent Opposers of the Presbyterian Party, adhered firmly to King *James*. But immediately upon the Success of the Prince's Expedition, and his *Declaration* in favour of *Scotland*, the Presbyterians had begun to lift up their Heads, and to insult their late Persecutors in their Turn. And now the Meeting of the Estates was turned into a Parliament, and Prelacy once more abolished, as contrary to the Inclinations of the Generality of the People. In the mean Time, the Duke of *Gordon*, a Papist, still held the Castle of *Edinburgh* for the late King; but a vigorous Siege obliged him to surrender it, on June 13, upon Condition that he and the Garrison should have their Lives, Liberties, and Fortunes secured. And the Earl of *Dundee* being slain in Battle, and the Forces he had raised in the *Highlands* dwindling away by Degrees, and being at length entirely suppressed, their Majesties remained afterwards in the peaceable Possession of the Crown of *Scotland*. Though some Things occasioned great Uneasiness, of which the Enemies of the Government failed not to make their Advantage; particularly, the Slaughter of the Men of *Glenco*, between 30 and 40 in Number, as it is said, after they had laid down their Arms, in February, 1692-3; though the *Scotch* Parliament, in 1695, when an Enquiry was made into that Affair, resolved, that the Persons concerned in it had exceeded his Majesty's Instructions for suppressing the *Highland* Rebels, who had

not accepted the Indemnity that was offered by the Time prefixed in the Proclamation. But the *Scots East-India Company*, erected in Consequence of an Act of Parliament passed in that Kingdom in 1695, and their new Colony at *Darien*, was a Matter of much greater Consequence; for it being violently opposed by the *English*, *Dutch*, and *Spaniards*, King *William* thought himself under a Necessity to withdraw his Protection from this new Settlement, and to order his Governors in *America* to forbid the having any Commerce with, or giving any Assistance to it; so that the *Scots* were at last forced to abandon it, under all the discouraging Circumstances imaginable: Which caused great Discontents in *Scotland*, and gave the King as much + Uneasiness, as perhaps any one Thing in the whole Course of his Reign: And if the *Scots* Parliament had not been in the Interest of the Court, it might have been attended with much worse Consequences.

I shall here dismiss the Affairs of *Scotland*, and take one short View of what passed in *Ireland*. *Tyrconnel* had secured the most important Places of that Kingdom, and used such Violence against the Protestants, that they were forced to retire to their Brethren in the *North*; who seizing on *Kilmore*, *Coleraine*, *Inniskilling*, and *Londonderry*, declared for King *William* and Queen *Mary*. The late King *James*, as has been already hinted, sailed from *Brest* with some *French* Troops, and landed at *Kinsale* on *March* 12, 1688-9. Having taken *Coleraine* and *Kilmore*, after a stout Resistance, he laid Siege to *Londonderry*, on *April* 20; from whence, a few Days after, he departed to

meet his Parliament at *Dublin*, where he passed an Act to attain between two and 3000 Protestant Lords, Ladies, Clergymen, and Gentlemen of High-1 eason. In the mean Time, the Siege of *Londonderry* was carried on with the utmost Efforts, and the Garrison under Mr. *George Walker* a Clergyman, and Major *Baker*, held out with the most surprizing Resolution, though reduced to the Necessity of feeding upon Horse-Flesh, Dogs, Cats, Rats, and Mice, Tallow, Starch, dried and salted Hides, and all Kinds of Offal; till Major-General *Kirk* arriving with some Ships laden with Provisions, which, after a long Delay, he at last found Means, with Difficulty, to convey into the Town, the Besiegers, on *July* 31, thought fit to raise the Siege. The Garrison of *Inniskilling*, at the same Time, did Wonders; particularly, the Day before the Siege of *Derry* was raised, they advanced near 20 Miles to meet about 6000 *Irish*, and defeated them, killing and drowning near 3000, though themselves were not above 2000, and had but about 20 killed and 50 wounded. In *August*, Duke *Schomberg* arrived in *Ireland* with 10,000 Men, took *Carrickfergus* in four Days, and performed other Acts of Bravery and Conduct; and would have made a much greater Progress, had he not met with Disappointment from Delays in transporting the rest of the Forces and Train of Artillery from *England*, which were owing to Negligence, or something worse, in the Persons who had the Management of those Affairs at home, or the Slowness in raising the Supplies; whilst the Army in *Ireland* was every Day diminishing with Sickness, which swept off many brave



brave Officers as well as great Numbers of Soldiers. King *William* having passed an Act for putting the Administration into the Hands of the Queen, whenever he should be out of the Kingdom, in June 1690, landed with a gallant Army in Ireland, and on July 1 fought the ever-memorable Battle of the *Boync*, wherein, though he had the Misfortune to lose the brave Duke - *Schomberg*, then 82 Years old, yet he gained a compleat Victory over the French and Irish Army, and obliged King *James* to retire to *Dublin*, and to make all the Haste he could back to *France*. King *William*, the following Sunday, entered *Dublin* in Triumph, and went to *St. Patrick's* Church to return Thanks to God for his Victory: And arriving in England the Beginning of September, he sent the Earl of *Marlborough* to carry on the Reduction of Ireland; who took *Cork* and *Kinsale* with such Expedition, that he was again at *Kensington*, on October 28. The next Year, 1691, the intrepid English under the brave General *Ginkle*, and other valiant Commanders, made themselves Masters of *Ballimore*, with incredible Bravery passed the *Shannon* amidst the Fire of the Enemy, and took *Athlone*, and fought the glorious Battle of *Aghrim* on July 12, wherein 4000 Irish and their General *St. Ruth* were slain; which was soon followed by the Surrender of *Galloway*, and lastly that of *Limerick* in October (where *Tyrconnel* died, as it were of Grief, on August 14) by which an End was put to the Irish War, and all Ireland was reduced to the Obedience of King *William* and Queen *Mary*. General *Ginkle* for his good Services was rewarded with the Title of Earl of *Athlone*.

In England, the King dissolved

the Convention Parliament, on February 6, 1689 90, and a new Parliament met on March 20. The first Thing they went upon was the Settling a Revenue for the Civil-List, when Sir *Charles Sedley* made a bold Speech against exorbitant Pensions and Salaries. And it was in this Session that the Act of Oblivion, before mentioned, was passed. On April 17, among other Honours conferred, the Lord *Delamere* was created Earl of *Warrington*.

When King *William* was in Ireland, the *Jacobites* began to stir, designing to rise when the French Fleet arrived on the Coast. But by the Vigilance and prudent Conduct of the Queen, their Measures were disconcerted; though the French Fleet actually sailed, and in an Engagement, on June 30, 1690, worsted the English and Dutch Fleet, which occasioned great Consternation, and Fears of an immediate Invasion; on which Occasion the City of London, and others their Majesties loyal Subjects, shewed an extraordinary Zeal for the Defence of the Government. And the timely Prevention of the *Jacobites* Rising, by securing the Leaders of the Party, together with the News of the King's Victory at the *Boync*, made the French desist from their Project for the present.

In the mean Time, the French King was pushing his Conquests in the Netherlands and other Parts, which made it necessary for King *William* to go over to the famous Congress at the *Hague*, in the Beginning of the Year 1691, in order to animate the Confederate Princes and States, who by the Slowness of their Councils, and Jarring of their particular Interests, had given too much Advantage to the common Enemy. And though the Emperor,

Spain, and the German Princes, upon the King's Remonstrances on the State of Affairs, came to vigorous Resolutions in Defence of the Liberties of *Europe* against *France*; yet, after all, *England* and *Holland* were in a Manner forced to bear the whole Charge and Burden of the War. The *French* were so far beforehand with the Allies, that they took the strong City of *Mons* this Year, and *Namur* in the Year following; after which was fought the Battle of *Steenkirk* (King *William* commanding the Confederate Army himself, as he did every Year during the War) in which though the *French* remained Masters of the Field of Battle, yet King *William* so bravely disputed the Victory, that they had scarce any thing else to boast of, the Loss being nearly equal on both Sides.

The King was no sooner gone abroad in 1691, but the *Jacobites* resumed their favourite Scheme, in Concert with *France*, for restoring the late King *James*. But the Vigilance of Queen *Mary* and the Government again disconcerted their Measures. Several were taken up, and Lord *Presden* and Mr. *Ashton* were both tried and condemned; the latter was executed, but the former, upon his discovering the whole Plot, was pardoned. One Part of the Conspiracy was, to get King *William* assassinated abroad, which being happily discovered and prevented, one *Grandval* a *Frenchman*, who was to be the infamous Actor, was tried by a Court-Martial, and executed as a Traitor, at *Eyndenhoven*, in 1692. At the same Time that this horrid Fact was to have been perpetrated, King *James* was to make a Descent upon *England* from *La Hague*, where he was ready with an

Army of *French*, *Irish*, *English* and *Scots*. But the *English* Fleet under Admiral *Ruffel*, *Delaval* and others, being timely joined by the *Dutch* Fleet, gave the *French* under Admiral *Tourville* such a signal Defeat, on May 19, 1692, and the two or three following Days, as rendered quite abortive this formidable projected Invasion: The *Royal Sun* of 104 Guns, commanded by *Tourville* himself, the *Admirable* of 102 Guns, and the *Conquerant* of 80, were burnt in this Engagement, with a great many lesser Ships.

The Beginning of the same Year, *Catharine* Queen-Dowager, Widow of King *Charles II.* left *Somerset-House*, and retired to her native Country, *Portugal*. On September 8, was a considerable Shock of an Earthquake, which continued for about a Minute, and was felt not only in *England*, but in *Flanders*, where King *William* then was. The same Year also died the Hon. *Robert Boyle*, &c. a most famous Experimental Philosopher, and Founder of the well known Lecture, which bears his Name.

The Parliament meeting towards the End of the Year, passed a Bill for the frequent Calling and Meeting of Parliaments, commonly called the *Triennial Bill*; but the King, by the Advice of his Ministers, refused his Assent: As he did also, the next Year, to a Bill touching free and impartial Proceedings in Parliament, being in the Nature of what is now called a *Place-Bill*; which so displeased the Commons, that they resolved, That whoever advised the King not to give the Royal Assent to that Act, was an Enemy to their Majesties and the Kingdom. However, the Parliament insisting upon the *Triennial Bill*, he thought fit to pass



pass it in 1694; which gave a general Satisfaction.

In 1693, by the good Conduct of King *William*, the *French* King's Designs upon *Brabant* were entirely frustrated. Some Time after, in *July*, was fought the famous Battle of *Landen*, between the Allied Army commanded by King *William*, and the *French* under the Duke of *Luxembourg*: And though the latter were much superior in Number, the former fought with such obstinate Bravery, under their prudent and valiant Leader, that for some Time they had manifestly the Advantage; and it was only the Superiority of Numbers that at last wrested the Victory out of their Hands: After which, the *French* made themselves Masters of *Charleroy*.

Our Loss likewise at Sea was this Year very considerable, which was reckoned to be owing to Mismanagement in our Admirals: For the whole *Brest* Fleet, on *June* 16, fell upon Sir *George Rooke's* Squadron, which had a Fleet of near 400 Merchant Ships, bound for the *Streights*, under its Convoy, whilst it was separated from the main Fleet, which should have convoyed it out of Danger, and took, burnt or sunk four of the greatest *Smyrna* Ships, three *Dutch* Men of War, and one *English*, and near 80 other Merchant-Ships: Which Miscarriage occasioned an Inquiry in Parliament, but nothing came of it.

On *November* 24, died Dr. *Sanncroft*, the deprived Archbishop of *Canterbury*, who seems to have been a quiet, honest Man, though he scrupled taking the Oaths.

In *April*, 1694, the Earl of *Shrewsbury*, who a little before was made Secretary of State in the Room of the Earl of *Nottingham*, was advanced to the Title of Duke of *Shrewsbury*; and the

Earl of *Mulgrave* was created Marquess of *Normanby*. Soon after the Marquess of *Carmarthen* was made Duke of *Leeds*, the Earl of *Bedford* Duke of *Bedford*, and the Earl of *Devonshire* Duke of *Devonshire*. And *Sydney* Lord *Godolphin* was named First Commissioner of the Treasury.

Our Honour at Sea was in great Measure retrieved this Year. Of a Fleet of *French* Merchant-Men, Captain *Pickard* burnt or sunk 35 out of 55, as also the Man of War which convoyed them. And though our Design upon *Brest* miscarried, yet we terribly bombarded *Dieppe* and *Havre-de-Grace*, and continued to alarm the whole Coast of *France*; whilst our grand Fleet, under Admiral *Russel*, rode triumphant in the *Mediterranean*, blocked up the *French* Fleet in *Toulon*, and by that Means put a Stop to the conquering Arms of *France* in *Catalonia*. Though there was no Action of any Note in *Flanders*, yet upon the whole the Allies were successful in preventing the farther Designs of *France* there, and in the End took the Town and Castle of *Huy*.

The King returned on *November* 9, and on the 22d that excellent Prelate, Dr. *Tillotson*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, died in the 65th Year of his Age. He was exceedingly beloved by both their Majesties, who nominated Dr. *Tennison*, Bishop of *Lincoln*, to succeed him.

On *December* 28, Queen *Mary* died of the Small-Pox, to the inexpressible Grief of the King and the Nation. Her Death was consoled in Addresses from both Houses of Parliament, and by the Princess *Anne* her Sister, in a most pathetic Letter to the King. The Princess had had the Misfortune to fall under the Queen's Displeasure, but on this Occasion a Re-

ciliation at Court was effected. Queen *Mary*, though perhaps not quite so perfect as her Panegyrists make her, was certainly an excellent Woman, if we consider her undissembled Piety, her extensive Charity, and all those other amiable Virtues which adorn the Sex. For conjugal Affection and Duty, she was a rare Example, the Will of the King her Husband being, as it were, her governing Principle. Her Regard for the Protestant Religion, and the Liberties of the Nation, made her think it necessary, and consequently lawful and justifiable, to fill the vacant Throne of her Father. She was King *James's* eldest Daughter, and died in the 33d Year of her Age, having reigned near six Years jointly with the King her Husband. On *March 5*, she was most solemnly and magnificently interred in *Henry VIIIth's* Chapel.

In the Beginning of the Year 1695, the Parliament made a strict Inquiry into several Abuses and Corruptions. They began with the Agents of Regiments, and after several were examined, Mr. *Tracy Pauncefort* was committed to the *Tower*, for refusing to answer to the Questions demanded by the House of Commons: And with regard to his Brother, Mr. *Edward Pauncefort*, they resolved, That for contriving to cheat Colonel *Hastings's* Regiment of 500 Guineas, and for giving a Bribe to obtain the King's Bounty, he be taken into Custody: Also, that Mr. *Henry Guy*, a Member of the House, for taking a Bribe of 200 Guineas, be committed Prisoner to the *Tower*. They then fell upon the Contractors for cloathing the Army, particularly Mr. *James Craggs*, and Mr. *Richard Harnage*; and ordered, That a Bill be brought

in, to oblige Mr. *Edward Pauncefort* to discover how he disposed of the Monies paid into his Hand relating to the Army, and for punishing him in case he should not make such Discovery; and that Mr. *Tracy Pauncefort*, Mr. *Craggs*, and Mr. *Harnage*, be included in the said Bill. The Commissioners for licensing and regulating Hackney-Coaches and Stage-Coaches next came under Censure, for having, by receiving Bribes, and other undue Means, acted corruptly and arbitrarily: And his Majesty was addressed to remove three of them, who were accordingly removed.

But the Affair of the *East-India* Company, and of the Bill for satisfying the Debt due to the Orphans of *London*, made the greatest Noise. For forwarding this Bill, several large Sums were given to Members of Parliament; and the same by the Governors of the *East-India* Company, for obtaining a New-Charter, and an Act of Parliament to confirm it, in Opposition to a new Company that was going to be erected. A Committee was therefore appointed to inspect the Books of the said Company, and also those of the Chamberlain of *London*; and the Commons resolved, That Sir *John Trevor*, their Speaker, receiving a Gratuity of 1000 Guineas from the City of *London*, after passing of the *Orphan's-Bill*, was guilty of a high Crime and Misdemeanor. Upon this he thought fit to absent himself, and the Commons chose *Paul Foley*, Esq; Speaker in his Room, and expelled their old Speaker, who was also Master of the Rolls. Mr. *Hungerford*, Chairman of the Committee for the said Bill, for receiving 20 Guineas on the same Account, was also expelled the House. On *March 26*, the Commons ordered, That Sir *Thomas Cook*,



*Cook*, a Member, having refused to give an Account of the Money of the *East-India Company* by him distributed, he committed to the *Tower*, and a Bill be brought in to oblige him to give such Account. But this was dropt, and a Bill passed to indemnify him upon making a due Discovery. Hereupon he delivered in Writing, to a Committee of both Houses, an Account of the Disposal of large Sums to different Persons. But his Discovery not being deemed satisfactory, a Bill passed both Houses, and received the Royal Assent, for imprisoning *Sir Thomas Cook*, *Sir Basil Firebrass*, *Charles Bates*, Esq; and *James Craggs*, and for restraining them from alienating their Estates, and the Commons drew up Articles of Impeachment against the Duke of *Leeds*, President of the Council, for contracting and agreeing with the Merchants trading to the East-Indies, or their Agents, for 5500 Guineas, to procure them a Charter of Confirmation, and a Charter of Regulation, or by his Agents and Servants, with his Privy and Consent. But *Monf. Robart*, his Grace's Servant, who received the Money of *Mr. Bates*, going off, it never came to a Trial.

In this Session also, the bad State of the Silver-Coin was first taken into Consideration, which by Clipping and Adulterating had been reduced near half in Value, to the great Detriment of Trade, and Embarrassment of the Public Revenue. The Remedy of this Grievance was not perfected till the next Parliament, when all the Silver-Money was ordered to be called in and re-coined, and the Loss to be borne by the Publick. This gave Rise to Exchequer-Bills, or Paper Money, which were no sooner set on foot, but the scandalous Practice

of false Indorsement began, for which *Mr. Charles Duncomb* and *Mr. Knight* were expelled the House, and committed to the *Tower*, and *Mr. Burton* to *Newgate*. Bills were ordered to be brought in to punish them, which passed the Commons, but were thrown out by the Lords, who being equally divided upon *Duncomb's* Bill, the Duke of *Leeds* gave the casting Vote for rejecting it. He was Receiver-General of the Excise, and reckoned worth 400,000*l.* and it was thought that his Money, more than his Innocence, brought him off. However, of this there could be no Proof.

The Year 1695 was glorious to King *William* and the Allies by the Reduction of *Namur*. Marshal *Boufflers* having thrown himself into it with a strong Reinforcement, the Garrison then consisted of near 15,000 Men, and they were furnished with Provisions for several Months. Yet King *William* having laid Siege to it, the Beginning of July, carried it on with such Vigour and good Conduct, even in the Sight of a numerous French Army, under Marshal *Villeroy*, who had advanced to relieve it, that the Town surrendered on August 6, N. S. and the Castle in less than a Month after.

The English Fleet, under Lord *Berkeley*, spread Terror this Summer along the Coasts of France, bombarded *St. Maloe*, and some other Towns : And in Return, *Villeroy*, by the French King's Order, bombarded *Brussels*.

His Majesty, who at his Departure had appointed Lords-Justices to govern the Kingdom in his Absence, immediately on his Return, by Proclamation, dissolved his second Parliament, and a new one met on November 22, in which,  
on

on *January 12*, besides the Act for remedying the ill State of the Coin, the King gave his Assent to one, for regulating Trials in Cases of Treason, and Misprision of Treason; of great Benefit to the Liberties of the Subject: Whereby, among other Things, the Person accused was to have a Copy of his Indictment, to be allowed Counsel, and not to be convicted but by two Witnesses.

A double Plot was about this Time discovered, to assassinate the King, and invade the Kingdom. Many of the late King *James's* Emissaries came over from *France*, and held Consultations with Papists and Jacobites here, how to murder King *William*; and after several Debates on the Time, Place, and Manner, of putting their horrid Design in Execution, they at last agreed to assassinate his Majesty in his Coach, on some Day in *February*, 1695-6, in a Lane between *Brentford* and *Turnham-Green*, as he returned from Hunting. But happily the whole Plot was discovered, by Mr. *Pendergrast*, the very Night before it was to be executed, which was confirmed by Mr. *de la Rue*, another of the Plotters, and afterwards by Captain *Porter*, and others of them, who came in upon the Proclamation for apprehending the Conspirators. At the same Time there was to be an Invasion from *France*, for which Purpose King *James* was come to *Calais*, and the Troops, Artillery, and Stores, were immediately ordered to be embarked; but by the News of the Assassination Plot having miscarried, and the speedy sending of a formidable Fleet under Admiral *Russel*, this other Part of the Design was frustrated; and *Calais* was not long after bombarded by the *English*. The King, on *February 21*, acquainted the Parliament with

the Discovery of the Plot; upon which both Houses addressed his Majesty to congratulate him on his happy Preservation: And the House of Commons drew up and subscribed an Association, to stand by one another in the Defence of his Majesty's sacred Person and Government, against the late King *James* and all his Adherents. The Lords also agreed to the same Association, and the Example of the two Houses was followed by all the Corporations in the Kingdom. Some of the Conspirators fled in Time beyond Sea; and of those who were apprehended, *Charnock*, *King*, and *Keys*, were executed on *March 18*; Sir *John Friend*, and Sir *William Perkins*, on *April 3*, following, 1696; and Brigadier *Rookwood*, Major *Lorwick*, and Mr. *Cranbourn*, on the 29th. One of the Conspirators was banished, and some were imprisoned by Act of Parliament. Sir *John Fenwick* was apprehended some Time after, particularly for that Part of the Plot relating to the Invasion. His Case was somewhat remarkable: For having spirited away one of the two Witnesses against him, and endeavoured to do the same by Captain *Porter*, the other Witness, who had a Pension from King *William*, he was beheaded on an Act of Attainder, *January 28*, 1696-7. The Bill against him was carried by no very considerable Majority in either House; a great many, both of the Lords and Commons, being averse to such extraordinary Ways of Proceeding.

Before his Majesty went abroad in 1696, he appointed the great Officers of State for the Time being, with other Lords and Gentlemen, among whom the great Mr. *Locke*, so well known to the learned World, was one, to be Commissioners



missioners for Trade and Plantations. This was the first Commission of the Kind, and is still kept on Foot.

The Campaign passed in *Flanders* this Year without any Action. Both Armies suffered equally for want of Pay, and spent the Time in observing each other, and endeavouring to possess themselves of the most convenient Places for their Subsistence. And indeed *France*, as well as *England* and *Holland*, began to be weary of the War, and to entertain serious Thoughts of Peace : For which some Overtures were already made on the Part of the *French* King. In the mean Time, the Duke of *Savoy* was drawn in to make a separate Peace with *France*.

The Beginning of the Year 1697, Sir *John Sommers*, who had been for some Time Lord-Keeper, was made Lord-Chancellor, as also Lord *Sommers*'s Baron of *Evesham* ; and *Edward Ruffel*, Esq; the famous Admiral, was created Earl of *Orford*.

The *French*, to bring down the Demands of *Spain*, besieged and took *Aeth* in *Flanders* this Year, as also the City of *Barcelona* in *Spain* ; the King of *England* and the States-General, who had in a Manner borne the whole Burden of the War, seeming to connive at these Conquests to bring *Spain* the more readily to accept the Offers of *France*, especially as they knew these Places must be restored by the Peace : The Treaty for which went on but slowly, at *Ryswick*, a Place belonging to King *William*, between the *Hague* and *Delft* ; but at last, by his Majesty's Address, and the Mediation of the King of *Sweden*, it was happily concluded and signed there by the *English*, *Spanish*, and *Dutch* Plenipotentiaries, with those of *France*, on *September* 10, and by the Ministers of the Emperor, who stood out

for some Time, on *October* 20, with as much Advantage to the Allies as could reasonably be expected. It was about this Time, that the Czar of *Muscovy*, who had a Mind to visit foreign Countries for the Improvement of his own Dominions, had an Interview with King *William* in *Holland*, and afterwards followed him into *England*.

When the Parliament met, *December* 3, the King told them in his Speech, that, considering the Circumstances of Affairs abroad, it was his Opinion, that *England* could not be safe without a Land-Force : Which Clause the Commons did not like, as if it were designed to recommend a Standing Army in Time of Peace. And so after long Debates they resolved, That all the Land-Forces, raised since *September* 29, 1680, should be paid and disbanded. Yet, to shew their Affection to his Majesty, they resolved, on *December* 20, That 700,000*l.* per Annum be granted to him for the Support of the Civil-List. And about three Weeks after, the Royal Assent was given to an Act against corresponding with the late King *James*, or his Adherents.

The Parliament continued sitting till *July* 5, 1698, and then was prorogued, and two Days after dissolved. In this Session the new *East-India* Company was established, the Merchants having agreed to advance 2,000,000*l.* to the Government, at 8 per Cent. The old Company offered to raise 700,000*l.* at 4 per Cent. but this was rejected ; though they were afterwards continued a Corporation, and the two Companies united.

On *July* 20, the King went over to *Holland*, and about a Month after the Treaty of Partition was concluded between *England*, *France* and the *States*, concerning the Succession  
of

of the *Spanish* Dominions, in case the King of *Spain*, who was now old and in a very bad State of Health, should die without Issue. By this Treaty, so much to the Prejudice of King *William's* Reputation, the Kingdoms of *Naples* and *Sicily*, a great many other Places, and particularly those on the *French* Side of the *Pyrenees*, were to be given to the *Dauphin* of *France*; *Spain*, the *Indies* and *Low-Countries*, to the Electoral Prince of *Bavaria*; and the Duchy of *Milan*, to the Archduke *Charles*, the Emperor's second Son. The Beginning of the Year 1700, a second Treaty was concluded, on Occasion of the Death of the Electoral Prince of *Bavaria*, whose Share was now assigned to the Archduke *Charles*; and the Duke of *Lorraine*, whose Country was to be given to *France*, was to have the Duchy of *Milan*. King *William's* Design in this Treaty was, doubtless, to prevent a War; but he was only amused by the *French* King, who, though he proposed it, had at the same Time, another Design in View, and made use of this Treaty to bring it about: For the *Spaniards* being enraged at having their Monarchy thus dismembered without their Consent, *Lewis XIV.* by his Intrigues at the Court of *Madrid*, under pretence of preserving the *Spanish* Monarchy entire, brought the King of *Spain* to sign a Will, making *Philip* Duke of *Anjou*, *Lewis's* Grandson, his universal Heir.

To return to the Year 1698. On December 6, the new Parliament met, in which, though the King expressed his Desire of having a good Body of Land-Forces kept up, yet the Commons resolved, That all the Land-Forces, exceeding 7000 for *England*, and 12,000 for *Ireland* (all his Majesty's natural-born Subjects) should be forthwith paid and

disbanded. This made the King very uneasy, but when he saw the Parliament in earnest, he complied with a good Grace. He would fain have kept his *Dutch* Guards that came over with him at first; but not being able to move the Parliament, he with much Complaisance submitted, and sent them away: Which gave great Satisfaction to his People.

In June, 1699, the King went over to *Holland*, and returned in October. The Parliament met on November 16, and in this Session were great Debates about the *Irish* forfeited Estates, resuming the Grants which the King had made of several of them to his Ministers and Favourites, and applying all to the Use of the Publick. The Commons, in April 1700, to carry their Point, tacked the *Bill of Resumption* to the *Land-Tax Bill*; which occasioned great Heats between the two Houses, the Lords making Amendments, which the Commons would not agree to; when the King fearing the Consequences, sent a private Message to the Lords to pass the Bill without any Amendments, and on April 11 prorogued the Parliament: Immediately after which, he took the Great Seal from Lord *Sommers*, and gave it to Sir *Nathan Wright*, with the Title of Lord-Keeper.

The King went over again to *Holland* in July, this Year; and on the 29th, died that hopeful young Prince the Duke of *Gloucester*, Son to their Royal Highnesses the Prince and Princess of *Denmark*, being about 10 Years old. The King was very fond of him, and had appointed the Earl of *Marlborough* his Governor, and the Bishop of *Salisbury* his Preceptor.

The King of *Spain* dying towards the End of this Year, the Duke of *Anjou*,



*Anjou* was declared King of *Spain* by the *French* King his Grandfather. And the *French*, at the same Time, over-running the *Spanish Netherlands*, both King *William* and the *States* were obliged to own the Duke of *Anjou's* Title, in order to gain Time, till they were in a Condition to oppose the Designs of *France*.

His Majesty, soon after his Return, dissolved the Parliament, and at the same Time, to please those now distinguished by the Name of the Church-Party, made some Alterations in his Ministry; having first called up to the House of Lords *Charles Montague*, Esq; (who was Chancellor of the *Exchequer* when the great Affair of the Coin was regulated, chiefly by his Skill and Address) by the Title of Lord *Halifax*.

The new Parliament meeting in *February*, 1700-1, the Commons chose *Robert Harley*, Esq; their Speaker. The King in his Speech, on the Death of the Duke of *Gloucester*, having recommended to them a farther Provision for the Succession in the Protestant Line, after him and the Princess, both Houses came into it; and on *June 12*, 1701, his Majesty passed the famous Act for the further Limitation of the Crown, and better securing the Rights and Liberties of the Subjects; whereby the Crown was farther limited to the Princess *Sophia* Electress-Dowager of *Hanover*, and her Protestant Heirs. She was Granddaughter of King *James I.* by his Daughter *Elizabeth*, Queen of *Bohemia*, and Grandmother to his late Majesty King *George II.*

Both Houses had censured the Partition Treaty, and the Commons went so far as to impeach of high Crimes and Misdemeanors the Earl of *Portland*, the chief Manager of that Treaty, and the Earl of *Orford*,

and the Lords *Sommers* and *Halifax*, as the Advisers of it. The Peers, where the Court-Party prevailed, were for favouring the four Lords; and after long Debates, Messages and Conferences, about the Time and Manner of their Trial, which occasioned a great Breach between the two Houses, the Lords of themselves appointed a Day for the Trial of Lords *Sommers* and *Orford*, against whom Articles had been exhibited, and the Commons not appearing, acquitted them; and at the same Time, *June 24*, dismissed the Impeachments against the Lords *Portland* and *Halifax*, and the old one against the Duke of *Leeds*. The same Day, the King, to put an End to these Dissentions, prorogued the Parliament.

His Majesty went again to *Holland* in *July*, where he made a Speech in the Assembly of the States, on the Posture of Affairs in *Europe*, which had a good Effect. The *English* Nation was now divided into Parties, for and against a War, the old and new Ministry, and the House of Commons (which had occasioned the famous *Kentish* Petition, and *Legion* Letter, in which last the Commons were treated with great Scurrility, and even Menaces.) But the Death of the late King *James*, on *September 5*, at *St. Germain's*, and the *French* King's declaring thereupon the pretended Prince of *Wales* King of these Realms, gave a new Turn to People's Minds, and made them all unite in a firm Adherence to his Majesty, and the utmost Abhorrence of this Indignity put upon him and the Nation by the *French* King.

His Majesty returned about the End of *October*, and having dissolved the Parliament, called another to meet on *December 30*. The Commons again chose Mr. *Harley* their Speaker,

Speaker, and the King made a most excellent Speech to both Houses on the present Posture of Affairs, the late insolent Step of the *French King*, the Dangers that threatened *Europe*, by his placing his Grandson on the Throne of *Spain*, and the Alliances he had made for obviating those Dangers; to which both Houses returned the most satisfactory Addresses. And soon after the Commons addressed his Majesty, that it might be an Article in the several Treaties of Alliance, *That no Peace should be made with France, till his Majesty and the Nation have Reparation for the Indignity offered by the French King in declaring the pretended Prince of Wales King of England, Scotland, and Ireland.* They then voted 40,000 Land-Forces, and as many for the Sea-Service.

In the midst of these vigorous Resolutions, the King, who had been declining in his Health for some Time, on *February 21, 1701-2,*

fell from his Horse, as he was hunting, and broke his right Collar-Bone; which, joined with his former Indisposition, held him in a languishing State till the 8th of *March*, when, with great Composedness and Resignation, he expired. During his Illness, the Royal Assent was given by Commission to an Act for attainting the pretended Prince of Wales of High-Treason; and another for the further Security of his Majesty's Person, and the Succession of the Crown in the Protestant Line, &c.

Thus died the heroick King William III. in the 52d Year of his Age, having reigned 13 Years three Weeks and two Days: A Prince, perhaps, of as few Faults, and as many excellent Qualities, as any of his Predecessors; and, without Doubt, an illustrious Instrument, in the Hand of Providence, for rescuing these Nations from Popery and arbitrary Power.



*J. Dulchen Jr.*





*The. Kitchin sc.*

## A N N E. 1702—1714.

**T**HE Princess *Anne* of Denmark, second Daughter of *James II.* succeeding to the Crown by Virtue of the *Act of Settlement* made in King *William's* Reign, was accordingly proclaimed Queen on *March 8, 1701-2*, a few Hours after the said King's Death, having first, in her Speech to the Privy-Council, declared her Opinion of the Importance of carrying on the Preparations that had been begun for opposing the great Power of *France*.

The Parliament, which used to be dissolved on the Death of the Sovereign, continuing to exist by an Act passed in the late Reign, both Houses immediately assembled, and the Lords on the 9th, and Commons on the 10th, presented their Addresses of Condolence for the Death of the King, and Congratulation for her Majesty's happy Accession.

The next Day the Queen made a Speech to both Houses, telling

them, she could not too much lament her Unhappiness in succeeding to the Crown immediately after the Loss of a King, who was the great Support not only of these Kingdoms, but of all *Europe*, being sensible of the Weight and Difficulty it brought upon her: And she was glad to find them of her Mind, that too much could not be done for the Encouragement of her Allies to reduce the exorbitant Power of *France*.

A few Days after, her Majesty declared the Earl of *Marlborough* Captain-General of all her Forces; wrote a Letter to the *States-General*, to assure them of her inviolable Friendship, and her Resolution to maintain the Alliances made with them, and to prosecute the Plan her Predecessor had begun; and sent the said Earl her Ambassador extraordinary, the more effectually to assure them of it, and to concert Measures with them.

The

The Commons having voted her Majesty the same Revenue for Life, which King *William* had enjoyed, she came to the Parliament on *March* 30, 1702, thanked them for it, and generously told them, she would give 100,000*l.* of it for the publick Service of the present Year.

On *April* 12, the Corpse of the late King was interred in the same Vault with King *Charles* II. and the late Queen *Mary*. On the 23d her Majesty was crowned: And about the same Time, an Order of Council was made, directing the Princess *Sophia* to be publickly prayed for.

The Ministry at this Time was made up of both Parties, *Tories* or *High-Church*, and *Whigs* or those of a moderate Spirit, who were the truest Friends to King *William*. He had admitted the former in order to gain them; and though he made a few Removes at the Beginning of his last Parliament, yet some of the *Tories* were kept in still; and Queen *Anne*, who always leaned to the High-Party, had increased their Number. And now, when it was debated in Council, whether *England* should enter into the War as Principals, or only as Auxiliaries, the *Tories*, with the Earl of *Rocheſter*, the Queen's Uncle by the Mothers's Side, at their Head, were for the latter; and the *Whigs*, the chief of whom were the Dukes of *Somerſet* and *Devonſhire*, were for the former; and the Earls of *Marlborough* and *Pembroke*, joining with them, brought the Majority of the Council to their Opinion: And so, on *May* 4, War was declared against *France* and *Spain*. The Design was to restore the Balance of *Europe*, by taking the *Spaniſh* Dominions out of the Hands of the *French* King, which he had seized for his

Grandſon, and placing the Archduke *Charles*, the Emperor *Leopold's* second Son, on the Throne of *Spain*, whom the Allies now acknowledge as King, in Opposition to the Duke of *Anjou*. And this was the Scope of the Grand Alliance, which King *William* had been forming with the Emperor and the States-General, to which acceded the Kings of *Portugal* and *Prussia*, the Duke of *Savoy*, and several other Powers.

Two Days after the War was declared, the Lord *Godolphin* was constituted Lord High-Treasurer: And about the same Time her Majesty appointed Prince *George* of *Denmark*, her Royal Consort, Lord High-Admiral, and Sir *George Rooke* Vice-Admiral of *England*.

The Parliament of *Scotland* met on *June* 9, being the very Convention-Parliament which had been continued through all King *William's* Reign. Duke *Hamilton* and others protested against its being at this Time a legal Parliament; but they continued to sit notwithstanding, and the Queen adhered to them in Opposition to Duke *Hamilton* and his Party.

On *July* 2, the Parliament of *England* was dissolved, which of Course would have expired, by the Act, six Months after the King's Death.

We are now entering upon a War, the most glorious to *England* and her Allies, if we consider their almost uninterrupted Successes for the several Years it lasted, that ever was known. The Confederates began with the Siege of *Keyſerſwaert*, a strong Town on the *Rhine*, which the Elector of *Cologne* had put into the Hands of the *French*; and notwithstanding all their Efforts to keep it, the Allies carried it, and the Place surrendered to them about the Beginning



ginning of *June*, the *French* Garrison marching out two Days after.

In the mean Time, the *French* prevailed in the *Low-Countries*: But the States General having given the Command of their Forces to the Earl of *Marlborough*, he assembled the Confederate Troops the Beginning of *July*, and marched after the Enemy, who every where retired before him, till at last they entirely abandoned the *Spanish Guelderland*. He could not bring them to an Engagement, but took *Venlo*, September 25, *Ruremond*, October 6, and *Stevenswaert*, about the same Time; and *Liege* surrendered to the Allies about the End of that Month.

Sir *George Rook*, with the combined *English* and *Dutch* Fleet, and the Duke of *Ormond*, who commanded the Land Forces, made an Attempt upon *Cadiz*, in *August*, which unluckily miscarried; but this was in some Measure compensated by the brave Action at *Vigo*, in *October*; where, whilst the Duke of *Ormond* made himself Master of the Forts and Batteries, Admiral *Hopson*, with a Detachment of the Fleet broke through a very strong Boom, and burnt, sunk, or took the *Spanish* Galleons, with the *French* Men of War that convoyed them, in all, to the Number of about 38 Sail.

In the *West-Indies*, the brave Admiral *Bombon*, engaging with *Du Cassé's* Squadron, was in a fair Way of destroying it, if he had not been basely deserted by some of his Captains. He had his Leg broke to Pieces by a Chain Shot, and yet continued to encourage his Men, and died of his Wounds some Time after. Two of his Captains, *Kirby* and *Wade*, being tried and condemned at *Jamaica*, for Cowardice and Breach of Orders, were deservedly shot on their

Return to *Plymouth*, without being suffered to set Foot on Shore.

At home; the new Parliament met on *October* 20, for which the Elections had generally gone in favour of those called the *Tory* or *High-Church* Party. The Commons laboured hard for a Bill to prevent *Occasional Conformity*, which was designed to exclude all Dissenters from Places of Profit or Trust, for which some of them would qualify themselves by receiving the Sacrament once at Church. The Bill passed the Commons, but the Lords made such Amendments to it, that it was at length dropped. The Commons passed it again in the two succeeding Sessions, and it was as often thrown out by the Lords.

On *December* 10, the Queen acquainted the Commons, by a Message, that she had conferred the Title of Duke upon the Earl of *Marlborough*, for his eminent Services, and assigned him 5000 *l.* a Year out of the Revenues of the Post-Office during her Life; desiring they would perpetuate it to him and his Posterity. But this they did not think fit to do.

The Marquess of *Normanby* was about the same Time made Duke of *Buckingham*. And within this Year died that famous Politician the Earl of *Sunderland*; *Aubrey de Vere*, the last Earl of *Oxford* of that Family, and the first Earl of *England*; and Sir *Marmaduke Langdale*, Lord *Langdale* of *Holme*, one of King *Charles* 1<sup>st</sup>'s Generals.

A Clause was added to a Bill by the Lords, and passed into a Law, making it High-Treason for any one to endeavour to deprive or hinder the next Successor, according to the Acts, from succeeding after her Majesty: By which the *Hanover* Succession was further secured, though it passed the Commons

mons by a Majority of but one Voice.

The ill Treatment of the Settlement at *Darien*, and the long Continuance of the Convention-Parliament, had thrown the *Scotch* Nation into a violent Ferment, and very much strengthened the Party against the Revolution. The Discontents ran so high, that the Queen thought fit to dissolve the Parliament, and to call a new one, which met on *May* 6, 1703; but they refused to grant any Supply, both in this Session and the next, till they had got an Act of Security passed, in which it was provided, that in Default of Issue by the Queen, the same Person should not be King or Queen both of *England* and *Scotland*, unless the Honour and Sovereignty of *Scotland*, the Freedom of Parliaments, the Religion, Liberty and Trade of the Nation, be secured from *English* or any foreign Influence.

The Duke of *Marlborough* opened the Campaign of 1703 with the Siege of *Bonne*, belonging to the Elector of *Cologne*, and took it in a few Days: Then marching into the *Low-Countries*, where the *French* stood upon the Defensive within their Lines, he made himself Master of *Huy*; and finding it impossible to bring the Marshals *Villeroy* and *Boufflers* to an Engagement, he finished the Campaign with the Reduction of *Limbourg*.

In the mean Time the *French* were greatly superior in *Germany* and *Italy*. In the latter the Duke of *Savoy* was in Danger of being driven out of his Dominions, had he not been fortunately joined by Count *Staremberg*. In the former, the Duke of *Bavaria* having declared for *France*, and taken *Ulm* the last Year, this Year made himself Master of *Ratisbon* and *Augs-*

*bourg*; and being joined by Marshal *Villars*, pushed his Conquests with such Rapidity, that the whole Empire was in great Danger; whilst Count *Tallard* made himself Master of *Old Brisac*, and retook *Landau* after having defeated the *German* in the Battle of *Spire*.

In *November* was the most terrible Storm of Wind that ever was known in *England*, which beginning about Midnight, on the 26th, and continuing some Hours, did incredible Damage both by Sea and Land, and many Lives were lost: Among the rest, the Bishop of *Bath* and *Wells* and his Lady were both killed in their Beds. This surprising Tempest is, not without Cause, still known by the Name of the great Storm.

The Archduke *Charles*, now acknowledged King of *Spain* by the Allies, having first visited the *Hague*, arrived in *England* about the End of the Year, where he was royally entertained by the Queen and Prince *George* at *Wind-  
sor*; and after a few Days sailed with the combined Fleet for *Portugal*, where he arrived with the *English* and *Dutch* Auxiliaries, towards the End of *February*.

The Year 1704 began with some Changes in the Ministry, in favour of those called *Whigs* or *Low-Church*: Particularly, *Robert Harley*, Esq; was made Secretary of State in the room of the Earl of *Nottingham*, and *Henry St. John*, Esq; Secretary of War; politick, intriguing Men, but both then generally deemed *Whigs*.

The Empire being in the utmost Danger from the Junction of the *French* and *Bavarians*, the Duke of *Marlborough* formed a Scheme for its Deliverance, which was approved by the Queen; and the *Dutch*, upon his Grace's Representations, came into it. In Pursuance



fluence of this Scheme, the Duke marched with a surprizing Expedition towards the *Danube*, and having drove the Enemy from the important Post at *Schellenberg*, and taken *Donawert*, passed that River; and joining Prince *Eugene*, these two consummate Generals, on *August 2*, attacked the grand Army of *French* and *Bavarians*, at *Blenheim* near *Hochstet*; and gave them a most signal Defeat. Upwards of 30 Squadrons of *French* were pushed into the *Danube*, of whom the greatest Part perished. Count *Tallard*, several of his general Officers, near 1200 other Officers, and 13,000 common Soldiers, were made Prisoners; besides which the Enemy's Loss was reckoned to be above 20,000. This great Victory cost the Allies 4000 Men killed, and 7000 wounded; after which they retook *Ulm*, *Landau*, and *Traerbach*; and all *Bavaria* submitted to the Conquerors. Count *Tallard* was brought over to *England*, and sent down to *Nottingham*, where he remained some Years. The Queen settled the Manor of *Woodstock* upon the Duke of *Marlborough*, where *Blenheim-House* was magnificently erected for him at her Majesty's Charge, as a Monument of this glorious Day.

*Gibraltar* was taken this Year by Sir *George Rooke*, who soon after engaged the *French* Fleet near *Malaga* with doubtful Success. The *French* and *Spaniards* besieged *Gibraltar* the next Year; but the Prince of *Hesse d'Armstadt*, who commanded there, and Sir *John Leake*, the *English* Admiral, obliged them to raise the Siege, after they had been before it near six Months.

Among the Men of Note who died this Year, was the famous *John Locke*, Esq; mentioned in the last Reign, Author of the *Essay upon Human Understanding*, &c.

The Emperor *Leopold* died in *April* 1705, and was succeeded by the Emperor *Jeseph*, his eldest Son.

This Year there were some farther Alterations at Court in favour of the Whigs. The Duke of *Newcastle* was made Lord Privy-Seal in the room of the Duke of *Buckingham*: And some Time after, *William Cowper*, Esq; was made Lord-Keeper in the room of Sir *Nathan Wright*. He was afterwards created a Peer, and had the Title of Lord-Chancellor. The Parliament was dissolved on *April 5*; and there were great Contests at the Elections for a new one, between *High-Church* and *Low-Church*, tho' they went generally in favour of the latter.

The Duke of *Marlborough* marched towards the *Moselle*, and designed to begin the Campaign with the Siege of *Saar-Louis*: But the Slowness of the *Germans* in joining him forced him to lay by his Project on that Side. So he marched back in all Haste into the *Low-Countries*, where he arrived Time enough to save the Citadel of *Liege*, which the *French* had invested; after which he recovered *Huy*, forced the *French* Lines on the *Maese*, and would have attacked the Enemy in their Camp at *Parck*, had not the Deputies of the States been against it. When the Campaign was over, he went to *Vicenna*, where the Emperor gave him the Lordship of *Mindelheim* in *Sualia*, and erected it into a Principality; whereby his Grace obtained the Title of Prince of *Mindelheim*.

Things were badly managed in *Portugal* last Year. This Year the Confederates under the Earl of *Galway* had some Success, though not equal to what was expected.

The main Thing was King *Charles's* Success in *Catalonia*: The Confederate Land and Sea Forces,

under the Earl of *Peterborough*, and Sir *Cloudsley Shovel*, made themselves Masters of *Barcelona*, chiefly by the indefatigable Constancy, Valour and Courage of that Nobleman: In Consequence of which, all *Catalonia* became subject to King *Charles*: And almost the whole Kingdom of *Valencia* submitted to him soon after.

The new Parliament met, *October 25*. In this Session were great Debates about the Danger of the Church, which had been the Cry in King *William's* Reign, and was now industriously revived, under the Queen's Whig Ministry, by the opposite Party. But it was voted, that the Church was not in Danger.

An Act was passed for farther securing the Protestant Succession, whereby it was made High-Treason for any Privy-Counsellor to neglect or refuse to proclaim the Successor, according to the Acts, upon the Queen's Demise. And Lords-Justices were appointed by the same Act for continuing the Government in the Name of the Successor, till she or he should arrive in the Kingdom.

*Catharine* Queen-Dowager, Widow of King *Charles II.* died on *December 20*, at *Lisbon*. This Year also put an End to the Life of the famous *Titus Oates*.

On *May 12*, 1706, being *Sunday*, the Duke of *Marlborough* and *M. d'Auverquerque* totally routed, with a dreadful Slaughter, the *French* Army under the Duke of *Bavaria* and Marshal *Villeroy*, in the famous Battle of *Ramillies*; the Consequence of which glorious Victory was the Reduction of almost all the *Spanish Netherlands* by the End of the Campaign, the greatest Part of the Towns submitting upon the first Approach of the Conquerors. As a farther Reward of the Duke's good Services, his Titles were continued

to his Posterity by Act of Parliament, settling them on his Daughters, according to their Seniority, and their Heirs Male; and the 5000*l.* per Ann. out of the *Post-Office* was made perpetual.

In *Italy*, the Allies were no less successful. The Duke of *Savoy* had been reduced to the utmost Extremity, and his Capital City *Turin* was this Year besieged by the *French*. But Prince *Eugene*, after a most difficult and surprising March, having joined him, they defeated the Enemy in a memorable Battle, *September 7*, *N. S.* and forced them to raise the Siege. After which they took Town after Town in the *Milanese*, till the *French* were obliged to evacuate it, and at last to abandon all their Conquests in *Italy*.

*Barcelona* was this Year blocked up by Sea, with the *French* Fleet under the Count de *Thoulouse*, whilst King *Philip* and *M. de Tefè* besieged it by Land. But Sir *John Leake* with the *English* Fleet, having obliged the *French* Admiral to retire with Precipitation, and the Earl of *Peterborough*, at the same Time, arriving with a Body of Troops he had got together, the Enemy were obliged entirely to quit their Design.

The Marquess *das Minas* and the Earl of *Galway*, after having taken several Places, advanced as far as *Madrid*, which submitted to King *Charles*, and he was proclaimed there. But either through a Misunderstanding between the Generals, or King *Charles's* Indolence, in delaying to come and join them, all was lost again. King *Philip's* Army under the Duke of *Berwick* becoming superior to the Allies, they were obliged to retire from *Madrid* with as much Haste as they came thither.

This Year was remarkable for beginning, and the next for completing



pleating the Union of the two Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland*. Pursuant to Acts passed in both Nations, the Queen appointed 31 Commissioners for *England* and as many for *Scotland*, to treat upon this important Affair; who, after above 40 Meetings at the *Cockpit*, on *July 22*, signed the 25 Articles of Union agreed upon, which were approved by the Queen. The Project met with great Opposition in *Scotland*, and occasioned such Tumults as seemed to threaten an Insurrection, the People thinking they were going to lose their ancient beloved Independency. However, the Parliament of that Kingdom, by a Majority, ratified the Articles of Union, on *January 16*, 1706-7; as did afterwards the Majority of both Houses in *England*, and the Act received the Royal Assent on *March 6*. By these Articles, the two Kingdoms were, on *May 1*, 1707, and for ever after, united into one, by the Name of *Great-Britain*, to be represented by one and the same Parliament. The respective Church Governments, Episcopal in *England*, and Presbyterian in *Scotland*, were secured by the Acts of Ratification of the respective Parliaments. The Protestant Succession to the united Kingdoms was likewise established by the Articles.

Fortune seemed at a Stand in 1707, or rather to declare for the Enemy. The Earl of *Galway* lost the Battle of *Almanza* in *Spain*, in which he too hastily engaged against a much greater Force; the Consequence of which was fatal to the Allies. Marshal *Villars* made himself Master of the German Lines at *Biehl* and *Stolhoffen*, and would have proceeded farther, if the Elector of *Hanover*, with the Imperial Forces, had not stopped his Progress. In the *Netherlands*, the Duke of *Marl-*

*borough* could not bring the Duke of *Vendosme*, to an Engagement, and both Sides only preserved what they had at the Beginning of the Campaign. The Design upon *Toulon*, carried on by the Duke of *Savoy* and Prince *Eugene*, with the Assistance of the Confederate Fleet under Sir *Cloudsley Shovel*, unhappily miscarried; though they furiously bombarded the Town both by Sea and Land, before they retired. Sir *Cloudsley*, in his Return from this Expedition, was lost with three of his best Ships, on the Rocks near *Scilly*.

The first Parliament of *Great-Britain* met on *October 23*, without any new Election for *England*; and on *December 23*, both Houses, in an Address, declared their Opinion, *That no Peace could be honourable or safe, if Spain, the West-Indies, or any Part of the Spanish Monarchy, be suffered to remain under the Power of the House of Bourbon: To which the Queen, in her Answer, agreed.*

The Beginning of 1708, Mr. *Gregg*, a Clerk in Mr. Secretary *Harley's* Office, was executed as a Traitor, for corresponding with the Enemy. This Affair made a great Noise, and many expected he would have made some Discovery; but in the Paper he delivered to the Sheriff he took all the Guilt on himself. About the same Time, Mr. *Harley* resigned his Office, as did Mr. *St. John*, and Sir *Simon Harcourt*, Attorney-General.

The *French* King, provoked at the late Attempt upon *Toulon*, thought fit to retaliate by carrying the War into *Great-Britain*. Accordingly, the Pretender (now called the *Chevalier de St. George*) embarked on board the *French* Fleet, with a Body of Troops, for *Scotland*. But upon the timely Ap-

proach of Sir George Byng, with the *English* Fleet, they made the best of their Way back to *Dunkirk*.

The glorious Success of this Year's Campaign, made Amends for the Disasters of the last. It is true, the *French* were before-hand with the Allies, and having surprized *Ghent* and *Bruges*, invested *Oudenarde* on July 9. But Prince *Eugene*, and the Duke of *Marlborough*, coming up with them two Days after, a bloody Battle ensued, in which the *French* were totally routed.

After this, Prince *Eugene* sat down before *Lille*, August 13, N. S. the Duke covering the Siege with the rest of the Army. This was an arduous Undertaking, but carried on with such Vigour and Conduct, that the Town surrendered on October 23, and the Citadel on December 10. What facilitated its Reduction, was the famous Battle of *Wyndale*, wherein General *Webb*, with a much inferior Force, got the Victory over Count *de la Motte*, who endeavoured to intercept a Convoy coming for the Relief of the allied Army before *Lille*. *Ghent* and *Bruges* were soon after recovered.

Sir *John Leake* took *Cagliari*, the Capital of *Sardinia*, upon which the whole Island submitted: And afterwards by the Assistance of a Body of Land Forces under General *Stanhope*, he reduced *Port-Mahon*, and the whole Island of *Minorca*.

Whilst Success thus attended our Arms abroad, we were afflicted with a melancholy Loss at home, in the Death of Prince *George of Denmark*, who was carried off by an Asthma and Dropsy, October 28, at *Kensington*. He was a Prince of great Justice and Humanity, an hearty Friend to the Revolution, and zealously attached to the Protestant and

*British* Interest. He lived in the most perfect Harmony and Affection with his Royal Consort the Queen, who was inconsolable for his Death. Sir *George Rooke*, the famous Admiral, died also this Year.

A new Parliament, the second of *Great-Britain*, met on November 16, which was opened by Commission, on Occasion of her Majesty's late great Loss.

In the Beginning of the Year 1709, the *French* King made some Overtures of Peace. In Consequence of which, a Treaty was begun at the *Hague*, and 40 Preliminary Articles were agreed upon; but as by one of them, King *Philip* was to quit the *Spanish* Dominions, this being not at all relished by the *French* Court, the Treaty came to nothing.

The Peace being thus broke off, both Armies took the Field. The *French* kept in their Intrenchments, and the Allies took *Tournay*, both Town and Citadel. Soon after was fought the Battle of *Blaregnies*, or *Malplaquet*. The *French* were posted in a Wood, trebly intrenched, and strongly barricaded; and yet the Duke of *Marlborough* attacked them, and after having been several Times repulsed, drove them from their Intrenchments, and gained a compleat Victory, chiefly by the Bravery of the *English* headed by General *Withers*, the Earl of *Orkney*, the Duke of *Argyle*, and other young Noblemen. But the *French* fought with such Fury, that the Victory cost the Allies near 18,000 Men. After this they invested *Mons*, which surrendered upon honourable Terms.

Whilst the Duke was thus pursuing his Conquests in *Flanders*, a Party was secretly forming against him at home, chiefly by Mr. *Harley*, and Mr. *St. John*. Mr. *Harley* had



had been a Whig, and came of a Dissenting Family; but being an artful, insinuating Man, had by Means of Mrs. Hill, afterwards *Masbam*, private Access to the Queen; and both by their Intrigues first gave her Majesty an ill Opinion of the Whigs, and of the great Power, at Court, of the Duke and Dukes of *Marlborough* and their Friends, and then prejudiced her against the Management and Continuance of the War. Mrs. *Masbam* was a Relation of the Dukes, and had by her been introduced into the Queen's Service; and she by Mr. *Harley*'s Instructions had so insinuated herself into her Majesty's Favour, that she wholly ingrossed the Royal Ear, and supplanted her Benefactress: Which paved the Way for Mr. *Harley* and his Associates to undermine the Duke and his Friends, in order to set up themselves. Towards which the following Circumstance contributed not a little.

On November 5, Dr. *Sacheverel* preached his furious Sermon against the Whigs, before the Lord-Mayor, Sir Samuel Garrard, at St. Paul's, which he printed under the odd Title of *The Perils of false Brethren both in Church and State*. In this Sermon he strenuously asserts the high Notions of Hereditary Right, Passive-Obedience, and Non-Resistance; gives an odious Turn to the Revolution, the Protestant Succession, the Union, and the Toleration granted to Dissenters; and insinuates the Church to be in Danger under the present Administration. It is impossible to express what a Ferment this raised in the Nation. He was impeached by the Commons of High Crimes and Misdemeanors, had a solemn Trial before the Lords, from February 27, 1709-10, to March 10; and was at last sentenced not to preach for

three Years, and his Sermon to be burnt by the common Hangman. But the Enemies of the Ministry had so represented the Church to be struck at through his Sides, that as he went to and from *Westminster Hall*, the several Days of his Trial, he was attended by vast Multitudes of the lower Sort of People, who abused all that would not pull off their Hats to him, and cry out for the Church; and proceeded so far as to demolish several Meeting-Houses, and make Bonfires of the Materials, with loud Huzzas, of *High Church* and *Sacheverel*. In short, he was represented as the great Patron of the Church, and as persecuted for its Sake; and the Queen herself seemed to be not a little affected by it. If Mr. *Harley* and his Confederates were not at the Bottom of this, they certainly made their Advantage of it, to bring about the Change they were aiming at. Queen Anne was, doubtless, a good and well-meaning Princess, but had high Notions of the Church. Whilst Prince George, who was of moderate Principles, lived, the Whigs got the Ascendant; but now by artfully applying to the Queen's Passion for the Church, she soon became the easy Property of the Tories, or rather of those who wanted to rule by the Tories, since they could not rule by the Whigs. But it was some Time before they brought their Matters to bear.

The French King, in the Beginning of 1710, made fresh Offers of Peace, which produced the Treaty at *Gertruydenburg*; but this, like the former, was only designed to amuse and divide the Allies. It was spun out till July, and then broke off, the French expecting more advantageous Terms from the Change of the Ministry in England, which they foresaw would

soon happen. In the mean Time the Confederates under the Duke of *Marlborough* and Prince *Eugene*, took *Douay*, *Bethune*, *St. Venant*, and *Aire*.

In *Spain*, King *Charles*, with General *Stanhope*, having defeated King *Philip* in the Battles of *Almenara* and *Saragossa*, made his triumphant Entry into *Madrid*; but was soon obliged to retire from thence, his Rival becoming superior by fresh Reinforcements. After this, eight *English* Batalions and as many Squadrons were attacked in *Briubega*, and made Prisoners of War; which was followed by an obstinate Fight near *Villaviciosa*, in which Count *Starcenberg* was worsted.

These Misfortunes were no bad News to the Enemies of the Ministry in *England*, where were now High-Church Addressees in abundance, which prevailed over the Whig Addressees, owing chiefly to the Spirit which *Sacheverel* had raised. And now the Earl of *Sunderland*, Son-in-Law to the Duke of *Marlborough*, was removed from his Office of Secretary of State. The Earl of *Godolphin*, whose Son had married the Duke's eldest Daughter, soon followed, being dismissed from his Post of Lord High-Treasurer. Mr. *Harley* was made a Commissioner of the Treasury; Mr. *St. John*, Secretary of State, in the room of Mr. *Boyle*; Sir *Simon Harcourt*, Lord-Keeper, in the room of Lord-Chancellor *Cowper*; and the Earl of *Rochester*, President of the Council. All these Alterations were in favour of the Tories, and were soon followed by others; and, finally, in favour of them the Parliament was dissolved in *September*.

Before these Changes, upon the Death of Lord Chief-Justice *Holt*, Sir *Thomas Parker*, a famous Mana-

ger against Dr. *Sacheverel*, was made Lord Chief-Justice of the *Queen's-Bench*; but not without some Difficulty.

The Tories now carried all before them in the Elections: *High-Church* and *Sacheverel* did the Business. The new Parliament met on *November 25*, with an House of Commons entirely devoted to the new Ministers.

The Marquess *de Guiscard*, a French Papist, being seized for High-Treason, and brought before a Committee of Council, appeared like a Madman, and advancing to Mr. *Harley*, stabbed him with a Penknife in the Breast. He afterwards died in *Newgate* of the Wounds and Bruises he received in the Scuffle; but Mr. *Harley* recovered.

The Emperor *Joseph* died in *April 1711*, and *Charles III.* of *Spain*, his Brother, was chosen Emperor in *October*, by the Name of *Charles VI.*

Mr. *Harley* introduced and perfected his Project for satisfying the publick Debts, by incorporating a Company to trade to the *South-Seas*. And in *May*, he was created Earl of *Oxford* and Earl *Mortimer*, and constituted Lord High-Treasurer. Mr. *St. John* was afterwards created Viscount *Bolingbroke*, and the Lord-Keeper *Harcourt* made a Peer and Lord-Chancellor.

The Duke of *Marlborough*, not yet laid aside, surprized the French Lines near *Arleux*, having first by Stratagem drawn off the Enemy another Way. After this, he besieged and took *Bouchain*.

The Ministry being now bent upon a Peace almost on any Terms, Mr. *Prior* was sent privately into *France*, and M. *Mesnager* came over to *England*, and signed some preliminary Articles. *Bolingbroke* himself

went



went afterwards to *France*, to prosecute what *Prior* had begun.

The Parliament meeting in *December*, the Commons fell in entirely with the Ministry; but the House of Lords being not likely to do so, twelve new Peers were created at once to make a Majority. And in this Session the *Occasional Conformity-Bill* was passed under a new Title.

The Duke of *Marlborough*, not likely to chime in with the Ministers, was first industriously defamed, as if he wanted to continue the War for his own Advantage, and then attacked in Parliament upon some frivolous Pretences, which they made nothing of. However, this gave the Queen a Handle to remove him on *December* 30, and he was succeeded in the Command of the Forces by the Duke of *Ormond*, who was entirely disposed to comply with the pacifick Schemes of the Ministers. As to the Duke of *Marlborough*, he obtained Leave to go abroad; and so left the Kingdom, and returned no more untill the Day the Queen died.

The Conferences for negotiating a Peace, began at *Utrecht*, *January* 29, 1711-12. But it was a great while before any Thing could be agreed upon.

In the mean Time the Campaign was opened, and Prince *Eugene* had a fair Opportunity of attacking the Enemy with Advantage. But how was he surpris'd, when the Duke of *Ormond* told him, he had Orders not to act offensively! And soon after he propos'd to the Prince a Cessation of Arms, which not being agreed to, he march'd off with the *British* Troops, left the Prince to carry on the Siege of *Landrecy* alone, and gave the *French* an Opportunity to take *Montagne*, *St. Amand*, and *Mar-*

*chienne*; after which they retook *Douay*, *Bouchaen*, and *Quefroy*, which last Prince *Eugene* had reduced a little before.

In *November*, Duke *Hamilton* and Lord *Mohun*, upon some private Quarrel, fought a Duel, and both lost their Lives. Great Endeavours were used by some to make this a Party Affair.

*Richard Cromwell*, once Lord-Protector, and Son of the great *Oliver*, died this Year; as did also the Earl of *Godolphin*, late Lord-Treasurer.

The Peace was signed at *Utrecht*, on *March* 31, 1713, by all but the Ministers of the Emperor, who did not come in till a Year after. Though *Dunkirk* was to be demolished, and the *English* had *Gibraltar*, and *Port-Mahon*, by this Treaty, and there were some other good Things in it; yet *Philip* was left in the peaceable Possession of the Crown of *Spain*, to dispossess him of which, and so to restore the Balance of Power, was the chief Ground of the War.

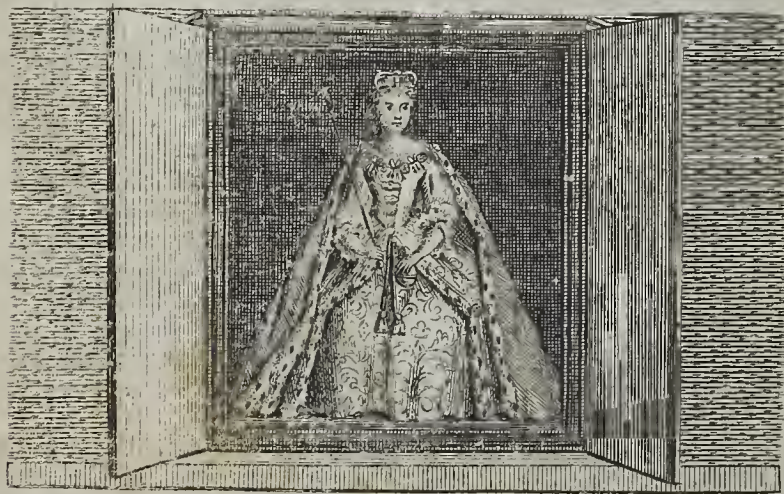
The Parliament having continued almost its three Years, was dissolved on *August* 8, and a new one met in *February* following, which was not quite so favourable to the Ministers as the former; though they pass'd the *Schism-Bill*, designed to suppress the Schools of the Dissenters, which received the Royal Assent on *June* 25. This Bill seems to have been pushed on by *Bolingbroke*, and not by the Lord-Treasurer. The Princess *Sophia*, Duchess-Dowager, of *Hanover*, died suddenly, at a great Age, a little before: By which the Right of Succession to the *British* Crown devolved upon the Elector her Son.

After the Peace, there was nothing but Quarrels and Contentions among the Ministers. *Bolingbroke* was

was for undermining the Treasurer, as not enduring to be second in the Administration; and to gratify his Ambition, was for pushing Matters to Extremity against the Whigs; and was even suspected of Designs against the Protestant Succession; and in favour of the Pretender; whilst the Parliament, it must be owned, took all proper Measures against the latter, and in favour of the former. They were also loud against the Treaty of Commerce with *Spain*, supposed to be made under *Bolinfroke's* Management, and as it stood, to be very prejudicial to the Trade of the Nation. So that to save him, as it was judged, the Queen prorogued the Parliament, on *July 9*. The Case of the poor *Catalans* was now also the Subject of much Clamour. They had owned King *Charles*, and we had taken them for our Allies; but now they were left to the Mercy of King *Philip*. *Barcelona* was besieged by him, and, after a vigorous Resistance, forced to submit in *September*; which was after the Queen's Death.

Her Majesty had been in a very declining State for some Time,

and the Animosity between the Treasurer and Secretary, which broke out into a Flame upon the Rising of the Parliament, was thought to hasten her End. However, the latter prevailed, and the White-Staff was taken from the Earl of *Oxford*. This occasioned the Dukes of *Somerset* and *Argyle* to come into the Council, who were followed by other Privy-Counsellors, Friends to the *Hanover* Succession; which gave a Turn to that Board, and by their Advice the Queen gave the White-Staff to the Duke of *Shrewsbury*. She had fallen into Fits before, which took away her Senses, but was now come to herself. However, she soon relapsed, and on the first of *August*, 1714, expired, in the fiftieth Year of her Age, and thirteenth of her Reign. She was undoubtedly a most virtuous, just, and pious Princess; but having no ill Designs herself, was easily led by her Favourites. The greatest Part of her Reign was glorious, and the Whole might have been so, if she had not been abused by those whom she favoured with her Confidence.



J. Stukin, Sc.  
GEORGE





J. Kneller sc.

## GEORGE I. 1714 - 1727.

**T**HE Protestant Succession in the House of *Hanover* had been so firmly established by several Acts of Parliament, that, notwithstanding the late Endeavours of some to set it aside, in favour of the *Pretender*, it happily took place immediately upon the Death of *Queen Anne*, August 1, 1714; all Opposition fell, and King George had an easy and peaceable Accession to the Throne. He was the eldest Son of *Ernestus Augustus*, Duke, afterwards Elector, of *Brunswick-Lunenbourg* (or *Hanover*) by the late Princess *Sophia*, Daughter of *Frederick* Elector *Palatine* and King of *Bohemia*, and of *Elizabeth*, eldest Daughter of King *James I.* He was born on May 28, 1660, and succeeded his Father as Elector of *Brunswick-Lunenbourg* in 1698.

By an Act of Parliament in the last Reign, the Administration of the Government, after the Queen's

Demise, till the Arrival of the Successor, was vested in Lords Justices. Those expressly appointed by the Act were, the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and the great Officers of State for the Time being. These now were Dr. *Tennison* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, *Simon* Lord *Harcourt* Lord Chancellor, *John Sheffield* Duke of *Buckinghamshire* Lord President, *Charles Talbot* Duke of *Shrewsbury* Lord High-Treasurer, *William Legg* Earl of *Dartmouth* Lord Privy-Seal, *Thomas Wentworth* Earl of *Strafford* First Lord Commissioner of the Admiralty, and Sir *Thomas Parker* Lord Chief Justice of the *King's Bench*. Besides these, the Successor was empowered by the same Act to add what other Regents he pleased, by three Instruments, one to be deposited with the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, another with the Lord-Chancellor, and the third with the *Hanover* Resident, which were to be

be opened on the Queen's Death. Accordingly, the aged Archbishop, as soon as he heard that her Majesty had expired, immediately repaired to Court, where he had not been for some Time, and, with his two Collegues, produced the Instruments, wherein the following Lords had been nominated by his Electoral Highness, viz. the Dukes of *Shrewsbury, Somerset, Bolton, Devonshire, Kent, Argyle, Montrose, and Roxburgh*; the Earls of *Pembroke, Anglesea, Carlisle, Nottingham, Abbingdon, Scarborough, and Orford*; Lord Viscount *Townshend, Lord Halifax, and Lord Cowper*.

The Regency thus fixed, the Form of a Proclamation was ordered by the Lords of the Council, for proclaiming the *High and Mighty Prince GEORGE, Elector of Brunswick-Lunenbug, King of Great-Britain, France and Ireland*; which was accordingly performed the same Day, with the usual Solemnity, in the Cities of *London and Westminster*, and as soon as possible all over *England*. His Majesty was likewise proclaimed at *Edinburgh*, on *August 5*, and at *Dublin* the next Day.

When the Queen was past all Hopes of Recovery, *July 31*, Mr. *Craggs* was dispatched to *Hanover* with the News; and the next Day, Baron *Bothmar*, the *Hanover* Resident, sent M. *Gedike* his Secretary, with Advice that she was actually dead, and that his Majesty had been joyfully proclaimed. The Lords Justices also appointed the Earl of *Dorset* to carry the King the News of his Accession, and to wait on him in his Journey to *England*. They soon after appointed *Joseph Addison, Esq*; their Secretary, and ordered the Post-Master to send to him all the Letters and Packets directed to the

Secretaries of State; whereby the entire Management of Affairs was taken out of the Hands of the Lord Viscount *Bolingbroke*.

The Duke of *Marlborough's* Return to *England*, on the Day of the Queen's Death, has been already hinted. He had been here some Days sooner, had he not been detained at *Ostend* by contrary Winds. His Arrival gave great Joy to all the Friends of the Protestant Succession.

The Parliament being continued after the Queen's Demise, pursuant to the Act for regulating the Succession, met in the Afternoon of the Day she died, though it was *Sunday*; and four Days after, the Lord Chancellor, in the Name of his Brethren the Lords Justices, made a Speech to both Houses, suitable to the present Occasion. Both Lords and Commons immediately agreed upon Addresses of Condolence for the Death of the Queen, and Congratulation for his Majesty's happy Accession, promising to support his undoubted Right to the Imperial Crown of these Realms, against the Pretender, and all other Persons whatsoever; and desiring his speedy Presence among them. These Addresses were transmitted to his Majesty by their Excellencies the Lords Justices, and received most affectionate Answers. That to the Lords was as follows: "I take this first Opportunity to return you my hearty Thanks for your Address, and the Assurances you have given me therein. The Zeal and Unanimity you have shewn upon my Accession to the Crown, are great Encouragements to me, and I shall always esteem the Continuance of them as one of the greatest Blessings of my Reign. No one can be more truly sensible than I am of the Loss suf-

"tained



"tained by the Death of the late Queen, whose extraordinary Piety and Virtues so much endeared her to her People, and for whose Memory I shall always have a particular Regard. My best Endeavours shall never be wanting to repair this Loss to the Nation. I will make it my constant Care to preserve your Religion, Laws and Liberties inviolable, and to advance the Honour and Prosperity of my Kingdoms. I am hastening to you, according to your Desire, so affectionately expressed in your Address." The Answer to the Commons was much to the same Effect.

Mr. Craggs arrived at *Hanover*, August 5, in the Morning; and the same Night, and next Morning, several other Expresses arrived, with the certain News of the Queen's Death, and of his Majesty's having been proclaimed without the least Opposition. The King received the News with great Serenity and Evenness of Mind, and dispatched Mr. Craggs with Letters to the Lords Justices, which he arrived with on the 13th. And the same Day their Excellencies went to the House of Lords, and acquainted the Parliament therewith. Upon which both Houses resolved upon an Address of Thanks to his Majesty, for the Satisfaction he expressed in the Loyalty and Affection of his Subjects.

The Parliament having finished the Business that was before them, the Lords Justices came to the House on the 21st, and having given the Royal Assent to the Bill for the Support of his Majesty's Household and the Dignity of the Crown, and the other Bills, desired the Houses to adjourn to the 25th; when,

by his Majesty's Command, they were prorogued to September 23.

On August 28, Mr. Murrey arrived Express from *Hanover*, with several Orders for the Lords Justices and Council, particularly one for removing the Viscount *Bolingbroke* from his Post of Secretary of State; which was done on the 31st, not without some Marks of Displeasure, the Dukes of *Shrewsbury* and *Somerset*, and the Lord *Cowper*, three of the Lords Regents, taking the Seals from him, and locking and sealing up all the Doors of his Office. The Lord Viscount *Townshend* was soon after appointed to succeed him.

The King having entrusted the Administration of his German Dominions to his Brother Prince *Ernest* and a Council, and made all the necessary Preparations for his Journey, on the last Day of August set out from *Herenhausen*, with the Prince Royal his Son. On September 5, he arrived at the *Hague*, where he was complimented on his Accession by a solemn Deputation from the States, and by all the foreign Ministers. On the 16th, he embarked for *England*, under the Convoy of a Squadron of *British* and *Dutch* Men of War, commanded by the Lord *Berkeley*, and arrived the next Day at the *Hope*. On the 18th, he landed with the Prince at *Greenwich*, where they were attended by the Lords of the Regency, Officers of State, and a vast Number of the Nobility and Gentry. Many were honoured with particular Marks of Respect; but the Duke of *Ormond* and others concerned in the late Measures were but coldly received, and the next Day his Grace was removed from his Office of Captain General, which was conferred on the Duke of *Marlborough*. On the 20th, his Majesty and the Prince, attended by above 200 Coaches-

Coaches-and-Six of the Nobility and Gentry, made their publick Entry through the City to *St. James's*, in the most grand and magnificent Manner, amidst innumerable Crouds of People, and the loudest Acclamations of Joy.

His Majesty, in his Declaration to the Privy-Council, two Days after, expressed his *firm Purpose to do all that was in his Power for the supporting and maintaining the Churches of England and Scotland, as they were severally by Law established*, which he was of Opinion might be effectually done, without the least impairing the Toleration allowed by Law to Protestant Dissenters, so agreeable to Christian Charity, and so necessary to the Trade and Riches of this Kingdom.

The Prince Royal was now declared Prince of *Wales*, and several Changes were made in the Ministry, which were soon followed by others, and ran mostly in favour of the Whigs. I shall mention only some of the chief. Lord Cowper, afterwards Earl Cowper, was again made Lord-Chancellor; the Earl of *Wharton*, Lord Privy-Seal; the Earl of *Nottingham*, who had opposed the Measures of the late Ministry, President of the Council; the Earl of *Sunderland*, Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*; the Duke of *Devonshire*, Lord Steward of the Household; *James Stanhope*, Esq; the General, and the Duke of *Montrose*, Secretaries of State, the former in the room of *William Bromley*, Esq; and the latter in the room of the Earl of *Mar*; the Duke of *Somerset*, Master of the Horse; the Duke of *Argyle*, General and Commander in Chief of the Forces in *Scotland*; *William Pulteney*, Esq; Secretary of War; *Robert Walpole*, Esq; Pay-Master-General of the Army; and *Allan Broderick*, Esq; Lord Chancellor of *Ireland* in

the room of Sir *Constantine Phipps*, who had made himself very obnoxious to the Whig Party, and the Friends of the Protestant Succession in that Kingdom. On *September 29*, his Majesty dissolved the Privy-Council, and appointed a new one. Soon after, there were new Commissions for the Treasury and Admiralty: *Charles Lord Halifax* was made First Commissioner of the Treasury, Sir *Richard Onslow* Chancellor of the Exchequer, *Edward Earl of Orford* First Commissioner of the Admiralty, and *John Aislaby*, Esq; Treasurer of the Navy. The Duke of *Shrewsbury* kept his Post of Lord Chamberlain.

The Princess of *Wales*, with her two eldest Daughters, the Princesses *Anne* and *Amelia*, arrived in *England*, *October 11*, to the great Joy of the Nation; and the Princess *Caroline* came over some Time after.

The King was crowned with the usual Solemnity on *October. 20*; previous to which, among other Creations, Lord *Chandos* was made Earl of *Caernarvon*, Lord *Ossulston* Earl of *Tankerville*, Lord *Rockingham* Earl of *Rockingham*, Lord *Halifax* Earl of *Halifax*, Lord *Guernsey* Earl of *Aylesford*, Lord *Harvey* Earl of *Bristol*, *Thomas Lord Pelham* Earl of *Clare*, and Sir *Richard Temple* Baron of *Cobham*. There were great Demonstrations of Joy throughout the Kingdom on his Majesty's Coronation; but in some Places, the Royal Party were interrupted in their Rejoicings by disorderly and tumultuous Rabbles, crying out *Sacheverel for ever, and down with the Whigs*. At *Bristol* in particular the Mob committed great Disorders: And it was not long before *London* itself was infested with Riots and Tumults; and many seditious Pamphlets were dispersed among the People. These Disorders



Disorders were not a little encouraged by the Conduct of some Clergymen, who were too much infatuated with *Sacheverel's* Spirit and Principles. Breaking Windows, and pulling down Meeting-Houses, was now again practised, as at the Beginning of the *Sacheverel* Mobs.

The Beginning of the Year 1715, a great Fire happened in *Thames-Street*. It broke out on *January 13*, at a Gunpowder Shop near *Bear-Key*, and burnt 24 Hours before it could be extinguished, notwithstanding the playing of Engines, and blowing up of Houses. It did incredible Damage among the Warehouses on the *Keys*, and burnt Part of the Custom-House; and crossing the Way to the North Side of *Thames Street*, consumed *Water-Lane*, and the back Part of *Harp-Lane*, with *Bakers-Hall* and *Trinity-House*, untill it stopped in *Tower-Street*, over-against *Mark-Lane*. About 120 Houses were demolished, the whole Loss amounting to 500,000*l.* and near 50 Persons lost their Lives.

On *January 15*, a Proclamation was issued for calling a new Parliament, which met on *March 17*. The Elections had been contested with great Heat in many Places between the Tories and Whigs, but the latter had by far the Majority. The Commons having chosen *Spencer Compton*, Esq; for their Speaker, his Majesty approved of him on the 21<sup>st</sup>, when he delivered from the Throne, into the Hands of the Lord-Chancellor, a Speech to both Houses, which his Lordship read accordingly. In it his Majesty says, "This being the first Opportunity that I have had, of meeting my People in Parliament, since it pleased Almighty God, of his good Providence, to call me to the

"Throne of my Ancestors, I most gladly make use of it, to thank my faithful and loving Subjects, for that Zeal and Firmness that hath been shewn in Defence of the Protestant Succession, against all the open and secret Practices that have been used to defeat it; and I shall never forget the Obligations I have to those who have distinguished themselves on this Occasion." Then having touched upon the late Mismanagements, and recommended several important Things to their Consideration, he concludes thus: "The Eyes of all Europe are upon you, waiting the Issue of this first Session. Let no unhappy Divisions of Parties here at home divert you from pursuing the common Interest of your Country. Let no wicked Insinuations disquiet the Minds of my Subjects. The established Constitution, in Church and State shall be the Rule of my Government; the Happiness, Ease and Prosperity of my People, shall be the chief Care of my Life. Those who assist me in carrying on these Measures; I shall always esteem my best Friends; and I doubt not but I shall be able, with your Assistance, to disappoint the Designs of those who would deprive me of that Blessing, which I most value, the Affection of my People." Both Houses, after warm Debates on some Clauses, presented Addresses entirely agreeable to the Sentiments of the Court.

On *April 22*, in the Morning, was the famous total Eclipse of the Sun, a Thing that had not happened for some Centuries in these Parts; when the Darkness, for a small Space, was such, that several Stars appeared, and the Birds

Birds betook themselves to Roost, as if it had been a new Night. I was then in *Berkshire*, and observed, that after the Light's growing fainter and fainter, as the Moon advanced over the Sun's Disk, the total Darkeness came on instantaneously, as when a Candle is extinguished by Night, as soon as the *Eastern Limb* [or Rim] of the Sun was covered; as did the Light in the same Manner, when the Moon left its *Western Limb*. This extraordinary Phænomenon was much observed by Dr. *Halley*, Mr. *Whiston*, and all our eminent Astronomers, who had before, with great Exactness, calculated the Time and Manner of it.

The same Month died Dr. *Gilbert Burnet*, Bishop of *Salisbury*, famous for his excellent *History of the Reformation*, and other Writings; and a great Advocate for the Revolution, which got him many Enemies. The Marquess of *Wharton* died also about the same Time, as did the Earl of *Halifax* not long after. The Marquess of *Wharton* was a Man of a fine Genius, an able Statesman and Politician, and a great Leader among the Whigs. He left one Son, who was afterwards made a Duke, and was a Man of great Wit and Parts; but having squandered away a large Estate, he, towards the End of this Reign, of a Whig became a violent Tory, and Opposer of the Court: At length he went abroad, turned Papist, joined himself to the Interest of the Pretender, and died in Spain, in 1731.

The Parliament had not sat long, before they began to call the late Ministers to an Account. It appeared by their Addresses, that they designed to do so; wherefore the Lord Viscount *Bolingbroke*, who had taken his Seat

in the House of Peers, and spoke in the Debate on the Address, was beforehand with them; for on *March 27*, he went Post to *Dover*, embarked for *Calais*, and so left the Kingdom. On *April 9*, the several Papers relating to the Negotiations of the Peace and Commerce, and Cessation of Arms, were laid before the House of Commons, and a Committee of Secrecy was appointed to examine them, who chose *Robert Walpole*, Esq; their Chairman. The Report of the Committee was read in the House on *June 9*, and was ordered to be printed. It was very long, but may be reduced to these Heads;

1. *The clandestine Negotiations with Mesnager, the French Agent, which produced two Sets of Preliminary Articles; the one private, for Great-Britain only; the other general, for all the Allies.*
2. *The extraordinary Measures pursued to form the Congress at Utrecht.*
3. *The trifling Amusements of the French Plenipotentiaries at Utrecht, by the Connivance of the British Ministers.*
4. *The Negotiations about the Renunciation of the Spanish Monarchy.*
5. *The fatal Suspension of Arms.*
6. *The Seizure of Ghent and Bruges, in order to distress the Allies and favour the French.*
7. *The Duke of Ormond's acting in Concert with the French General.*
8. *The Lord Bolingbroke's Journey to France, to negotiate a separate Peace.*
9. *Mr. Prior's and the Duke of Shrewsbury's Negotiations in France.*
10. *The precipitate Conclusion of the Peace at Utrecht.*
11. *The sacrificing the Catalans.*
12. *Promoting the Interest of the Pretender.*

The Report having been taken into Consideration, it was forthwith resolved, *June 10*, to impeach Lord Viscount *Bolingbroke* and the Earl of *Oxford* of High-Treason.



Treason and other High Crimes and Misdemeanors. On the 21st, after a long Debate, in which several Whigs as well as Tories spoke in favour of the Duke of *Ormond*, it was resolved also to impeach him of High-Treason, and other High Crimes and Misdemeanors; and the next Day to impeach the Earl of *Strafford*, one of the Plenipotentiaries for the Peace at *Utrecht*, of High Crimes and Misdemeanors. It was thought the Duke of *Ormond's* Name being made use of as a Signal for Mobs and Riots, was one Thing that hastened on his Impeachment, *High Church and Ormond* for ever being now as much the Cry of the *Jacobite* and Tory Mobs, as *High Church and Sacheverel* had been. However, it was believed he would have found Favour, if he had staid; which he did not think fit to do, but taking the Advice of his Tory Friends, particularly, as it is thought, of *Dr. Atterbury* Bishop of *Rocheſter*, he left the Kingdom, and followed Lord *Bolingbroke* to *France*: Upon which a Bill of Attainder of High-Treason was afterwards brought in and passed against them both: The Earl of *Oxford* did not fly, but was committed first to the Custody of the *Black-Rod*, and then to the *Tower*, where we must leave him for some Time.

In *July*, the King gave the Royal Assent to an Act for preventing Tumults and riotous Assemblies, commonly called the *Riot-Act*; which is still in Force. By this Law it is made Death for any riotous Persons to continue together for a short Time mentioned in the Act, after a Proclamation has been read to them to disperse.

His Majesty had early acquainted the Parliament with Designs carrying on abroad, and by a restless Party at home, in favour of the *Pretender*:

Upon which both Houses addressed him to put the Kingdom in a Posture of Defence, by increasing the Number of Forces both by Sea and Land, and passed an Act, empowering his Majesty to secure such Persons as he should suspect were conspiring against his Person and Government. Measures were accordingly forthwith taken for augmenting the Forces, and Warrants were issued out against several suspected Persons, some of whom had the good Fortune to be secured, and others escaped, to run themselves into more certain Destruction: For soon after, a Rebellion was actually begun in *Scotland*, which was abetted by another in *England*. That in *Scotland* was headed by the Earl of *Mar*, who notwithstanding his Profession of Loyalty to King *George*, which he expressed in a Letter he wrote to him on his Accession, notwithstanding his having taken the Oaths to his Majesty, and signed the Proclamation declaring him to be his lawful and rightful Sovereign, yet being not taken Notice of as he desired, as he was one who joined in the Measures of the late Ministers, he about the Beginning of *August* withdrew from *London* into the *Highlands*. and having consulted with his Friends, and drawn a Number of Men together, he set up the *Pretender's* Standard there, *September* 6, and proclaimed him, or caused him to be proclaimed, first at *Brae-Mar*, then at *Perth*, *Aberdeen*, *Dundee*, and several other Places. The Rebels had great Expectations from the *French* King, *Lewis* XIV. but he happened to die about this Time, and the Duke of *Orleans*, the Regent, being willing to cultivate a Friendship with King *George*, this was a great Discouragement to them, and a great Blow to their Cause. But as they

had embarked in this rash Undertaking, and had still Hopes that the late Duke of *Ormond* would make a Descent upon *Great-Britain*, and depended upon a Rising in *England*, they were resolved to push their Design. In the mean Time General *Wightman*, who was then in *Scotland*, had Orders to form a Camp near *Stirling*, and distress the Rebels as much as he could, til the Duke of *Argyle's* Arrival.

The Insurrection in the *West* of *England*, the seditious Attempts at *Oxford* and *Bath*, the Seizing of *Bristol* and *Plymouth*, were happily prevented by the timely Precautions of the Government: But in the *North*, the Earl of *Derwentwater*, the Lord *Widdrington*, Mr. *Forster*, Knight of the Shire for *Northumberland*, and others, appeared in Arms in *October*. Though their Numbers were but small, yet they proclaimed the Pretender, first at *Warkworth*, then at *Morpeth*, *Hexham*, and other Places. They were all Horse, not being able to entertain any Foot for want of Arms. They were first strengthened by the Junction of some Lords from the *West* of *Scotland*, who, by the Instructions of *Mar*, had raised some Forces for the Pretender; as the Viscount *Kenmore*, who set up his Standard at *Loughmaben*, and the Earls of *Nithisdale*, *Carnwath*, and *Wintoun*, who joined the *English* Rebels with their small Force at *Rothbury*. Soon after, they marched to *Kelso* on the Borders, and joined a Body of *Highlanders*, whom *Mar*, after he had taken Possession of the fruitful County of *Fife*, had found Means to send over the *Firth*, under *Mackintosh*; with whom also was the Lord *Nairn*. General *Carpenter* being sent in Pursuit of the Rebels, with *Ho-*

*tham's* Regiment of Foot, *Cobham's*, *Molesworth's*, and *Churchill's* Dragoons, arrived at *Newcastle*, *October* 18, and soon set out to attack the Rebels at *Kelso*. This made them leave that Place, and march to *Jedburgh*. They were much divided in their Counsels. *Mackintosh* was for engaging the King's Forces, under General *Carpenter*, which were inferior in Number; but *Forster*, who was called General of the *English* Rebels, was against it. *Wintoun* was for marching back and joining the Earl of *Mar*, but the *English* were for marching into *England*, which was at last agreed too; and when the *Highlanders* perceived it, 500 of them separated and went home. From *Jedburgh* then they marched to *Harwick*, thence to *Langholme*, and thence to *Longtown*, in *Cumberland*, still endeavouring to avoid General *Carpenter*, who was in Pursuit of them. From *Longtown* they marched to *Brampton*, and then to *Penrith*. Here the Militia, though double their Number, instead of opposing them, as they made a Shew of doing, took to their Heels and ran away. From *Penrith* they proceeded to *Appleby*, being joined but by a few in all these Marches: Then to *Kendal*, and so to *Kirkylonsdale*; and here some *Lancashire* Papists with their Servants and Tenants joining them, they marched forward, and came to *Lancaster*, *November* 7. Here having seized six or seven Pieces of Cannon, they proceeded to *Preston*, and would have gone farther, but were surprized by the Approach of General *Wills*; and so they shut themselves up as well as they could in the Town, barricading the Streets, and making a proper Disposition of their Men to receive the Attack of the King's Troops. General

*Wills*



*Wills* came before the Town on *November 12*, and ordered Brigadier *Honeywood* to attack that End of the Town which leads to *Wigan*, and Brigadier *Dormer*, that which leads to *Lancaster*. The King's Troops suffered much by the Rebels Fire from the Windows. But at last the Enemy being driven from their first Barricade, several Houses being set on Fire, and General *Carpentier* arriving, they were soon reduced to the Necessity of surrendering to the King's Mercy. They sent out to capitulate on the 13th; but General *Wills* told them, he would not treat with Rebels, and no other Terms would be granted but submitting Prisoners at Discretion; which they did the next Day at Seven in the Morning, and so were disarmed and made Prisoners, to the Number of 463 *English*, and above 1000 *Scots*, many having found Means to escape. Several were killed and wounded on both Sides, but more of the King's Troops than of the Rebels, who were everywhere under Cover.

Let us now see what became of the Rebels in *Scotland*. It is remarkable, that on the very Day the Rebels were subdued at *Preston*, Sunday, *November 13*, the Duke of *Argyle*, with about 4000 Men, engaged the Rebel Army under the Earl of *Mar*, consisting of about 8 or 9000, at *Sheriffmuir*, near *Dumblain*, about four Miles from *Stirling*. The Battle was obstinate and bloody, various Accounts were given of it, and both Sides claimed the Victory. What is certain from all the Accounts is this, that the Duke of *Argyle*, with the Right of his Army, soon put the Left of the Enemy to the Rout; but whilst he was pursuing them a considerable Way with great Slaughter, the Right of the Rebels had

the better of the Left of the Royal Army, and made such terrible Havock among them, that they had like to have been all cut off. But that, upon the Whole, the King's Forces had the Advantage, appears by the Consequences: For the Earl of *Mar*, immediately after the Battle, retreated to *Perth*, and his Design of crossing the *Forth* was entirely frustrated, and never afterwards attempted. The Earl of *Illy*, Brother to the Duke of *Argyle*, was in the Action, behaved with great Intrepidity, and was wounded in his Arm and Side. Among the Slain were Colonel *Hamers* and Captain *Armstrong*, his Grace's *Aid de Camp*: About 800 of the Rebels were killed, and many made Prisoners, among whom were several Gentlemen. About the same Time, the Lord *Loval* took *Inverness* from the Rebels, which was a Place of great Importance.

The rest of *November*, and all *December*, both Sides remained quiet in their Quarters, the Duke of *Argyle* at *Stirling*, and the Earl of *Mar* at *Perth*. In the mean Time, on *December 22*, the Pretender arrived, in a *Dunkirk* Privateer, at *Peterhead* in *Scotland*, where he was presently met and complimented by the Earl of *Mar*, the Earl *Mareschal*, General *Hamilton*, and other of his Adherents. From *Peterhead* he went to *Feteresse*, on *January 6*, to *Dundee*, and from thence to *Scoon*, two Miles from *Perth*. Here he published several Proclamations, particularly one for a Convention of the States, and another for his Coronation, and assumed other Acts of Royalty; which were all at an End almost as soon as they were vainly usurped: For towards the End of *January*, the Duke of *Argyle*, assisted by Lieutenant-General *Cadogan*, and other General

Officers, who were sent down to him, and reinforced by a good Train of Artillery, and the *Dutch* Troops lately landed, marching from *Stirling* to attack the Rebels at *Perth*; who now no longer expected Assistance from *France*, upon his Approach, they abandoned the Place, and retired with the Pretender to *Dundee*, and from thence to *Montrose*, where finding they were closely pursued by the King's Forces, on *February* 14, the Pretender, with the Earls of *Mar* and *Melfort*, the Lord *Drummond*, and some other Chiefs, found Means to make their Escape in a *French* Ship which lay there; soon after which the Rebels dispersed, some submitted, and some were taken Prisoners.

The chief of the Rebels taken at *Preston* were brought up to *London*. When they came near the City, they were all pinioned with Cords, their Horses being led by Foot Soldiers, and so made a miserable Procession amidst numberless Spectators. Among them was their General *Forster*, as also the Earls of *Derwentwater*, *Nithisdale*, *Carnwath* and *Wintoun*, Viscount *Kenmure*, and the Lords *Widdrington* and *Nairn*. The Noblemen were sent to the *Tower*, and the rest to *Newgate* and other Prisons. The Parliament meeting *January* 9, the seven Lords were presently impeached of High-Treason. All pleaded guilty but *Wintoun*, who stood a Trial and was cast; and so they had all Sentence of Death passed on them by the Lord Chancellor *Cowper*, who was appointed Lord High-Steward upon the Occasion. *Derwentwater* and *Kenmure* were beheaded on *Tower-Hill*, *February* 24, 1715-16. *Nithisdale*, who was to have been executed with them, had the good Fortune to make

his Escape out of the *Tower* the Night before, disguised in Woman's Apparel, with a Ridinghood over it. *Wintoun* escaped from the same Prison afterwards, as did *Forster* and *Mackintosh* out of *Newgate*. Some were executed in the Country, 11 at *Preston*, six at *Wigan*, and five at *Manchester*. A few were hanged at *Tyburn*, particularly one *Gafoign*, Colonel *Oxburgh*, Mr. *Paul* a Clergyman, and Mr. *Hall*, who had been a Justice of Peace. In short, some who were found guilty were transported, others reprieved; some were acquitted on their Trial; and those who were untried or reprieved, continued Objects of his Majesty's Clemency, and had the Benefit of the *Act of Grace* that afterwards passed. But the Earl of *Mar*, the Marquess of *Tillibardine*, and some others who fled from *Scotland*, were attainted by Act of Parliament. There having been some jarring in Council about the Execution of the condemned Lords, the Earl of *Nottingham* was, soon after, removed from being President of the Council, and his Son, the Lord *Finch*, from being one of the Commissioners of the Treasury.

I shall now take Notice, that the End of the Year 1715 was remarkable for a very hard and severe Frost. It began towards the End of *November*, and continued till *February*. The *Thames* was so congealed, that Multitudes of People walked over it, and there were beaten Paths on the frozen River from the *Bridge* to *Whitehall*; a great many Booths were erected upon it, which, with the Numbers of People daily frequenting it, made it look like one continued Fair; and two whole Oxen were roasted upon it.

Robert



*Robert Walpole*, Esq; was some Time before made First Commissioner of the Treasury and Chancellor of the Exchequer. And about the same Time the Parliament of Ireland attainted *James Butler*, late Duke of *Ormond*, of High-Treason, and confiscated his Estates in that Kingdom.

The good Archbishop *Tennison* died about the End of the same Year, aged 81, and was succeeded in the Archbishoprick of *Canterbury* by Dr. *Wake*, Bishop of *Lincoln*. And in April, 1716, that great Lawyer and Statesman, *John Lord Sommers*, departed this Life.

A few Weeks after, the King gave the Royal Assent to an Act for enlarging the Time of Continuance of Parliaments. This is the famous *Septennial Act*, whereby this and future Parliaments were continued seven Years, unless sooner dissolved by the Crown, instead of three Years, as by the *Triennial Act* passed in the Reign of King *William*. There were great and long Debates upon this *Septennial Bill* in both Houses, and many Lords entered their Protests against it. And though it seemed necessary at that Juncture, when, by reason of the seditious and rebellious Spirit that still appeared in the Nation, especially among the common Sort, a new Election might have thrown the Kingdom into a Flame; yet it has been thought by many, that, in Time, it may prove dangerous to the Constitution, as it must give Ministers a greater Influence over Parliaments.

The Parliament was prorogued on June 26. About which Time, among other Creations, Sir *Richard Onslow* was made a Baron, and the Earl of *Portland* was raised to the Dignity of a Duke: General *Cadogan*, who had signalized himself in Queen *Anne's* War, and had

been very serviceable in suppressing the Rebellion in *Scotland*, was also made a Lord, and afterwards an Earl: And Sir *Henry St. John*, Father to the late Lord *Bolingbroke*, was created Baron of *Battersea*. Much about the same Time, the Lady *Schulenburg* was made Dutches of *Munster* in *Ireland*; and Prince *Ernest*, the King's Brother, and Bishop of *Osnaburgh*, was created Duke of *York*, and was afterwards made Knight of the Garter, together with Prince *Frederick*, Son to the Prince of *Wales*.

The Clause in the Act of Settlement, whereby, after it took Place, the Sovereign was not to go out of the Kingdom, without Consent of Parliament, was repealed at the End of the Session; and his Majesty having constituted the Prince of *Wales* Guardian of the Realm in his Absence, on July 7, set out for his *German* Dominions: He visited them again in 1719, and continued to do so almost every Year after.

Though the Rebellion was happily crushed, the Spirit of it still remained, and discovered itself in Mobs, Riots, and Tumults, which the loose disorderly Multitude were very ready to run into, ever since *Sacheverel's* Affair. To stem the Torrent of these Mobs, the Whigs, and those well affected to the *Hanover* Succession, had even in the last Reign began to form themselves into Clubs or Societies, which used to meet at several Houses in the City and Suburbs, called *Mug-Houses*, from the Vessel they used to drink out of, when whiggish Healths were toasted. These Societies were kept up and increased after his Majesty's Accession, when the Rabble became more furious in Proportion to the Disappointment and Despair of their Party. The *Roebeck* in *Cheapside* was one

of the most famous of these *Mug-Houses*, and that in *Salisbury-Court*, became so by the following Circumstance. The Company there having, on some Occasion, given a more than ordinary Demonstration of their Affection to his Majesty and the Royal Family, the Mob on the other Side were so enraged, that, on *July 20*, they came and attacked the *Mug-House*, which was kept by one *Mr. Read*, and would have demolished it, if the Company there had not sent for a Reinforcement from the *Mug-House* in *Tavistock-Street*. This made them fly for the present, though many of them returned and kept hovering about the House the following Days. At last, on the *23d*, one *Vaughan*, who had been a Bluecoat-Boy at *Bridewell-Hospital*, instigated the Mob to go to the *Mug-House*, and revenge their late Affront. They followed him with loud Huzzas of *High-Church and Ormond*, and *Down with the Mug-Houses*. *Mr. Read*, finding they intended to pull down the House, bid them keep off, or else he would fire amongst them; but they not regarding him, he let off his Piece, and killed *Vaughan* on the Spot, for which he was afterwards tried and acquitted. The Mob still continuing their Outrages, breaking the Windows, pulling down the Sign, gutting the House, and breaking and destroying the Goods, the Sheriffs of *London* came and ordered the Proclamation against Riots to be read; but this not availing, a Party of the Guards were ordered to march to the Place, and as soon as they appeared, the Mob dispersed: But five of the Rioters were taken, who being tried and found guilty, were hanged at the End of *Salisbury-Court*, in *September*; which seasonable

Piece of Severity put an effectual Stop to all Rioting for the future.

Whilst his Majesty was abroad, the Treaty of Defensive Alliance between *Great-Britain*, *France* and *Holland*, called the *Triple Alliance*, was signed. The King returning in *January*, 1716-17, the Nation was soon alarmed with an intended Invasion from *Sweden*, in favour of the Pretender; which his Majesty communicated to the Council. Upon this, some suspected Persons were taken up, and Count *Gyllemberg*, the *Swedish* Envoy here, was put under Arrest, and all his Papers seized. Baron *Gortz*, Minister and Favourite of the King of *Sweden*, had been in *Holland*; and was coming over to *England*, to assist *Gyllemberg* in the Conspiracy; but hearing what had happened to him, and finding their Projects were discovered, he returned to *Holland*; and upon the *British* Minister's Application to the *States*, *Gortz*, with his two Secretaries, and all his Papers, were seized at *Arnheim*, in *Gulderland*, after flying from Place to Place to avoid the Pursuit he knew was made after him. This *Gortz* was the principal Projector, as well as Conductor, of the treacherous Design; and by his and *Gyllemberg's* Papers the whole Plot was discovered. The Parliament met, *February 20*, when, by his Majesty's Command, Copies of Letters between Count *Gyllemberg*, the Barons *Gortz*, *Sparr*, and others, relating to the Design of raising a Rebellion in his Majesty's Dominions, to be supported by a Force from *Sweden*, were laid before the House. Soon after a Bill passed to prohibit all Commerce with *Sweden*, and a Squadron was fitted out, and sent to block up the *Swedish* Ships in their Harbours.

I shall



I shall just observe here, that the Animosity of the King of *Sweden* was thought by some to be occasioned by the Purchase of *Bremen* and *Verden* of the *Danes*, who had taken them from the *Swedens*: But upon the Revolution in *Sweden*, after the Death of *Charles XII.* who was killed by a Shot in the Head before *Frederickshall*, the Purchase of those Districts was confirmed to his *Britannick* Majesty, in Consideration of a Sum of Money to be paid to *Sweden*. To return:

On *April 3*, the King sent a Message to the Commons for a Supply, to enable his Majesty to make good such Engagements with other Princes and States, as may prevent the present Danger from *Sweden*, and, as far as possible, the like Apprehensions for the future. After long and warm Debates on this Message, it was resolved, that 250,000*l.* be granted to his Majesty for the Purpose therein mentioned: But it was carried by a Majority of only four Voices.

This small Majority was owing to a Misunderstanding, about this Time, among the Courtiers. To whatever Cause it was owing, it is certain there was some Difference between the King's Friends, which occasioned the Removal of some, and the Resignation of others. So long ago as in *December*, the Lord *Townshend*, on the Arrival of an Express from *Hanover*, was removed from his Place of Principal Secretary of State, to the great Surprise of most People: And though after the King's Return, he was appointed Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*, yet immediately after the Debate on the abovementioned Supply, he was removed from that Post also; upon which *Robert Walpole*, Esq; *Mr. Methuen*, and *Mr. Pulteney*, re-

signed their respective Employments; as did, soon after, the Duke of *Devonshire* his Place of President of the Council. And now General *Stanhope*, who was soon after created a Baron and Viscount, and afterwards an Earl, was made First Commissioner of the Treasury and Chancellor of the Exchequer, and the Earl of *Sunderland*, the other favourite Minister, and *Joseph Addison*, Esq; Secretaries of State. One of those who resigned, in a fresh Debate in the House of Commons about the Supply against *Sweden*, said, *That having resigned his Place, that he might act with the Freedom becoming an Englishman, he could not forbear declaring against granting a Supply in a Manner altogether unparliamentary and unprecedented: That he could not persuade himself that any Englishman advised his Majesty to send such a Message; but he doubted not but the Resolutions of a British Parliament would make a German Ministry tremble.*

The Parliament, at his Majesty's Desire, had adjourned from *April 16*, to *May 6*; when being met, he, by the Mouth of the Lord Chancellor, made a Speech to both Houses: And *Mr. Lechmere*, in his Speech, when he moved for an Address of Thanks, having insinuated some Reflections on those who had resigned their Places, as if they designed to distress the King's Affairs, *Mr. Walpole*, to vindicate himself, said, *That People had often been reflected upon for accepting Places, to carry on Designs against the Interest of their Country; but he never heard a Man found fault with for laying down one of the most profitable Employments of the Kingdom: That for his own Part, if he would have complied with some Measures, it was*

*not in the Power of any of the present Ministers to remove him ; but that he had Reasons for resigning, with which he had acquainted his Majesty, and which he might, at a proper Time, explain to that House : And in the mean while, his Conduct would shew, that he never intended either to make the King uneasy, or to embarrass his Affairs : Which Declaration was well liked by the King's Friends.*

1717

Sir John Trevor, Master of the Rolls, dying on May 20, Sir Joseph Jekyll was made Master of the Rolls in his Room.

The Earl of Oxford, who had been near two Years a Prisoner in the Tower, took the favourable Opportunity of the Dissention among his Enemies, to petition for his Trial ; which was accordingly brought on. *Westminster-Hall* being prepared for that Purpose, and the Lord Chancellor Cowper being appointed Lord High-Steward, the Prisoner, on June 24, was brought from the Tower by Water, and conducted to the Bar ; when Mr. Hampden, one of the Managers for the Commons, recapitulated the Charge against the Earl in a long Speech. Sir Joseph Jekyll was proceeding to make good the first Article ; but the Lord Harcourt having made a Motion previous thereto, *That the Commons be not permitted to proceed, in order to make good the Articles against the Earl of Oxford for High Crimes and Misdemeanors, untill Judgement be first given upon the Articles for High-Treason ;* which, after a long Debate, was carried in the Affirmative : There arose upon this a Difference between the two Houses, the Commons being resolved to proceed in their own Way, and the Lords as strenuously adhering to theirs. At last, the Beginning of July, the Lords proceeded to the Trial, and

three Proclamations were made for the Accusers of the Earl of Oxford to appear and make good the Articles of Impeachment ; but nobody appearing, his Lordship was, by the unanimous Voice of all the Peers present, discharged of the High Crimes and Misdemeanors, as well as of the High-Treason. However, the Commons addressed the King to except the Earl of Oxford out of the *Act of Grace ;* with which his Majesty complied.

A famous Controversy was begun and carried on this Year, occasioned by Dr. Hoadley Bishop of Bangor's Sermon before the King, intitled, *The Nature of the Kingdom of Christ*, shewing it *not to be of this World*. A great Noise was made about this Sermon, and innumerable Pamphlets were wrote on both Sides. The Bishop was generally thought to have the better of his Antagonists, who, not content with their Opposition in a private Capacity, thought to have silenced him by means of the Convocation. The Lower House appointed a Committee to draw up a Representation to the Upper House, against the Positions advanced in his Sermon, and in his *Preservative against the Principles and Practices of the Nonjurors*. The Committee censured both ; but to put an End to these Heats, the Convocation was prorogued, and have scarce ever sat since. However, the Report of the Committee was printed, which was answered by the Bishop.

On November 2, her Royal Highness the Princess of Wales was brought to-bed of a Prince, who on the 28th was christened by the Name of *George-William*, his Majesty and the Duke of Newcastle, Lord Chamberlain of the Household, being Godfathers, and the Dutch-



ess of *St. Alban's* Godmother. By some Circumstance or other, after the Christening was over, his Royal Highness the Prince of *Wales* fell under his Majesty's Displeasure, inso-much that he was ordered to leave *St. James's*; which he did, and went and resided at *Leicester-House*, with the Princess his Consort, who, to be sure, would chuse to go with him, though it was signified to her that she might stay at *St. James's* as long as she judged convenient. The young Princess, and the young Prince, who died in *February* following, remained at *St. James's* with his Majesty; Orders having been given, that her Royal Highness might come and see them as often as she would. After this, whenever the King went abroad, he committed the Administration of the Government to Lords Justices. This Difference farther divided the Friends of the Royal Family; For as all in the King's Service were forbid to visit the Prince's Court at *Leicester-House*, most of his Royal Highness's Servants forbore going to *St. James's*.

Towards the End of this Year, a Proclamation was published for lowering the Gold Coin; where-by Guineas, that before went for one-and-twenty Shillings and Six-pence, were ordered for the future to go for one-and-twenty Shillings.

The Marquis *de Paleotti*, an Italian, and Brother to the Dukes of *Shrewsbury*, having been tried, convicted and condemned for the Murder of his Servant, was hanged at *Tyburn* on *March* 17, 1717-18. Great Intercession was made for him by his Sister the Duchess, and some foreign Ministers; but his Character was so detestable, that all the Favour he could obtain, was to be executed

by himself; which was accordingly done about Eight o'Clock in the Morning. The same Day a Criminal of another Kind was executed, one *James Shepherd*, a young Man under Twenty, who, by frequenting *Jacobite* Conventicles, and reading their Books, had worked himself up to such a wicked Enthusiasm, that he would have undertaken to assassinate the King, which, in his Letter to Mr. *Leake*, a Nonjuring Clergyman, he insolently called *Smiting the Usurper in his Palace*. *Leake* being sufficiently terrified at such a Letter, which was left for him at his Lodgings, went and communicated the Contents of it to Sir *John Fryer*, an Alderman of *London*, who advised him to seize the young Traitor, when he came for an Answer; which he did, and carried him before the Alderman, who committed him to *Newgate*. *Shepherd* was so far from repenting of his Treason, that upon his Trial he owned the execrable Design, and gloried in it.

Earl *Cowper* resigned the Great Seal in *April*, 1718, which, after having been for a short Time in Commission, was given to *Thomas Lord Parker*, Lord Chief-Justice of the *King's-Bench*, afterwards created Earl of *Macclesfield*; who was succeeded, as Lord Chief-Justice, by Sir *John Pratt*. About the same Time, Mr. *Lechmere* was made Attorney-General, in the Room of Sir *Edward Northey*; the Earl of *Sunderland*, President of the Council and First Commissioner of the Treasury; *John Aislabie*, Esq; Chancellor of the Exchequer; Lord *Stanhope* and *James Craggs junior*, Esq; Secretaries of State; the latter in the Room of *Joseph Addison*, Esq; to whose thoughtful and speculative Genius the Fatigue

tigue of that Office was not very agreeable.

Let us now turn our Eyes a little to foreign Affairs, in which *Great-Britain* had a considerable Share. King *Philip* of *Spain*, taking Advantage of the Emperor's being engaged in a War with the *Turks*, had last Year invaded *Sardinia*; which probably he would not have done, if the glorious Victory, which Prince *Eugene* had obtained over the *Turks* at *Belgrade*, had been known at the Court of *Spain*. This open Hostility against the Emperor, put the Courts of *Great-Britain*, *France*, and the *States-General*, upon concerting Measures to restore and preserve the Tranquillity of *Europe*. And so after a Peace had been concluded and signed at *Passarowitz*, July 2, this Year, between the Imperial and *Ottoman* Courts, by the Mediation of the King of *Great-Britain* and the *States-General*, the Quadruple Alliance, or mutual Guarantee, between the Emperor, *Great-Britain*, *France* and *Holland*, was signed at *London*, on the 22d of the same Month. It was called the Quadruple Alliance, though the *States-General* were then only named in it as one of the Contracting Parties, it not being doubted but they would come into it. Previous to this Treaty, was a Convention between his *Britannick* Majesty and the Most Christian King, for settling the Terms of the Treaty of Peace between the Emperor and the King of *Spain*, and between his Imperial Majesty and the Duke of *Savoy* King of *Sicily*. This Convention was inserted in the Treaty of *London*, or Quadruple Alliance and declared, that the Invasion of *Sardinia* was a Breach of the Neutrality of

*Italy*; that *Sicily* should be delivered up to the Emperor, and *Sardinia*, in lieu thereof, given to the Duke of *Savoy*: And the Succession to the Duchies of *Parma* and *Tuscany* was settled on the Queen of *Spain*'s Son, upon Failure of Heirs in those Houses, provided the King of *Spain* entered into the Treaty by a certain Time. To secure the Effects of this Treaty, *Great-Britain* sent out two strong Squadrons of Men of War, one under Sir *George Byng* to the *Mediterranean*, and the other to the *Baltick*, under Sir *John Norris*; some of the Powers in the North being then on ill Terms with *Great-Britain*.

On the other hand, the King of *Spain*, foreseeing that *Sicily* was to be delivered up to the Emperor, resolved, by the Advice of Cardinal *Alberoni*, then Prime Minister in *Spain*, to seize it for himself. Accordingly he fitted out a Fleet, which made a Descent upon that Island, the Beginning of July, and reduced *Palermo* and several other Places. But while they were busy in attacking the Citadel of *Messina*, the *English* Fleet, commanded by Sir *George Byng*, came up, and after Warning given to the *Spaniards*, to no Purpose, to desist from their Enterprize, there ensued a bloody Engagement, on July 31, in which the *Spanish* Fleet was entirely defeated. The King of *Spain*, by his Attempt upon *Sicily*, had violated the Treaty of *Utrecht* and the Neutrality of *Italy*, of which the Crown of *Great-Britain* was one of the Guarantees; yet this sudden Blow was highly resented by the *Spaniards*, and as a Rupture must necessarily be the Consequence, War was declared against *Spain*, in *December* following, both by *Great-Britain* and *France*. And though



though there ensued many Congresses, Treaties and Conventions, to bring Matters to an Accommodation, yet there has been more or less a Misunderstanding between *Spain* and us ever since.

The Parliament met in *November*, and they had not sat long, before Earl *Stanhope* offered to the House of Lords a Bill for *strengthening the Protestant Interest in these Kingdoms*; importing, in Substance, a Repeal of the *Occasional Conformity* and *Schism* Bills, which, towards the End of the last Reign had been enacted against the Dissenters. This Bill, after long Debates, passed both Houses, and received the Royal Assent in *February*, 1718-19.

In this Session also were great Debates in the House of Lords, about the Bill for *limiting the Peerage*; which was favoured by the Court, though it imported some Restraint upon the Prerogative of the Crown. In the next Session, this Bill passed the House of Lords, but was rejected by the Commons.

On *March* 10, his Majesty acquainted the Parliament, that he had received Intelligence from the *French* King, of an Invasion intended from *Spain* in favour of the Pretender. Both Houses gave his Majesty the strongest Assurances of Assistance, and immediate Orders were given for fitting out a good Squadron of Men of War; the Troops marched to guard the Coasts, four Regiments were brought over from *Ireland*, two *Swiss* Battalions arrived in the River *Thames*, and three *Dutch* Battalions landed in the North of *England*. Besides this, the *French* King and the Governor of the *Austrian Netherlands* ordered Bodies of Troops to march, so as to be in a Readiness to be transported to *England* upon Occasion.

These Preparations made by the King and his Allies had been sufficient to have defeated the Invasion, had it taken Effect. But the Winds were beforehand with them, and hindered the Execution of the Design: For the *Spanish* Fleet of about 50 Transports, convoyed by four Men of War, having on board the late Duke of *Ormond*, about 5000 Men, and Arms for twice their Number, sailing from *Cadiz*, was entirely dispersed by a violent Storm, which lasted 48 Hours. However, the late Earls of *Seaforth* and *Mareschal*, and the Marquis of *Tillibardine*, landed at *Kintail* in *Scotland*, with about 400 Men, mostly *Spaniards*, from on board two Transports, and quickly got together above 1600 *Highlanders*. But Major-General *Wightman* coming upon them, soon drove them from their Fastnesses, and dispersed them; about 300 of the *Spaniards* surrendering Prisoners at Discretion. As to *Seaforth*, *Mareschal* and *Tillibardine*, they made the best of their Way to the Islands, from whence they found Means to transport themselves back into *Spain*.

The Parliament was prorogued on *April* 18, about which Time, the Duchess of *Munster*, an *Irish* Title, was created Duchess of *Kendal* in *England*; the Duke of *Argyle*, Duke of *Greenwich*; the Earl of *Manchester*, Duke of *Manchester*; the Earl of *Carnarvon*, Duke of *Chandos*; and Lieutenant-General *Carpenter*, Baron *Carpenter* of *Killaghy* in the Kingdom of *Ireland*. Soon after, *May* 11, his Majesty set out for *Hanover*, arrived there the 18th, and returned to *England* in *November*, after his Mediation had been accepted for a Peace between *Denmark* and *Sweden*, and he had vigorously  
uted

used his good Offices in favour of the Protestants in the *Palatinate* and in *Poland*, then grievously oppressed by the Papists.

The celebrated *Joseph Addison*, Esq; some Time Secretary of State, and well known for his fine Genius, displayed in the *Spectators* and other elegant Writings, died in *June* this Year, 1719. And not long before, that eminent Physician, Sir *Samuel Garth*, departed this Life, famous as well for his Knowledge in the Art of Poetry, as for his Skill in his Profession: He was Physician General to the Army.

1719 In *November*, *John Matthews*, a Printer in *Little-Britain*, was executed at *Tyburn*, for printing and publishing a treasonable Libel, intitled, *Vox Populi Vox Dei*, in which the Pretender's Right to the Crown of these Realms was asserted, in Breach of the Statute of the 4th of *Queen Anne*, which makes the asserting any such Thing, in Writing or Printing, High-Treason.

In an Expedition against *Spain*, this Year, the Lord *Cobham* with the Land Forces, and Vice-Admiral *Mighels* with the Fleet, took *Vigo*, and several Incurfions were made on the *Spanish* Coasts; though the Advantage of this Expedition did not answer the Expence. After a short Stay at *Vigo*, the General finding but little good to be done, ordered the Forces to re-imbark, and returned in *November*, with the Cannon and Stores he had taken in the Town and Citadel.

Great Numbers of Journeymen Weavers assembled in a riotous and tumultuous Manner, crying out, *Down with the Callicoes*, and pulling and tearing them off the Backs of such Women as wore them. At the same Time Petitions came from almost all Parts,

complaining of the Decay of the Woollen and Silken Manufactures, by reason of these *Callicoes* and other *East-India* Goods. The Result was, that an Act was at length passed, prohibiting the Use and Wear of painted, printed, or stained Callicoes, &c.

The Parliament met soon after the King's Return, *November 23*, and had not sat long, when the *South-Sea* Company and the *Bank of England* laid before the House of Commons their several Proposals for reducing all the publick Funds into one, in order to discharge the national Debts, on some valuable Considerations to be granted them, and certain Advantages to the Government. After much Debate and Contest, it was determined in favour of the *South-Sea* Scheme, and their Proposals were accepted on *February 1*, 1719-20. An Act afterwards passed both Houses for that Purpose, which received the Royal Assent in *April* following: At which Time also an Act passed for the better securing the Dependency of *Ireland* upon the Crown of *Great-Britain*. However honestly the abovementioned Scheme might have been designed by some, the Execution of it was attended with amazing and fatal Consequences, to the enriching of a Few and the impoverishing of Thousands; for it became a mere Bubble and Decoy for artful and cunning Men to catch the unwary, but covetous Adventurers. The Infatuation was general, though we might have taken Warning by the Fate of the *Mississippi* Scheme in *France*, formed a little before by Mr. *Law*, a *Scotchman*; and nothing was now minded but the Business of Stock-Jobbing. *Exchange-Alley*, where these Affairs were transacted, was in a continual Hurry, where Crowds



of all Ranks and Qualities daily resorted. The Desperate, who ventured first, were generally Gainers, whilst the Wiser and more Sedate, who came in later, were many of them great Sufferers; and so the *Wrongheads* (as was then the Saying) had the better of the *Longheads*. Upon the *South-Sea* Proposals being accepted, the Stock rose gradually to a prodigious Height; to 310 for 100*l.* before the Bill had the Royal Assent; in a few Days to 340, then to 400, and before the End of *May* to 500. In short, what by the Artifices of the Managers, and the Credulity of the People, through an Eagerness of increasing their Fortunes, by the 2d of *June* it got up to 890, and continued rising and falling till it amounted to above 1000. A Spirit of Gaming thus prevailing in the Nation, many Projects were set on foot, some whimsical enough, which were deservedly called *Bubbles*, and grew up from the Corruption of the grand *Bubble*, or *South-Sea* Stock. They were near 100 in Number, and it was reckoned that almost a Million and a Half was won and lost in them.

The Parliament was prorogued on *June* 11, and soon after his Majesty set out for *Hanover*. *South-Sea* Stock still continued to rise for some Time, but about the End of *August* it began to fall, and fell faster than it rose, having nothing but an imaginary Foundation to support it, till by *Michaelmas-Day* it sunk to 150. A Proclamation was issued against the *Bubbles*, on the Day the Parliament was prorogued, and they were soon after entirely suppressed by Order of the Lords Justices. The Consequence of these fraudulent Arts in the Managers, and this mad gaming Humour in the People, was, that

many antient and good Families were impaired or ruined; whilst a few Upstarts got their Thousands. This caused a general Ferment in the Nation, and some Courtiers were supposed to be deeply concerned in these Practices.

The King returned in *November*; and the Parliament met on *December* 8. They soon proceeded to an Inquiry into the fraudulent Execution of the *South-Sea* Act, and whilst the Matter was under Examination, Mr. *Knight*, the Company's Treasurer, who, with Sir *John Blunt*, had the chief Hand in the ruinous Project, fled out of the Kingdom. In the End, the Parliament applied to the Relief of the Sufferers the Estates of the Sub-Governor, Deputy-Governor, Directors, &c. only allowing each such Part as they thought proper; and *John Aislabie*, Esq; Chancellor of the Exchequer, met with the same Fate. They were also incapacitated from sitting or voting in either House of Parliament, or from holding any Office or Place of Trust under his Majesty, his Heirs or Successors. The Act against the Directors received the Royal Assent on *July* 29, 1721; and on *August* 10, the King passed the Bill for restoring the publick Credit, and prorogued the Parliament. The Lord Mr. *Robert Walpole* had in settling this distracted Affair, and restoring the Credit of the Nation, brought him into full Favour again. He was made Chancellor of the Exchequer, and First Commissioner of the Treasury; about two Years after Knight of the *Bath*, then of the *Garter*, and continued Prime Minister to the End of this Reign, and 15 Years after.

The renowned Admiral, Sir *John Leake*, died the Beginning of last Year; and about *February*, this Year,

1721

Year, during the Distractions occasioned by the *South-Sea* Affair, and whilst the Parliament was carrying on their Inquiry into that dark Scene of Iniquity, Earl *Stanhope*, and *James Craggs*, Esq; both Secretaries of State, departed this Life; as did also *John Sheffield*, the famous Duke of *Buckingham*. The Lord Viscount *Townshend*, who had before been declared President of the Council, and the Lord *Carteret*, succeeded Earl *Stanhope* and Mr. *Craggs*, as Principal Secretaries of State.

There being some Misunderstanding between his Majesty and the Czar of *Muscovy*, a strong Squadron, commanded by Sir *John Norris*, was sent this Year, as well as the last, to the *Baltick*, to make good our Alliance with *Sweden*, and to prevent the secret Designs of his Czarian Majesty.

Some Time before, was happily brought about the Reconciliation of the Royal Family: In Consequence of which, his Royal Highness the Prince of *Wales* attended his Majesty at *St. James's*, and was half an Hour in private Conference with him. At his Return, he was, by the King's Command, attended by a Party of the Yeomen of the Guard, as also of the Horse-Guards; and immediately the Foot-Guards began likewise to mount Guard at *Leicester-House*. The next Day the Duke of *Devonshire*, Earl *Cowper*, Lord Viscount *Townshend*, Mr. *Robert Walpole*, Mr. *Methuen*, and Mr. *Pulteney*, were admitted to kiss the King's Hand. This was in *April*, 1720, before the destructive Consequences of the *South-Sea* Scheme appeared. And on *April* 15, this Year, 1721, the Princess of *Wales* was happily delivered of a Prince, named *William-Augustus*, the late illustrious Duke of *Cumberland*. I shall ob-

serve here, once for all, that his Royal Highness had afterwards in this Reign two Daughters, the Princesses *Mary* and *Louisa*.

In the last Session, a remarkable Bill was debated in the House of Lords, for the more effectually suppressing of *Blasphemy* and *Profaneness*. There was certainly too much Occasion for such a Bill; but as it chiefly tended to set up a Sort of Inquisition on Men's Consciences with regard to some speculative Points wherein good and sober Christians differ, it met with such a rational Opposition, that it came to nothing.

*Charles Spencer*, Earl of *Sunderland*, Groom of the Stole to his Majesty, and who had been Secretary of State, President of the Council, &c. died in *April*, 1722; as did the great Duke of *Marlborough* in *June*, whose Obsequies were performed on *August* 9, with the utmost Solemnity and Magnificence, agreeable to so glorious and renowned a Commander.

A Plot for bringing in the Pretender was discovered about this Time; for which Dr. *Atterbury*, Bishop of *Rocheſter*, was apprehended and committed to the Tower; as was also *Christopher Layer*, a Counsellor of the Temple, but of small Note in his Profession. The following Persons were afterwards, at different Times, taken into Custody and imprisoned, viz. *John Plunket*, *George Kelly*, *Dennis Kelly*, Lord *North* and *Grey*, the Earl of *Orrery*, the Duke of *Norfolk*, Dr. *Freind*, and others. All but *Atterbury*, *Layer*, *Plunket*, and *George Kelly*, were, after some Time, admitted to Bail, and discharged; and in the mean Time one *Neynoe*, who was to be a principal Evidence against the Plotters, fell into the *Thames* and was drowned, as he was endeavouring to escape from the Messenger's



senger's House, who had him in Custody, which was by the Waterside.

The first Septennial Parliament having been dissolved, when near expiring, a new one met on *October 9, 1722*; when the Commons having again chosen *Spencer Compton, Esq;* for their Speaker, the King, in his Speech to both Houses, acquainted them with the above-mentioned Conspiracy, for overturning the established Government, and setting up the *Pretender*; into which the Parliament soon proceeded to make a vigorous Inquiry, and to prosecute the Authors. *Lacy* was tried at the *King's-Bench Bar, November 21.* The Indictment set forth, *That he had been employed in forming a most traiterous and horrid Plot and Conspiracy against his Majesty and his Government, by instigating Men for the Pretender's Service, in order to stir up a Rebellion; and also that he had held Correspondence with the Pretender, by carrying Letters and treasonable Papers to him beyond Seas, and from him to the Disaffected in this Kingdom.* It appeared also on the Trial, that the *Earl Cadogan* was to be seized, and the *Tower* at the same Time; afterwards the *Bank of England*, then his Majesty and the Prince of *Wales.* The Trial lasted 17 Hours, when he was found guilty, and received Sentence of Death. He was reprieved from Time to Time, in Hopes of his making some further Discoveries; but at last was drawn on a Sledge to *Tyburn*, and there hanged and quartered, *May 17, 1723*; his Head being afterwards fixed up at *Temple-Bar.* The Parliament passed Bills for inflicting Pains and Penalties on *Bishop Atterbury, Kelly* and *Plunket*; whereby the first was banished, and the two others imprisoned for Life.

The *Harburgh* Lottery made a great Noise in this Session, and the

Lord Viscount *Barrington* was expelled the House of Commons for being concerned in it. That great Lawyer and fine Orator, *Erskine*, who had been twice Lord Chancellor, died this Year.

The Parliament was prorogued on *May 27.* His Majesty set out for his German Dominions on *June 3,* and returned in *December* following. The Parliament met again *January 9,* and was prorogued on *April 24*; a little before which, his Grace the Duke of *Newcastle* was made one of his Majesty's Principal Secretaries of State.

His Majesty's Regard for the Encouragement and Promotion of Learning, appears by his Circular Letter of *May 6, 1724,* sent to the two Universities; wherein having taken Notice, that no Provision had hitherto been made in either, for the Study of *Modern History* and *Modern Languages*, and of the Inconveniencies arising from that Defect, he says: *In order to remedy these and the like Inconveniencies, we have determined to appoint two Persons of sober Conversation and prudent Conduct, of the Degree of Master of Arts, Bachelor of Laws, or of some higher Degree in one of the said Universities, skilled in Modern History, and in the Knowledge of Modern Languages, to be nominated by us, to be our Professors of Modern History, one for the University of Cambridge, and the other for that of Oxford, who shall be obliged to read Lectures in the publick Schools, at such Times as shall be appointed. And we have farther determined, that each of the said Professors shall have a Stipend of 400*l.* per Annum, and out of the said Stipend shall be obliged to maintain with sufficient Salaries in the University, where he shall be established, two Persons at least, well qualified to teach and instruct in writing and speaking*

*speaking the said Languages; which said Teachers should be under the Direction of the Professors respectively, and should be obliged to instruct gratis, in the modern Languages, 20 Scholars in each University, to be nominated by us; and each Scholar so nominated shall be obliged to learn two at least of the said Languages, &c.* Mr. Samuel Harris was accordingly nominated for Cambridge, and Mr. Gregory for Oxford, first Professors of Modern History.

Robert Earl of Oxford and Earl Mortimer died in May this Year, and was followed the next Month by Dr. Henry Sacheverel, who lately made so much Noise in the World.

There having been great Complaints concerning some Abuses in relation to the Masters in Chancery, which, though practised before, were now grown to an enormous Height, the Earl of Macclesfield thought fit to resign the Great Seal the Beginning of the Year 1725. He was afterwards impeached of High Crimes and Misdemeanors, in receiving exorbitant Sums of the Masters for their Admission, who often proved insufficient, to the great Detriment of the Suiters in that Court, &c. In the End he was fined 30,000*l.* And an Act passed in the next Session, for the Relief of the Suiters of the Court of Chancery. His Lordship was some Time a Prisoner in the Tower till he paid his Fine, and was succeeded in his High Office by Sir Peter King, Lord Chief-Justice of the Common-Pleas, who was created Lord King, Baron of Ockham. Whilst the Earl of Macclesfield's Affair was under Consideration, the famous Act was passed for regulating Elections in the City of London. And in the same Session Henry St. John, the late Lord

Viscount Bolingbroke, who having made his Peace with his Majesty was come over to England, was, upon his humble Petition, after some Debate, admitted to enjoy his Estates, and an Act passed for that Purpose; though he was not restored to his Title.

The same Year, 1725, the most Honourable Order of the Bath was revived, and 37 new Knights were installed. About which Time the Scotch Highlanders, Mackenzies, Mackdonalds, Grants of Glenmoriston, Mackleods, Chisholms, Stewarts, Camerons, Macphersons, Mackintoshs, Mac-Gregers, Gordons, Farquharsons, Mac-Farlans, and other Clans, were disarmed by General Wade.

Towards the End of the Year 1726 died, in the Castle of Athlen, where she had lived many Years, Sophia-Dorothy, who was married to his Majesty in 1682, and by whom he had Issue our late Sovereign, born October 30, 1683, and Dorothy-Sophia, late Queen of Prussia, who was born in 1687.

The long-depending Mediation of Great-Britain and France for composing the Differences between the Emperor and King of Spain, coming to nothing by the Spanish Court being extremely irritated against that of France for their sending back the Infanta to Spain, who had been espoused to the French King; and England not caring to act without France; their Imperial and Catholick Majesties came to an Agreement themselves, and concluded a Treaty at Vienna, which was deemed prejudicial to the Interest of Great-Britain, as the Ostend Company, which the Emperor had established, was to be supported by it, and as the Restitution of Gibraltar and Port-Mahon to the Spaniards seemed to be the Consequence of it; and



it was said, there were secret Articles in favour of the *Pretender*. However that was, this Treaty between the Emperor and *Spain* produced the famous Treaty of *Hanover*, concluded whilst his Majesty was there, *September 3, 1725*, between *Great-Britain, France, and Prussia*, though the last, in effect, soon deserted this Alliance, but the States-General afterwards acceded to it. This Treaty was designed to be a Balance to that between the Courts of *Vienna* and *Madrid*. These counter Alliances put *Europe* again in a Flame: And the Consequence was, that, in 1726, three *British* Squadrons were fitted out; one sent to the *West-Indies* under the Command of Admiral *Hosier*, where it lay a great while, to block up the *Spanish* Plate-Fleet; another to the Coast of *Spain*, under Sir *John Jennings*; and the third into the *Baltick*, commanded by Sir *Charles Wager*, to hinder the *Czarina* from attacking the King of *Sweden*, who was upon the Point of acceding to the *Hanover* Treaty, as he did soon after. Another Squadron was sent thither the following Year, under Sir *John Norris*, for the same Purpose; when Sir *Charles Wager* was with that on the Coast of *Spain*. *M. de Palm*, the Imperial Resident here, having presented to his Majesty an insolent Memorial, which he as insolently printed and dispersed, wherein he asserted, that the offensive Alliance mentioned by his Majesty in his Speech to his Parliament, when speaking of the *Vienna* Treaty, as likewise the secret Articles he mentioned concerning the *Pretender*, were absolutely without Foundation, was ordered forthwith to leave the Kingdom: And the Parliament, in an Address, expressed their Indignation at this Affront offered to his Majesty. Finally, in

the Beginning of the Year 1727, the *Spaniards* laid Siege to *Gibraltar*, which, though it was suspended, upon Preliminary Articles for a general Pacification being signed, was not raised till some Time after the King's Death.

The great Sir *Isaac Newton*, Master of his Majesty's Mint, and President of the *Royal Society*, the most celebrated Mathematician and Astronomer that the World ever knew, departed this Life on *March 20, 1726-7*, in the 85th Year of his Age. He was interred in *Westminster-Abbey*, where there is a noble Monument erected to his Memory.

The Parliament, which met on *January 17*, was prorogued on the 15th of *May*. On the last Day of that Month, his Majesty in Council declared his Intention of going abroad for a short Time, and appointed Lords Justices for the Administration of the Government during his Absence. Accordingly, he set out from *St. James's*, on *June 3*, and proceeding to *Greenwich*, embarked there on board the *Carolina* Yacht, accompanied by the Earl of *Ilay* and the Lord Viscount *Townshend* in another Yacht. Coming to *Gravesend*, they staid there till *Monday* the 5th, when the Wind being fair, they got under Sail; and arriving the next Day at *Gravendael*, his Majesty went on board the *States* Yacht, and landed, the 7th, at *Vaert*, where he lay that Night. From thence proceeding on his Journey for *Hanover*, attended by the *States* Guards through the Territories of the Republick, he arrived on the 9th at *Delden*, between 11 and 12 at Night, seemingly in good Health. Here he supped pretty heartily, and eat Part of a Melon, which his Stomach seemed not to have well digested; for setting out at Three the next Morn-

ing, he had not travelled far before he was troubled with some Gripings of the Cholick. Being come to *Linden*, he could eat nothing at Dinner; upon which it was judged adviseable that he should be bled. His Majesty being desirous to reach his own Dominions, travelled on, though his Attendants advised him to rest at *Linden*. As he passed along, he fell into a Kind of lethargick Dozing in his Coach; and his

Illness increasing, after he arrived, about Ten at Night, at his Brother the Duke of *York's* Palace at *Osna-burgh*, about One the next Morning, *June 11, 1727*, this great and magnanimous Prince expired there in the 68th Year of his Age, and 13th of his Reign, leaving the Imperial Crown of these Realms, as well as his Electoral Dominions, to his only Son the Prince of *Wales*, our late most gracious Sovereign, King **GEORGE II.**







*C. Mosley Sc.*

GEORGE II. 1727—1760.

**H**IS late Majesty's Decease was not known in *England* till three or four Days after it happened : But on the 14th of *June* a Messenger arrived Express, with the melancholy Advice, to Sir Robert Walpole, who was then at his House at *Chelsea*. He immediately waited upon the Prince and Princess of *Wales*, at *Richmond*, with the important Intelligence ; and they thereupon came to *Leicester-House*, where they had for some Time kept their Court. They were received there by many Lords of the Privy-Council and Persons of Quality and Distinction, who drew up and signed an Instrument for proclaiming his Royal Highness King of these Realms ; and the Ceremony of the Proclamation was performed the next Morning, viz. on *Thursday, June 15*, at the usual Places, and with all the accustomed Solemnities. His Majesty in the Interim caused all the Lords, and others of his late Majesty's Privy-

Council, to be sworn of his Privy-Council ; and in his Declaration he said, *The Religion, Laws, and Liberties of the Kingdom, are most dear to me ; and the Preservation of the Constitution in Church and State, as it is now happily established, shall be my first, and always my chief Care.* On the Evening of the 14th, his Majesty took and subscribed the Oath relating to the Security of the Church of *Scotland*, according to the Forms prescribed by the Laws of *Scotland*. On the 15th, the Earl of *Scarborough* was sworn of the Privy-Council, and appointed Master of the Horse to his Majesty. The next Day the Court of Lord Mayor and Aldermen of the City of *London* waited on the King and Queen with their Compliments of Condolence on the Death of his late Majesty, and Congratulation upon his Majesty's Accession to the Crown ; which Example was soon after followed by most of the Cities, Towns, &c. in the three King-

doms, and the Plantations. On the 19th, his Majesty was proclaimed with great Solemnity at *Edinburgh* and *Dublin*.

The Parliament, agreeable to the Royal Proclamation, met on the 27th, and the Session was opened by a most gracious Speech from the Throne, delivered from his Majesty's own Mouth; wherein he told them, *he was persuaded they all shared with him in his Grief and Affliction for the Death of his late Royal Father; that it should be his constant Care to preserve the Constitution in Church and State inviolable in all its Parts, and to secure to all his Subjects the full Enjoyment of their Religious and Civil Rights, &c.* The principal Business of this short Session was the Settlement of the Civil-List Revenue, and of a Revenue upon the Queen, in Case she survived his Majesty. After some Debate the Commons came unanimously to the following Resolutions upon the first Head, *viz.* 1. *That, towards the Supply granted to his Majesty for the Support of his Majesty's Household, the same Revenues which were payable to his late Majesty, during his Life, be granted and continued to his present Majesty, during his Life.* 2. *That the said Revenue be continued from the Death of his late Majesty.* Upon the second Head they resolved, 1. *That a Provision be made for the Queen, in case she should survive his Majesty; of 100,000l. per Ann. during her Life; together with his Majesty's Palace of Somerset-House, and the Lodge and Lands at Richmond Old Park.* 2. *That his Majesty be enabled to charge the said 100,000l. per Ann. on all, or any of the Duties and Revenues for the better Support of his Majesty's Household, &c. which shall subsist after his Majesty's Demise.* Pursuant to these Resolutions, Bills were brought in

and passed both Houses, and received the Royal Assent, *July 17*, as also an Act to enable his Majesty to be Governor of the South-Sea Company; and an Act for continuing the Imprisonment of Robert Blackburne and others for the Assassination-Plot against King William. Afterwards his Majesty made a most gracious Speech to both Houses, and prorogued the Parliament, which was soon after, on *August 5*, dissolved by Proclamation.

On the 11th of October, their Majesties Coronation was performed with great Splendour and Solemnity; the Bishop of Oxford preached the Coronation Sermon, and the Day was celebrated in every Part of his Majesty's Dominions with the most extraordinary Rejoicings. On the 30th, being Lord Mayor's Day, as well as the King's Birth-Day, conformable to an humble Invitation from the City, their Majesties, the Prince's Royal and Princess Carolina, accompanied by the great Officers of State, &c. dined with the Lord Mayor, at Guildhall, were present at a Ball, and returned to St. James's in the same State with which they entered the City, at 11 o'Clock at Night.

On January 23, 1728, the new Parliament met at Westminster, and unanimously chose for their Speaker, Arthur Onslow, Esq; one of the Members for the County of Surry. On the 27th, his Majesty opened the Session with a most gracious Speech to both Houses, wherein he informed them of Preliminary Articles being signed and accepted, and the Ratifications thereof exchanged with the Emperor; but that, on the Part of Spain, there had been a Refusal to execute some of the most material Points contained in them; but he hoped all the Difficulties which had retarded the Execution of the Preliminaries,

and



and the Opening of the Congress, would soon be entirely removed: 15,000 Seamen were voted for Sea Service, for 1728, and 22,955 Men for Guards and Garrisons. Some Heats arose in the House of Commons, in this Session, about the Application of Part of the publick Money, &c.

On the 23d of *April*, his Majesty set out for *Newmarket*, and arrived there on the Evening of the same Day, where, next Day, he was waited on by the University of *Cambridge*, with Dr. *Lambert*, their Vice-Chancellor, at their Head, who invited him to Dinner, which Invitation his Majesty accepted, and went to *Cambridge* the next Morning. At a small Distance from the Town, his Majesty was met by the Mayor and Corporation, who conducted him through it to the *Regent-walk*, where he was received by the Duke of *Somerset*, Chancellor of the University, attended by the whole Body of the University, in their proper Robes and Habits: At the *Senate-House*, he ordered several Degrees to be conferred, at *King's College Chapel* he heard divine Service, and dined at *Trinity College* with great Magnificence. His Majesty made a Present of 2000*l.* to the Univerity, and returned in the Evening to *Newmarket*, from whence he arrived at *St. James's* on the 27th.

On *May* 28, his Majesty, after a Speech to both Houses, put an End to the Session of Parliament.

At the Beginning of *July*, the *Sieur Como*, Agent from the Duke of *Parma*, was ordered to depart the Kingdom in two Days; his Master having thought fit to invite the *Pretender* to the Place of his Residence, and to receive him with the Honours due to the King of *Great-Britain*. In *August*, several Persons were taken into Custody,

and some of them sentenced to stand on the Pillory, and to be committed to Bridewell, to hard Labour, on Account of printing and publishing *Mist's Journal of August* 24, which, under Colour of relating the Affairs of the *Persian Empire*, was deemed to contain very gross and scandalous Reflections upon the Government, and the happy Establishment. *Edward Farley*, Printer of the *Exeter Journal*, for reprinting *Mist's Journal*, had a Bill of Indictment found against him for High-Treason; but upon a Petition to the Queen, after lying near a Year in Prison, without Bail or Mainprize, he obtained a *Noli prosequi*, and was cleared thereon in open Court.

His Serene Highness *Ernest-Augustus*, Prince of *Brunswick-Luneburgh*, Bishop of *Osnaburgh*, Duke of *York*, &c. Brother of his late Majesty, departed this Life, on *August* 3, at his Palace at *Osnaburgh*.

The Nation reaped great Satisfaction, in the Beginning of *December* following, by the sudden and unexpected Arrival, in *England*, of his Royal Highness *Frederick Prince of Wales*, who set out from *Herenhausen*, near *Hanover*, on *November* 24, at Three in the Morning, attended by the *Marquess de la Forest*, his Lord Chamberlain, and Lieutenant-Colonel *Delaunay*, of the *Hanoverian Guards*, who had been sent by his Majesty, they being then at the *English Court*, to bring over his Royal Highness. The *Marquess* passed for an English Gentleman, named *Compton*, and the Prince for his Son: Arriving in this Manner, *incognito*, at *Helweetfluy*, they went on board the *Dispatch Packet*, then ready to sail for *Warwick*, where his Royal Highness arrived, *December* 3, lodged at *Worcester* that Night, came to *London*

Chapel the next Day, at about Seven in the Evening, and proceeded thence very privately, in a Hackney Coach to *St. James's*. The next Day there was a brilliant and numerous Court, to congratulate his Royal-Highness on his safe Arrival, who was soon after addressed on the same Occasion from all Parts of the Kingdom. In the Course of this Year died Mrs. *Clarke*, Daughter of the celebrated *Milton*, who, after having lived very obscurely, with her Son-in-Law, a poor Weaver in *Spiritual-Fields*, being found out, received many Benefactions from the Nobility and Gentry; Dr. *John Woodward*, Professor of Phythick, at *Gresham College*; Dr. *Bray*, the Procurer of the Charter of the Society for propagating the Gospel in foreign Parts, &c. &c.

On the 21st of *January*, 1729, both Houses of Parliament met, and the Sessions was opened by a Speech from the Throne; wherein his Majesty informed them, that the Execution of the Preliminary Articles, and the Opening the Congress at *Soissons*, was a Foundation for the Hope of a speedy Pacification; but the various and extensive Views, and the settling and reconciling the various Interests and Pretensions of so many different Powers, appeared to be a Work of so much Time and Difficulty, that the Project of a provisional Treaty was thought of, as a proper Expedient; which being concerted and negotiated, among the Ministers of the principal Powers, Parties to the Treaties of *Hanover* and *Vienna*, was approved by him, and his Allies, not without reasonable Hopes of the Concurrence of the Imperial Court, and the Court of *Madrid*; but no definitive Answer being yet returned by either of them, nor the Project of the provisional Treaty either accepted or rejected, the Fate

of *Europe* was still held in Suspence, &c. This Session was remarkable for a Measure that was very necessary at this Time, which was the Appointment of a Committee to enquire into the State of the Gaols of this Kingdom, chiefly promoted by *James Oglethorpe*, Esq; a Member of the House, who on a Visit to an ingenious Friend, then a Prisoner in the *Fleet*, being convinced that much Mal-treatment and Cruelty was inflicted on the unhappy Wretches in that Gaol, determined to use his utmost Efforts to get this crying Grievance redressed. Many humane Members concurring with him in this laudable Design, Mr. *Oglethorpe* made a Motion for appointing the Committee: By their Visitation of the *Fleet*, &c. what before seemed justly alarming, now rose into Circumstances of such complicated Guilt, as filled the Committee with Horror; whereupon the House came to several Resolutions, and committed *Huggins* and *Bambridge*, the late and present Wardens, with several of their Agents, close Prisoners to *Newgate*. A State of the *Fleet* Prison was published, which displayed a lamentable Scene of Cruelty and Barbarity. *Huggins* and *Bambridge* were tried for many Crimes and Misdemeanours, as well as for Murder, but were, unexpectedly, acquitted. One *Aston*, Farmer of, and Clerk to, the *Marshalsea*, was also tried for Murder, and acquitted. The Issue of the Whole was, that the Gaols were put under proper Regulations, and our unhappy FellowSubjects, beneath the Pressure of Misfortunes, delivered from the Gripe of Villains who had made a Practice of adding Misery, Torment, and Extortion, to Wretchedness. On the 25th of *March*, both Houses waited upon his Majesty with the following Resolution. Resolved, by the Lords Spiritual

and



and Temporal, and Commons in Parliament assembled, that they entirely rely on his Majesty, that he will, for maintaining the Honour, and securing the Trade of this Kingdom, take effectual Care, in the present Treaty, to preserve his undoubted Right to Gibraltar and the Island of Minorca. On May 14, his Majesty, after passing several salutary Bills, then ready for the Royal Assent, put an End to the Session with a most gracious Speech. On May 17, his Majesty set out on a Visit to his German Dominions, after having appointed his Royal Consort Regent in his Absence, and arrived at Hanover on the 24th.

In the Beginning of June, the Fleet at Spithead, under the Command of Sir Charles Wager, was joined by eleven Dutch Ships of War, a Bomb, and a Store-Ship, under Vice-Admiral Somersdyke. This Squadron was intended for the Coast of Spain, in case Affairs did not take a favourable Turn with that Court. About the same Time, the Lords Proprietors of South-Carolina surrendered their Right and Title to that Province, to the Crown, in Consideration of the Sum of 20,000*l.* which was issued to them from the Exchequer, for the Purchase of their said Right.

On September 11, his Majesty returned from Germany, landing at Margate on the Forenoon of that Day, and arrived at Kensington about Ten at Night, in perfect Health.

Affairs with Spain having taken a happy Turn, the Dutch Squadron returned to Holland in the Beginning of October, and the English Fleet separated soon after. On the 9th of November, New Style, a Treaty was concluded at Seville, between the Crowns of Great-Britain, France, and Spain, to which the States-General, soon after, acceded. By this

Treaty the contracting Powers guaranteed, reciprocally, the Kingdoms, States, &c. under their Obedience, in what Parts of the World soever situated, as also the Rights and Privileges of their Commerce; and Commissaries were to be nominated, on the Part of their Britannick and Catholic Majesties, to assemble at the Court of Spain, to examine and decide what concerned the Ships and Effects taken at Sea, on either Side, &c. The Introduction of Garrisons into Leghorn, Porto Ferrajo, Parma and Placentia, to the Number of 6000 Men, of the Spanish Troops, was to be effected immediately, in order to secure to the Infant Don Carlos the Succession to the States of Tuscany, Parma, and Placentia: And the contracting Powers engaged to establish and maintain the said Infant in the Possession and Enjoyment of those States, when he should once be settled there, declaring themselves Guarantees, for ever, of the Right, &c. of the said Infant, and of his Successors, to the said States. In this Year died Thomas Earl of Coningsby; Sir Richard Steele, well known by his celebrated and elegant Writings; Peter Le Neve, Norroy King at Arms, a learned Herald; Mr. Abel Boyer, Author of the French Dictionary, &c. the learned Anthony Collins, &c. &c. On January 13, 1730, his Majesty opened the Session of Parliament with a most gracious Speech; in which he told them, that we had, at length, concluded an absolute Peace with the Crown of Spain. In this Session the Pension Bill was passed by the Commons, but thrown out in the House of Lords. There were also great Debates in the House of Commons, relating to some Works carrying on at Dunkirk,

for the Repair of the Harbour, &c. Complaint of which was made to the *French Court*, which gave Orders to demolish the said Works, or any that were erected contrary to the Treaty of *Utrecht*. On May 15, his Majesty made a Speech from the Throne, and the Parliament was prorogued. The same Day, the Lord Viscount *Townshend* resigned the Seals, as one of his Majesty's Principal Secretaries of State, and his Commission of Lord Lieutenant of *Norfolk*; Lord *Trevor* was appointed President of the Council; Lord *Wilmington* Keeper of the Privy-Seal, and *Henry Pelham*, Esq; Pay-Master of the Forces. There were also several other Removes and Promotions. Near this Period died, of the Small Pox, *Peter II.* the young Czar of *Muscovy*, and was succeeded by *Anne Ducheß-Dowager* of *Courland*, Daughter of *John* Half-Brother of *Peter the Great*. The noted Colonel *Francis Charteris* received Sentence of Death, at the *Old-Bailey*, for a Rape committed on the Body of *Anne Bond*, his Servant Maid; but his Majesty was pleased to grant him a Pardon, some favourable Circumstances appearing in his Case.

On April 30, the Common Council of the City of *London* agreed, that all the Fines arising from those Persons that were nominated for Sheriffs, should be appropriated for building a Mansion-House for the Lord Mayors of that City.

In June seven *Indian* Chiefs of the *Cherokee* Nation, brought over by Sir *Alexander Cumming*, in the *Fox* Man of War, Captain *Arnold*, were introduced to the Royal Family at *Windſor*. They were afterwards carried to see the *Tower*, *Greenwich* Hospital, and other Places, where they were received and en-

tertained with great Respect. After having agreed to Articles of Peace and Commerce with the *English*, before the Lords of Trade and Plantations, they embarked for *Carolina*, in *October*, greatly pleased with their Reception and Treatment in *England*.

On the 9th of July, *St. Bartholomew's* Hospital being taken down, in order to be rebuilt, the Foundation Stone of the new Edifice was laid by Sir *Richard Brocas*, Lord Mayor.

In August, *Victor Amadeus*, King of *Sardinia*, abdicated his Dominions, in favour of his Son, *Charles Emanuel*, the present King: And in the Beginning of *October*, *Frederick IV.* King of *Denmark* and *Norway*, deceased, in the 60th Year of his Age, and was succeeded by his Son *Christian VI.* The Affairs of *Europe* still continued, notwithstanding the late Treaty of *Seville*, in great Uncertainty. The Emperor was obstinately bent against the Introduction of *Spanish* Troops into *Italy*, and insisted on neutral Troops, and made great warlike Preparations to maintain the Rights of the Empire in that Country. *Spain*, on the other hand, was impatient for the Execution of the Article relating to the *Spanish* Garrisons and *Don Carlos*, and pressed the Allies closely on that Head, and, in Resentment at their Delay, detained the Effects of the *Flotilla*. All these Disputes, however, ended in the Treaty of *Vienna*, next Year, and putting the favourite *Spanish* Scheme with regard to *Italy*, into Execution.

On January 21, 1731, the Parliament met; and amongst other Acts, the Act, that all Proceedings in Courts of Justice should be in the *English Language*, was passed. On the 7th of May, the Parliament was prorogued, after having made the necessary



necessary Provisions for the publick Service.

On the 4th of *June*, this Year, the Town of *Blandford*, in *Dorsetshire*, was, except a few Houses, consumed by Fire; and the very next Day, another dreadful Fire broke out at *Tiverton* in *Devonshire*, which consumed 200 Houses. In *July*, the Name of *William Pulteney*, Esq; was struck out of the List of Privy-Counsellors, by his Majesty's Command, and he was also ordered to be put out of all the Commissions of Peace, all on account of his being the supposed Author of some Writings against the Measures of the Court. On the 14th of the same Month, Sir *Charles Wager*, with a Fleet of twelve capital Ships, sailed from *Spithead*. At the Beginning of *August* he entered the Bay of *Cadiz*, and being united with the *Spanish* Squadron, arrived, in *October*, at *Leghorn*, where they landed the *Spanish* Troops; and soon after, Don *Carlos* arrived in *Italy*. Sir *Charles* with his Fleet returned to *Spithead* in *December*. About the Middle of *October*, the Duke of *Lorraine* (late Emperor of *Germany*) arrived in *England*, incog; and after having all the Honours and Respects shewn him due to his Rank, returned to the Continent on the 8th of *December*. *Charles Boyle*, Lord *Orrery*, Inventor of that useful Machine, the *Orrery*, died this Year. On *January* 13, 1732, the Parliament met, whom his Majesty acquainted that his Expectations of seeing the Tranquillity of *Europe* perfectly restored, were now fully answered. The two principal Affairs that came before the House this Session were those of the *Charitable Corporation*, and the fraudulent Sale of the *Derwentwater* Estate. In the former, it being made appear to the House, that the said Corpo-

ration had been defrauded of the greatest Part of their Capital, by their Managers, amounting to several hundred thousand Pounds, and that the Proprietors were become great Sufferers thereby, and many of them reduced to the utmost Distress, Mr. *Robinson*, Member for *Great Marlow*, Sir *Robert Sutton*, and Sir *Archibald Grant*, were expelled the House of Commons, and the Estates and Effects of all the Managers were subjected to the Relief of the Sufferers. In the latter, *Dennis Bond*, Esq; and Mr. Serjeant *Birch*, were expelled the House, as being guilty of a most notorious Breach of Trust, &c. as Commissioners and Trustees of the forfeited Estates. Sir *John Eyles*, for Irregularity, &c. was reprimanded, in his Place, by the Speaker; and the Thanks of the House were given to Lord Viscount *Gage*, for his Detection of this fraudulent Sale, and the Contracts for the said Sale were made void. On the 1st of *June* the Parliament broke up, and soon after his Majesty set out for *Hanover*, and returned from thence at the latter End of *September*. In this Year a Charter was granted for the Establishment of the Colony of *Georgia*, and a Corporation was established for the Relief of the poor Widows of Sea Officers. The *Spaniards* also took *Oran* from the *Moors*. At the latter End of the Year, *Victor Amadeus*, late King of *Sardinia*, after several fruitless Attempts to resume his abdicated Crown, departed this Life.

The Parliament met, on *January* 16, 1733. The most important Affair that came before them, was the famous *Excise Scheme*, which was a Project for bringing Tobacco and Wines under the Laws of Excise, and thereby preventing Frauds in the Revenue. This Attempt raised

raised great Discontent long before it was proposed to the House, whilst it was depending, and afterwards; and innumerable Pamphlets and Papers were published for and against the Measure, which raised a great Clamour against the Ministry. Petitions against any new Excise, or the Extension of the Excise Laws, were presented; and the City of London, and many other Places, delivered Instructions to their Members to bespeak their Opposition. However a Motion was made in a Committee of the whole House, on March 14, which occasioned a very long and warm Debate; and Westminster-Hall, and all the Avenues of the House, were crowded with People. The Question was carried in the Committee by a Majority of 61, there being 471 Members in the House. It was afterwards, also carried in the House, 249 against 189, and a Bill was ordered to be brought in accordingly. It was brought in, April 4, and read a first Time, and ordered to be read a second Time, on the 11th. But the Alarm was now spread to the most distant Parts of the Nation; the Cry was, *Liberty and Property and no Excise!* and on April 10, the Sheriffs, Aldermen and Commons of London, in a Procession of 200 Coaches, attended by great Crowds on Foot, went to Westminster Hall, with a Petition, humbly praying to be heard by Council, against the Bill. The Question for allowing them to be heard by their Council, was carried in the Negative, by so small a Majority as 17. Next Day Petitions came from Coventry and Nottingham against the Bill; and the Order of the Day being read for its being read a second Time, instead of reading it, Sir Robert Walpole made a Motion, that the Bill should be read a second Time, on

the 12th of June next; which was agreed to, *nem. con.* and so there was an end of this famous Scheme, the Fate of which caused great Rejoicings both in Town and Country. On the 13th of June, his Majesty went to the House and put an End to the Session, after having passed an Act for giving 80,000*l.* to the Princess Royal for her Portion, in Marriage to the Prince of Orange. About that Time, the Earl of Chesterfield, Lord Clinton, the Earl of Stair, the Earls of Burlington and Marchmont, Lord Cobham, the Dukes of Bolton and Montrose, resigned the several great Posts they held of his Majesty, being greatly dissatisfied with the Conduct of the Ministry. On the 7th of November, his Serene Highness the Prince of Orange arrived, in the *Fubbs Yacht*, at Greenwich, proceeded in one of the King's Barges to the Tower, and from thence, in one of his Majesty's Coaches, to Somerset-House, and, the next Day, was received by the Royal Family with the greatest Respect. Soon after, his Royal Highness was taken very ill, which retarded his Marriage for some Time. At the Beginning of this Year, a Disorder, much like a Cold, attacked all Sorts of People, and proved fatal to many, particularly those in Years; so that, in one Week, the last in January, the weekly Bills were at the amazing Height of 1588, being more, by 600, than had died in any one Week since the great Plague. A horrid Murder was committed on one Mrs. Duncombe, Elizabeth Harriſon, her Companion, and the Maid Servant, in Tanfield Court in the Temple, and the Chambers robbed; for which Sarah Malcolm, a Chairwoman, who appeared to be the sole Perpetrator of the bloody Act, was executed near the Place where the Murder was committed.



mitted. The Broad Pieces of 25s. and 23s. were called in this Year. In the Beginning of *February*, *Augustus*, King of *Poland*, Elector of *Saxony*, departed this Life, which Event was productive of a War; for the King of *France* concerted Measures to raise his Father-in-Law, King *Stanislaus*, once more, to that Throne, whilst the *Russians*, at all Events, resolved to support the Interests of *Augustus*, Elector of *Saxony*, Son of the late King. In this Resolution they were joined by the Emperor; and the *Russians* entered *Poland*, with a formidable Army, in the Month of *August*. However, *Stanislaus*, who had come privately into *Poland*, was elected King by the Intrigues of the Primate, but was soon obliged to fly out of the Kingdom; and in *October*, *Augustus* was chosen and proclaimed King; and the *Saxon* Troops, thereupon, also entered *Poland*. Meanwhile, the Kings of *France*, *Spain*, and *Sardinia*, made War upon the Emperor, both in *Germany* and *Italy*. The *French* Army, commanded by the Duke of *Berwick*, passed the *Rhine*, and besieged and took Fort *Kehl*; and the Army of the Confederates, in *Italy*, took *Tortona*, *Novara*, *Pavia*, *Milan*, and some other Places, before the Conclusion of the Year. In vain the Emperor demanded, nay, implored the Assistance of the Maritime Powers; for the *Dutch* soon entered into a Neutrality with *France*, and we, in concert with the States, employed ourselves in Mediation, instead of affording the desired Assistance. The famous Dr. *Tindal*, Author of *Christianity as old as the Creation*, a Book which made a great Noise, but which has been learnedly and solidly refuted, to the great Credit of Revelation, died this Year.

On *January* 17, 1734, the Par-

liament met, and the Session was opened with a Speech from the Throne, as usual; in which his Majesty observed, *That the War which was now carried on against the Emperor, by France, Spain, and Sardinia, was become the Object of the Care and Attention of all Europe; and though he was no way engaged in it, and had had no Part, except by his good Offices, in these Transactions which had been declared to be the principal Causes and Motives of it, he could not sit regardless of the present Events, or be unconcerned for the future Consequences of a War undertaken and supported by so powerful an Alliance.* Great Debates arose in this Session, on a Bill, for preventing the Officers of the Army from being deprived of their Commissions, otherwise than by a Court-Martial, &c. but it did not pass either House; also about the Place-Bill, and many other contested Points. On *April* 16, his Majesty gave the Royal Assent to an Act for settling 5000 *l.* per Ann. on the Princess Royal for her Life, an Act for preventing the infamous Practice of Stock-jobbing, and an Act for naturalizing the Prince of Orange; after which he made a most gracious Speech to both Houses, and prorogued the Parliament, which two Days after was dissolved. In *February*, the Earl of *Scarborough* resigned his Place of Master of the Horse. On *March* 14, the Nuptials of his Serene Highness the Prince of Orange with the Princess Royal were celebrated with great Magnificence, which occasioned great Rejoicings both in Town and Country, and Addresses of Congratulation from all Parts, to their Majesties and the Prince and Princess, it being a Match very agreeable to the Nation in general. On *April* the 22d, the Prince and Princess embarked in the *Fubbs* Yacht for *Holland*;

*Holland*; and soon after their Arrival, his Serene Highness set out to make the Campaign, under Prince *Eugene*, on the *Rhine*; and during his Absence the Princess came to her Father's Court, and resided here until the Prince, her Consort, returned from the Imperial Army, when she went to meet him. Great Heats happened at the general Elections for Members to the new Parliament, particularly in the Choice of sixteen Peers for *Scotland*; upon which several Peers entered their Protest, and a Petition was presented at the Meeting of the new Parliament; which occasioned long and warm Debates. The War in 1734, was carried on by the Confederates, with great Success, against the Emperor. Two most bloody Battles, at *Parma* and *Gustalla*, were fought with doubtful Success. Don *Carlos* took Possession of *Naples*, and was declared King thereof, and of *Sicily*, which last was soon reduced also to his Obedience. Upon the *Rhine* the French took *Philipsburgh*, before which their General, the Duke of *Berwick*, natural Son of *James II.* lost his Life, in the Trenches. *Dantzick* was reduced to the Obedience of King *Augustus*, after a grievous Siege, by the *Russian Army*. In this Year died the famous Critick, Mr. *John Dennis*, the last Classick Wit of *Charles the Second's* Reign; Sir *James Thornhill*, the celebrated History Painter; *Peter Lord King*, late Lord Chancellor of *Great-Britain*, Dr. *Thomas Fuller*, an excellent Physician; and *John Viscount Barrington*, of the Kingdom of *Ireland*, who was expelled the House of Commons, in the late Reign, for his Concern in the *Harbour Lottery*.

On *January 14, 1735*, the new Parliament met, and again made choice of Mr. *Ogborne* for their

Speaker. On the 23d, his Majesty opened the Session with a most gracious Speech from the Throne, in which he said, *I have concurred in a Resolution taken by the States-General, to employ, without Loss of Time, our joint and earnest Instances to bring Matters to a speedy and happy Accommodation* (between the Powers at War) *before we should come to a Determination upon the Succours demanded by the Emperor, &c.* Thirty thousand Men were voted for Sea Service, and 25,744 for Land Service, after great Debates. On *May 15*, his Majesty put an End to the Session, and two Days after set out for his *German Dominions*, having appointed the Queen Regent, from whence he did not return until *October 26* following. In that Month, the Hereditary Prince of *Modena* arrived in *England*, and during his Stay had great Honours shewn him at Court and elsewhere. Sir *John Norris* was sent, this Year, with a potent Fleet to the Coasts of *Portugal*, to guard them from Insults, and secure the *Brazil Fleet* from the *Spaniards*, a Difference having arisen between the Courts of *Spain* and *Portugal*, occasioned by the Servants of the *Portuguese Ambassador* at *Madrid* rescuing a Criminal from Justice, who was afterwards violently taken out of his House, and nineteen of his Servants made Prisoners. The Difference however was soon made up, and the Fleet returned home. The War now began to slacken both in *Germany* and *Italy*; and towards the Close of the Year, a Suspension of Arms was agreed to; and the next Year a Treaty of Peace was signed by all the belligerent Powers, in which, amongst other Articles, it was agreed that *France* should restore all the Places taken from the Empire; the Duchy of *Tuscany* should be given to the Duke of *Lorraine*,



*Lorrain*, after the Death of the Grand Duke, at which Time *Lorrain* was to be put into the Hands of his Most Christian Majesty, and remain annexed to the *French* Monarchy; King *Stanislaus* should enjoy all the Honours of a crowned Head, be acknowledged King of *Poland*, and then resign that Kingdom, voluntarily, in favour of King *Augustus*, who was to restore all *Stanislaus's* Estates in *Poland*; *Stanislaus* was to have the immediate Possession of the Duchies of *Lorrain* and *Barr*; and Don *Carlos* should be acknowledged King of *Naples* and *Sicily*.

On *January* 15, 1736, his Majesty opened the Session of Parliament with a Speech, in which he felicitated both Houses on the happy Turn Affairs had taken in *Europe*. The Act of *James I.* against Conjurat[i]on and Witchcraft was repealed in this Session; and the famous Act for laying a Duty upon the Retailers of Spirituous Liquors, and for licens[ing] the Retailers thereof, commonly called the *Gin Act*, was passed into a Law, after long and warm Debates. That Act took place on *September* 29, when a double Guard mounted at *Kensington*, the Guards at *St. James's* and *Whitehall* were reinforced, a Guard was placed at the *Rolls*, (Sir *Joseph Jekyll*, then Master of the *Rolls*, having been the principal Promoter of the Bill) a Detachment of *Life-Guards* and *Horse-Grenadier-Guards* paraded in *Covent-Garden*, and other Methods were taken to suppress any Tumult that might happen on that Account; but, contrary to Expectation, every Thing remained very quiet and tranquil. On the 20th of *May*, his Majesty, after passing the Act for building a Bridge across the *Thames* at *Westminster*, the *Smuggling Act*, and some others, put an End to the

Session. On the 17th of *April*, his Royal Highness the Prince of *Wales* was married to her Serene Highness *Augusta*, Princess of *Saxe-Gotha*, who arrived from *Germany* two Days before, which was followed by extraordinary Rejoicings, and Congratulations from both Houses of Parliament, the City, the two Universities, &c. &c. His Majesty went again to *Hanover* this Year; and I shall observe, once for all, that he made many repeated Visits to his *German* Dominions, until some Time after the Breaking out of the late War, when it was become dangerous to his Royal Person, the Flames thereof having spread into the Electorate of *Hanover*. There was a great Spring-Tide on the 16th of *February*, which flowed so high as to exceed, by a Foot and a Half, all that had been known in the Memory of Man. Persons were carried in Boats out of *Westminster-Hall*, which plied both there, and in the Palace-Yards. The Cellars in *Westminster* were filled with Water; the *Privy-Garden* and Parade in *St. James's* Park were overflowed; as was, in several Places, *Tower-Wharf*; and the Cellars and Offices, both above and below Bridge, upon the Banks of the River, were full of Water. About the same Time the Duke of *Lorrain* (late Emperor of *Germany*) was married to the eldest Arch-Duchess, now Empress-Queen of *Hungary* and *Bohemia*. On the 10th of *April*, that renowned General, Prince *Eugene* of *Savoy*, departed this Life, in the 73d Year of his Age. In *July* a most daring Insult was committed, whilst the Courts were sitting, in *Westminster-Hall*: The *Gin Act*, *Mortmain Act*, *Westminster-Bridge* and *Smugglers Acts*, and the Act for borrowing 600,000*l.* from the Sinking-Fund, inclosed in

in a Brown-paper Parcel, were blown up with Gunpowder, and partly burnt; for which Fast, one *Nixon*, a Nonjuring Clergyman, was apprehended, and convicted of it, sentenced to pay 200 Marks, to be imprisoned for five Years, to give Security for his good Behaviour for five Years afterwards, and to be brought up to the several Courts, then sitting, with a Label round his Head, denoting his Crime. At the latter End of *July*, there were many Riots and Mobs, occasioned by the *Irish* Artists underworking the *English* in *Spital-Fields*, &c. which were not put an End to without the Interposition of the Civil Power, backed by Parties of the Horse and Foot Guards, and Trained-Bands. But the most extraordinary Affair this Year, and which drew very serious Consequences after it, was that of Captain *Porteous*, Commander of the City-Guard of *Edinburgh*; who assisting, with his Men, at the Execution of a Criminal, fired on the Spectators, upon some Boys flinging Stones, &c. at the Executioner, as he was cutting down the Criminal; whereby several Persons were killed, and others wounded; and all this without the Orders of the Magistrates attending. Hereupon *Porteous* was committed to Prison, tried and sentenced to Death, which was to be put in Execution on *September 8*. But upon his Petition to the Queen, then Regent, his Sentence was respited for six Weeks, which Respite arrived at *Edinburgh* on the 2d of *September*. This occasioned a most tragical Catastrophe; for on the 7th, a well-conducted Party of Men entered the City of *Edinburgh*, about Ten at Night, and by Surprise seized all the Fire-Arms, &c. belonging to the City-Guard, locked up the City-Gates, beat an Alarm, burnt the Door of the Prison where *Porteous*

was confined, after endeavouring in vain to force it open, forced him from his Apartment, and hanged him upon a Sign-Post, near the *Grass-Market*. It was no Wonder if, from the Boldness, Secrecy and Success of this Enterprize, People were apt to believe that Persons of more than vulgar Rank were concerned in it; especially as, after the Execution was over, they left the Arms and Drums on the Spot, and, offering no further Violence, quietly departed. The Censure of Parliament, however, fell upon the City, and Lord Provost of *Edinburgh*, on the former a Fine of 200*l.* was laid, and the latter was incapacitated from holding any Office of Magistracy at *Edinburgh*, or elsewhere in *Great-Britain*; and Rewards were appointed for the Discovery of any of the Parties concerned in the Murder of *Porteous*, and punishing those who should knowingly conceal them: Notwithstanding all this, I do not remember any of them were ever discovered or apprehended for that Fact.

The Parliament met on *February 1*, 1737, and the Session was opened by Commission, his Majesty being indisposed; and the Lord Chancellor, by his Command, made a Speech to both Houses. In this Session there were long Debates on a Motion for an Address to his Majesty, to settle 100,000 *l.* per *Ann.* on his Royal Highness the Prince of *Wales*, in the same Manner his Majesty enjoyed it before his happy Accession; but a Negative was put upon the Question, in both Houses, in the Lords by a Majority of 63, and in the Commons by a Majority of 30, so that the Court-Party prevailed, but several Lords entered their Protests: The Act to prevent Stockjobbing, that for settling a Dowry of 50,000*l.* on the Princess of *Wales*, &c. &c. received



received the Royal Assent this Session, and on *June 21* his Majesty put an End thereto. The Resident from *Venice* had, in the Interim, Notice given him to leave the Town in three Days, and the Kingdom in eight, for the Insult offered to his Majesty's Crown and Dignity, by the Doge and Senate of *Venice*, in the great Honours shewn to the Pretender's Son, when in that City. At the Beginning of *July*, the great Duke of *Tuscany* deceased, by whose Death the Duke of *Lorrain* came to the actual Possession of the Dukedom of *Tuscany*; and the Annuity of 4,500,000 Livres, paid him by *France*, agreeable to Treaty, till this Event happened, ceased. In the Night, between the last Day of *July* and the first of *August*, her Royal Highness the Princess of *Wales* was safely delivered of a Princess, to the great Joy of the Nation, who was named *Augusta*; soon after which, an unhappy Breach happened between his Majesty and the Prince of *Wales*, which, in its Consequences, proved more than a mere Family Difference. All Persons who paid their Court to the Prince and Princess were not suffered to come into his Majesty's Presence, or any of his Palaces; the Guards were taken away from their Attendance on the Prince and his Consort; and, in short, all the Prince's Servants soon after joined the Opposition to the Measures of the Ministry. It may suffice, once for all, to recapitulate the rest of their Royal Highnesses Offspring, which are, 2. Prince *George*, (his present Most Sacred Majesty) born *June 4, 1738*; 3. Prince *Edward-Augustus*, (late Duke of *York*) born *March 25, 1739*; 4. Princess *Elizabeth-Caroline*, born *January 10, 1741*, since deceased; 5. Prince *William-Henry*, (now Duke of *Gloucester*) born *November 25, 1743*; 6. Prince *Henry-*

*Fredrick*, (now Duke of *Cumberland*) born *November 7, 1745*; 7. Princess *Louisa-Anne*, born *March 19, 1748-9*; 8. Prince *Fredrick-William*, born *May 24, 1750*, since deceased; 9. Princess *Caroline-Matilda*, born *July 2, 1751*.

In *October* a Deputation of the Merchants of *London* waited on his Majesty, at *Hampton-Court*, with a Petition on the Behalf of themselves and others trading to, and interested in, the *British* Colonies in *America*; setting forth, that the fair and lawful Trade to the *British* Plantations in *America* had been greatly interrupted, for many Years past, not only by their Ships being frequently stopped and searched, but also forcibly and arbitrarily seized on the High-Seas, by *Spanish* Ships fitted out to cruize under the plausible Pretence of guarding their own Coasts; that the Commanders thereof, with their Crews, have been inhumanly treated, and their Ships carried into some of the *Spanish* Ports, and there condemned, with their Cargoes, in manifest Violation of the Treaties subsisting between the two Crowns; &c. &c. and praying that his Majesty would be graciously pleased to procure them speedy and ample Satisfaction for the Losses they have sustained, &c. &c.

On *November 20*, at Seven o'Clock at Night, died, to the inexpressible Grief of his Majesty, the Royal Family, and the whole Nation, *Wilhelmina-Carolina*, Queen-Consort of *Great-Britain*, aged 54 Years 8 Months and 20 Days. And on *December 17*, her Remains were interred, with great Solemnity, in a new Vault, in *Henry the VIIIth's* Chapel, in *Westminster-Abbey*.

On *January 24, 1738*, his Majesty opened the Session of Parliament with a short Speech; and on *March 16*, the *West-India* Merchants, who had

had presented a Petition in relation to the *Spanish* Depredations some Days before, attended the House of Commons, to make good the Allegations in their said Petition, which had such an Effect, that on *May* 4, the House of Lords presented an humble Address to his Majesty, with strong Resolutions in Support of the undoubted Rights of the Nation to a free Navigation in *America*, and against the *Spanish* Depredations and Cruelties, and concluded with promising his Majesty, in case his powerful Instances for procuring Reparation and Satisfaction, and future Security to his injured Subjects, should fail of their due Effect on the Court of *Spain*, they would zealously and cheerfully concur in all such Measures as should become necessary for the Support of his Majesty's Honour, the Preservation of our Navigation and Commerce, &c. His Majesty, in Answer thereto, expressed his Sensibility of the Injuries sustained by his trading Subjects in *America*, and assured them of his Care to procure Satisfaction and Reparation for their Losses, and Security for their future Navigation, &c. &c. The Address of the House of Commons; and the King's Answer, were much to the same Effect. On *May* 20, his Majesty put an End to the Session by a most gracious Speech. Great Naval Preparations were made this Year, and Admiral *Haddock* sailed with a Squadron to the *Mediterranean*. About the Middle of *October* the Prince and Princess of *Wales* went to *Bath*, staid there near six Weeks, in which Time they paid a Visit to the City of *Bristol*, and where everywhere entertained with great Magnificence and Affection, and the utmost Joy and Satisfaction.

About the same Time a Charter passed the Great Seal, for establishing an Hospital, for the Maintenance and Education of exposed and deserted young Children, commonly called the *Foundling-Hospital*.

The first Session of Parliament of the Year 1739 was opened on *February* 1, and his Majesty acquainted both Houses, in his Speech, that he had concluded a Convention with the King of *Spain*, wherein the latter had obliged himself to make Reparation to his Subjects, for their Losses, by a certain stipulated Payment, &c. &c. The Convention was published soon after, wherein it was principally agreed, that two Ministers Plenipotentiary, on the Part of the two Nations, should meet at *Madrid*, within six Weeks after the Day of exchanging the Ratifications, there to confer and finally regulate the respective Pretensions of the two Crowns, &c. &c. that his *Catholic* Majesty should cause to be paid to his *Britannick* Majesty, the Sum of 95,000*l.* Sterling, Balance, which has been admitted as due to the Crown and Subjects of *Great Britain*, after Deduction made of the Demands of the Crown and Subjects of *Spain*, &c. &c. This Sum of 95,000*l.* was, by a separate Article, to be paid, at *London*, within four Months after the Exchange of the Ratifications. However, before the King of *Spain* signed this Convention, he declared by his Minister, that he reserved to himself, in its full Force, the Right of suspending the Assiento of Negroes, if the *South-Sea* Company did not subject herself to pay, in a short Term, the 68,000*l.* Sterling, which she has confessed is owing for the Duty on Negroes. No sooner were the Contents of this

Con-



Convention known, than great Murmurs arose, and Complaints were every-where made against it: The Articles of a free Navigation and Commerce, without being visited or searched, were, in effect, it was said, given up, by referring them to the Discussion of Plenipotentiaries; that the Reparation stipulated was only a pretended Reparation; and, as to the 68,000 *l.* said to be due to *Spain* from the *South-Sea* Company, it was only allowed, as brought into the Account of a much greater Sum, due to them from *Spain*; and therefore the Company refused to pay it, in the Manner it was demanded. The City of *London*, the *West-India* and *Bristol* Merchants, &c. petitioned both Houses of Parliament, complaining of this disgraceful Convention; and there were very warm Debates in both Houses upon it, especially on the Motion for addressing his Majesty, and thanking him for laying it before them. However, it was carried for the Address, in both Houses: But forty Lords entered their Protest; and a considerable Number of Members of the House of Commons left the House, and returned no more to it during that Session; which Departure and absents themselves from the House became famous by the Term of the *Secession*. On *June 14*, his Majesty put an End to the Session, after having given his Assent to many publick and private Bills.

And now the Rumour of a War with *Spain* began to revive, notwithstanding the Parliamentary Sanction the Convention had received. Several Measures taken by the Government gave Countenance to the earnest Hopes and Expectations of the Nation: for the Land-Forces were augmented: many Ships were put into Commission, and there was

a very hot Press for Seamen to man them; for which Purpose an Embargo was laid on all Merchant-Ships, outward bound, and several other Steps were taken, that seemed to threaten an approaching Rupture. On *July 10*, his Majesty, in Council, ordered general Reprisals to be granted, against the Ships, Goods, and Subjects of the King of *Spain*; and on the 17th, *Edward Vernon*, Esq; lately appointed Vice-Admiral of the Blue, set out for *Po. timouth* to take the Command of a Squadron destined for the *West-Indies*, who soon after set Sail. On *September 5*, the *Spanish* Minister and Agent both left this Kingdom and returned home; and Mr. *Keene*, the *British* Minister, left *Madrid* about the same Time. On the 19th of *October* his Majesty signed a Declaration of War against *Spain*, which was proclaimed on the 23d, in the usual Manner, and at the accustomed Places, amidst innumerable Crowds of People, who testified their Satisfaction thereat. In his Declaration his Majesty charges the King of *Spain* with breaking the Convention lately concluded, by not paying the stipulated Sum, admitted to be due to the Subjects of *Great-Britain*, in the Time appointed.

In some Time after the Declaration, an Account came from Admiral *Haddock*, of his having taken two rich *Caracca* Ships.

On the 15th of *November*, the Parliament again met; and on the 23d, the two Houses waited on his Majesty with their joint Resolution, which was as follows: Resolved, by the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and Commons, in Parliament assembled, that an humble Address be presented to his Majesty, as a dutiful Return to his gracious Desire of the Advice of his Parliam-

ment, at this critical and important Conjunction; and as a farther Testimony of our firm Resolution vigorously to support his Majesty, in the Prosecution of the War against *Spain*, humbly to beseech his Majesty never to admit of any Treaty of Peace with that Crown, unless the Acknowledgment of our natural and indubitable Right to navigate in the *American* Seas, to and from any Part of his Majesty's Dominions, without being seized, searched, visited or stopped, under any Pretence whatsoever, shall have been first obtained, as a Preliminary thereto. To this Resolution and Address his Majesty returned a suitable Answer. A new Sect, called *Methodists*, made their Appearance this Year, the Disciples of one *Whitefield*, a Clergyman of a warm enthusiastick Turn, and of two Brothers, named *Wesley*, which has since found so many Votaries, amongst the common People, as greatly to alarm the Friends of rational Religion and true Piety. The Liverymen of *London*, this Year, gave a remarkable Instance of their Resentment against those who voted in favour of the Convention, by setting aside *Sir George Champion*, Member for *Aylesbury*, the next Alderman, in Rotation, to the Chair, from being Lord-Mayor, which Office he was never suffered to possess afterwards, because he gave his Vote for that Measure. For several Years this Innovation occasioned great Feuds in the City at the annual Election of a Lord-Mayor. One *Margaret Patten*, a *Scots* Woman, died in *St. Margaret's Workhouse, Westminster*. at the very extraordinary Age of 138.

At the Beginning of the Year 1740, a Motion was made in the House of Commons, pursuant to the Instructions a great Number of the

Members had received from their Constituents, for bringing in a *Place-Bill*; but it was carried in the Negative by a Majority of 16. An End was put to the Session of Parliament on the 29th of *April*. The two first Months of this Year were distinguished by a most intense Frost, which began on *Christmas* Day, 1739, and continued almost eight Weeks: The *Thames* was frozen, and Multitudes of People walked over that River, upon the Ice; Booths were erected, and a kind of Fair kept upon it. The Poor were very great Sufferers thereby, as the Price of Coals, and other Necessaries of Life, was very high, particularly towards the Close of the Frost.

On the 13th of *March*, Captain *Rentone* arrived from Vice-Admiral *Vernon*, with the important Advice, that on the 21st and 22d of *November* ult. the Admiral had made himself Master of the Town and Forts of *Porto-Bello*, with six Ships only: That he had blown up the Fortifications, spiked up above eighty Iron Cannon, and brought away a great Number of Brass Ordnance and much Ammunition, leaving the Harbour quite open and defenceless. No sooner were these enlivening Tidings known to the People, than a Profusion of Rejoicings overspread the united Kingdoms, and *Ireland*; Bonfires blazed in every Street, and the Houses were illuminated; the Shouts of *Vernon for ever* were heard from every Tongue; both Houses of Parliament, the City of *London*, &c. addressed his Majesty upon the Occasion; the House of Commons sent the Admiral their Thanks, the City voted him their Freedom, and his Head became the favourite Sign for Publick Houses, &c. &c. On the 30th of *April*, the Duke of *Argyle* resigned all his Places under



under the Government. On *May 8*, the Espousals of the Princess *Mary* with Prince *Frederick of Hesse-Cassel* were solemnized, the Duke of *Cumberland* being that Prince's Proxy. Her Marriage-Portion, as provided by Parliament, was 40,000 *l.* and soon after the Celebration of her Espousals, she set out, properly attended, for *Hesse-Cassel*. The same Month died *Frederick-William*, King of *Prussia*, &c. and was succeeded by his eldest Son, the present unanimous King of *Prussia*. In *June*, a Camp was formed on *Hounslow-Heath*, which became a fashionable Spectacle for all Ranks of People, whose Curiosity led them there in great Numbers. Sir *John Norris* sailed with a large Fleet from *Spithead*, having hoisted his Flag on board the *Victory*, in which his Royal Highness the Duke of *Cumberland* embarked as a Volunteer; but the *Lieut.* running foul of the *Victory*, did her some Damage, which forced the Fleet to put back; and the Wind disappointing several other Attempts to sail, the Nation was under great Apprehensions on account of the *Spanish* Squadrons at *Cadiz* and *Ferrol*, which joined soon after, and sailed for the *West-Indies*, as did a *French* Squadron from *Brest* and *Toulon*, which justly increased the Fears of the Nation. However, the *French* Squadron returned home at the Beginning of the next Year, without having attempted any Thing. On the 29th of *June*, Advice was received that the brave *Vernon* had taken the Town of *Chagre* and Castle of *Lorenzo*, demolished that Fort, and made a great Booty of Goods lying in the Custom-House, for the Lading the *Spanish* Galleons. Towards the End of *October*, Sir *Charles Ogle*, with a large Fleet of Men of War and Transports, with

an Army under the Command of Lord *Cathcart*, sailed for the *West-Indies*; but that brave Officer dying in his Passage, the Command of the Land Forces devolved upon Brigadier-General *Wentworth*. In *January* following, this Fleet arrived in *Jamaica*, and joined Admiral *Vernon*. On the 9th of that Month, died his Imperial Majesty, succeeded in his Hereditary Dominions by his eldest Daughter *Maria-Theresa*, (married to the Duke of *Lorraine* and *Tuscany*) who was proclaimed Queen of *Hungary*, *Bohemia*, &c. &c. But notwithstanding the Security of the famous *Pragmatick Sanction*, her Title to many of her Father's Dominions was disputed by several of the Princes of the Empire, which produced a long War in *Europe*. In the same Month, the Czarina departed his Life, having, by Will, appointed Prince *John*, an Infant, Son of Duke *Anthony Ulrich* of *Brunswick*, and the Princess *Anne* of *Mecklenburg*, her Successor, and the Duke of *Courland* Regent. The Regent, however, was soon turned out, and the young Czar's Mother succeeded him in that Trust, till her Son was finally deposed, and the Princess *Elizabeth* placed upon the Throne of the *Russias*. On *November 18*, the Parliament met. On the 18th of the same Month a dreadful Fire happened, at *Charles Town*, in *South-Carolina*; which destroyed the greatest Part of that thriving City, to the Damage of above 300,000 *l.* The Parliament granted, the next Year, 20,000 *l.* for the Relief of the unhappy Sufferers by that dreadful Calamity.

The most important Affairs that were debated in Parliament, in their last Session, 1741, were, the Motion, in the House of Peers, to address his Majesty, to be informed what Demand of Succours had been

made by the Queen of *Hungary*, and whether in Men or Money; which was carried in the Negative: A Motion for a secret Committee to enquire into the Conduct of the War; which also was carried in the Negative: A Motion for an Address, most humbly to advise and beseech his Majesty, to remove Sir *Robert Walpole* from his Presence and Counsels for ever; which had a Negative put upon it by a great Majority, as had a like Motion in the House of Commons, by a Majority of 184. On the 8th of *April*, his Majesty, in a Speech to both Houses, informed them, that the Queen of *Hungary* had made a Requisition of the 12,000 Men stipulated by Treaty, whereupon he had demanded 6000 *Danes* and 6000 *Hessians* to be ready to march to her Assistance; and, as further Expences might be incurred after the Parliament had broke up, he desired such a Supply as might enable him to be prepared for all Events, &c. Hereupon both Houses assured his Majesty, in very cordial Addresses, that if any Part of his Dominions, although not belonging to the Crown of *Great-Britain*, should be attacked, &c. in Resentment of his Majesty's Measures, they would exert themselves to the utmost in protecting them. They then granted 500,000 *l.* for the Support of the Queen of *Hungary*, and Sums to defray the Expence of the *Danes* and *Hessians*. On *April* 25, the Parliament was prorogued, and on the 28th dissolved by Proclamation, and Writs ordered to be issued for the Election of a new one, returned *June* 25.

As to the Progress of the War in 1741, Admiral *Vernon* and General *Wentworth*, in *March*, made themselves Masters of all the Forts and Falcine Batteries which defended the Harbour of *Cartthagena*, and

were preparing to besiege that Place, the Advice of which occasioned great Rejoicings in *England*: But this Elation soon after received a Check, when the Intelligence arrived, that after an unsuccessful Attack on Fort *St. Lazarus*, they had been obliged to raise the Siege of *Cartthagena*, and to re-embark the Troops; which was performed, without any Loss, on *April* 16; but they demolished all the Castles and Forts that guarded the Harbour: Besides, upon the whole, they had destroyed six *Spanish* Men of War, the like Number of Gallies, and all the other Shipping in the Harbour, with the Loss, in the whole Expedition, of about 1600 Men killed, or dead of Sickness, occasioned by the Inequality of the Climate. The Sea and Land Officers mutually charged each other with the Misfortune of the Siege. Afterwards the Admiral, &c. sailed from *Jamaica*, on an Expedition to *Cuba*; and he entered a fine Harbour, which he named *Cumberland Harbour*, when they landed and encamped their Troops, and prepared to advance further into the Island; but soon after, finding it an inconvenient Station, they returned to *Jamaica*.

The *Spaniards* landed 15,000 Men safely in *Italy*, not one *British* Ship of War being in their Way to give them any Interruption. In the *Mediterranean*, a *Spanish* Squadron slipped by Admiral *Haddock*; but he pursued, and in a few Days got Sight of it, off *Malaga*, and bore down upon them, in Order of Battle; but the *French* Fleet from *Toulon* being then near them, their Admiral sent to tell Mr. *Haddock*, he had Orders to take the *Spaniards* under his Protection; which obliged him to relinquish the Attack, and bear away for *Port-Mahon*. Commodore *Anson*,



sen, who had been sent with a Squadron into the *South-Seas*, met with very tempestuous Weather, after passing the St. eights of *Le Maire*, by which the *Severn* and *Pearl* were separated from him, and got into *Rio Janeiro*, in a most shattered Condition. A *Spanish* Squadron of five large Ships, which sailed some Time before Mr *Anson*, lost two of their Ships also, in stormy Weather, in attempting to double *Cape-Horn*; and the rest were forced to return to *Rio de la Plata*. Several rich Prizes were made by our Cruizers; but the *Spaniards* took great Numbers of our Merchant Ships, which bred great Discontents in *England*. The Battle of *Mollwitz* was fought, with doubtful Success, between the *Prussians* and *Austrians*, in *Silesia*; however, the *Prussians* kept the Field of Battle. The Elector of *Bavaria*, and the King of *Poland*, Elector of *Saxony*, declared likewise against the Queen of *Hungary*; the former took Possession of the City and Castle of *Passau*, and being soon after joined by a *French* Army of 40,000 Men, under the Marshals *Breglio* and *Belleisle*, made himself Master of *Lintz*, and a little after appeared even in the Neighbourhood of *Vienna*: Another Army of 30,000 *French* Troops, under Marshal *Maillebois*, joined by a Body of the Troops of the Electors of *Cologne* and *Palatine*, marched into *Westphalia*, and took Post upon the Frontiers of *Hanover*. As to his *Polish* Majesty, he entered *Bohemia*, and advanced towards *Prague*; and the *Bavarians* and *French* having turned off from *Vienna*, and joined him, they took that City by Storm. To complete the Scene of Havock in *Europe*, the *Swedes*, in *July*, declared War against *Russia*; but a large Detachment of their Army being defeated by the *Russians* near

*Wilmanstrand*, that Fortrefs was, immediately after, taken from them by Assault. Upon the Revolution in *Russia*, before mentioned, a Cessation of Arms was agreed upon between the two Powers.

The Elections for the new Parliament were carried on with great Animosity by the opposite *Court* and *Country Parties*, as they were now stiled; and at that for *Westminster*, a Party of Soldiers being called, on Pretence of a Riot, the Poll-Books were shut, and the two Court-Candidates, Lord *Sunderland* and Sir *Charles Wager*, returned by the High-Bailiff. It occasioned warm Debates in the Committee of Elections at the Meeting of the new Parliament; the Election was declared void, the High-Bailiff taken into Custody, the Justices who sent for the Soldiers reprimanded, and a Writ ordered for a new Election, when Lord *Percival* and Mr. *Edwin* were chosen. When the Election was declared void, there were great Rejoicings throughout the City of *Westminster*. The Court lost this Election in the House by a Majority of four only, which was a Prelude to more Mortifications, that were preparing for the Minister.

On the 8th of *September* a great Hurricane, which passed almost all over the Kingdom, did great Damage, both on Shore and on the Sea-Coasts. The 25th of *November* was observed as a Day of solemn Fasting and Humiliation.

On *December* 1, the new Parliament met, and chose Mr. *Onslow* again their Speaker; and, on the 4th, his Majesty opened the Session with a most gracious Speech, wherein he represented the Dangers *Europe* was threatened with, by the Confederacy for subverting the House of *Austria*, and recommended to both Houses a necessary Concern

for maintaining the Liberties of *Europe* at that important Crisis. The Lords Address, in Answer, was particularly zealous and affectionate, but that of the Commons much cooler; and as soon as the Motion for an Address was agreed to, a Motion, that the House should, on *January 21*, resolve itself into a Committee of the whole House, to consider of the State of the Nation, was agreed to, *nem. con.* On *December 16*, a great Contest arose about the Choice of a Chairman of the Committee of Privileges and Elections, when *Dr. Lee*, supported by the Country Party, carried it, by 242 against 238; which was another fatal Blow to the Court-Party.

In the Year 1742, the War was carried on with various Success; the *Austrians* made themselves Masters of the City of *Munich*, Capital of the Electorate of *Bavaria*, and soon over-ran that Electorate; and Prince *Charles* of *Lorraine*, with another *Austrian* Army, having driven the *French* and *Bavarians* under the Cannon of *Prague*, laid Siege to that City; the *French*, upon this, threw themselves into the Place, and sustained a long Siege; but, being reduced to great Extremities, Marshal *Bell* found Means to get out of the Town, and made a memorable Retreat, though with great Loss, after which the City was surrendered to the *Austrians*; so that the Queen of *Hungary's* Affairs began to assume a promising Aspect. The Battle of *Czossau* was fought, between the *Prussians* under their King, and the *Austrians* under Prince *Charles*, and though the *Prussians* kept the Field of Battle, neither Side could boast of Victory. However, this Battle was followed by a Treaty, concluded at *Breslau*, between the two Powers, on *May 31*; which was

also soon after productive of Peace between the *Austrians* and *Saxons*. In *Italy*, the *Austrians* and *Sardinians* subjugated the whole Duchy of *Modena*; and, on the other Side, Don *Philip* made himself Master of *Chamberry*, and of the greatest Part of the Duchy of *Savoy*. Commodore *Martin*, about the same Time, with five Men of War and four Bomb-Ketches, appearing before the City of *Naples*, compelled his *Sicilian* Majesty to recall his Troops, then acting in Conjunction with the *Spanish* Army, and to promise not to give them any further Assistance. This Officer had been detached, for that Purpose, by Admiral *Matthews*, who had taken the Command of the Fleet in the *Mediterranean*.

In *America*, Commodore *Anson*, who was feared to be lost, doubled *Cape Horn*, and appeared in the *South-Sea*, with two Men of War, Admiral *Vernon* and General *Wentworth* sailed from *Jamaica*, on another Expedition to the Continent, but were so retarded by contrary Winds, they were obliged to return to *Jamaica* without attempting any Thing; and some Months after, they both arrived in *England*. Part of the Fleet at *Jamaica*, with some Land-Forces, took Possession of the Island of *Rattap*, in the Bay of *Honduras*, and fortified it. The *Spaniards* made an Attempt upon *Georgia*, with a considerable Fleet, and debarked 5000 Land-Forces upon the Island of *St. Simon*; but the brave General *Oglethorpe*, with a Handful of Men, after defeating them in many Skirmishes, obliged them to retreat to their Ships, in Confusion, and return to *St. Augustine*.

On *January 13*, *Charles*, Elector of *Bavaria*, was chosen Emperor of *Germany*, at *Franckfort*, notwithstanding all the Opposition of the *Austrians*.



*Austrians*. Sixteen Thousand *British* Troops were embarked for *Flanders*, which were some Time after joined by 16,000 *Hanoverians* and 6000 *Hessians* in *British* Pay; and the Earl of *Stair* set out for *Holland*, as Ambassador Extraordinary, from whence he was to repair to *Flanders* to take the Command of those Troops. His Lordship, however, could not prevail on their High Mightinesses to join with his Majesty in making a Diversion in favour of the Queen of *Hungary*, though he concluded a defensive Alliance with them for his Majesty's *German* Dominions. The Duke of *Holstein* was this Year declared Successor to the Throne of *Russia*; and the *Swedish* Army being driven out of *Finland*, the *Russians* seized the whole Province, and all their Magazines.

Let me now take a Survey of the most important domestick Transactions of the Year 1742. The Merchants and Traders of *London*, &c. petitioned the House of Commons, preferring a Complaint against the Lords of the Admiralty, that they neglected our Trade, did not appoint proper Cruizers and Convoys, &c. The Petition was presented by the Lord Mayor of *London*. And Petitions to the same Effect were presented from the Lord Mayor, Aldermen and Commons of *London*; from *Bristol*, *Liverpool*, *Glasgow*, and many other trading Places. On this the House passed a severe Censure on the Lords of the Admiralty, and ordered in a Bill for better protecting and securing our Trade and Navigation in Time of War: But the Bill was thrown out by the Lords, and so the Affair dropped. The Place-Bill was passed by the Commons, but rejected by the Lords. On *February* 2, the contested Election for *Chippenham* having been

carried against the Court, by a Majority of 16, Sir *Robert Walpole* left the House of Commons; on the 9th, he was created Earl of *Orford*, &c. and on the 11th he resigned all his Employments. Hereupon, the Lord *Carteret* was made one of the Principal Secretaries of State, and Mr. *Sandys* Chancellor of the *Exchequer*, &c. both of whom had been in the Opposition to the late Ministry. Soon after, another great Champion in the Opposition, Mr. *Pulteney*, to the Surprise of every one was created Earl of *Bath*. On March 21, a Motion was made in the House of Commons for a Committee to enquire into the Conduct of *Robert* Earl of *Orford*, for the last ten Years, &c. &c. which was agreed to by a Majority of seven only. It was then agreed it should be a select and secret Committee, of 21; which Committee was chosen by Ballot. This Committee made some Progress in the expected Enquiry, which, however, at last came to nothing, to the great Disappointment of every Friend to his Country. On *July* 15, his Majesty put an End to the Session; on *November* 16, the Parliament met again; and on *December* 3, a Motion was made in the House of Commons, for reviving the secret Committee; but it was carried in the Negative: And great Debates arose in the House about granting 657,888*l.* for the Charge of *Hanoverian* Troops, from *August* 31, 1742, to *December* 25, 1743; but the Question was carried in the Affirmative.

Some Attempts were made, at the Beginning of this Year, by the Ministry, to bring about a Reconciliation between his Majesty and the Prince of *Wales*; but his Royal Highness, expressing his dutiful Regard to his Majesty, refused to go to Court whilst Sir *Robert Wal-*

*pole* presided in his Majesty's Councils. On *February 20*, a Comet made its Appearance, and continued in our Hemisphere for some Weeks. On *August 17*, a Pardon passed the Great Seal, to the famous *Robert Knight, Esq*; Cashier of the *South-Sea Company* in the fatal Year 1720. A Fast was observed on the 10th of *November*. Many Ornaments of the Republick of Letters departed this Life in 1742, particularly, *Dr. Edmund Halley*, Astronomer Royal; *Lord Paget*, Author of several Poetical Pieces; *Dr. Thomas Dower*, a skilful Physician; *Mr. Nicholas Amhurst*, reputed Author of the *Craftsman*, &c. *Mr. Somerville*, Author of the *Chace*; *Dr. Boulter*, Archbishop of *Armagh*, in *Ireland*, &c.

In the Year 1743, great Debates arose in the House of Commons in Relation to the Contract for the Remittance of the Money abroad, necessary for the Publick Service; but the Effects of the Enquiry set on foot for that Purpose were disappointed: 500,000*l.* was granted to enable his Majesty to support the Queen of *Hungary*. In the House of Lords were very warm Debates on the Bill for Licensing the Retail of Spirituous Liquors, which was opposed strenuously by the Bench of Bishops; however, the Bill at length passed, and received the Royal Assent. On *April 21*, his Majesty put an End to the Session, after passing the Bill for raising 1,800,000*l.* by Annuities and a Lottery, that for Relief of Insolvent Debtors, &c. and that for granting a Million out of the Sinking Fund. In his Speech he informed them, that he had ordered his Army to pass the *Rhine*, as Auxiliaries to the Queen of *Hungary*, &c. &c. On *December 1*, the Parliament met again, and most of the Affairs that came before them, in this Year, were carried according to the Desire of the Court.

The War was carried on, this Year, with increased Vigour; the *British Troops*, with their Mercenaries, entered *Germany*; and on *June 16*, was fought the famous Battle of *Dettingen*, between the Allied Army, commanded by his Majesty, in Person, and under him, by Lord *Stair*, and the *French Army*, commanded by the Marshal Duke de *Noailles*; when the latter was defeated, and obliged to repass the *Main* with great Precipitation: But as the Allies were destitute of Provisions, and were obliged, that Night, to continue their March towards *Hannau*, leaving their Wounded to the Mercy of the Enemy, it gave a Handle to the *French* to boast of a Victory, which they had the Confidence to do, though all the fair Accounts of the Battle convinced the World of the contrary. A general Thanksgiving was solemnized in *Great-Britain*, on account of this Victory, &c. Soon after this Battle, Lord *Stair* resigned his Commissions of General of the Allied Army, &c. upon some Disgust he had taken at the Management after the Battle. In *October* the Allied Army marched back to *Flanders*, to take up their Winter-Quarters there; and the States of *Holland* sent to that Army, after great Deliberation, in *September*, the Reinforcement of 20,000 of their Troops. The *Austrians*, under Prince *Charles* of *Lorraine*, defeated, on the 28th of *April*, the *Bavarian Army* commanded by General *Minuzzi*, near *Braunau*, taking that General and two others Prisoners, and again got Possession of *Munich*, and the whole Electorate of *Bavaria*, which they had been obliged to abandon some Time before. Soon after, the *French Troops*, under *Broglio*, separating from the Imperial Army, the Emperor concluded a Treaty of Peace with



with the Queen of *Hungary* on the 15th of *July*. In *August*, Prince *Charles* endeavoured to shift the Seat of War, by attempting to pass the *Rhine*, above *Brisac*, but was repulsed, and forced to relinquish his Design, and marched back into *Bavaria*. In *Italy*, the Battle of *Campo Santo* was fought between the *Austrian* and *Sardinian* Army under Count *Traun*, and the *Spanish* Army commanded by Count *Gages*; which was a very bloody Action, and the *Spaniards* were, at length, obliged to retreat. Don *Philip* attempted a Passage into *Piedmont*, near *Chateau Dauphine*, but was repulsed by his *Sardinian* Majesty; and Admiral *Matthews* obliged the *Genoese* to lay up the Cargoes of several *Spanish* Vessels, laden with Ammunition and warlike Stores, which had taken Shelter in the Port of *Genoa*, in the Castle of *St. Bonifacio*, there to remain until the End of the War. In *America*, Commodore *Anson*, according to the Advices received this Year, had taken several valuable Prizes, in the *South-Seas*, and plundered the Town of *Payta*; and Commodore *Knowles* attacked *La Guayra*, but was obliged to give over his Enterprize. Many rich Captures were made from the Enemy, particularly, the *Pierre Joseph*, taken by the *Squirrel* Man of War; the *St. Joseph*, a *Spanish* Register Ship, worth 100,000 *l.* taken by the *Forsey*; and another Prize, of the same Value, was taken by the *Monmouth*. A Treaty was concluded at *Worms*, in *September*, between *Great-Britain*, *Hungary*, and *Sardinia*, in which the former engaged to pay to *Sardinia*, during the War, an Annual Subsidy of 200,000 *l.* Sterling; and *Final* was to be taken from the *Genoese*, and given to the King of *Sardinia*.

Events of this Year were, the Death of the famous Cardinal *Fleury*, Prime Minister of *France*, aged 89; of the Elector of *Mentz*; and of *M. Campillo*, Prime Minister of *Spain*. The Remains of the Regiments lately in the *West-Indies* returned home, who were scarce the Shadow of them when sent out; as an Instance of which, General *Blakeney's* Regiment, which went out 800 strong, now consisted only of eight Men. The *Scotch* Regiments of *Highlanders*, upon a Report of their being to be sent to the *West-Indies*, mutinied; and 150 deserted from that Corps, and marched Northward; but were overtaken, obliged to surrender, and brought Prisoners to the *Tower*: Three of them were shot, and the rest transported to serve in the Regiments in *Jamaica* and *Georgia*. On *October* 19, the Princess *Louisa* set out for *Germany*, and was soon after married to the Prince Royal of *Denmark*; and on the 27th of *December*, Prince *Charles* of *Lorraine* was married, at *Vienna*, to the Arch-Duchess, *Mary Anne*, Sister to the Queen of *Hungary*. In that Month another Comet appeared, and continued in View a long Time.

General *Mackintosh*, a Rebel Commander in 1715, Dr. *Cheyne*, a celebrated Physician, Mr. *Ainsworth*, Compiler of the *Latin Dictionary*, Admiral Sir *Charles Wager*, *John Campbell*, Duke of *Argyle*, and many other celebrated Persons, deceased this Year.

At the Beginning of this Year 1744, the Nation was alarmed with the Rumour of an intended *French* Invasion, in favour of the Pretender, whose eldest Son, in *December*, passed through *Italy*, in the Disguise of a *Spanish* Courier, embarked at *Final*, landed at *Antibes*, arrived at *Paris*, and even came to *Calais*.

The other most remarkable

A *French* Squadron sailed up the Channel, and had got as far as *Dungeness*, and Troops were actually embarking at *Dunkirk*, though War had not been declared between the two Nations. Hereupon, his Majesty, in a Message to both Houses, informed them of the *French* Designs; in Answer to which, they jointly presented a loyal Address, which was followed by others from the City of *London*, and most Corporations in the Kingdom, expressing their Abhorrence of the *French* Attempt, and promising to stand by his Majesty with their Lives and Fortunes. Many Regiments were marched towards the Southern Coasts, and Sir *John Norris* put to Sea with a formidable Squadron; but upon his appearing in Sight of the *French* Fleet, off *Dungeness*, they made the best of their Way back to *Brest*: Some of their Transports having been lost also in the Road of *Dunkirk*, and others damaged, their Design was, for that Year, laid aside. A Proclamation was issued, in *February*, for putting the Laws in Execution against Papists and Nonjurors; and on *March* 2, the *Habeas Corpus* Act was suspended. On the 18th, 3000 *Dutch* Troops arrived at *Gravesend*, and soon after 3000 more, agreeable to a Demand made by his Majesty, pursuant to Treaty. And now *France* threw off the Mask, under which she had so long concealed her Intentions, by declaring War against *Great-Britain*, *March* 4, at *Paris*; which was soon followed by a counter Declaration on our Part, to the great Joy of the Nation, which had long reflected, with Indignation, upon the many Insults we had received from that faithless People. The *Dutch*, who upon such an Event were to supply us with twenty Men of War, did

vouchsafe to send five or six, which for any Service they were of, might as well have staid at home. The Elector of *Saxony*, and Landgrave of *Hesse*, refused their stipulated Succours, until we had an Army formed in *Hanover* sufficient to protect them; the *Russians* alledged it was too late in the Year to give us the Assistance we had a Right to demand; and the King of *Prussia* insisted we were the Aggressors, and therefore would send us no Succour. In *April*, the *French* also declared War against the Queen of *Hungary*, and the Queen of *Hungary* against *France* in the succeeding Month; and a few Days after, a Treaty was concluded, at *Frankfort*, between the Emperor, King of *Prussia*, the Elector *Palatine*, and King of *Sweden*, as Landgrave of *Hesse-Cassel*, for mutual Defence, getting the Emperor's Titles acknowledged, and his Dominions restored. On the first of *May* the *French* King arrived at his Army, near *Lisle*, of 121,000 Combatants, and, in a few Days, took Possession of *Warneton*, *Courtray*, *Hasebeck* and *Pont du Pierre*, without Resistance. On the 7th, he invested *Menin*, which surrendered on the 24th. On *June* 15, *Ypres* also surrendered to his Arms; and soon after, *Fort Knoque* and *Furnes*; none of those important Places being provided with sufficient Garrisons, and the Allied Army too weak to attempt their Relief. Meanwhile, the *Austrian* Army, under Prince *Charles* of *Lorraine*, was attempting a powerful Diversion, and, by Stratagem, actually passed the *Rhine*, above *Landau*, maugre all the Vigilance of *M. Coigny*, who commanded the *French* and *Imperial* Army in *Alsace*; for the Emperor had now broke his late Treaty with the Queen of *Hungary*. Prince  
Charles



*Charles* laid *Alsace* under Contribution; and thereupon the *French* King marched towards the *Rhine*, with the greatest Part of his Army, leaving about 50,000 Men in *Flanders*, under the Command of the famous Count *Saxe*. But though the Allied Army was now superior to the *French*, they never, during the rest of the Campaign, offered to attack them, or to retake any of their late Conquests. The great Expectations from Prince *Charles's* passing the *Rhine*, were likewise soon disappointed by an Event that was little expected. The King of *Prussia*, taking up the Cause of the Emperor, broke the Peace also with the Queen of *Hungary*, and at the Head of a powerful Army entered *Bohemia*, made himself Master of *Prague*, and, soon after, of almost the whole Kingdom. This sudden Irruption obliged Prince *Charles* to repass the *Rhine*, which he did, without any Loss, *August* 12, in order to march to the Relief of *Bohemia*. He was followed by two *French* Armies, one of which laid Siege to *Straßburgh*, and the other, in Conjunction with the Imperial Forces, recovered Possession of *Munich* and the greatest Part of *Bavaria*. - Consequently, the King of *Prussia*, whilst his Friends thus diverted their Attention to other Objects, was obliged to abandon *Bohemia*, and fly before the *Austrians*, who had been reinforced with 20,000 *Saxons*. *Friburgh* was surrendered to the *French* on *October* 24, after a very brave Defence; and the Castle was not given up until *November* 16; after which the *French* Army, on that Side, attempted nothing during the rest of the Campaign. In *Italy*, Prince *Lobkowitz* drove the *Spaniards* into the Kingdom of *Naples*, at the Beginning of the Year, where they were again joined by his *Sicilian* Ma-

jeſty's Troops. On the 10th of *July*, N. S. a ſinart Action happened at *Velletri*, where the *Austrians* were very near taking Priſoners the King of *Sicily* and Duke of *Modena* in their Quarters, in that Town. Soon after, upon Prince *Charles's* repaſſing the *Rhine*, Prince *Lobkowitz* was obliged to march into *Lombardy*, to ſupport his *Sardinian* Majeſty, and was now, in his Turn, cloſely followed by Count *Gages* with the *Spaniſh* Army. On *February* 11, Admiral *Matthews* came up with, and engaged, the united *French* and *Spaniſh* Fleets, who had juſt left the Harbour of *Toulon*, and would, no doubt, have quite demolished them; but Admiral *Leſſock*, with his Division, either would not, or could not, come up to engage; ſo that the Enemy eſcaped in the Night, having had one *Spaniſh* Ship, of 60 Guns, burnt, and ſeveral others diſabled. Our Squadron, which, as Admiral *Leſſock* did not engage, was much inferior to the Enemy, ſuſtained no great Loſs; ſave that Captain *Cornwall*, the brave Commander of the *Marlbrough*, was killed, with 43 of his Men, and 120 were wounded. Our Squadron, by conſtant Storms, and contrary Winds, was obliged to bear away for *Port-Mahon*, whilst the Enemy took Shelter in the neareſt Ports of *Spain*. Soon after, *Leſſock*, having been ſuſpended by Admiral *Matthews*, arrived in *England*, as did Admiral *Matthews* himſelf in *September*, of whom more will be heard in the proper Place. The *Britiſh* Squadron thus abſent from the Coaſt, Don *Philip*, with the *Spaniſh* Army, and their *French* Auxiliaries, under the Prince of *Conti*, paſſed the *Var*, and made themſelves Maſters of *Nice*, and ſoon after forced the *Piedmonteſe* Intrenchments at *Montalban* and *Villafanica*,

*franca*, though with a great Loss of Officers and Men. The *Spaniards* then possessed themselves of *Oneglia*, but a little while afterwards were forced to abandon it, and retire to *Chateau Dauphine*, with much Loss. In *July*, the combined Army made an Attack on *Chateau Dauphine*, *Demont* and the *Piedmontese* Intrenchments on that Side, which at length they carried, with the Loss of between 4 and 5000 Men. *Coni* was, upon this, invested by them; but they were forced, after suffering considerably, to rise from before that Place, occasioned by the vigorous Defence of the Garrison, and the throwing in of a large Succour by his *Sardinian* Majesty. Many rich *French* and *Spanish* Prizes were taken, this Year, by our Fleets and Cruizers; and it was computed we had above 11,000 *French* Seamen, Prisoners in *England*, at the Close of it. Many of ours were also taken, particularly the *Northumberland* Man of War, of 70 Guns, Captain *Watson*, two of his Lieutenants and many of his Men, being killed in the Engagement. On *June 14*, Commodore *Anson*, in the *Centurion*, arrived at *St. Helen's*, whereby he completed his Voyage round the World. He brought with him the Treasure and Produce of the Cargo of an *Asapulco* Ship, which he took, *June 30*, 1743, near the *Philippine* Islands, after having refitted his Ship at *Canton*, in *China*, amounting, in the whole, to above a Million Sterling. On *July 27*, Sir *John Balchen* sailed from *Spithead*, with a formidable Squadron, which was joined by several *Dutch* Men of War; but that gallant Commander was, soon after, wrecked in his Ship the *Victory*, one of the finest First-rates in the Navy, which was lost with her whole Crew, consisting of 1000 Men, among whom were 100 Gentle-

men, Volunteers, either by foundering at Sea, or running upon a Rock, near the *Race of Alderney*; for the Truth of this unfortunate Event could never be discovered, as no one Soul on board was ever after heard of; though some of the *Victory's* Upper Works, &c. have since been driven on the *French* Coast, and elsewhere. His Majesty settled a Pension of 500 *l. per Ann.* on his Widow. In *America*, Deputy-Governor *Hodge*, of the Island of *Anguilla*, in the *West-Indies*, drove the *French* out of their Half of the Island of *St. Martin*; and the Inhabitants of the Island of *St. Bartholomew* declared themselves his *Britannick* Majesty's Subjects. The *French* took and burnt our Fort of *Canso*, in *Nova-Scotia*, after making the Garrison Prisoners of War.

But now let me recapitulate the other Transactions of the Year 1744. A general Fast was observed in *England*, on *April 11*. His Majesty put an End to the Session of Parliament, on *May 12*, with a most gracious Speech from the Throne. The Prince of *East-Friesland* dying on *May 14*, that Principality devolved on the King of *Prussia*. On *June 20*, a Pension of 4000 *l. per Ann.* was granted to *Robert* Earl of *Orford*, in Consideration of his long and faithful Services. Street-Robberies were arrived to an enormous Height towards the Close of this Year: The Robbers marched in Bands, armed with Pistols, Cutlasses, and Bludgeons, and were so daring as even to plunder and maim People in broad Daylight, until, by proper Rewards and vigorous Measures, a Stop was put to such notorious Villainy. The *Colebecher* Man of War, of 50 Guns, was lost, on *October 25*, being run upon the Sands between the *Long-Sand* and *Kentish Knock*,



*Knock*, and 40 of her Crew perished. On *November 27*, the Parliament met, and the Session was opened with a most gracious Speech from the Throne. The most remarkable Persons, that departed this Life in the Year 1744, were, *Dr. Desaguliers*, the eminent Mathematician; *Mr. Pope*, the celebrated Poet; *John Anstis*, Esq; Garter King at Arms, a learned Genealogist; *Mr. Jacob*, Author of the *Law Dictionary*; *Mr. Theobald*, the Poet; and *Sarah*, Duchess-Dowager of *Marlborough*, Relict of the immortal *John Duke of Marlborough*.

At the Beginning of the Year 1745, *Charles the VIIth*, Emperor of *Germany*, and Elector of *Bavaria*, departed this Life, at *Munich*, and was succeeded in his Electorate by his eldest Son, *Maximilian-Joseph*, who, upon the *Austrians* gaining a complete Victory over the *French Army*, and taking their General, *M. Segur*, Prisoner, on *April 4*, at *Pfaffenhofen*, being obliged to fly from *Munich*, concluded a Peace with the Queen of *Hungary* at *Fuessen*.

On *February 14*, his Majesty acquainted both Houses, that he had concluded a Treaty, in Conjunction with the Queen of *Hungary* and the States-General, with the King of *Poland*. On *February 18*, *M. Bellefise*, and the Chevalier his Brother, were brought Prisoners to *England*, having been both taken at the Close of the Year, at *Elbinggerode*, in the Electorate of *Hanover*, as they were passing through that Place, without any Passport, for *Berlin*. After being kept here till *August 13*, which occasioned many Altercations with the Court of *France*, and in fine turned out neither to our Honour nor Advantage, they were set at Liberty, and embarked at *Dover*, for *Calais*. On the 28th, we had an Account of a most terrible

Hurricane, which happened at *Jamaica*, on *October 20*, 1744, in which eight of the King's Ships and Vessels, and 96 Merchant Ships, were stranded, wrecked, or foundered at Sea. On *March 12*, his Royal Highness the Duke of *Cumberland* was constituted Captain-General, and Commander in Chief, of all his Majesty's Forces, and on *April 5*, set out for *Flanders* to take the Command of the Allied Army: And the *French* having invested *Tournay*, the Duke, on *May 1*, in the Morning, attacked them in their Camp near *Fontenoy*, when the Right-Wing of the Confederate Army, consisting chiefly of the *British* and *Hanoverian* Troops, bravely drove the Enemy before them, though they were encouraged by the Presence of their King; but not being well supported by the Left-Wing, and continually galled by numerous Batteries in Front, and many Redoubts on the Right-Flank, the Army retreated about One, which they did in good Order, as far as *Acrob*, unpursued by the Enemy. In this Action, which served for no other Purpose than to display the unfortunate Bravery of the *English* and *Hanoverians*, we lost Major-General *Ponsenby* and Lieutenant-General Sir *James Campbell*; and 7347 Men, Officers included, were killed, wounded or missing. However, from the Number of Officers killed and wounded on the Enemy's Side, their Loss must be supposed to be much more considerable; there being four Lieutenant-Generals, four Major-Generals, and three Brigadiers, killed; two Lieutenant-Generals, three Major-Generals, and twenty-two Brigadier-Generals, wounded, many of whom died of their Wounds: Hereupon *Tournay* surrendered *June 8*; and soon after the *French* became Masters of *Bruges* and *Ghent*.

On

On *April* 18, after a long Enquiry, and warm Debates, the House of Commons addressed his Majesty, that the Admirals *Matthews* and *Lestock*, and several Captains and Lieutenants of the Squadron in the *Mediterranean*, might be speedily tried by a Court-Martial; and his Majesty informed them he would give Orders accordingly. On *May* 2, after passing such Bills as were ready for the Royal Assent, his Majesty put an End to the Session with a very gracious Speech from the Throne. On *May* 24, his *Prussian* Majesty defeated the combined Army of *Austrians* and *Saxons*, under Prince *Charles* of *Lorraine*, at *Friedburgh*, on the Borders of *Silesia*. On *July* 9, Captain *Brett*, in the *Lion*, of 58 Guns, had a very obstinate Engagement, which continued from Five o'Clock in the Afternoon till Ten at Night, with a *French* Ship of War, of 64 Guns, and at length obliged her to sheer off, with a Frigate of 16 Guns in her Company. The *Lion* had 45 Men killed and 107 wounded. The same Month, two *Bristol* Privateers, under the Command of Captain *Talbot*, made two rich Prizes, from *Peru*, of the Value of 7 or 800,000*l.* Sterling; and soon after, the joyful News arrived, that Commodore *Warren*, and Mr. *Pepperell*, Commander of the *New-England* Forces, on the 16th of *June*, made themselves Masters of the Town and Fortresses of *Louisburgh*, (and of the whole Island of *Cape-Breton*) after a Siege of 49 Days, in which the raw *New-England* Forces gave the most amazing Proofs of Fortitude and Bravery. For this Service the Commodore was raised to a Flag, and Mr. *Pepperell* was created a Baronet. On *August* 12, *Ostend* was surrendered to the *French*; and

Advice was received from Commodore *Barnet*, that he had taken three rich *French* Ships, from *China*. These Ships the Commodore having sold to the *Dutch* at *Batavia*, it occasioned a long and warm Dispute between the *French* Court, and the States-General. On *September* 1, the Grand Duke of *Tuscany* (Spouse of the Queen of *Hungary*) was elected Emperor of *Germany*, at *Frankfort*: And on the 19th, the *Prussians* defeated the *Austrians*, in the Battle of *Staudentz*, in *Bohemia*; and at the Close of the Year, his *Prussian* Majesty defeated the Combined Army of *Austrians* and *Saxons*, near *Dresden*, by which he got Possession of *Dresden*, and the whole Electorate of *Saxony*; which brought on a Treaty of Peace between the victorious Monarch and the Emperor, and King of *Poland*, Elector of *Saxony*. On the 23d of *September*, the Court-Martial on the Admirals *Matthews* and *Lestock*, &c. began to sit, at *Chatham*.

The Rebellion which broke out in *Scotland*, is the only remaining Transaction, of any Importance, that we shall take notice of, in the Year 1745. On the 6th of *August*, some Notices having been communicated to the Government, of such an Attempt, aided by the *French* Court, a Proclamation was published, offering a Reward of 30,000*l.* for the Apprehending and Securing the eldest Son of the Pretender, in case he should land, or attempt to land, in any of his Majesty's Dominions. On the 17th, an Account arrived, however, that several Persons had landed, between the Islands of *Mull* and *Skie*, one of whom, it was supposed, was the Pretender's Son. The Frigate appeared to be the same that was in Company with the *French* Ship

(as



(as before observed) which was fo gallantly engaged by Captain *Brett*. On *September 5*, his Majesty sent Notice to the Lord Mayor of *London*, that the *Pretender's* eldest Son had landed in *Scotland*, and that several Persons had assembled there and broke out into open Rebellion. Soon after Advice arrived, that the Rebels had marched Southward, given the Slip to General *Cope*, who had gone Northward to oppose them, and took Possession of *Perth* on the 4th of *September*. On the 13th, they passed the *Forth*, five Miles above *Stirling*, and on the 17th took Possession of the City of *Edinburgh*; all Opposition to them hitherto being weakly or wickedly managed. By this Time General *Cope*, who had, for greater Expedition, in his return Southward, embarked his Troops, was arrived at *Dunbar*, 18 Miles East of *Edinburgh*, and having landed his Forces and received a Reinforcement of two Regiments of Dragoons, which he had left behind him on his going Northward, began his March towards that Capital. The Rebels did not wait to be attacked by him, but came out to meet him, and, on the 21st, at Day-break, they set upon his little Army, at *Preston-Pans*, seven Miles East of *Edinburgh*, and totally defeated it, and made most of his Infantry Prisoners. The Dragoons made their Escape to *Berwick*, with little Loss, save that of the brave Colonel *Gardiner*. These Advantages spread a general Consternation throughout the Kingdom; but all Orders and Ranks vied with each other in displaying their Loyalty, and Abhorrence of this unnatural Rebellion: The City of *London*, &c. presented Addresses to that Purpose; several Noblemen raised Regiments (which, however, were afterwards

paid for by the Publick;) and many Associations were entered into for the Support of his Majesty's Crown and Dignity, and the Constitution in Church and State; a large Body of *British*, *Dutch*, and *Hessian* Troops, were brought over from *Flanders*; and the Success of the Rebellion, and Dread of a threatened Invasion from *France*, having caused a great Run upon the *Bank*, above 1100 Merchants and eminent Tradesmen met, and subscribed their Names to an Agreement not to refuse *Bank* Notes in any Payment to be made to them. In *Ireland*, every vigorous and salutary Method was also pursued to prevent any Abetting of the Rebellion there by the Friends of *France* and Popery, and a Reward of 50,000 *l.* was published, in pursuance of the Address of the *Irish* Parliament, for apprehending the *Pretender's* eldest Son. On *October 17*, the Parliament met, and his Majesty received most zealous and loyal Addresses upon this interesting Occasion; the *Habeas-Corpus* Act was suspended, and an Act passed to enable his Majesty to raise the Militia. On *October 18*, the Duke of *Cumberland* arrived from *Flanders*, and set out, on *November 26*, to take upon him the Command of the Army, then on its March into *Lancashire*: For the Rebels, now increased to 8000, had left *Edinburgh*, on *October 26*, and, on *November 15*, the City of *Carlisle* was surrendered to them; whereupon Field-Marshal *Wade*, who commanded an Army of *British* and *Dutch* Troops at *Newcastle*, returned to that Town, having put himself in March, to relieve *Carlisle*, and advanced as far as *Hexham*, for that Purpose, when he heard of its Surrender. On the 24th, the Rebels, without any Molestation, arrived

at *Lancaster*, and on the 29th took Possession of *Manchester*, where they formed a Regiment of those that had joined them in *England*, giving the Command thereof to Mr. *Townley*. In the Beginning of *December* they left *Manchester*, passed the River *Mersey*, and advanced to *Congleton*, as if they intended to meet and engage the Duke of *Cumberland*, whose advanced Guard was then at *Newcastle-under-Linc*; but suddenly they turned off to the Left, and marched into *Derbyshire*, seeming to have an Intention to slip by the Duke, and take their Way directly to *London*; where, when this News arrived, it occasioned the greatest Consternation imaginable: The Troops about *London* were ordered to march and form a Camp upon *Finchley-Common*; the Run upon the *Bank* grew more pressing; and all the publick Funds fell in their Price. On the 4th of *December*, the Rebels entered the Town of *Derby*, and soon after, contrary to Expectation, began to retreat Northward, by the Route they came. As soon as the Duke of *Cumberland* got Notice of their Retreat, he set out in pursuit of them, with all the Horse in his Army, and 1000 Foot Soldiers mounted on Horseback. Marshal *Wade*, who had marched Southward, as far as *Wakefield*, after the Rebels, detached a considerable Body of Cavalry under the Command of Major-General *Oglethorpe*, for the same Purpose, and returned with the rest of his Army to *Newcastle*. On *December* 18, the Duke came up with the Rear of the Rebels at *Clifton*, in *Northumberland*, and, after a smart Attack, drove them from the Village, with Loss. On the 30th, his Royal Highness retook *Carlisle*, after a Siege of nine Days, making the Rebel-Garrison Prisoners, their main Army having

now reached *Scotland*. Thus this Matter stood at the Close of the Year, in the Course of which, Sir *Robert Walpole*, Earl of *Orford*, the Rev. Mr. *Arthur Bedford*, skilled in Chronology and the Oriental Languages, Dean *Swift*, and *James Butler*, formerly Duke of *Ormond*, departed this Life.

On *January* 5, 1746, his Royal Highness the Duke of *Cumberland* returned to *St. James's*; and on the 17th of that Month the Rebel Army defeated the King's Forces, under the Command of Lieutenant General *Hawley*, at *Falkirk Moor*, a Mile South-West of *Falkirk*, though the latter were much superior in Numbers. *Hawley* retreated to *Linlithgow*, and the next Day to *Edinburgh*, leaving some Cannon, Tents, &c. behind him. The Rebels therefore returned to their ridiculous Enterprize of besieging the Castle of *Stirling*, though they had not Artillery sufficient for the Purpose, and one of the bravest Officers in his Majesty's Service, General *Blakeney*, to oppose, who was Governor of the Castle. Upon this Misfortune at *Falkirk*, it was thought expedient that the Duke of *Cumberland* should take upon him the Command of the Army in *Scotland*. On the 30th, he arrived at *Edinburgh*, and, next Day, marched towards *Stirling*; but, instead of waiting for him, the Rebels, very precipitately, retired Northward, the Duke with the Royal Army following them, as fast as the Season and excessive bad Roads would permit, so that he did not arrive at *Aberdeen* 'till the 27th of *February*. The *Hessians*, under their Hereditary Prince, arrived on the 8th at *Edinburgh*; for the *Dutch* Troops, it was now discovered, could not act, as they consisted of Part of the Garrisons of *Menin*, *Ypres*, &c. which had engaged



engaged not to serve against *France*, and, accordingly, they were soon after sent home. Mean-time the Rebels reduced the Castle of *Inverness* and Fort *Augustus*, and laid Siege to Fort *William* and *Blair* Castle, of *Athol*, but failed in both those Attempts. They had the Advantage in several Skirmishes with the King's Troops, in the *Highlands*, &c. which, however, was more than counterbalanced by the Loss they sustained by the Taking of their Ship, the *Prince Charles*, (formerly the *Hazard* Sloop, surprized by them in the Harbour of *Montrose*) which they had fitted out, and sent to *France* for Money and Arms; but in her Return, she was seized by Lord *Loudoun's* Men, with all her Crew and Cargo. The Duke was obliged to wait, at *Aberdeen*, for a Reinforcement from *England*, and 'till the *Spey* should become fordable; the *Hessians* with some *British* Regiments taking Post at *Perth*. On April 8, his Royal Highness, with the Army under his Command, marched from *Aberdeen*: On the 12th, he passed the *Spey* without Opposition, the Rebels retiring upon his Approach, though they might have greatly obstructed his Passage. On the 15th, the Earl of *Cromartie* and his Son, who, with 280 of their Men, had been in *Caithness*, to raise Money and Recruits for the Rebels, were attacked by the Earl of *Sutherland's* Militia, routed, and the Earl and his Son, 18 Officers and 185 Private Men, made Prisoners. On April 14, at Night, the Duke with his Army arrived at *Nairn*, and being assured that the Rebels were encamped at *Culloden* House, near *Inverness*, and were resolved to hazard a Battle, he rested the whole Day of the 15th, in his Camp at *Nairn*, to refresh his Men. In the Night the Rebels marched, with Intent to

attack the Royal Army before Day-Light; but that Design proved abortive, by reason of some Mismanagement amongst them; whereupon they returned to *Culloden*, resolving, in that Station, to wait for the Duke, who, on the 16th, marched from *Nairn*, between Four and Five in the Morning; and at Two in the Afternoon the Engagement began. The Rebels, with their usual Fury, attacked the Left Wing of the Royal Army, by which some Regiments of the first Line were put into Disorder; but those Regiments being supported by the second Line, and the Right Wing of the Rebel Army not being properly supported by their Left, the whole fell into Confusion, and his Royal Highness obtained a complete Victory, with a very small Loss. His Army consisted of 15 Batalions of Foot, one Squadron of Horse, two of Dragoons, the *Argyleshire* Militia, and a Part of Lord *Loudoun's* Regiment. The Rebels, according to our Accounts, were 8350 strong; but their own made them no more than 5000, as they had not been able to assemble all their Forces together for want of Money and Provisions. This Victory put a final End to the Rebellion; but the Duke continued with the Army some Time, to give proper Orders for securing the Tranquillity of the Country, whilst the young Pretender wandered from Place to Place, among the Mountains and Western Islands, and often without any Attendant, till two Ships, sent on Purpose from *France* to the Coast, took him and about thirty of his Followers on Board, and landed him, worn out with Fatigue and Hardships, at *Rescourt* in *Britany*. His Majesty received Addresses, to felicitate him upon this Victory, from both Houses of Parliament, (who also voted their Thanks to his

H h

Royal

Royal Highness for his great and eminent Services, and soon after settled 25,000 *l. per Ann.* on him and his Issue Male) and from the City of *London*, and all Parts of his Dominions. Nor were many Sacrifices made to the Publick Justice for their Concern in this unnatural Rebellion: An Act was passed for attainting the Earl of *Kelly*, Viscount *Strathallan*, Lord *Pitfigo*, and forty others, of High-Treason: The Earls of *Kilmarnock* and *Cromartie*, and Lords *Balmerino* and *Lowat*, were tried and found guilty, by their Peers; *Cromartie* was afterwards pardoned, as to Life; and *Kilmarnock* and *Balmerino* were beheaded on *Tower-Hill*, on *August 18*, and *Lowat* on *April the 9th* in the succeeding Year. *Charles Ratcliffe*, Esq; commonly called Earl of *Derwentwater*, was also beheaded on *December 8*, by a Rule of the Court of *King's Bench*, in pursuance of a Sentence passed upon him in 1715, for being concerned in the Rebellion that Year. As to the inferior Agents in the Rebellion, a very inconsiderable Number were executed, but a much greater transported to *America*; and it is agreed, by all Parties, that no Government ever shewed more Mercy on such an Occasion. A Publick Thanksgiving was held on *October 9*, for the Suppression of the Rebellion; and the Duke, some Months before, on his Arrival in *London*, was received with the greatest Testimonies of Regard, and welcomed, as our Deliverer and Preserver, with every Species of Rejoicings that a grateful People could exhibit.

Having thus connected into one View what relates to the Rebellion, I now proceed to the other remarkable Events of the Year. On *February 10*, by reason of some Discontent, the whole Ministry were about to resign their Places, as the Duke

of *Newcastle* and Earl of *Harrington*, the Secretaries of State, really did; and the Earl of *Granville* was appointed, *pro Tempore*, Secretary of State; however, after bringing their Royal Matter to their own Terms, they again resumed their several Functions. On *August 12*, after passing the Act for disarming the *Highlanders*, and restraining the Use of the *Highland Drefs*, and several others, his Majesty put an End to the long Session of Parliament with a most gracious Speech from the Throne. On *November 18*, the Parliament met again, and the Session was opened with a Speech as usual, the principal Heads of which were echoed back in the Addresses of the two Houses. The Court-Martial on the Admirals *Matthews* and *Lestock*, &c. unanimously acquitted the latter, and declared Mr. *Matthews* incapable of serving in the Royal Navy for the future. This Court-Martial, to the great Honour of our Constitution, having come to some insulting Resolutions, upon a Process being served upon one of their Members, from the Court of Common-Pleas, tending to defame Lord Chief Justice *Willcs*, were obliged to ask Pardon, in open Court, of that Magistrate, and to publish a Recantation in the *London Gazette*. In *August* a large Fleet was assembled, with a Number of Transports, and a Body of Troops under General *St. Clair*, at *Portsmouth*, intended for *Canada*; but they were afterwards employed in an Expedition to the Coast of *France*, the Fleet being under the Command of Admiral *Lestock*. On the 20th of *September*, the Troops were landed, near Port *L'Orient*, in *Britany*, and having performed very little for the Honour or Advantage of their Country, returned to *Spithead*, on *October 26*, with some Loss.

As



As to the War upon the Continent this Year, the *French* became Masters of *Brussels*, after 15 Days open Trenches, and made the Garrison Prisoners of War. They then possessed themselves of *Antwerp*, and soon made themselves Masters of its strong Citadel. *Mons*, *St. Ghislain* and *Charleroy*, were soon after reduced, as was the famous City of *Namur* on September 8, and its Citadel on the 19th of that Month. On the 30th, *M. Saxe* gained a great Advantage over the Allied Army, under Prince *Charles* of *Lorraine*, near *Liege*. In their Operations by Sea the *French* were not, however, so successful; for having sent a formidable Squadron, with 3000 Land-Forces on board, to the *West-Indies*, as Convoy to a large Fleet of Merchant-Ships bound to that Part of the World, and afterwards to undertake somewhat of Importance against us, in *North-America*, they met with such Storms, and were afflicted with such a Sickness, upon their Voyage to *Chebuctou* Harbour in *Nova-Scotia*, where they cast Anchor on the 16th of September, that they could undertake nothing, and returned in a shattered and miserable Condition to *Europe*. In *Italy*, the *Austrians* obtained, on June 4, a complete Victory over the combined Army of *French*, *Spaniards*, *Neapolitans*, and *Genoese*, near *Placentia*; and soon afterwards the City of *Genoa* was surrendered to them; but behaving in a very severe and haughty Manner to that subjected People, irritated to the last Degree, they flew to Arms, and in a few Days drove the *Austrians* out of the Territories of the Republick, after having killed and made Prisoners great Numbers. On the other hand, Marshal *Brown*, with an *Austrian* Army, passed the

*River Var*, and took Possession of *Vence*, the first Town on that Side in *France*; the *French* Troops, in their Retreat before him, having made the whole Country a Desert.

In this Year deceased, *Philip V.* King of *Spain*; *Christian VI.* King of *Denmark*; Mr. *Southern*, the Dramatick Poet; and the famous Admiral *Lestock*.

On January 7, 1747, a General Fast was observed throughout *Great-Britain* and *Ireland*, to implore the Blessing of the Almighty on our Arms. On the 15th, many Variations and Additions were made, by his Majesty in Council, to the Orders concerning the dreadful Distemper which had long raged among the horned Cattle. On June 17, his Majesty put an End to the Session of Parliament, after having passed an Act for taking away and abolishing the *Heretable Jurisdictions* in *Scotland*, &c. and an Act for the King's most gracious, general, and free Pardon, out of which 86 Persons were excepted, the chief of whom were the Earls of *Traquair* and *Kelly*. On the 18th, the Parliament was dissolved by Proclamation, having only sat six Years; and Writs were issued for the Election of a new one, to be returnable on August 13. On November 10, this new Parliament met, and again chose *Arthur Onslow*, Esq; for their Speaker. On the 12th, his Majesty opened the Session with a most gracious Speech from the Throne, in which he informed both Houses, that a Congress was actually agreed to be held at *Aix la-Chapelle*, to bring about a general Pacification.

With regard to the Progress of the War this Year, at Sea we gave the Enemy several remarkable Specimens of our Naval Skill and Bravery. On May 3, Vice-Admiral *Anson* and Rear-Admiral *Warren*,  
H h 2 with

with a Squadron of 15 Ships and two Sloops, fell in with a *French* Fleet of Men of War and Merchant-Vessels, and after a warm Engagement, took six of their Men of War, and three *East-India* Company's Ships fitted as Men of War; our own Fleet sustaining very little Damage, no Officer of Rank being killed, but the brave Captain *Grenville*, of the *Defiance*. Great Rejoicings were made for this important Success; and soon after, Mr. *Anson* was created a Peer, and Mr. *Warren*, a Knight of the Bath. The *French* lost a Million and a Half Sterling by this Defeat; 4000 Men were made Prisoners; and an Expedition to the *East-Indies*, with another to *America*, were rendered abortive. Rear-Admiral *Hawke*, also, being sent with a Squadron to intercept a *French* Fleet bound to the *West-Indies*, fell in with them on October 14, and, after a very hot Engagement, took two of their 74 Gun Ships, one of 70, two of 64, and one of 50. The gallant Captain *Saumarez*, of the *Nottingham*, was the only Officer of Note killed in the Action. For this great Service Mr. *Hawke* was promoted to the Rank of Vice-Admiral, and created a Knight of the Bath. Soon after, our Cruisers took 48 of the *French* homeward-bound Fleet from *St. Domingo*. On the 19th of the same Month, Captain *Denis*, of the *Centurion*, took 17 Sail of the *French* *West-India* Fleet. In November, the *Glorioso*, a *Spanish* Man of War, of 74 Guns and 750 Men, was taken by the *Ruffel* Man of War, in Conjunction with the *Royal-Family* Privateers of *Bristol*: The *Dartmouth* of 50 Guns, Captain *James Hamilton*, who had first engaged her, unfortunately blew up; and, of the whole Crew, only one Lieutenant and 13 Men were saved. Many

other rich Captures were also made this Year from our Enemies, particularly *Le Fort de Nantz*, of 650 Tons, 32 Guns, and 200 Men, bound from *La Vera Cruz* and the *Havanna* to *Cadiz*, worth above 300,000*l.* Sterling, by his Majesty's Ships the *Gloucester*, Captain *Saunders*, and the *Lark*, Captain *Cheap*.

In the War on the Continent we were far from meeting with equal Success; for Count *Lowendahl*, detached with 25,000 Men by Marshal *Saxe*, made himself Master of Part of the *Dutch* Frontier, by taking *Sluys*, *Sus Van Ghent*, and the Island of *Cadland*; which frouzed the heavy, phlegmatick *Hollanders*, as procured a sudden Change in their Government: The Populace rose in all Parts of the United Provinces, and compelled their Magistrates to declare for having the Prince of *Orange* Stadtholder of all the United Provinces; in Consequence of which, his Serene Highness was, on April 22, proclaimed at the *Hague*, Stadtholder, Captain-General, and Admiral-General, of the Seven United Provinces. Count *Lowendahl*, in May, reduced *Hulst* and *Axtel*, and finished, soon after, the Reduction of *Dutch-Flanders*. Mean-time the *French* grand Army remained in their Cantonments, and the Allies lay totally inactive in their Camps at *Antwerp* and between the Great and Little *Nethe*. But, in June, these two Armies came to Blows; and a Battle was fought between the Left Wing of the Allied Army, under the Duke of *Cumberland*, and the *French* under Marshal *Saxe*, at *Val*, from which our Army was obliged to retreat with the Loss of 4000 Men, and Sir *John Ligonier* and Count *Isenbourg* were taken Prisoners: But the *French*, though they kept the Field of Battle,

lost



lost above 8000 Men. After this Battle Count *Lowendahl* opened the Trenches before *Bergen-op-Zoom*, in the Night between the 14th and 15th of *July*, which the Garrison most gallantly and memorably defended until *September* 16, when it was taken by Storm, and the Remains of the Garrison made a good Retreat. In *Italy*, the French under the Chevalier *Belleisle*, having attacked the *Piedmontese* Entrenchments upon the Heights of *Exilles*, were, on *July* 19, repulsed and defeated by the *Austrians* and *Piedmontese*, with the Loss of their General and 6000 Men, who were slain. In *America*, the Island of *St. Bartholomew*, ten Leagues to the Northward of *St. Kitt's*, was taken by two *English* Privateers; but on the Continent, a Party of *English* in *Nova Scotia*, under Colonel *Noble*, was defeated by a Body of *French Canadians*, and *Indians*, under *M. de Villiers*; and the Colonel, with 140 of his Men, were killed upon the Spot, and the rest taken Prisoners. In the *East-Indies*, the French took from us *Fort St. George*, the Company's principal Settlement on the Coast of *Coromandel*. *M. de la Bourdenaye*, who took this Fort, was, at the Beginning of the next Year, discovered and made Prisoner on board a *Dutch Ship* at *Falmouth*, soon after released, and went to *France*, where he was seized and imprisoned in the *Bastile*, and was obliged to sacrifice great Part of the Riches, he had acquired in his *Indian Expedition*, to purchase his Liberty, and secure himself for the future.

The City of *Lima*, Capital of *Peru*, and Town and Port of *Callao*, according to Accounts received this Year, were ruined by a most dreadful Earthquake, on *October* 17, 1746: In the former, 1500 Per-

sons perished; the latter was swallowed up by the Sea, and 6 or 7000 Persons lost their Lives.

A Treaty was signed in *June*, between his Majesty and the *Czarina*, whereby, in Consideration of an annual Subsidy of 100,000 *l.* she engaged to keep on Foot, during the War, upon the Frontiers of *Livonia*, a Body of 50,000 Foot, and forty or fifty Gallies upon the Coasts of that Province, to act in such a Manner as his Majesty should require, in Assistance of his Allies.

In the Course of this Year, *John Earl of Stair*; Lieutenant-General *Wentworth*; Right Honourable *Duncan Forbes*, Lord President of the Session in *Scotland*; Sir *John Shadwell*, the Physician; Mr. *Wells*, the Poet; *Michael Mattaire*, Esq; the noted Editor of the *Classicks*; Dr. *Trapp*, an excellent Divine and Critick; and Mr. *Thomas Chubb*, well known for his acute Po'emical Writings, departed this Life: We had also advice of the Death of the famous *Kouli-Khan*, Emperor of *Persia*, who was murdered in his Tent.

On *February* 24, 1748, the Duke of *Gumberland* set out for *Flanders*, to take upon him the Command of the Allied Army, and on the 27th arrived at the *Hague*; and soon after, the Earl of *Sandwich*, and the other Plenipotentiaries, arrived at *Aix-la-Chapelle*. General *Haddick*, about the same Time, attacked the great *French Convoy* for *Bergen-op-Zoom*, defeated it, took 1000 Prisoners, with great Numbers of horned Cattle, Hogs, Sheep, &c. &c. which much distressed the Garrisons of that, and the adjacent Towns. In the Night between the 15th and 16th of *April*, N. S. the French opened their Trenches before *Maestricht*, which capitulated on the 7th of *May*, N. S. and

the Garrison marched out, on the 10th, with all the Honours of War. The next Day Hostilities ceased in *Flanders*, pursuant to the Preliminaries signed at *Aix*, by the Ministers Plenipotentiary of *Great-Britain*, *France*, and the States-General. At Sea, before those Preliminaries were signed, the *Magnanime*, a *French* Ship of War, of 70 Guns, was taken by the *Nottingham* and *Portland*: The *Union*, a *French* Register-Ship, with 150,000*l.* and 30 of the *French* Convoy, that escaped Admiral *Hawke*, were taken by the Ships on the *Leeward-Island* Station. On *May* 1, Advice was received, that Rear-Admiral *Knowles* had taken *Port-Louis*, upon the Island of *Hispaniola*, on the 8th of *March*, after three Hours warm Cannonading; by which he got Possession, also, of eight Ships, a Snow, and two Privateer Sloops, in the Harbour. Our Loss was, Captain *Rentone*, of the *Strafford*, Captain *Cust*, a Volunteer, and 19 Men, killed, and about 60 wounded: The Enemy had 160 killed and wounded, among whom were five Captains. These being all the material Transactions at the Close of the War, I shall now proceed to a Detail of the remaining Transactions of the Year.

On *January* 20, a Pardon passed the Great Seal for Lord *McCleod*, eldest Son of the Earl of *Cromartie*; who had been drawn by his Father into the late Rebellion. On the 29th, the Prison at *Kinsale*, in *Ireland*, was consumed by Fire, and fifty-four of the *French* Prisoners confined therein perished in the Flames. On *February* 6, the Earl of *Chesterfield* resigned the Seals of his Office, as one of his Majesty's Principal Secretaries of State. On the 13th, an Order of Council was published, directing the Condem-

nation of the Ships taken from the *Genoese*; which Prizes amounted to upwards of 200,000*l.* On *February* 18, his Majesty gave the Royal Assent to an Act for granting his Majesty a Subsidy of Five per Cent. (called Poundage) on all Dry Goods and Merchandizes imported, &c. and to some others; and soon after a Proclamation was issued, strictly forbidding all Commerce with the Subjects of the *French* King. In the same Month the Duke of *Bedford* was appointed one of the Secretaries of State. On *March* 8, the Court of Session, in *Scotland*, agreed that the Values of the Heretable Jurisdictions in *Scotland*, which were to be taken away by the late Act for that Purpose, were 164,232*l.* 16*s.* On the 25th, a most dreadful Fire broke out in *Exchange-Alley*, *Cornhill*, which proved more hurtful, in its Consequences, than any Conflagration since the Fire of *London*, in 1666: The Flames spread three different Ways; and notwithstanding every possible Assistance, near a Hundred Houses, in *Cornhill*, *Birchin-Lane*, *Exchange-Alley*, *George-Yard*, and all the adjacent Courts, &c. were consumed; and though much Goods, &c. were saved by the Vigilance of the Magistrates, yet the Loss was excessive great, and the Consternation in the City, during this dreadful Calamity, can scarcely be expressed. Accounts from *New-England* arrived, of a great Tumult which happened, at the Close of the last Year, at *Boston*, occasioned by Admiral *Knowles's* impressing several of the Inhabitants, and Seamen belonging to the outwardbound Ships, for the Service of his Fleet; a Practice which, it should seem, our *American* Brethren have no very favourable Opinion of: But by the vigorous Behaviour of the Assembly, after many Acts of

Vio-



Violence, this dangerous Riot was quelled: It was succeeded by a much greater Calamity, which befell that Capital on *December 23*; for the Court-House was consumed by Fire, and the Province-Records, &c. destroyed therein, to the almost-irretrievable Detriment of the whole Colony. About this Time Commodore *Cornelius Mitchel* was sentenced by a Court-Martial at *Jamaica*, to be mulcted five Years Pay, and rendered incapable of any future Service in the Navy, for Cowardice, and running away with a superior Force, from a *French Squadron* in those Seas. The Smugglers were very audacious in their illegal Practices at this Period, having, amongst other Enormities, broke open the King's Warehouse at *Colchester*, and conveyed away a great Quantity of Tea; upon which a Proclamation was issued of Pardon, and a Reward of 100*l.* for Discovery of each of the Parties in that outrageous Transaction. A Comet appeared, which was visible for several Days. On *May 9*, a Proclamation for a Cessation of Arms, pursuant to the Preliminaries signed at *Aix-la-Chapelle*, was read at the *Royal-Exchange*, &c. On the 13th, his Majesty, after giving the Royal Assent to the Bills that were ready, made a most gracious Speech to both Houses of Parliament, which was prorogued to the 30th of *June*; and it was afterwards again prorogued to *August 30*. In this Speech his Majesty acquainted them of the Preliminaries being signed, and that, in Consequence, Hostilities had ceased in *Flanders*, the Channel, &c. &c. On the 16th of *May*, a Pardon passed the Privy-Seal, of all Treasons, &c. to *John Murray*, of *Broughton*, Esq; late Secretary to the young Pretender, on account of his having assisted the

Government in the Conviction, &c. of his old Friends; and soon after the said Pardon passed the Great Seal. On *July 14*, was a remarkable Eclipse of the Sun, which began 3 Minutes 53 Seconds after Nine in the Morning, and ended 9 Minutes 13 Seconds after Twelve: That Luminary was eclipsed ten Digits. A Commission soon after passed the Seals, appointing the Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cumberland*, &c. &c. with all the other Privy-Counsellors, Commissioners of Appeal in regard to Prizes taken from the *French* and *Spaniards*. On *August 2*, a Convention was signed between the Ministers of *Great-Britain*, *France*, and the States-General; by which it was provided, that Orders should be sent to the 37,000 *Russians*, then in march through *Germany*, to march back again into their own Country; and that the King of *France* should order the same Number of his Troops from *Flanders* into the interior Parts of *France*. Great Numbers of Locusts, to the Surprize of the Populace, appeared in the City, Suburbs, and the adjacent Counties. About this Time, also, advice arrived that great Disorders and Insurrections had happened at *Constantinople*, in which above 4000 Persons were massacred, which at length produced the Deposition of the Grand-Vizier. On *October 11*, N. S. the Definitive Treaty of Peace was signed, at *Aix-la-Chapelle*, by the Ministers of *Great-Britain*, *France*, and the States-General; on the 20th, by those of the *Catholick King*; on the 23d, by the Empress-Queen; and soon after, by all the rest of the contending Powers; which, though little to our Honour or Advantage, put a period to a long and bloody War, which had been sorely felt by all *Europe*. As this famous Treaty

has been the Subject of much Discussion, I shall enlarge a little upon its Contents. The Preamble, which is very extensive, recites the original Motives which occasioned the late War, &c. *Art. 1.* consists of solemn Promises and Assurances to observe religiously the Peace concluded, &c. *Art. 2.* Every thing that has passed during the War, on all Sides, to be buried in a general and eternal Oblivion. *Art. 3.* The Treaties of *Westphalia*, *Madrid*, *Nimeguen*, *Ryswick*, *Utrecht*, *Baden*, *Hague*, the Quadruple Alliance, and the Treaty of *Vienna*, are all confirmed, that they may not be derogated from by the present Treaty. *Art. 4.* The Prisoners made, and the Hostages given, during the War, to be restored on all Sides, without Ransom, and set at Liberty in one Month, after the Exchange of the Ratifications, but to be obliged to pay all Debts they have contracted; and all the Ships of War and Merchant-Men, which have been taken since the Time stipulated by the Cessation of Arms, to be restored. *Art. 5.* All the Conquests made during the War, to be reciprocally restored. *Art. 6.* The Restitutions and Cessions to be made in six Weeks after the Ratifications. The Artillery found in the conquered Places to be restored in the same Condition they were in at the Time the Towns were taken; nevertheless, excepting that at *Mennin*, *Aeth*, *Mons*, *Charleroy*, and *Oudenard*. *Art. 7.* The Duchies of *Parma*, *Placentia*, and *Guastalla*, to be ceded to the Infant Don Philip, under an express Clause, that those States shall return to the present Possessors, in case that Prince dies without Male Issue, or he, or any of his Descendants, shall succeed to the Throne of *Spain*, or the *Two Sicilies*. *Art. 8.* Commissaries

to be appointed, immediately on all Sides, to assemble at *Nice* and *Brussels*, to effectuate the respective Restitutions and Cession. *Art. 9.* The King of *Great Britain* shall send to *France* two Noblemen of the first Distinction, by way of Hostages, who are to remain there until certain Advice is received of the Evacuation of *Cape-Breton*, and all the Places which may have been taken in the *East-Indies*. *Art. 10.* Means, as commodious as possible, for the Troops and Inhabitants, to be taken in the general Evacuation. *Art. 11.* All the Papers and Records found in the Towns, to be restored, expressly naming the Archives of *Mechlin*. *Art. 12.* The King of *Sardinia* to be maintained in the Possession of all his Estates, principally those ceded to him in 1743, excepting that Part of the *Philantin* he possesses, which he cedes to the Infant Don Philip. *Art. 13.* The Duke of *Modena* to be re-established in all his Estates, and Justice done him in respect to the Allodial Effects which he possessed in the Duchy of *Guastalla*. *Art. 14.* The Republick of *Genoa* to be re-established in all the Possessions she enjoyed before the War; the Money they had in the Banks of *Vienna* and *Turin*, and which was confiscated, to be restored, and the Payment of the Interests to commence from the Day of the Exchange of the Ratifications. *Art. 15.* Things to remain in *Italy*, on the same Footing they were before the War, excepting the Cessions made to the King of *Sardinia*, and the Infant Don Philip. *Art. 16.* The Assiento Treaty is confirmed, and Permission granted to send to the *Spanish West-Indies*, for four Years, a Ship extraordinary, for the Non-enjoyment of that Privilege during the War. *Art. 17.* The Fortifications



of *Dunkirk* to remain as they now are on the Land-Side, but former Treaties to be observed with regard to the Port, and the Works on the Sea-Side. *Art. 18.* The Differences on the Subject of the Sums which the King of *Great-Britain*, as Elector of *Hanover*, declared to be due to him, to be amicably adjudged; and the Affair of the Abbey of *St. Hubert* to be regulated at the same Time. *Art. 19.* The Article of the Treaty of Quadruple Alliance, which secures the Succession of the Crown of *Great-Britain* to the House of *Hanover*, is confirmed in all its Points. *Art. 20.* All his *Britannick* Majesty's German Dominions are guarantied by the contracting Powers. *Art. 21.* They guaranty likewise, in the most solemn Manner, the Pragmatick Sanction, that it may not be derogated from by the present Treaty. *Art. 22.* They guaranty, in like Manner, *Silesia*, and the County of *Glatz*, to his *Prussian* Majesty. *Art. 23.* As also the Execution of all the Articles of the present Treaty. *Art. 24.* The Exchange of Ratifications to be made at *Aix-la-Chapelle*, within one Month, by the Ministers of the contracting Powers, and, in six Weeks, by those of the Powers which acceded thereto. There were two other Articles in this Treaty; the 1st of which imports, That no Consequence is to be drawn from the Titles and Precedency which the contracting Parties have taken in this Treaty; and the 2d, That no Advantage is to be taken from the Use of the *French* Language.

On *November 29*, his Majesty opened the Session of Parliament with a most gracious Speech, in Return for which both Houses presented most dutiful Addresses, and received very cordial Answers. On

*December 16*, a violent Hurricane, which lasted near eight Hours, did great Damage both at Land and Sea. At the latter End of the Month the *British* Troops arrived from *Flanders*. On the 28th his Royal Highness the Duke arrived at *St. James's*; the Earl of *Suffex* and Lord *Cathcart* were sent to *France*, to reside there as *Hofstages*, agreeable to the 9th Article of the above-recited Treaty; and the *French* evacuated most of the Towns they had conquered in *Flanders*, and forced the young Pretender out of their Territories, who had refused to depart upon being required so to do by the King of *France*. At this Period the Debt of the Nation amounted to the Sum of 71,340,397*l.* 16*s* 0*d*  $\frac{1}{4}$ , and there remained in Cash, in the Exchequer, towards the Payment of it, 100,141*l.* 9*s.* 6*d.* 1748.

The principal Persons that deceased in the Year 1748, were, *Charles Seymour*, the great and magnificent Duke of *Somerset*; *William Herbert*, Marquess of *Powis*, the last Male of that Noble Family; *Dr. Edmund Gibson*, Bishop of *London*; Field Marshal *George Wade*; *John Percival*, Earl of *Egmont*; *Sir Theodore Janssen*, a *South-Sea* Director in the fatal Year 1720; *Dr. Clifton Wintringham*, a celebrated Physician; *Dr. Samuel Patrick*, Editor of *Hedericus's* Lexicon. and *Ainsworth's* Dictionary; *Mr. James Thomson*, the amiable Author of the *Seasons*; *Mr. Joseph Miller*, an experienced Botanist; *Dr. Turnbull*, Author of several Philosophical and Jurisprudential Treatises; *Dr. Isaac Watts*, a celebrated Dissenting Divine, well known from his many useful Writings; and the Rev. *Dr. Balguy*, Author of a Volume of Tracts in great Reputation.

On *January 15, 1749*, a Special Commission was opened at *Chichester*, for the Trial of a Number of Smugglers, for the barbarous and most horrid Murder of *Mr. Galley*, a Custom-house Officer, and *Mr. Chater*, a Shoe-Maker; when seven of them were convicted, and received Sentence of Death; and one dying in Gaol, the other six were soon after executed. On the 17th, a Copy of the Preliminary Articles of Peace were laid before the House of Commons. On *February 2*, the King's Declaration of a general Peace was proclaimed at the usual Places in the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, &c. On *April 25*, was a Publick Thanksgiving for the Peace; and on the 27th, a grand Fire-work was played off, in Sight of an immense Number of Spectators, in the *Green-Park, St. James's*, on the same Occasion. Murders and Robberies still continuing to be very frequent in and about the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, a Proclamation was published in *February*, promising a Reward of 100*l.* over and above all other Rewards, to be paid by the Lords of the Treasury, upon the Conviction of any Murderer or Robber, in those Cities, or within five Miles thereof. On *March 7*, the Lords of Trade and Plantations promised, by Advertisment, great Encouragement for the better peopling and settling the Province of *Nova-Scotia* in *North-America*. This Project being much patronized by Lord *Halifax* and other great Persons, and countenanced by the Government, many Settlers went over, and it is now become a flourishing and important Colony. About the same Time Letters were received from Admiral *Boscawen*, dated *October 17, 1748*, advising that he had been obliged to raise the Siege of *Pondicherry*, in the *East-*

*Indies*, on account of the vigorous Defence of the Besieged, the Number of his Men killed, and the Inclemency of the Season. He lost, in this Attempt, 757 Soldiers, 43 Artillery Men, and 265 Seamen; and the Enemy near 500 *Europeans*. Advices having been received that the *French* had settled in the Island of *Tobago*, to the great Alarm of our Neutral Islands, a Courier was dispatched to the *French* Court, and soon after the Duke of *Bedford* acquainted the Merchants by Letter, that the King of *France* disclaimed all Knowledge of such Proceedings, and had sent Orders to evacuate that Island. On *May 7*, the Duke of *Modena* arrived in *England*, *incognito*, was cordially received at Court, and some Weeks after returned to *Italy*. About the same Time the *Barbary* Corsairs made Prize of the Prince *Frederick* Packet-Boat from *Lisbon*; detained her near a Month at *Algiers*; and confiscated all the Money and Jewels found on board her, under the Pretence of its being the Property of the *Jews* and *Portuguese*. On *June 3*, a dreadful Fire, at *Glasgow* in *Scotland*, reduced 150 Dwelling Houses to Ashes. On *June 13*, his Majesty put an End to the Session of Parliament with a most gracious Speech from the Throne. On the 23d, Prince *George*, (his present Majesty) the Margrave of *Anspach*, the Dukes of *Bedford* and *Leeds*, and the Earls of *Granville* and *Albemarle*, were elected Knights of the Garter; and on the 26th, Sir *Peter Warren*, Sir *Edward Hawke*, Sir *Charles Howard*, Sir *Charles Amand Poulet*, Sir *John Mordaunt*, and Sir *John Sackville*, were installed Knights of the Bath, in *Henry VIIIth's* Chapel, in *Westminster-Abbey*. On the 1st of *July*, a great Riot happened in



in the *Strand*, which was occasioned by two Sailors having been ill used, in a House of ill Fame: They returned with a great Number of their Comrades, to take Revenge, and demolished all the Goods in the House, cut the Feather-Beds to Pieces, destroyed the Wearing-Apparel, and turned the Prostitutes naked into the Streets. The next Day they made a like Attempt upon an House of ill Fame in the *Old Bailey*. Many Persons were apprehended for these Outrages, and one *Bosavern Penlez* condemned and executed, as an Accessary. On *July 14*, Lieutenant *Couchman*, of the *Chesterfield* Man of War, and Lieutenant *Morgan*, of the Marines, were shot to Death, at *Portsmouth*, pursuant to the Sentence of a Court-Martial, for running away with that Ship on the Coast of *Guinea*. On *August 12*, a dreadful Fire broke out at *Battle-Bridge, Southwark*, which consumed near 100 Houses, to the Damage of above 50,000*l*. On *November 16*, his Majesty opened the Session of Parliament with a most gracious Speech from the Throne; which was answered by very dutiful Addresses from both Houses, and those Addresses received as cordial a Return. On the 22d, began a warm contested Election for a Member for the City of *Westminster*, in the room of Lord *Trentham*, whose Seat was vacated on his being promoted to be a Lord of the Admiralty: That Gentleman and Sir *George Vandeput* were the opposite Candidates; and after engaging the Attention of the Publick until *May 15*, in the next Year, Lord *Trentham* was declared to have a Majority of 176 legal Voters, on the Scrutiny. On *December 20*, his Majesty gave the Royal Assent to the Land-Tax Bill of three Shillings in the Pound, and

to the Bill for reducing the several Annuities of four Pounds *per Cent. per Ann.* to the several Rates of Interest therein mentioned. In this Month Admiral *Knowles* was tried by a Court-Martial on board the *Charlotte* Yacht, at *Deptford*, on account of some Allegations laid against him, in relation to an Action that happened on *October 1, 1748*, between a Squadron under his Command and a *Spanish* Fleet: The Admiral was found to have fallen under Part of the Fourteenth Article of the Articles of War; namely, the Word NEGLIGENCE, and no other, and also under the Twenty-third Article; and he was accordingly reprimanded by the Court.

As to foreign Affairs, this Year, few occurred of any great Importance. The Winter was so severe in *Russia*, that above 100 Persons were frozen to Death in the Streets of *Petersburgh*; and soon after the City of *Cazan* was consumed by Fire. Don *Philip* took Possession of *Parma* and *Placentia*, pursuant to the late Treaty. The Court of *Russia* having entertained some Suspicions, that the *Swedes* intended to change the Form of their Government after the Death of their King, various Declarations were made on each Side; and his *Prussian* Majesty, by Letter, desired the King of *Great-Britain's* good Offices to prevent the Interruption of the Peace of the North. The *French*, according to all Accounts, were employing every Means for restoring their Marine, which had been so rudely handled in the late War. Great Storms of Locusts infested *Poland, Bohemia*, and several Parts of *Germany*, destroying all the Fruits of the Earth in their baneful Progress.

The most distinguished Persons that died in 1749 were, that humane and generous Nobleman,

*John,*

*John Duke of Montagu*; Field-Marshal *Richard Temple*, Viscount *Cobham*; *John Lindsey*, the brave Earl of *Crawford*; Admiral Sir *John Norris*; *George Lord Carpenter*; that worthy Patriot, Sir *Watkin-Williams Wynne*; Mr. *Mark Catesby*, a laborious Naturalist, Author of *The Natural History of Carolina and the Bahama Islands*: Dr. *Smalbroke*, Bishop of *Litchfield* and *Coventry*; and *Ambrose Philips*, Esq; a celebrated Poet.

At the Beginning of the Year 1750, were received the melancholy Advices from Rear-Admiral *Boscawen*, in the *East-Indies*, dated April 20, 1749, That a Storm of Wind came on, at N. N. W. in the Night of the 12th of that Month, which continued all the next Day, in which his Majesty's Ships *Namur*, of 74 Guns, and *Pembroke*, of 60 Guns, were entirely lost; and all their Crews, save two Midshipmen and thirty-six Seamen, perished. The *Apollo*, of 40 Guns, and 350 Men, was lost at Sea, and never more heard of. The *Lincoln* and *Winchelsea*, *East-India* Ships, the *St. Francis* Tender, and nineteen Country Ships and Vessels, were all lost, but the greatest Part of their Crews saved. Nothing, in short, in the Neighbourhood of Fort *St. David's*, escaped the Storm, and the Sea-Shore, for many Leagues, was strewed with Wrecks and dead Bodies. On January 15, a new Fish-Market was opened in the City of *Westminster*. On February 8, between-Twelve and One at Noon, a Shock of an Earthquake was felt all over the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and Parts adjacent; and some Chimneys, &c. were thrown down; and in many Places the Waters were agitated in a very extraordinary Manner. At half an Hour after Five o'Clock, on March 8, in the

Morning, the Town was alarmed a second Time, with a more severe Shock than the former, attended with a hollow rustling Noise, as of Wind; and Numbers of People were awakened from their Sleep by its Violence: However, providentially, no Mischief happened, except the Throwing down of several Chimnies, and the Damaging of some Houses. In some Places the Shock was so violent, that the People ran from their Beds and Houses, almost naked, in the greatest Consternation at this very unusual Visitation. Preceding the Shock, there was observed a continual, though confused Lightning, until within a Minute or two of its being felt, which darted very low, and the Flashes were very strong. It was felt in *Effex*, *Surry*, and *Kent*, as well as in most Parts of the County of *Middlesex*; and in all the four Counties, the Panick was universal: A serious Air sat on every Countenance, for some Time after this terrible Alarm: The Pulpits and the Prefs were employed in calling a degenerate People to Repentance, and in deprecating the Wrath of Heaven: Enthusiasts prognosticated still greater Evils to ensue; and Vice was, for a little Space, out of Countenance. But soon all this was forgot; the Wicked returned to their Vices, and the Weak forgot their real, as well as their imaginary Terrors. On the 18th, between Five and Six in the Evening, an Earthquake was felt at *Gosport*, *Portsmouth*, and in the *Isle of Wight*; which greatly terrified and surprized the Inhabitants. On April 12, after passing a Bill for the Encouragement of the *White-Herring Fishery*, a Bill for assigning and improving of the Trade to *Africa*, and several other Bills, both publick and private, his Majesty closed the Session of Parliament with a most gracious Speech from



from the Throne. On the 16th, Admiral *Boscawen* with the Remains of his Squadron arrived from the *East-Indies*. The Keel-Men at *Newcastle* assembled in great Numbers, 6000 and upwards, and refused to work for six or seven Weeks; but at length they were induced to return to their Business. On the 20th, died Sir *Samuel Pennant*, Lord-Mayor of *London*, whose Death I mention, because it was occasioned by an infectious Distemper, supposed to be the Gaol Fever, caught at the Sessions-House in the *Old-Bailey*: Twenty other Gentlemen died of the same Disease; and amongst them, Mr. Baron *Clarke*, Judge *Abney*, and Sir *Daniel Lambert*, Knight and Alderman. A Pardon was, about the same Time, granted to Captain *Clarke*, a Sea-Commander, who had been condemned to die, for the Murder of Captain *Innes*, whom he had killed in a Duel. On *July 5*, arrived the first Parcel of Herrings caught by the Busses of the newly-Incorporated Society of the free British Fishery off *Shetland*. About the same Time, the Prince and Princess of *Wales*, with the Lady *Augusta*, their eldest Daughter, made a Tour to the West of *England*, and were received every where with the greatest Honour and Respect. On the 11th, a great Storm of Hail and Rain laid the Streets of the Metropolis and its Environs under Water, and did great Damage to the Garden Grounds. In *August*, the Prince and Princess of *Wales*, with their two youngest Sons, and their eldest Daughter, visited *Southampton* and the *Isle of Wight*, being everywhere received with most affectionate Congratulations. On *September 30*, a violent Shock of an Earthquake was felt in *Northamptonshire*, *Leicestershire*, and *Lincolnshire*. On

*October 25*, the Prince of *Wales* went in State to *Fishmongers-Hall*, in *Thames-Street*, where being properly received and seated, Lieutenant-General *Oglethorpe* addressed his Royal Highness in an handsome Speech, which was very graciously answered; when the Charter being produced, and presented to his Royal Highness, as Governor of the Society, he was pleased to return it to the Care of *Slingby Bethell*, Esq; the President. After having particular Honours paid him, he returned in the same Manner to *Leicester-House*, having charmed every one by his most engaging and captivating Affability. On *November 17*, the *New-Bridge* at *Westminster* was opened, and answered all the Expectations of the Publick. In *November* a new Treaty was concluded between his Majesty and the Emperor of *Morocco*, and an Agreement was made for the Redemption of sixty British Captives. A Defensive Treaty, or Convention, was also entered into, between his Majesty and *Spain*, for settling all Disputes between the two Nations.

Great Tumults and Disorders happened this Year in the Seven United Provinces; and some of the Voters at *Haerlem* were killed. On *June 27*, a terrible Earthquake almost destroyed the Island of *Cerigo*, in the *Archipelago*; and above 2000 of the Inhabitants perished. Some Time before, they had also been greatly alarmed by Earthquakes in many Parts of *France*, *Germany*, &c. On *July 31*, *John*, King of *Portugal*, deceased, and was succeeded by his eldest Son, *Joseph*. About that Time a new Treaty of Subsidy, between the Maritime Powers and the Elector of *Bavaria*, was signed at *Herenhausen*, near *Hanover*, where his

his Majesty then was, on a Visit to his German Dominions. In *September*, his *Prussian* Majesty established a Company at *Embsen* to trade to the *East-Indies*.

The Persons of Note, who deceased in the Year 1750, were *Algernon*, Duke of *Somerset*; *Charles*, Duke of *Richmond*; *Thomas Watson Wentworth*, Marquess of *Rockingham*; *Henry Herbert*, Earl of *Pembroke*; *William Legge*, Earl of *Dartmouth*; Viscount *Torrington*; Admiral Sir *Chaloner Ogle*; Rt. Hon. *Stephen Poyntz*, formerly Preceptor to the Duke of *Cumberland*; Mr. *Gordon*, Author of *The Independent Whig*, &c. Dr. *Conyers Middleton*, an excellent Divine; Dr. *John Tyson*, an eminent Physician; *Aaron Hill*, Esq; the Poet; and Mr. *Solomon Low*, a learned and ingenious Critick.

On *January 17*, 1751, his Majesty opened the Session of Parliament with a most gracious Speech, in which he acquainted them, that he had concluded a Treaty with the King of *Spain*, whereby such particular Differences, as could not be settled in a General Treaty, had been amicably adjusted. On *February 5*, a Proclamation was issued, promising a Reward of 1000*l.* for apprehending the Author, for each of the Printers 500*l.* and for each of the Publishers 50*l.* of a treasonable Piece, entitled *Constitutional Queries*, which Piece was also burnt by the Common Hangman. On *March 20*, his Royal Highness *Frederick-Lewis*, Prince of *Wales*, departed this Life, to the extreme Regret of his Royal Father, and the whole Nation, to which he had greatly endeared himself by his many publick and private Virtues. His Death was occasioned by a Cold, which was followed by a Pleurisy, and thus carried him off in the forty-sixth Year of his Age. This melancholy Event was the Occasion

of Addresses of Condolence from both Houses of Parliament, &c. &c. On *April 13*, the Remains of his Royal Highness were deposited, with great Pomp and Ceremony, in a Vault in *Henry the VIIIth's* Chapel; the Duke of *Somerset* being Chief Mourner. On the 20th, Letters Patent passed the Great Seal of *Great-Britain*, creating his eldest Son *George-William*, (our present most gracious Sovereign) Prince of *Great-Britain*, Prince of *Wales*, and Earl of *Chester*. On *May 22*, his Majesty gave his Royal Assent to a Bill for providing for the Administration of the Government, in case it should descend to any of the Children of his late Royal Highness under the Age of 18 Years, &c. &c. A Bill for altering the Stile, and regulating the Commencement of the Year; and to several other Bills. The first Bill being rendered of no Importance, as his present Majesty was of Age before he ascended the Throne, I shall take no Notice of its Contents; and as to that for regulating the Commencement of the Year, &c. it was thereby enacted, That the Year should commence on *January 1*, and that the New Stile should be used, in all the King's Dominions, as being nearer to the true Course of the Sun, by three Days in 400 Years. On *June 25*, his Majesty put an End to the Session with a very gracious Speech from the Throne: On that Day, consequently, Mr. *Murray*, Brother of Lord *Elibank*, was discharged from his Confinement in *Newgate*, who had been committed thereto, some Time before, by the House of Commons, for some irregular Behaviour at the *Westminster* Election, and for menacing the High-Bailiff of *Westminster* in the Execution of his Office. On *October 11*, died his Most Serene



Serene Highness *William Prince of Orange and Nassau*, Son-in-Law of his late Majesty, in the 41<sup>st</sup> Year of his Age, of a Quinsey, leaving Issue a Daughter, the present Princess of *Nassau-Weilbourgh*, and a Son, Prince *William*, the present Prince of *Orange*, and Stadtholder of the Seven United Provinces. On *October 25*, the Society of *Antiquarians* were incorporated by his Majesty's Charter. On *November 14*, the Parliament met, and his Majesty, in his Speech to both Houses, desired them seriously to think of Means for putting a Stop to Profligacy, Irreligion, Gaming, &c. which indeed were arrived, about this Time, to a very alarming Height. On *November 21*, was an Eclipse of the Moon, which began after Eight, and ended at Eleven, eight Digits being eclipsed. A Proclamation was issued on the 30<sup>th</sup>, promising a Reward of 500*l*. for apprehending the afore-mentioned Mr. *Murray*; and on the 20<sup>th</sup> of *December* an Express arrived with the melancholy Tidings of the Death of her Majesty, *Louisa*, Queen of *Denmark*, his Majesty's youngest Daughter.

In the Beginning of this Year, three Parts of the City of *Fiume* were swallowed up by an Earthquake. In *April*, *Frederick*, King of *Sweden*, and Landgrave of *Hesse-Cassel*, departed this Life, and was succeeded by *Adolphus-Frederick* of *Holstein-Eutin*, Bishop of *Lubeck*, who had been appointed his Successor by the Diet of *Sweden*. A dreadful Eruption of Mount *Vesuvius* did incredible Damage in the Neighbourhood of that Volcano; and in *September*, our Sugar-Islands suffered, by a violent Hurricane, to the Amount of above 200,000*l*. On the 11<sup>th</sup> of the same Month, an Hurricane happened also at *Jamaica*, wherein near thirty Sail of

Vessels were lost, Numbers of Persons perished, and prodigious Damage was done to the whole Island: Advice arrived from *Constantinople*, that in the preceding Summer 70,000 Persons had been carried off by the Plague in that Capital.

The principal Persons that deceased in the Year 1751 were, *Francis Scott*, Duke of *Buccleugh*, Grandson of the unfortunate Duke of *Monmouth*; *John Hervey*, Earl of *Bristol*; *Henry St. John*, the late Viscount *Bolingbroke*; Admiral *Mathews*, and Dr. *Freind*, late Master of *Westminster School*.

In *January*, 1752, a Copy of a Treaty of Peace and Commerce between his Majesty and the Kingdom of *Tripoly*, and another of a Treaty of Peace and Commerce with the State of *Tunis*, concluded by the Ministration of Commodore *Keppel*, were transmitted home by that Gentleman. On *March 26*, his Majesty gave the Royal Assent to a great Number of Bills, and particularly that for better preventing the horrid Crime of Murder; by which it is enacted, That all Persons convicted of Wilful Murder shall be executed on the next Day but one following that on which the Sentence is pronounced, which it shall be immediately on Conviction; except it falls on a *Sunday*, when they shall be executed on the *Monday* following: Afterwards their Bodies shall be delivered to the Company of Surgeons to be dissected, or, in the Country, to such Surgeon or Surgeons as the Judges of Assize shall direct. After the Sentence shall be passed, the Murderer shall be fed on Bread and Water only, &c. &c. This new Provision, or some other, against this abominable Crime, seemed to be greatly wanted, as many atrocious Murders were committed about this Time:

Time : Miss *Blandy*, of *Henley on Thames*, was executed for poisoning her Father ; *Elizabeth Jefferys*, (with *John Swan*, his Servant) for the Murder of her Uncle ; and Captain *Lowry*, for the Murder of his Cabbin-Boy ; all within six Months, besides many other shocking Tragedies of the same Kind. Advice arrived from *Guinea*, that the *French* had been driven from *Annamabo*, by Commodore *Buckle*, where they were making a Settlement, contrary to the Faith of Treaties. On the 4th of *June*, Prince *Edward*, the Prince of *Orange* by Proxy, the Earls of *Lincoln*, *Winchelsea*, and *Cardigan*, were installed Knights of the Garter, at *Windsor*. On *June 27*, a dreadful Fire broke out in *Lincoln's-Inn*, *New-Square*, which consumed two Sets of Chambers, destroying great Quantities of valuable and important Writings, Deeds, and Plate, Money, &c. On *July 2*, the Trustees of his Majesty's Colony of *Georgia*, in *America*, surrendered to his Majesty, and Successors, the Charter granted to them in the Year 1719 ; and a Grant passed the Great Seal, investing his Majesty, his Heirs and Successors, with the said Charter. On *July 6*, Mr. *Owen*, a Bookseller, was tried upon an Information for publishing the Case of the Honourable *Alexander Murray* ; when the Jury brought in their Verdict, *Not Guilty*. In *September*, Advice arrived from the *East-Indies*, where War was carried on by the two Companies, that Colonel *Clive* had obliged the *French* to retire from before *Arcot*, and had gained many other signal Advantages over them. These Disturbances in the *East-Indies* had been occasioned by the Intrigues of the *French* Company's Officers, and by those of both Companies engaging too much in the Quarrels of the Natives.

Upon his Majesty's Arrival, this Year, from his usual Visit to his German Dominions, being waited upon by the City of *London* with a congratulatory Address thereon, his Majesty was pleased to confer the Honour of Knighthood on the Lord Mayor, *Crisp Gascoyne*, Esq ; the Recorder, the two Sheriffs, and the Chamberlain. Advice soon after arrived, that on *September 15*, a violent Hurricane at *Charles-Town*, in *South-Carolina*, had driven all the Vessels in the Harbour on Shore, ruined the Wharfs and Bridges, and blown down a great Number of Houses, &c. The Damage done by this fatal Storm was immense ; and Plantations thirty Miles round *Charles-Town* were swept clear, and had all their Buildings quite demolished : Numbers of Lives and much Cattle were lost, and in short the Devastation was extremely deplorable. On the 30th of the same Month, another violent Hurricane added greatly to the Distress of this suffering Colony, though it did more Damage in the Country than at *Charles-Town*.

Advice arrived this Year, that by a dreadful Fire near 5000 Houses were consumed at *Moscow*, Capital of the *Russian* Empire. That intriguing Statesman, Cardinal *Alberoni*, paid his Debt to Nature. The Troubles in *Corfica* rose to a very great Height, there being three Parties on foot, one for the *Genoese*, one for the *French*, and the third for the Independency of the Island against both. There arose also, this Year, great Disputes between the King and the Clergy of *France*, in relation to the Taxation of their Revenues, and between the latter and the Parliament of *Paris*, about the Constitution *Unigenitus*.

The Persons of most Note, who died in 1752, were, *John Murray*, Earl



Earl of *Dunmore*, Lord *Mark Kerr*, and Sir *Philip Honeywood*, old General Officers; Dr. *Peploe*, Bishop of *Chester*; Dr. *Butler*, Bishop of *Durham*; Dr. *Benjon*, Bishop of *Gloucester*; that learned Divine and Mathematician, Mr. *William Whiston*; Dr. *Cromwell Mortimer*, Secretary to the Royal Society; *William Cusfelden*, a skilful Surgeon; Dr. *Munro*, Physician to *Bethlem Hospital*; Sir *John Hynde Cotton*, a steady Patriot; Vice-Admiral Sir *Peter Warren*; Sir *Henry Penrice*, late Judge of the Admiralty; and Sir *John Bosworth*, Chamberlain of London.

At the Beginning of the Year 1753, the *French* began to be very troublesome, and to practise their old Intrigues in *America*: They assaulted a Truck-House in the *Tawig-tawee* Nation, at the Back of *Virginia*, and carried the *English* therein, with some of the *Indians*, Captives to *Canada*. Advice also arrived that the *French* at *Louisbourg* had sent a Party of *Indians* to distress the newly-established Colony of *Nova-Scotia*, who had committed many Hostilities. On *January 11*, his Majesty opened the Session of Parliament with a most gracious Speech: The Bills that were most warmly debated in both Houses, in this Session, were, that for Naturalizing the *Jews*, which was violently opposed both within Doors and without, and occasioned such a Prejudice in the Minds of the People, that, though it passed into a Law at the Close of the Session, it was thought expedient to get it repealed at the Beginning of the next. That for better preventing clandestine Marriages also was the Occasion of great Debates, and the Strength of Argument seemed to lie on the Side of the Opposition; however, it passed, and received the Royal Assent on *June 7*,

when his Majesty put an End to the Session.

In *January*, his *Prussian* Majesty transmitted a Memorial to the *British* Court, reclaiming certain Vessels that had been taken by *English* Cruizers in the Course of the late War, and threatening to stop Payment of the *Silesia* Loan till he received due Satisfaction. The King laid this Memorial before the Attorney and Solicitor General, &c. who gave an ample and satisfactory Answer to all the Allegations contained therein; but notwithstanding, when, some Years after, we contracted an Alliance with that Monarch, Satisfaction was made to him, as his Friendship was then become necessary. About *May*, great Tumults arose, and Disorders were committed, in the City of *Bristol*, by an Insurrection of the Colliers; and several Lives were lost before they could be quelled. On *June 7*, Dr. *Archibald Cameron* was drawn to, and hanged and quartered at *Tyburn*, for High-Treason, as being attainted for his Concern in the late Rebellion. He had been taken in *Scotland*, endeavouring to spirit up new Troubles, about two Months before. On the 8th of that Month a Shock of an Earthquake was felt in several Places in the N. W. Parts of *England*. On the 10th of *July*, the Village of *Helmes-Chapel*, in *Cheshire*, was totally destroyed by a dreadful Fire. On *November 15*, his Majesty opened the Session of Parliament with a most gracious Speech; and soon after, the Land-Tax-Bill of two Shillings in the Pound, the Malt-Tax, Mutiny, and several other Bills, received the Royal Assent. About this Time Debates ran very high in *Ireland*, where a Dispute had occurred between the Ministry and the Parliament of that Kingdom, in a

Case where the Prerogative was on one Side concerned, and the Liberties of the People and the Independence of Parliament on the other; and many Patriots were turned out of their lucrative and honourable Employments for sticking against the Court. On *December 27*, six Knights of the Bath were privately installed, in *Henry the VIIth's Chapel*.

The Whale-Fishery, which had for some Years been revived and carried on with great Spirit by this Nation, was remarkably successful this Year; not one Ship was lost, and the 48 Sail employed brought home 144 Whales and a half.

The Disputes between the Parliament and Clergy of *France* still continued, and had arrived to great Inveteracy on both Sides; and the King declaring in Favour of the Prelates, the Members of all the Chambers, except the Great Chamber, were banished, and the usual Administration of Justice ceased in *Paris* and its Environs; and at length the Members of the Great Chamber were likewise sent into Exile. The Town of *St. Remo*, refusing to agree to some arbitrary Impositions of their Masters, the Republick of *Genoa*, was bombarded, several of their Chiefs beheaded, and an intolerable Fine imposed upon that Town and District.

The Persons of most Note, who departed this World in 1753, were, Dr. *Berkeley*, the excellent and publick-spirited Bishop of *Cloyne*; Sir *Hans Sloane*, an eminent Physician, and Virtuoso; Mr. Justice *Burnet*, youngest Son of Dr. *Gilbert Burnet*, late Bishop of *Salisbury*; Commodore *Brown*, who in concert with Admiral *Vernon* took *Porto-Bello*; and Dr. *James Foster*, a celebrated Preacher and amiable Divine amongst the Dissenters.

At the Beginning of *February*, 1754, was a very hard Frost; and the River *Thames*, Westward, was filled with Ice, so as to hinder the Navigation, and Persons passed and repassed it on Foot, above *Kingston Bridge*. On *March* the 5th, the Session of Parliament was opened; and, in the Course thereof, an Act was passed to punish Mutiny and Desertion in the Officers and Soldiers of the *East-India Company*; and many others. On *April* the 6th, the King put an End to the Session; and, on the 8th, the Parliament was dissolved by Proclamation, and a new one ordered; the Writs for that Purpose bearing Date *April* the 9th, and returnable on *May 31*. Many of the Elections were warmly contested, particularly those for the City of *London* and the County of *Oxford*. On *May* the 31st, the new Parliament met, and was opened by Commission; the Commons again chose the Right Honourable *Arthur Onslow*, their Speaker, and on *June 5*, this short Session ended. On *November 14*, the Parliament met again, and his Majesty, opened the Session with a most gracious Speech, and several Bills were passed before the Close of the Year.

Many Disputes arose between our Merchants and the Court of *Portugal*; and, after much Altercation, his *Portuguese* Majesty agreed to permit the Exportation of Gold, coined or uncoined, upon the Payment of a Duty of 2*l.* per Cent.

Advice was received from *Virginia*, that the *French* had built three Forts upon the *Ohio*, on the Lands of which a Grant had been made by his Majesty to several Gentlemen of *London* and *Virginia*; and at the latter End of the Year, Colonel *Washington*, being sent from *Virginia*



*Virginia* with a Party to dislodge them, was attacked by a superior Force, and defeated, with the Loss of 150 killed; and 70 wounded. On *April 19*, a Shock of an Earthquake was felt in *Yorkshire*, and all along the Northern Coasts of the Kingdom. Advice arrived, about the same Time, of several signal Advantages gained by Major *Siringer Lawrence*, in the *East-Indies*, over the *French*. In *October*, two Regiments were ordered to be raised in *America*, under Colonel *Shirley*, and Sir *William Pepperell*. In the same Month the River *Rye*, at *Helmley* in *Yorkshire*, overflowed, and destroyed several People, much Cattle, many Houses, Barns, &c. An Earthquake also did great Mischief at *Constantinople*, destroyed two Thirds of *Grand Cairo* in *Egypt*, and buried near 40,000 Persons in the Ruins. The Parliament of *Paris*, towards the Close of the Year, were recalled from their Exile, and restored to their Functions.

The most remarkable Affair that employed, however, the Attention of the Publick this Year, was that of *Elizabeth Canning*, who pretended to have been robbed by two Fellows in *Moorfields*, about Ten in the Evening, on New-Year's Day, 1753, and afterwards dragged to the House of one Mrs. *Wells*, at *Enfield-Wash*, where Menaces and Confinement were made use of to induce her to turn Prostitute; and an old Gipsy, one *Mary Squires*, stripped her of her Stays. During her Confinement, of near a Month, she had no other Subsistence, she said, but a Quarter Loaf, and a Gallon of Water. After so long a Durance, she took an Opportunity of pulling down some Boards which were nailed before the Window, made her Escape, and came to her Mother's, in a very miserable naked Condition, almost

deprived of her Senses. On the 8th of *February* the same Year, one *Vertue Hall*, a young Prostitute in the same House, confessed her being Witness to the above ill Usage and Confinement, after a long Examination before Mr. *Fielding*, a Justice of Peace. The Gipsy and Mrs. *Wells* were thereupon tried at the *Old-Bailey*; the former received Sentence of Death, and the latter to be branded and imprisoned six Months, as an Accessary after the Fact. Some Time after, positive Evidence being produced, that *Mary Squires* was at *Abbotsbury* when it was deposed the Robbery was committed, and *Vertue Hall* having retracted her Evidence before the Lord Mayor; that Magistrate, surprized at the many Improbabilities and Absurdities in *Canning's* Story, undertook to discuss it to the Bottom for the Sake of Truth and Justice: The Friends of *Canning*, on the other Side, were convinced of her Innocence, and the Truth of her Relation; and the two Parties formed on this Occasion divided both Town and Country, and this Affair was the constant Topick of Discourse and Dispute for almost a Twelvemonth: Pamphlets and Papers were written on each Side, with no inconsiderable Degree of Acrimony; much Ill-blood was bred, and scandalous Liberties were taken with the Characters of those, on both Sides, who were principally concerned. His Majesty ordered the whole Affair to be laid before the Attorney and Solicitor-General, upon whose Report *Squires* was pardoned. *Elizabeth Canning* was soon after indicted and tried for Perjury, at the *Old-Bailey*; and during her Trial, which lasted many Days, the Court adjourning from Time to Time, there were great Mobs and Riots about the Sessions-House; and the Lord Mayor,

or, Sir *Crispe Gascoyne*, was often insulted and abused in his Passage to and from the Court : The Jury, however, brought her in guilty, and she was committed to *Newgate* ; but two of the Jurymen having made Oath that the Verdict they had given was not agreeable to their Consciences, (for though they believed her guilty of Perjury, they did not believe her guilty of wilful and corrupt Perjury) the Council for the Prisoner moved for a new Trial ; which Point being next Session argued before five of the Judges, they gave their Opinion, that the Verdict was a good one, and perfectly agreeable to the Evidence, and therefore, in Conclusion, she was sentenced to one Month's Imprisonment, and to be transported for seven Years.

The most noted Persons, who died this Year, were, *John Leveson Gower*, Earl Gower ; Sir *William Lee*, Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench ; Right Honourable *Henry Pelham*, Chancellor of the *Exchequer*, and Prime Minister since the Resignation of the late Earl of *Orford* ; Dr. *Richard Mead*, the celebrated Physician ; Sir *John Strange*, Master of the Rolls ; *Martin Folkes*, Esq; President of the Royal Society ; Mr. *James Gibbs*, a skilful Architect ; Mr. *Abraham De Moivre*, the Mathematician ; and the well-known Writer and Magistrate, *Henry Fielding*, Esq;

The Beginning of the Year 1755 was distinguished by Military Preparations of every Kind, and there was a warm Press for Seamen and Landmen ; for now the Designs of the *French* became fully apparent, Advices every Month arriving of the Incroachments of that perfidious People, in *America* ; and it appeared they were now fitting out a strong Fleet at *Brest* and *Rockfort*, which

was supposed to be destined for that Part of the World. On *March 25*, his Majesty sent a Message to the House of Lords, signifying the Necessity of augmenting our Forces by Sea and Land, in order to provide for the Security of our Colonies in *America*, as well as for the Defence of his Kingdoms ; to which Messages both Houses returned warm and dutiful Addresses. In *April*, Advice arrived that Commodore *Keppel* with his Squadron, and the Land Forces sent to that Part of the World, under the Command of General *Braddock*, to the Succour of the Colonies, were safely arrived in *Virginia*. The whole Nation was now incensed, to the last Degree, at the perfidious Conduct of the *French* in *America* ; so that most of the considerable Towns and Corporations in the Kingdom gave Rewards, in Addition to his Majesty's Bounty, for the Encouragement of Seamen and Landmen, to enter into his Majesty's Service. Fifty Companies of Marines were ordered to be raised, and the Admirals *Boscawen* and *Mostyn*, with a Squadron of fifteen Sail of the Line, a Frigate and a Sloop, having two Regiments on board, sailed for *North-America*. On the 27th of *May*, Admiral *Holbourne* sailed with a Squadron of Men of War, to reinforce Admiral *Boscawen*, two Ships of whose Squadron, the *Dunkirk* and *Defiance*, on *June 10*, falling in with two *French* Men of War, the *Alcide*, of 64 Guns and 480 Men, and the *Lys*, pierced for 64 Guns, but mounting only 22, and having eight Companies of Land-Forces on Board, which were separated from the *French* Fleet under M. *de la Mothe*, a Skirmish happened, in which the *Alcide* and *Lys* were taken. Soon after, Sir *Edward Hawke* sailed from *Portsmouth*



mouth with a strong Squadron, and the Duke de Mirepoix, the French Ambassador, departed this Kingdom. Advice, about the same Time, arrived that Colonel Monkton, in Nova-Scotia, with a Party of Regulars and some Irregulars, had taken the important Forts of Beaufejour and Bay Verte from the French, with very little Loss: But, as more than a Counterbalance for the late good News, the melancholy Tidings arrived, that the *Mars*, of 70 Guns, was lost at the Mouth of Halifax Harbour, and, from Virginia, that Major-General Braddock, marching through the Woods, to Fort Du Quesne, with 1200 Men and 10 Pieces of Artillery, was suddenly attacked by a Body of French and Indians, who fired from behind the Trees and Bushes; and our Men, thus assaulted, and not being able to see the Enemy, fell into Confusion; the General, Colonel Sir Peter Halkett, with many Officers of Note, and 200 Men, were killed, about 400 wounded, and the Remains of our scattered Troops retreated to join those under the Command of Colonel Dunbar, left at Wills's Creek, which consisted of about 800 Men, with most of the Baggage of the Army, &c. who soon after further retreated with his whole Corps to Pennsylvania. In the Month of September, our Men of War, having had Orders to make Reprisals upon the French, brought in upwards of 40 French Ships; and the Blandford Man of War was taken by them, but, in a vain Display of Moderation, they soon after released her. However, in the Remainder of the Year, we made a still greater Number of Prizes. Meantime the French Indians made cruel Inroads upon the Frontiers of Virginia, Pennsylvania, &c. destroying all before them, murdering

Men, Women, and Children, and forcing the Inhabitants to fly from their Plantations. On September 8, by way of some Retaliation for Braddock's Misfortune, Major-General Johnson defeated a French Army under Baron Dieskau, who attacked his Intrenchments at Lake George: The Baron was taken Prisoner with his Aid-de-Camp, and 1000 French were killed in the Attack and Retreat. Mr. Johnson was for his Bravery created a Baronet, and moreover rewarded by the Parliamentary Grant of a considerable Sum of Money. In November, the *Esperance*, a French Ship of War, of 70 Guns, was taken by the *Orford*, Captain Stevens; and soon after, Advice arrived, that Major Fry had burnt 253 Houses, &c. of the French Neutrals in Nova-Scotia, and defeated a Party of them that opposed him. Two Treaties were also made publick about that Time; one of them with the Empress of Russia, who was, on certain Conditions, to furnish 55,000 Horse and Foot, and 50 Galleys, and the other with the Landgrave of Hesse-Cassel, who was to furnish 8000 Horse and Foot, whenever he was required so to do; for it was not doubted that the French would fall upon the Electorate of Hanover, as they were not a Match for us at Sea.

Having thus given the History of this now-kindling War for the present Year, I shall return to such other Transactions as are of Importance enough to be recorded in this brief History.

On April 25, his Majesty, after giving the Royal Assent to a Number of publick and private Bills, put an End to the Session. Amongst the Bills was one for the Relief of Insolvent Debtors. On November 13,

the Parliament met again, and his Majesty opened the Session with a most gracious Speech; and on *December* 10 and 23, his Majesty gave the Royal Assent to the Land-Tax, Mutiny, and Malt Bills. The Grand Signor died at the Beginning of the Year, and was succeeded, in the *Ottoman* Throne, by his Brother *Osman*. About the same Time a desperate Gang of Smugglers, headed by one *Mandrin*, carried on, by Force of Arms, an illicit Trade in the South of *France*, and defeated several Parties of Troops sent to suppress them. At length their Leader being taken and broke upon the Wheel, a Stop was put to their Insolencies. The Dey of *Algiers* was assassinated in his Palace by his mutinous Soldiers, and succeeded by *Ali Basha*, Aga of the *Spakis*. In *March*, Prince *Frederick* of *Hesse*, his Majesty's Son-in-Law, turning Roman Catholick, his Majesty and the States-General, at the Requisition of the Landgrave his Father, guaranteed the Protestant Religion and Succession in that Landgraviate. The Great Mogul was deposed by the rebellious *Marattas*. *Peter Le-beup*, Esq; a Commissioner of the Lottery for 300,000*l.* received Judgment at the *King's Bench* Bar, in *May*, and was fined 1000*l.* for some Irregularities and illegal Practices in his Management as a Commissioner. The Month of *November* was very fatal to many Places, occasioned by an almost-universal Convulsion throughout the known World, which was far from being unnoticed even in these Kingdoms, where the Waters in many Places were surprisngly agitated. But in *Spain* and *Portugal* the greatest Mischief was sustained by this terrible Earthquake; and the proud City of *Lisbon*, Capital of *Portugal*, was al-

most totally destroyed, with near 70,000 of its miserable Inhabitants. His Majesty, upon Advice of this shocking Calamity, sent a Message to the House of Lords, who addressed him thereupon; and he was enabled, by Parliament, to send a large Sum of Money, and a considerable Quantity of Provisions, for the Relief of the *Portuguese*. In *December*, the *Elysion* Light-House was unfortunately consumed by Fire.

Sir *William Poyne*, late Secretary at War, Dr *Wilson*, the pious Bishop of *Sodor* and *Man*, Mr. *James Hodgson*, a celebrated Mathematician, and Mr. *Jenkins Thomas Phillips*, Historiographer to his Majesty, departed this Life in the Year 1755.

In *January*, 1756, Mr. *Fox*, one of his Majesty's Principal Secretaries of State, received a Letter from M. *Rouille*, Secretary, for Foreign Affairs, to the *French* King, demanding Restitution for the Vessels taken from the Subjects of *France*, and complaining of the Insults offered to the *French* Flag. In answer, by his Majesty's Command, these Vessels were refused to be restored, unless *France* made Satisfaction for the Insults offered to the Crown and Dignity of his Majesty, and for the Hostilities committed by the *French* King's Subjects, in *America*, in time of profound Peace: This was followed by Representations and Memorials, drawn up on both Sides, in regard to their mutual Rights, which were sent to all the Courts in *Europe*; but those of the *English*, being remarkably clear and satisfactory, plainly refuted all the *French* had advanced. In *February*, a Proclamation was issued, for better guarding the Coasts against any Attempts of the Enemy; and a Public Fast was observed, on the



6th of that Month, on occasion of the late Earthquakes, &c. Soon after, the *French* King published Reprisals against the *English*, and seized all the *English* Vessels in his Ports and Harbours.

On *March* 23, his Majesty, by Message, acquainted both Houses of a designed Invasion from *France*; that he had taken proper Measures for the Security of his Dominions, and requested a Body of *Hessian* Troops to be forthwith brought hither. To this Message an Answer was returned, perfectly agreeable to his Majesty's Intentions, and warlike Preparations were carried on with amazing Vigour and Celerity. On the 1st of *April* Addresses were presented, from both Houses, for bringing over a Body of *Hanoverian* Troops, for our greater Security; and his Majesty assured them he would give Orders for that Purpose. The City, the Merchants, &c. &c. presented Addresses, also, about the same Time; in which they expressed their Detestation of any intended Invasion, and their Resolution to stand by his Majesty with their Lives and Fortunes.

On *April* 7, the Admirals *Byng* and *West* sailed from *St. Helen's* to the *Mediterranean*, with a Squadron of Ships of War. Advice was received, that great Part of *Bridge-Town*, in *Barbadoes*, was consumed by Fire; and that, on *April* 28, 1755, the City of *Quito*, in *Peru*, was destroyed by an Earthquake. On *May* 15, the *Hessian* Troops landed, from *Germany*; and on the 18th, War was declared against *France*. On the 27th, his Majesty gave the Royal Assent to several Acts; amongst which was that for building a Bridge, across the *Thames*, at *Blackfryars*; and, after a very gracious Speech, the Parliament was adjourned to *June* 18. A *French* Squadron of 15 Ships

and Frigates, having landed a Body of 11,000 Men, under the Duke de *Richelieu*, before *Ciudadella*, in the Island of *Minorca*, on *April* 30, they began the Siege of *Fort St. Philip's*, defended by a Garrison of four Regiments, and one Company of Artillery, under the brave General *Blakeney*. Hereupon Admiral *Byng* got off *Mabon*, with his Squadron, on *May* 19, and, on the 20th, came up with the *French* Fleet, under M. de la *Gálaffonere*; and an Action ensued, in which Rear-Admiral *West*, with his Division, behaved gallantly; but, through the Backwardness of Admiral *Byng*, the Engagement never became general; and some Damage having been sustained by three Ships of the Squadron, the Admiral returned to *Gibraltar*. Governor *Blakeney* held out, in *Fort St. Philip's*, until *June* 28, when he surrendered it upon honourable Terms. The Behaviour of the Admiral gave such Umbrage at home, that Sir *Edward Hawke* and Mr. *Saunders* were sent to relieve, and order him to *England*, under Arrest, with his brave Rear-Admiral; and, when *Byng* arrived, he was immediately confined, to wait the Issue of a Court-Martial. On *June* 19, the *French* King declared War against *Great-Britain*; and, about the same Time, the *Dutch* came to a Resolution, to refuse the stipulated Succour of 6000 Men, in case we were attacked, which had been demanded, on the Part of his Majesty, by Mr. *Yorke*.

On *August* 10, General *Fowke*, late Governor of *Gibraltar*, was, by a General Court-Martial, suspended for one Year, for disobeying his Majesty's Order, signified by the Secretary at War, to send a Reinforcement from *Gibraltar* to *Minorca*, on Board Admiral *Byng's* Fleet: Accordingly, he was, soon after, dismissed the Service, and

not restored during the Remainder of this Reign, though his Case was judged to be a very hard one.

About the Middle of the Year, it was confirmed, that the Courts of *Vienna* and *Versailles* had entered into an Alliance, offensive and defensive, as a Counterbalance to that between his *Britannick* Majesty and the King of *Prussia*; and, soon after, *Russia* acceded thereto.

On *August* 20, the City of *London*, in an Address to his Majesty, lamented the present Posture of Affairs, the Loss of *Minorca*, and besought Justice on the Authors of that national Disgrace. Addresses, and Instructions to the Representatives in Parliament, in the same Strain, were sent up from all Parts of the Nation, an universal Dissatisfaction against the Conduct of the Ministry now prevailing every where. In the Beginning of that Month, 15,000 Houses were consumed by Fire at *Constantinople*, and near 1000 Persons perished in the Flames. The King of *Prussia* having been able to obtain no positive Assurance from the Imperial Court, that they would not attack him, which he had great Reason to apprehend, resolved to begin first, by demanding a free Passage for his Armies through the Territories of *Saxony*. However, even before he could receive an Answer, he entered that Electorate with two considerable Bodies of Forces, published a Manifesto, to justify his Conduct; and exacted all the Taxes, and very heavy Contributions, of the Electorate. Meantime the King of *Poland* drew his Troops together, and encamped in a strong Situation, between *Pirna* and *Königsstein*; and Marshal *Keith*, with another strong Army of *Prussians*, penetrated into *Bohemia*, and was joined by the King of *Prussia*, on the 28th of *September*. On *October* 1,

they came up with the *Austrian* Army, under Count *Brown*, at *Lowojbutz*, and defeated it, killing and taking Prisoners near 6000 Men, with the Loss, on the *Prussian* Side, of 2000 Men killed and wounded. On the 15th of *October*, the whole *Saxon* Army, having left their strong Camp, in order to retreat into *Bohemia*, to facilitate which, Count *Brown* had marched, with a considerable Detachment, from the *Austrian* Army, were surrounded by the *Prussians*, and made Prisoners; and Count *Brown* suffered some Loss before he could rejoin his Army. Most of the *Saxon* private Soldiers took on in the King of *Prussia*'s Service. In the Beginning of *November*, the *Prussian* Troops went into Winter-Quarters, in *Saxony*; and, soon after, the *Austrians*, in *Bohemia*.

At Sea, we, this Year, made many considerable Prizes from the Enemy, particularly the *Arc-en-Ciel*, a Man of War, of 64 Guns; and the *French* took from us the *Warwick*, of 60 Guns, in the *West-Indies*. Admiral *Watson* took the Fort of *Geriab*, the chief Seat of the famous *Angria*, the Pirate, in the *East-Indies*, and destroyed his whole Fleet of Ships and Grabs, with which, for many Years, he had annoyed our Company's Trade, and that of the other *European* Traders to those Seas. *Quebec*, on the Lake *Ontario*, was taken from us by the *French*, and the Garrison made Prisoners of War.

At the Close of the Year, the Scarcity of Corn, and Dearness, in consequence, of all Sorts of Provisions, was severely felt in most Parts of *England*, and occasioned many Tumults and Risings of the Populace. In *November*, was a Change of the Ministry, which soon gave new Life to the Measures of



of the Government, which had strangely languished in the Hands of the former Administration. Mr. *Legge* was made Chancellor of the Exchequer; the Seals were put into Commission; Earl *Temple* succeeded Lord *Anson*, as first Lord of the Admiralty; and Mr. *Pitt* was made a Secretary of State, in the Room of Mr. *Fox*. On December 2, the Session of Parliament was opened. On the 4th, an Embargo was laid on all Ships, in Great-Britain or Ireland, laden, or to be laden, with Malt, Meal, Flour, &c. &c. and, soon after, the Hanoverian Troops, whose Residence here had caused great Uneasiness, and many Debates, began to embark for Germany. On the 27th, the Court-Martial on Admiral *Byng* began their Proceedings.

The principal Persons, that deceased this Year, were, *William Stanhope*, Earl of *Harrington*; Sir *Dudley Ryder*, Lord Chief Justice of the Court of *King's-Bench*; Dr. *Sykes*, a very honest and learned Divine; *Gilbert West*, Esq; a skilful Defender of the Christian Religion; *Charles Viner*, Esq; Author of the Abridgement of the Law; and *Theodore*, Baron *Newbess*, late King of *Corfica*.

In the Year 1757, the Parliament granted 55,000 Men, for Sea-Service, including 11,419 Marines, and 49,749 Men, comprehending 4008 Invalids, for the Land-Service. The whole Supplies granted this Session were 8,350,325 *l.* 9s. 3d. The Parliament took proper Measures to relieve the Nation, suffering by the Dearth of Corn: The famous and constitutional Militia-Bill; that for quartering the foreign Troops, which was rendered necessary by the Inn-Keepers and Publicans having refused to have them billeted upon them;

that for the Regulation of the Marine Forces whilst on Shore; that for the more speedy and effectual Recruiting of the Land-Forces and Marines; that for regulating Pawn-Brokers, &c. and several others, calculated for benefiting our Trade and Manufactures, were passed into Laws: And an Enquiry also was made into the Loss of *Minorca*, and some other Affairs that called loudly for Examination. On the 4th of July, the Session was closed by a gracious Speech from the Throne. Admiral *Byng* being sentenced to be shot to Death, by his Court-Martial, though cleared of Cowardice or Disaffection, his Judges recommended him to Mercy; and various Methods were tried by his Friends, both at Court, and in the House of Commons, to get him reprieved from his sad Fate; but, all proving ineffectual, he was shot, on board the *Monarque*, in *Portsmouth* Harbour, on the 14th of March, behaving with the utmost Dignity and Fortitude in his last Moments, and, in the Paper he delivered before his Execution, styling himself, *A Victim, destined to divert the Indignation and Resentment of an injured and deluded People from the proper Objects*.

On April 9, the Seals were taken from Mr. *Pitt*, and Mr. *Legge* was removed from being Chancellor of the Exchequer; but this Change in the Administration causing a general Dissatisfaction, they were restored to their Posts in about two Months afterwards. Soon after, Sir *Robert Henley* was made Lord Keeper of the Great-Seal, and the Custody of the Privy-Seal was delivered to Lord *Temple*.

On the 8th of September, a strong Fleet, commanded by Sir *Edward Hawke*, and a large Body of Troops, under the Orders of Sir *John Mordaunt*,

*daunt*, set Sail, on a secret Expedition, to the Coast of *France*; of which the Nation, in general, had formed great Expectations, and at which the Enemy were in the utmost Consternation: In the Sequel, however, the Design, which proved to be against *Rochfort*, miscarried, the Enemy suffering nothing more from it than the Taking the small Island of *Aix*. To discover the Cause of this Disappointment, which greatly dissatisfied the People, the Conduct of the General was enquired into, by a Board of General Officers, upon whose Report he was tried by a Court-Martial, and, to the Surprise of every one, was acquitted.

At the Beginning of the Year, several strong Fleets were sent out, to different Parts of the World, under the Admirals *West*, *Coates*, and *Holburne*, and to the *East-Indies*, under *Commodore Stevens*. Our Cruizers and Privateers had considerable Success against the Enemy, and many gallant actions were performed, in the Course thereof, on both Sides.

Riots and Tumults still continued in various Parts of the Kingdom, occasioned by the illegal Practices of the Buyers of Corn; and the Opposition of the insatuated Mob to the Execution of the Militia-Law caused some Bloodshed, and great Consternation, in many Parts of the Kingdom.

In *America*, this Year, the Enemies destroyed many of our Back-Settlements with Fire and Sword. Our Expedition against *Louisbourg*, under Lord *Loudoun* and Admiral *Holburne*, did not succeed, though not by the Fault of those Commanders. The *French* General, the Marquis of *Montcalm*, took Fort *William Henry*, on Lake *George*; and his *Indians*, in Violation of the Capitulation, were suffered cruelly to

massacre Part of the Garrison after its Surrender. Admiral *Holburne's* Fleet also was greatly damaged by a Storm, and was near being all destroyed on the Rocks, on the Coast of *Cape-Breton*; the *Tilbury*, however, was the only Ship wrecked, and near Half her Crew perished. In the *East-Indies*, Admiral *Watson* and Colonel *Clive* regained the Settlement and Fort of *Calcutta*, which was taken, the preceding Year, by the Nabob of *Bengal*, who behaved with the utmost Cruelty to his Prisoners, suffocating Numbers of them by close Confinement in a Place called the *Black-Hole*. Afterwards they reduced *Hugbley*, and Colonel *Clive* defeated the Nabob in a pitched Battle, and forced him to enter into a Treaty, to indemnify the *English* for their Losses. The Colonel then made himself Master of the valuable *French* Town and Fort of *Chandénagore*, assisted by the Admirals *Watson* and *Pococke*. Another great Victory was obtained over the Nabob, who had acted in a perfidious and treacherous Manner, contrary to the Terms of the late Treaty; and he was, finally, deposed, and *Ali Khan* appointed Nabob of *Bengal*, *Bahar* and *Orixa*, in his Room. Thus the *French* were excluded the Commerce of *Bengal* and its Dependences, the *English* Company restored to an increased Trade, and full Satisfaction was made for the late Losses at *Calcutta*, with princely Rewards to our Officers, and Land and Sea-Forces. These Advantages were followed by two great Misfortunes, in the Death of the brave Admiral *Watson*, and the Loss of *Vizagapatam*, on the Coast of *Coromandel*.

On the Continent of *Europe*, the *French* made themselves Masters of most of the King of *Prussia's* Dominions



minions upon the Borders of the Low-Countries; seized upon *Emden*, and the Province of *East-Friesland*; and, soon after, they got Possession of his Duchy of *Cleves*, and County of *Mark*, and took the Towns of *Wesel*, *Emmerick*, and *Maseyk*, and the City of *Guedres*; in which Places, as well as in the Electorate of *Hanover*, they levied most exorbitant Contributions. The Duke of *Cumberland*, being obliged to fall back to *Hastenbeck*, with the Army of Observation, on July 25, was attacked, by the superior Army of the *French*, under the Marshal *d'Etrées*, and forced to retreat, first to *Hamelen*, and afterwards to *Stade*; when the *French* became Masters of *Hamelen*, and, soon after, of the whole Electorate of *Hanover*, and the Territories of the Duke of *Wolfenbuttle*; and a Detachment of the *French* Army, under M. *Contades*, took Possession of the Territories of *Hesse-Cassel*, without any considerable Opposition. Upon this rapid Progress of the *French*, the Duke of *Cumberland* was forced to accept of the Mediation of the King of *Denmark*, and concluded, through the Intervention of his Minister, the Convention of *Closse-Seven* with the *French* General; by which the *Hanoverians* were obliged to lay down their Arms, a Neutrality was granted to the Electorate, &c. &c. By this Convention, the *French* being let loose, with their whole Force, upon the *Prussian* Dominions, they felt their Cruelty and Rapacity very severely. Meantime, the Duke of *Cumberland* returned to *England*, and resigned all his Military Employments. At the latter End of the Year, however, this famous Convention was broken by the *French*; and thereupon, the *Hanoverian* Army, with the Allies, resumed its Activity, under Prince *Ferdinand*

of *Brunswick*; and, before the Close of the Year, drove the *French*, under the Duke *de Richelieu*, from many of the Places they had possessed themselves of, in the Electorate of *Hanover*, &c.

His *Prussian* Majesty, who, as Elector of *Brandenburgh* had been put under the Ban of the Empire, entered *Bohemia*, at the Opening of the Campaign, in four different and opposite Places. By one of these four Armies, under the Prince of *Bevern*, was defeated an *Austrian* Army, under Count *Konigseg*, at *Reichenberg*. When the *Prussian* Monarch had united his several Corps, he passed the *Moldau*, attacked the *Austrian* Army, near *Prague*, on May 6, and totally defeated it, taking a great Number of Prisoners, Artillery, Ammunition, and Baggage; and Prince *Charles* of *Lorrain*, with 40,000 of the Fugitives, taking Shelter in the City of *Prague*, it was invested by the *Prussians*, and cruelly bombarded; but, meantime, Count *Daun*, having drawn together another *Austrian* Army, intrenched himself at *Kolin*, or *Kaurzim*, and divided the Attention of the *Prussians*, who were obliged to detach a great Body of Troops, from before *Prague*, to observe his Motions. At length, the King himself found it necessary, in order to take all Hopes from the Garrison of *Prague*, of being relieved, to march, with a Part of his Forces, against *Daun*, and attack him in his intrenched Camp, but was forced to retreat with very great Loss, to raise the Siege of *Prague*, and take Refuge in *Saxony*. This Misfortune was followed by many others; so that his *Prussian* Majesty, attacked on all Sides, by *French*, *Austrians*, *Russians*, &c. was almost at the Brink of Destruction, according to all human Appearance.

ance. The *Russians* took *Memel*, and invaded *Prussia* with a powerful Army ; but, being attacked in their Intrenchments, by the *Prussian* General, M. *Leb-wald*, with about 30,000 Men, and severely handled, they, soon after, abandoned that Kingdom, and retreated into *Poland*. His *Prussian* Majesty, harrassed by Fatigues, chagrined with many Losses, and his Troops diminishing by Sicknes, Desertion, and repeated bloody Skirmishes, yet retrieved his Affairs by a glorious Winter-Campaign ; and, when his Friends had given him over for lost, and his Capital, *Berlin*, was pillaged, and laid under Contribution, defeated the combined Army of *French* and *Imperialists*, consisting of 65,000 Men, on the 5th of *November*, at *Rosbach*, with an Army reduced to about 20,000 Men. The *Austrians* having, meanwhile, made considerable Progress in *Silesia*, taken *Schweidnitz*, and defeated the Prince of *Bevern*, near *Breslau*, this indefatigable Monarch immediately flew to the Relief of that Part of his Dominions, and, on the 5th of *December*, totally routed the grand *Austrian* Army, at *Lissa*, being just one Month after his Victory at *Rosbach* : Afterwards he retok *Breslau* and *Schweidnitz*, and became Master of all *Silesia*.

The *Swedes*, having declared against his *Prussian* Majesty, entered *Prussian Pomerania*, and made some Progress there, but were driven out again by the *Prussians*, under General *Manteuffel* ; and M. *Leb-wald*, following them into *Swedish Pomerania*, made himself Master of the whole Country, and forced them to seek Refuge under the Cannon of *Stralsund*.

In *July*, I shall just observe, that the Court of *Vienna* recalled her Ministers from *London* ; Mr *Keith*

returned from that Court ; all Correspondence was broke off between the two Powers ; and the Communication between *England* and *Os-tend*, *Nieuport*, and *Bruges*, ceased, the two former, soon after, being garrisoned by the *French*.

On *January* 5, the *French* King was stabbed in his Palace, by a sudden Enthusiast, named *Damien*, who, for that Crime, was put to all the Tortures human Art could devise ; and suffered a most terrible Death, with great Resolution, plainly appearing, by the Insanity of his Mind, to be an improper Object for such shocking Cruelties, which to recapitulate would cast an Odium upon human Nature itself.

I shall now return home, and just observe, that, on *December* 1, his Majesty opened the Session of Parliament with a Speech, as usual.

The most remarkable Persons, that deceased in the Year 1757, were, *Horatio*, Lord *Walpole*, Brother of the late Sir *Robert Walpole*, Earl of *Orford* ; Dr. *Thomas Blackwell*, Author of many elegant Pieces ; Dr. *Herring*, Archbishop of *Canterbury* ; Vice-Admiral *West* ; the brave and honest Admiral *Vernon* ; Colley *Cibber*, the celebrated Comedian and Poet Laureat ; her Royal Highness the Princess *Caroline-Elizabeth*, third Daughter of his Majesty, in the 45th Year of her Age, a Princess of the utmost Humanity and Tenderness, and whose Charity and Benevolence had been very diffusive ; and Sir *Benjamin Keene*, long Ambassador at the Court of *Spain*.

For the Year 1758, the Parliament granted, for the Navy, 60,000 Men, including 14,845 Marines ; and for the Land-Service 53,777 effective Men, comprehending 4000 Invalids. The Total of the Supplies of the Session of Parliament was 10,486,457*l.* 0*s.* 6*d.* On *April*



11, a new Treaty was concluded with the King of *Prussia*, by which his Majesty engaged himself to pay that Monarch 670,000*l.* Sterling at once, upon his Demand thereof. The contracting Powers also engaged, not to conclude any Treaty of Peace, Truce, or Neutrality, nor any other Sort of Convention, or Agreement, with the Powers engaged in the present War, but in Concert, and by mutual Agreement. The Bill for fortifying *Milford-Haven*; that for the Encouragement of Seamen; that for explaining the Militia Act; that for the Repairing of *London-Bridge*; that for the Importation of Beef, Butter, and Pork, from *Ireland*; that for encouraging the Growth of Madder; and many other important and beneficial Bills, received the Royal Assent in this Session of Parliament, which was closed, *June 9*, by a Speech from the Lords Commissioners appointed by his Majesty, who was indisposed. I shall observe here, that the Parliament met again on *November 23*, and the Session was opened by Commission; and on the 7th of *December*, a new Treaty was concluded with the King of *Prussia*, which was only a Renewal of that of *April 11*, and of the Subsidy, for the ensuing Year.

I shall now give a brief Detail of the principal Operations of the War, in all Parts of the World, during the Year 1758.

By the excellent Conduct of the Administration, and particularly in the Naval Department, our Cruizers had such glorious Success, that the *French* Trade was almost annihilated. Many very brave and gallant Actions were performed by the King's Ships and Privateers, of which I have not Room for a particular Mention. Amongst the Commanders of single Ships, who

greatly distinguished themselves by their Conduct and Intrepidity, the principal were, *Forrest*, *Tyrrel*, *Gilchrist*, and *Lockhart*; Names which will be ever held in Esteem by their Country. Commodore *Holmes* regained *Embsen* from the *French*, and took some of the Baggage of the Garrison, by sending two of his small Ships to anchor in the River, between *Knock* and the City. Admiral *Osborne* fell in with a *French* Squadron, of four Ships, commanded by the Marquis du *Quefne*, on the Coast of *Spain*, and took the *Foudroyant*, of 80 Guns and 800 Men, commanded by the Marquis himself, and the *Orphée*, of 64 Guns, and drove the *Oriflamme* on Shore. The *Foudroyant* was taken by the *Monmouth*, whose gallant Commander, Captain *Gardener*, lost his Life in the Conflict. Sir *Edward Hawke*, in the Beginning of *April*, ran on Shore near the Isle of *Aix*, five *French* Ships of the Line and several Frigates and Transports, who were intended for *North-America*, with 3000 Troops, and a large Quantity of Stores and Provisions, on board. The *French* threw over-board their Cannon, &c. and the End of the Equipment of this Fleet was entirely defeated. Captain *Dennis*, in the *Dorsetshire*, took the *Raisonable*, of 64 Guns and 630 Men; but two great Misfortunes happened to our Navy, by the Loss of the *Invincible*, of 74 Guns, and the Destruction of the *Prince George*, of 80 Guns, commanded by Rear-Admiral *Broderick*, which took Fire at Sea, in her Passage to the *Mediterranean*, and 500 of her Crew perished.

Two Descents were made this Year upon the *French* Coast; in the first of which, under the Direction of the Duke of *Marlborough*, and Commodore *Howe*, a great Quantity of Naval Stores, two Ships of War,

many

many Privateers, and 80 Vessels, of different Sorts, were set on Fire, and reduced to Ashes, almost under the Cannon of *St. Maloes*. In the second, under the Command of General *Bligh*, and Mr. *Howe*, *Cherbourg* was taken, the Harbour destroyed, with the Bastion, and all the Forts in its Neighbourhood, and 20 Brass Cannon sent on board the *English* Fleet, which were afterwards exposed to the View of the Populace, in *Hyde-Park*, and drawn, in grand Parade, from thence to the Tower. General *Bligh* then re-embarked his Troops, landed again at *St. Lunaire*, to the Westward of *St. Maloes*, and destroyed 15 small Vessels at *St. Briac*. The Fleet sailed from *St. Lunaire* to the Bay of *St. Cas*, and the Land-Forces marched to that Place through the Country, when a terrible Misfortune befel them : After most of the Army was re-embarked, and only the Rear-Guard, consisting of all the Grenadiers, and half of the first Regiment of Guards, remained on Shore, to the Number of 1500, under General *Dury*, they were attacked by a great Body of *French*, and about 1000 of them killed or taken Prisoners ; amongst the Killed was their Commander. Prince *Edward* (late Duke of *York*) went a Volunteer in this Expedition, with Commodore *Howe*, and behaved with remarkable Intrepidity. Captain *Hervey*, in the *Monmouth*, destroyed a *French* Frigate, of 40 Guns, in the Island of *Malta* ; and the *Belliqueux*, of 64 Guns, was taken in *St. George's Channel*, by Captain *Saamarez*, in the *Antelope*. Many Piracies were committed by some abandoned Miscreants, in *English* Privateers, upon the Ships and Goods of Neutral Nations ; and thereupon the Lords of the Admiralty promised, in the *Gazette*, a Reward of 500*l.* to any one who should

discover the Offenders ; some of whom were accordingly brought to condign Punishment. The *Dutch* having, contrary to Treaties, and the Law of Nations, supplied the *French* with Naval Stores, &c. and transported the Produce of the *French* Sugar-Islands to *Europe*, as Carriers, hired by the Proprietors, a great Number of their Ships were taken, and condemned, as lawful Prizes, both in *England* and *Jamaica* ; which raised a loud Clamour against the *English* in *Holland*, and caused many Altercations between the two Governments. A small Squadron, under Captain *Marsh*, took from the *French* their valuable Settlement of *Senegal*, on the Coast of *Africa*, with their two Factories of *Podore* and *Galum*, on that River, in the Month of *April*. And before the Close of the Year, Commodore *Keppel* added to that good Fortune, by the Reduction of the Island of *Goree*. His Squadron, for that Expedition, suffered one great Misfortune, however, in the Loss of the *Litchfield*, Captain *Barton*, with a Transport and Bomb-Tender, which were wrecked on the Coast of *Barbary*, in the Dominions of *Morocco*, and 130 Men perished ; but Captain *Barton* and the rest, to the Number of 220, reached the Shore, were cruelly treated by the Natives, and detained in Captivity till they were ransomed by the Government.

In *July*, Admiral *Boscawen*, with a strong Fleet, and General *Amberst*, with a considerable Army, reduced the City of *Louisbourg*, and the whole Island of *Cape-Breton* ; and many *French* Ships of War were destroyed in the Harbour. The Reduction of this important Place was celebrated in *England* with great Rejoicings ; Addresses were presented from all Parts to his Majesty, upon the Occasion ; and the brave Commanders received the Thanks of



of the *British* Parliament. Lord *Rollo*, soon after, reduced the Island of *St. John*; but the main Body of the *English* Forces, under Major-General *Abercrombie*, were repulsed in the Attack upon the *French* Intrenchments at Fort *Ticonderoga*, with the Loss of 1800 Men killed or wounded, including a great Number of Officers. In this Expedition, and previous to the Attack, Lord *Howe*, a promising young Nobleman, and brave Officer, lost his Life, to the great Regret of his Country. However, a Detachment from the Army took and destroyed Fort *Frontenac*, situated on the North Side of the River *St. Lawrence*, just where it derives itself from the Lake *Ontario*, and four *French* Vessels upon the Lake were also taken, to the great Loss and Disappointment of the Enemy. Brigadier *Forbes* soon afterwards made himself Master of Fort *du Quesne*, upon the *Ohio*, the Name of which he altered to *Pittsburgh*; but did not long survive this great Service, his Constitution being exhausted by his unintermitted Fatigues in the Service. In the *East-Indies*, the *British* Squadron, under the Command of Admiral *Pococke* and Commodore *Stevens*, had two bloody Engagements with the *French* Fleet in those Seas, commanded by M. *d'Apche*, and in both had greatly the Advantage; but M. *Lally* took from us Fort *St. David's*, *Cudalore*, and some other Places, the *French* Land-Forces being now much superior to the *English*.

On the Continent of *Europe*, the War raged with increased Violence: The *French* were driven, by the Allies, to the *Rhine*, and forced to abandon *Hanover*, *Hesse*, and all their former Conquests, not without many bloody Conflicts, in which the young Hereditary Prince

of *Brunswick* greatly distinguished himself. In the Beginning of *June*, Prince *Ferdinand* passed the *Rhine*, at the Head of the Allied Army, and, on *June 23*, defeated the Left Wing of the *French* Army, at *Crevelt*, with the Loss of some Standards, Colours, and Cannon, and 6000 Men, killed, wounded, or taken Prisoners; and the Allies lost about 1500 Men. The *French* Army retired under the Cannon of *Cologne*; and, soon after, the Allies made themselves Masters of *Dusseldorp*. But, in *Hesse*, the Prince of *Tsenbourg* was defeated at *Sandershausen*, by the Duke of *Broglie*; and the Enemy became, thereby, Masters of the *Weser*, and opened to themselves a free Passage into *Westphalia*, whilst Prince *Ferdinand* was obliged to retreat across the *Rhine*. Meantime General *Imhoff*, who commanded six Battalions and four Squadrons, at *Meer*, being attacked by M. *Chevert*, with a much superior Force, put him to the Rout, with considerable Loss, and thereby facilitated the Junction of the *English* Troops, lately arrived in *Germany*, under the Duke of *Marlborough*, with the Allied Army; but that Nobleman died before the Close of the Campaign, which was distinguished by several other bloody Actions, but of too little Consequence to be particularized in this brief History. As to his *Prussian* Majesty, as soon as he had assembled his Army, he laid Siege to *Schweidnitz*, which he became Master of, after 13 Days open Trenches. Other Bodies of his Troops raised Contributions in *Bohemia*, and drove the *Austrians* out of the County of *Glatz*. His Majesty then penetrated into *Moravia*, and laid Siege to *Olmutz*, the Capital of that Country. Count *Dawn* followed him; and having sent

sent a Detachment, which seized a large Convoy, for the Use of the *Prussian* besieging Army, and harassed them by every Means the Situation of the Country afforded, the King was obliged to raise the Siege, and retire into *Bohemia*, which he did with very inconsiderable Loss, and took Possession of the strong Post of *Koningsgratz*. The *Russians* having made some Progress, and committed dreadful Ravages in *Silesia*, his Majesty was obliged soon to leave that strong Post, and, on the 25th of *August*, defeated the *Russian* Army, under General *Fermer*, at *Zorndorf*, by which they lost 15,000 Men, most of their Baggage, &c. and 100 Pieces of Cannon : The King's Loss was no more than 2000 Men, with some Officers of Distinction. The King's Presence being now necessary in *Saxony*, where his Brother Prince *Henry* was pushed by Count *Daun* and the Army of the Empire, he accordingly repaired thither, with 24 Battalions and great Part of his Cavalry ; and soon after, his Right Wing was surprized and defeated by the wary *Austrian* General, at *Hochkirchen* : Marshal *Keith*, who commanded it, and Prince *Francis* of *Brunswick*, were killed, and his Majesty obliged to retire to *Dobreschütz*, with the Loss of 7000 Men, all his Tents, and Part of his Baggage ; and the *Austrians* suffered little less by their Attack. Soon after, the King marched, in Person, to the Relief of *Neiß* and *Cosel*, besieged by the *Austrians* ; and, in his Absence, Count *Daun* endeavoured to get Possession of *Dresden*, which occasioned the *Prussian* Commandant to set Fire to the fine Suburb of *Pirna*, which was reduced to Ashes. The King having raised the Sieges of *Neiß* and *Cosel*, returned to the Relief of *Dresden*, whilst Count *Dohna*

raised the Blockades of *Torgau* and *Leipsick*. On the 10th of *November*, *Daun* returned from the Capital of *Saxony*, and the King arrived there ; and, soon after, the Siege of *Colberg*, which was blocked up by the *Russians*, was also raised ; and thus, after all the cross Events that had impeded his Measures, the *Prussian* Monarch finished the Campaign gloriously. As to the *Swedes*, under Count *Hamilton*, they figured for a little while, during this Campaign ; but when his *Prussian* Majesty could spare some Troops, under General *Wedel*, to oppose them, they, as the Year before, were driven under the Cannon of *Stralsund*. Having thus given briefly the principal Events of the War, this Year, I shall summarily relate what other Affairs of any Importance happened either abroad or at home. In *April*, Pope *Benedict XIV.* died ; and Cardinal *Rezzonico*, a *Venetian*, was elected to succeed him by the Name of *Clement XIII.* In *Portugal* an Attempt was made to assassinate the King, who was grievously wounded ; for which several of the Nobility were soon after most dreadfully put to Death, who had been stimulated by the *Jesuits* to commit the horrid Crime.

In *June*, Dr. *Florence Hensley* was convicted of High-Treason, as being a Spy employed by the *French* Ministry, but was pardoned upon Condition of transporting himself out of these Kingdoms. A severe Sentence was passed also upon Dr. *Shebbeare*, about the same Time, for writing several Letters to the People of *England*, animadverting upon the Conduct of the Ministry.

In the Year 1758, the following celebrated Persons departed this Life, viz. Mr. *Allan Ramsay*, the *Scotch* Poet ; that excellent Prelate, Dr. *Clayton*, Bishop of *Clogher* ;

Mr.



Mr. Dyer, Author of *The Fleece*, an ingenious Poem ; Dr. Ward, the learned Professor of Rhetorick in *Gresham-College*; Charles Butler, Earl of Arran, Brother of the late Duke of Ormond ; and Mr. James Hervey, Author of the *Meditations*.

For the Year 1759, the Parliament voted, for the Sea-Service, 60,000 Men, including 14,845 Marines, and for the Land-Service, 42,553 effective Men, besides the foreign Auxiliaries, amounting to 50,000, with five Battalions on the *Irish* Establishment, then in actual Service in *Africa* and *America*. The whole of the Grants of this Session amounted to 12,761,310*l.* 19*s.* 5*d.* A Million was likewise voted, upon receiving a Message from his Majesty by Mr. Pitt, for any extraordinary Expences of the War that might occur, &c. The Bill for the Regulation of Privateers, that for the Importation of *Irish* Beef and Tallow, that for restraining the Importation of *French* Cloths into the Ports of the *Levant*, that for the more effectual preventing the fraudulent Importation of *Cambricks*, &c. and many other beneficial Bills, were passed into Laws before the Close of the Session, which was put an End to by a Speech from the Commissioners appointed for that Purpose. The Preparations for carrying on the War this Year were conducted with great Ardour and Vivacity; Proclamations for giving Bounties to Voluntier Seamen and Landmen were issued, and Rewards offered for discovering concealed Seamen ; and many Towns, Corporations, and Individuals, gave additional Bounties for the Encouragement of Recruits ; and the City of *London* particularly distinguished itself on this Occasion. The Militia of many Counties were ordered out into actual Service, and soon rivalled, in

Discipline, the regular Troops. At the Beginning of the Year, viz. January 12, the Princess of *Orange*, eldest Daughter of his Majesty, departed this Life, leaving two Children, the present Prince Stadtholder, and the Princess *Caroline*, since married to the Prince of *Nassau-Weilburgh*. This was not the only Blow the Royal Family sustained this Year, for, in September, the Princess *Elizabeth-Caroline*, second Daughter of the late Prince of *Wales*, also deceased, in the 18th Year of her Age.

In July, Admiral *Rodney* warmly bombarded the Town of *Harve de Grace*, set the Town on Fire in several Places, and destroyed many flat-bottomed Boats, intended for landing Troops to invade these Kingdoms. On August 17, Admiral *Boscawen* engaged a *French* Squadron, commanded by M. *De la Clue*, in the *Mediterranean*, took the *Centaur* of 74 Guns, the *Temeraire* of 74, the *Modeste* of 64, and destroyed the *Ocean* of 80, and the *Redoubtable* of 74, with very little Loss in the *English* Fleet, the Officers and Seamen of which behaved with amazing Gallantry. The *French* Government having projected a Plan for invading these Kingdoms, for that Purpose prepared a large Fleet at *Brest*, *Rochefort*, and *Port Louis*, under the Command of M. *Conflans*, assembled a Body of Troops under the Duke *D'Aiguillon*, at *Vannes*, in *Lower Britany*, and prepared also a small Armament at *Dunkirk*, under the Command of the famous *Thurot*, a skilful Seaman, whose Cruizes on our Merchant-Ships had been very successful. To defeat this Design of the *French*, *British* Fleets and Cruizers were sent, who blocked up the whole Coast of *France*, from *Dunkirk* to the Extremity of *Bretagne*. But in the Beginning of November, the *British* Fleet, com-

K k

manded

manded by Sir *Edward Hawke*, Sir *Charles Hardy*, and Rear-Admiral *Geary*, were, by Strefs of Weather, driven from the Coast of *France*, when *Conflans* snatched the Opportunity of sailing from *Brest*, with 21 Sail of the Line, and four Frigates, in hopes to destroy a small Squadron under Captain *Duff*, who was cruizing on the Coast of *Bretagne* and *Poitou*, before the *English* grand Fleet could return from the Coast of *England*, where the Winds had obliged them to take Shelter. But Sir *Edward Hawke* soon received Intelligence of their Motions ; and, whilst at home Orders were given for guarding every Part of the Coast that was accessible to a Descent, he stood to Sea in pursuit of the *French* Fleet, and after several Struggles with Storms and contrary Winds, on the 20th of *November*, descried it, whilst it was in full Chace of Captain *Duff's* Squadron, who soon joined Sir *Edward's* Fleet, having been in great Danger. In spite of Rocks and tempestuous Weather, the Van of the *English* began the Engagement, with the Rear of the *French*, at about Half an Hour after Two o'Clock, in the Neighbourhood of *Bellefleur* ; and the Fight continued till Night, when the Danger of a Lee Shore, in tempestuous Weather, put a Period to the Engagement, in which *British* Courage and Fortitude were displayed to the greatest Advantage. The *Thesée* of 74 Guns, and the *Superbe* of 70, were sunk ; the *Soleil Royal* of 80, and *Hercules* of 74, run ashore and burnt ; and the *Formidable* of 80, taken ; and afterwards the *Jusfe*, of 70, perished in the Mouth of the *Loire*. Seven of their Ships were driven to the Mouth of the River *Villaine*, where they were lightened of their Cannon, &c. and dragged into the River, so that our

Ships could not follow them. On the *English* Side, the Loss was not very considerable in Officers or Men ; but the *Effex* of 64 Guns, and *Resolution* of 74, ran ashore, and our own People were forced to destroy them. Thus the projected Invasion was defeated, and the finishing Blow given to the Navy of *France*. Sir *Edward Hawke* received the Thanks of the House of Commons for this great Service, and had a Pension settled upon himself and his Son, for their natural Lives. *Thurot* escaped from *Dunkirk*, and directed his Course to the *North Seas*, and his Fate will be seen under the ensuing Year.

In the *West-Indies*, Commodore *Moore* and General *Hopson* made an unsuccessful Attempt upon *Martinico* ; but in *January*, the Commodore landed the Troops, after silencing the Batteries, by a brisk Cannonade, at *Basse-Terre*, in the Island of *Guadaloupe* ; and by the 15th of *April*, the Conquest of that valuable Island was completed by General *Barrington*, Major-General *Hopson* having died soon after the Landing ; and upon this the Islands of *Desada*, *Los Santos*, and *Marigalante*, submitted to the Conquerors.

These were the principal Achievements at Sea, in the Course of this Year ; but many Commanders of single Cruizers behaved in a Manner that did Honour to their Country, both in the *European Seas*, and those of *America* ; particularly the Captains *Hood*, *Elliot*, *Barrington*, *Falkener*, *Harrison*, *Colby*, *Porter*, &c. The *British* Privateers were very successful also ; and yet a great Number of our Ships were taken by the *French*.

In *North-America*, General *Amherst* took Possession of the Post of *Ticonderago* in *July*, (before which so many brave Men lost their

Lives



Lives in the preceding Year) and ordered it to be repaired. After leaving in it a strong Garrison, he, with the rest of his Army, proceeded to *Crown-Point*, the Fort at which Place the Enemy also abandoned. Here he laid the Foundations of a new Fort, and waited till proper Vessels were built and got ready, to make him superior to the Enemy on Lake *Champlain*; with which he soon after destroyed three of the best Vessels they had upon that Lake. General *Prideaux*, who had been detached to undertake the Conquest of *Niagara*, was killed in the Trenches before it, on the 20th of *July*, and was succeeded in the Command by Sir *William Johnson*, who, after defeating a large Body of the Enemy, sent to relieve the Fort, had it delivered up to him, and made the Garrison Prisoners of War. Meantime, the Army under General *Wolfe*, assisted by the Fleet under the Admirals, *Saunders*, *Holmes*, and *Durell*, after many Hazards and Difficulties, which they had bravely surmounted, formed the Siege of *Quebeck*, the Capital of *Canada*, which the General pursued with unremitted Diligence, tho' with no great Prospect of Success. At length, engaging the *French* Army, which encamped in the Neighbourhood of *Quebeck*, it was defeated by the *British* Troops, though the brave General *Wolfe* was slain in the Battle, in which the *French* General, *Montcalm*, also lost his Life. General *Monckton* was wounded, and the Command of the *British* Army devolved upon Brigadier-General *Townshend*, to whom, and Admiral *Saunders*, the City soon after was surrendered, viz. on the 18th of *September*. The News of this Conquest, arriving in *England*, caused the greatest Rejoicings imaginable: A Day of Thanksgiving was appointed by Proclamation;

Numbers of Addressees were presented to the King on the Occasion; the Parliament addressed the King to erect a Monument to the brave and generous *Wolfe*; and all the Generals and Admirals concerned had the Thanks of the House voted them. General *Murray*, with a Garrison of 5000 Men, was made Governor of this important Place.

In the *East-Indies*, M. *Lally*, who in *January* had laid Siege to *Madras*, was, by the Vigilance and Bravery of the Colonels *Lawrence* and *Draper*, Major *Brereton*, and Governor *Pigot*, obliged to retreat from before it with great Loss, on *February* 16. Colonel *Ford* obtained a complete Victory over M. *Conflans*, near *Masulipatam*; *Surat* was taken from the *Seapoys* by Captain *Maitland*; but an Attempt upon *Wanderwasch* miscarried. On *September* 8, Admiral *Pococke* again engaged the *French* Fleet, and, though the Odds were on their Side, forced them to fly, with great Loss, leaving the *English* Masters of the *Indian* Coast, who were soon after joined by Admiral *Cornish*, with four Ships of the Line, from *England*. The *Dutch* appearing in the River of *Bengal*, and committing some Hostilities, their Fleet was defeated by three *India*-Men; and their Forces, of 1100 Men suffered the same Fate, in an Engagement with the *English*, under Colonel *Ford*; after which a Treaty was set on foot with the *Dutch* Chiefs, at their Factory of *Chinchura*, in the River of *Bengal*, who agreed to make Satisfaction for their unprecedented Insult, and gave Security for that Purpose. In *November*, Colonel *Coote* made himself Master of *Wanderwasch*, and on the 25th of *January*, 1760, defeated General *Lally*, before that Place; in which Battle the *French* lost 800 Men, and several Officers were taken Prisoners: On the *Eng-*  
lish

lish Side, the brave Major *Brereton* lost his Life ; and 260 Men were either killed or wounded. Afterwards Colonel *Coote* took *Chilliput*, *Timmery*, and *Arcot*, with the Conquest of which important Place the Campaign in *India* was brought to a glorious Conclusion.

I shall now trace out the principal Events of the War on the Continent of *Europe*. In *January*, the *French* perfidiously took Possession of the neutral Imperial City of *Franckfort* on the *Mayne*, which secured to them their Supplies of Provision from *Mentz*, *Spire*, *Worms*, and *Alsace*. After many bloody Skirmishes, Prince *Ferdinand* attacked the *French* Intrenchments at the Village of *Bergen*, between *Franckfort* and *Hanau* ; but was repulsed, with the Loss of 2000 Men, and five Pieces of Cannon ; and the Prince of *Ysembourg* was slain. Upon this Misfortune, the Allied Army was obliged to retreat before the *French* for some Time, who successively advanced into the Electorate of *Hanover*, and the Landgraviate of *Hesse*, to the great Consternation of the Inhabitants. At last, on the 31st of *July*, *M. Cantades*, who commanded the *French* Army, had the Hardiness to attack the Allies at *Minden*, but was defeated, principally by the amazing and intrepid Efforts of a few *British* Regiments of Infantry, and the Fire of the *British* Artillery ; and *Contades*, having lost a great Number of Men, 43 Cannon, and many Colours and Standards, was forced to cross the *Wefer*, and burn the Bridges on which he passed over it. On the same Day, the Hereditary Prince defeated a *French* Corps, under the Duke of *Brissac*, at *Coveldt* ; and soon after, all the Baggage of the *French* Generals, with Part of their military Chest and Chancery, were

taken, in the Neighbourhood of *Detmold*. The Allies were also successful in many Skirmishes ; and the Hereditary Prince, among other Exploits, surprized the Duke of *Wirtemberg*, at *Fulda*, and made four Battalions of his Troops Prisoners.

The *Prussian* Troops, at the Beginning of the Campaign, were very successful, in *Poland*, *Saxony*, *Bohemia*, *Silesia*, and against the Army of the Empire ; but General *Wedel*, attacking the *Russians* at *Zulichau*, was repulsed with great Loss, and the *Russians* made themselves Masters of *Franckfort* upon the *Oder* ; however, his *Prussian* Majesty, in Person, having joined *Wedel* with 10,000 Men, and *Daun* having sent *Laudohn* to reinforce the *Russians* with 12,000 Cavalry, the Battle of *Cunnersdorf* was fought, on the 12th of *August*, with great Fury and Obstinacy on both Sides, and was, perhaps, the most bloody Action since the Commencement of the War. The *Prussians* left 20,000 Men dead on the Field, among whom was General *Putkammer* ; and most of the other Generals were wounded. The *Russians*, who were the Conquerors, lost 10,000 Men at least ; but as they made no Use of their Victory, the great *Frederick* had Time to recruit his Army, and supply the Loss of his Artillery, most of which he had left on the Field. After this, various Actions happened, between the *Prussians*, *Austrians*, Troops of the Empire, &c. mostly to the Advantage of the former ; but General *Finck* was surrounded by Count *Daun's* Army, at *Maxen*, and, after a gallant Resistance, himself, with eight other General Officers, 19 Battalions, 35 Squadrons, 64 Pieces of Cannon, fifty Pair of Colours, and 25 Standards, fell into the Hands of the *Austrian* General. The Campaign closed



closed with some other unfortunate Events on the Side of the *Prussians*, notwithstanding which, their Monarch remained in a respectable Situation, and though distressed, appeared sufficiently formidable.

Thus having given the principal Military Transactions of the Year, I shall take Notice that the Parliament met in *November*, and the Session was opened by Commission. This Year, their *Britannick* and *Prussian* Majesties made a Declaration to the belligerent Powers, of their sincere Desire to contribute to bring about a Peace; but their Adversaries were too much exasperated to give Ear to such generous Proposals. Many very shocking Murders were committed in *London*, &c. with Circumstances of the most horrid Cruelty.

The *French* were so reduced in their Finances, that they stopped Payment of the Interest of their Funds; whilst the generous *Britons* raised Subscriptions to clothe upwards of 20,000 *French* Prisoners, who were quite abandoned to their unhappy Fortune, by their own Sovereign. On *August* 10, the King of *Spain* died, and was succeeded by Don *Carlos* King of *Naples*, his Half-Brother, who left his third Son, Don *Ferdinand*, in Possession of that Kingdom, and the *Two Sicilies*, having declared his eldest Son an Ideot.

Great Tumults happened this Year in *Ireland*, occasioned by a Report of a designed Union between *Great-Britain* and that Kingdom.

The following remarkable Persons deceased in the Year 1759; viz. Dr. *Maddox*, Bishop of *Worcester*; Lieut. Gen. Sir *William Pepperell*; and Mr. *George-Frederick Handel*, the celebrated Musician.

The Parliament granted, for the Year 1760, 70,000 Seamen, including 18,355 Marines; and for

the Land-Service, 57,294 Men; and provided for 57,750, foreign Auxiliaries in *Germany*. The Sum total of the Grants was 15,503,563*l.* 15*s.* 9½*d.* The Bill for preventing excessive Drinking, by an additional Duty on spirituous Liquors; that to quicken the Execution of the Militia Laws; that for improving, widening, &c. of the Streets of *London*; that for better supplying the Cities of *London* and *Westminster* with Fish; that to enable *George Keith*, late Earl Marshal, to sue, or maintain any Action of Suit, &c. &c. were passed into Laws. On the 22d of *May*, the Session was closed with a Speech from the Lord-Keeper, one of the Commissioners for that Purpose.

The Affair of Lord *George Sackville* occasioned much Altercation in the Summer of this Year, (as it had done ever since the Battle of *Minden*) when his Lordship was tried by a Court-Martial, for having disobeyed the Orders of Prince *Ferdinand* in relation to that Battle. The Charge being, in the Opinion of the Court, proved upon his Lordship, they adjudged him unfit to serve his Majesty in any Military Capacity whatever. However, in the Opinion of many thinking People, his Lordship's Case was a very hard one. A Delinquent for another Crime, of high Rank, was tried by his Peers, and executed at *Tyburn*, viz. *Laurence Earl Ferrers*, for the Murder of his Steward, Mr. *Johnson*, by deliberately shooting him, in his Lordship's own House.

The Enemy, this Year, made a great Number of *English* Captures with their small Privateers, though they had not one Ship of the Line at Sea; and the *English* Cruizers and Privateers brought in considerable Numbers of the Enemy's; for indeed their Trade was reduced

to

to the lowest Ebb. *M. Thurot*, the Adventurer we made mention of last Year, after alarming the Coasts of *England* and *Scotland*, arrived on the Coast of *Ireland*, in *January*; by which that Kingdom was put into great Consternation. On *February* 21, he made a Descent at *Carrickfergus* with 600 Men, and notwithstanding the spirited Defence of Colonel *Jennings* with four raw, undisciplined Companies, got Possession of the Town and Castle; but the Country crowding in, from all parts, to *Belfast*, to oppose the Invaders, *Thurot* embarked with Precipitation. Near the Isle of *Man*, Captain *Elliot*, of the *Æolus*, Captain *Logie*, of the *Pallas*, and Captain *Clements*, of the *Brilliant*, came up with him, on *February* 28, and after a smart Engagement, in which *Thurot* lost his Life valiantly, took his little Squadron, viz. the *Belleisle* of 44 Guns and 545 Men, *La Blond* of 32 Guns and 400 Men, and the *Terpsichore* of 26 Guns and 300 Men, with the Loss only of about 40 Men, killed and wounded; whereas the *French* had 300 killed or disabled.

In the Beginning of *April*, the *Flamborough*, Captain *Kennedy*, and the *Biddesford*, Captain *Skinner*, two Frigates, in their Cruize from *Lisbon*, fell in with, and maintained a severe Engagement with two large *French* Frigates, and made them sheer off. Captain *Skinner* and his Lieutenant were killed in the Fight. The *Ramillies*, a fine Second-rate, was, some Time before, wrecked on the Bolt-Head near *Plymouth*, in her return with Admiral *Boscawen*, from *Quiberon-Bay*; and all her Officers and Men, except a Midshipman and 25 Marines, amounting to 700, perished. With this Misfortune we must conclude the Naval Transactions of this Year, which

were much fewer, and of less *Eclat*, than those of the last.

In *North-America*, the *Cherokee* Indians, at the Back of *Virginia* and *Carolina*, instigated thereto by the *French* Emissaries from *Louisiana*, broke the Peace with the *English*, and plundered, massacred, and scalped many *British* Subjects. Hereupon, Mr. *Lyttelton*, Governor of *South-Carolina*, raised a Body of Forces, and marched into their Country with such Spirit and Resolution, that they, being intimidated, sued for Peace; and it was thereupon established by a new Treaty, in which Satisfaction for Damages, and Punishment of Delinquents, were stipulated. But no sooner was the Governor returned, than the perfidious Wretches attempted to surprize *Fort Prince George*, and butchered all the *English* Traders in their Country. Afterwards, they massacred forty of the defenceless Inhabitants of the Back Settlements. Hereupon, Colonel *Montgomery* was detached by General *Amherst*, with 1200 Men, to chastise the *Cherokees*, who, in the Month of *June*, marched into their Country, and destroyed every Village and House in the Lower Nation, put a great Number to death, and brought off forty Women and Children, Prisoners, to *Fort-George*. Afterwards he made an Irruption into the Middle Settlements of these Indians, wasting every Thing with Fire and Sword. The Savages, in Revenge, attacked *Fort Loudoun*, and, after granting a Capitulation, massacred greatest Part of the Garrison upon their March to *Carolina*.

The *French*, to the Number of 12,000 Men, under M. *De Lewis*, from *Montreal*, &c. came before *Quebeck*, and having repulsed the Governor, General *Murray*, on  
*April*



*April 28*, who went out to give them Battle, (after a warm Engagement, in which the *English* lost 1000 Men, killed or wounded, and the Enemy twice that Number,) laid Siege to the City; but Lord *Colville*, with the Fleet from *Halifax*, and Commodore *Swanton*, from *England*, arriving in the River *St. Laurence*, at that Junction, and destroying and taking the *French* Vessels which attended their Army, they raised the Siege, leaving their Artillery, Provisions, &c. to General *Murray*, and retired to *Jaques Cartier*.

In *July* General *Amberst* sailed down the *St. Laurence*, with an Army of 10,000 Men, and a Body of *Indians* under the Management of Sir *William Johnson*, and took *Ile-Royal*, one of the most important Posts on that River; and after a dangerous Navigation, on *September 6*, landed his Troops on the Island of *Montreal*; and the City was surrendered to him, with all *Canada*, by the Marquess *De Vaudreuil*, the late Governor-General, on the 8th of that Month; General *Murray*, from *Quebeck*, and Colonel *Haviland* with a Body of Troops, having also just landed on the Island. And thus was the Conquest of this fine Country completed, to the great Honour of the *British* Arms, and the Advantage of the Nation. About the same Time, a Frigate, two Store-Ships, and 19 smaller Vessels, were destroyed by Captain *Byron*, in the Bay of *Chaleur*, and the Town of *Chaleur* burnt.

On the Continent of *Europe*, this Year, no very decisive Battle was fought; but many very bloody Skirmishes happened in all Parts where the War was spread; the chief of which were, that of *Corbach*, in *July*, in which the *French* repulsed the Hereditary Prince of *Brunswick*, who sustained a considerable Loss; but on the 16th of the same Month he fully

revenged himself at *Exdorf*. Again he was victorious, on the 31st, at *Corbeke*, where the *French* suffered severely. On the 5th of *September*, he surprized the Town of *Zierenberg*, and made the Garrison Prisoners of War; and afterwards being on an Expedition towards the *Rhine*, he was roughly handled by the *French* at *Campden*, on *October 15*, losing a great Number of Men. The *Prussian* General, *Fouquet*, on the 23d of *July*, was defeated near *Laudshut* by the *Austrian* General, *Laudohn*, wounded himself, and taken Prisoner; after which, the *Austrians* took *Glatz*; but this was thoroughly retaliated by his Master, the King of *Prussia*, on the 15th of *August*, when he defeated *Laudohn* at *Lignitz*, who lost 10,000 Men killed and wounded. On the 9th of *October*, *Berlin* was entered by the *Austrians* and *Russians*, who imposed a heavy Contribution upon that Capital. On *November 3*, his *Prussian* Majesty defeated Count *Dawn*, in the bloody and obstinate Battle of *Torgau*. *Colberg* was besieged by the *Russians*, without Effect, as was *Dresden* by his *Prussian* Majesty.

Advice was received from *Tripoli* in *Syria*, that the whole Country had been almost destroyed by Earthquakes, in which many thousand Lives were lost.

On *January 1*, a Comet appeared, which engaged the Attention of the Astronomers. On *March 14*, a Publick Fast was observed throughout the Kingdom.

His Serene Highness, *William*, Landgrave of *Hesse-Cassel*, deceased this Year, and was succeeded by Prince *Frederick*, Son-in-law of his *Britannick* Majesty.

On *October 25*, between Seven and Eight o'Clock in the Morning, his most Sacred Majesty, King *George* the 11d, departed this Life,

at

at his Palace at *Kensington*, in the 77th Year of his Age, and the 34th of his Reign, the Close of which had been distinguished with most glorious Events, and the most salutary Unanimity and Harmony amongst his Subjects, who sincerely lamented their Loss. His Majesty's Death was sudden, (without any preceding Illness,) from a Rupture in the Substance of the Right Ventricle of the Heart. Immediately after his Demise, his Royal Grandson, *George Prince of Wales*, our present most gracious Sovereign, King *George III.* was acknowledged and proclaimed King of *Great-Britain*, &c. with

the usual Ceremonies, and made a most gracious Declaration to his Privy-Council. On *November 11*, his late Majesty's Remains were interred, in the Royal Vault, in *Henry the VIIIth's Chapel*, in *Westminster-Abbey*, with great and solemn Magnificence.

I shall just observe, before I conclude, that on *September 8*, 1761, his present Majesty was married to her Serene Highness, *Princess Charlotte of Mecklenburgh-Strelitz*, and that, on the 22d of the same Month, his Majesty, and his Royal Consort, were crowned in *Westminster-Abbey*.

F I N I S.







